Fortunes Stabilnes
Charles of Orleans's English Book of Love
A Critical Edition
That he hath not all that he wolde desere
As in the prison of grevous displeasance
Ofte, with a little less comfort
To stay in the same house lodging,
Which is my sithis lydy and chiefest rest.
And if he may attayne the woost port
In self passage y mere to his dese.
The se of fortune plain to his plesere,
A rode wynd and blooding into staunze
Where the abiding is my noble marke.
Which is the smet of all my remembreance.
And hool treure of my worldly gladnes.

Out oys y mothe am to her beholding,
For why lyube I very trewe report
That ayens dangez which of ythe wishing
Shall longe on whyt heart doune me disconsort
That she hath true the here ast in support
To helpe in at the bane this out of woore.
Y founde, for which y have not yshortere
Sende for this shere fulstude of pleasante
For ous cause to suffe in the fortes.
Whenmen thow shalt beke his assaunze
And hool treure of my worldly gladnes.

Beseore to doth make rashfull departure
Both thow and y weel off in a sort.
Fortunes Stabilnes
Charles of Orleans’s English Book of Love
A Critical Edition

by

MARY-JO ARN

MEDIEVAL & RENAISSANCE TEXTS & STUDIES
Binghamton, New York
1994
The Committee's emblem indicates that this volume is based on an examination of all available relevant textual sources, that it is edited according to principles articulated in the volume, that the appropriate texts, both source and edited texts, are fully described, that the editorial principles, the text, and the apparatus have undergone a peer review, that a rigorous schedule of verification and proof reading was followed to insure a high degree of accuracy in the presentation of the edition, and that the text is accompanied by appropriate textual, critical and other historical information.
# Table of Contents

Preface ...................................................... xi
Introduction
The Poem ................................................... 1
   Argument of the Poem; Title of the Poem
Prince and Poet ........................................... 12
   Biographical Sketch; Chronology; Works; The State
      of Charles's English; Authorship of the English
      Poems; Date and Provenance; The Influence of
      *Fortunes Stabilnes* on Later English Works
Literary and Formal Considerations ..................... 39
   Sources and Influences: English; French; Italian and Latin
   Themes and Conventions: Setting; The Heart; Lovesickness
   Courty Occupation: Maying, the Flower and the Leaf;
      St. Valentine's Day; Chess and Tables; Post and Pillar
   Allegorical Figures: Venus; Fortune
   Form: Order of Composition; Style
   Verse Forms: The Ballade; The Roundel; Other Verse Forms;
      Versification
   Relation of the English Poems to their French Counterparts
Language .................................................... 96
   The Language of the Poems; Summary of Forms; Dialect
The Manuscripts .......................................... 101
   Description; Scribal Layout of the Roundels; The Work of
      the Scribe and the Revisors; Paleographical Description;
      Transmission History; Relation of Harley 682 (H) to
      Charles's Autograph Manuscript (O); The "Oxbridge"
      Manuscript (Ox); Editorial Principles; Presentation of the Text

*Fortunes Stabilnes* ..................................... 131
Induction into the God of Love's service [summary]
   Letter patent (1–55)
   Further debate with the God of Love (56–202)
First ballade sequence (203–2539)
   [Death of the lady and poems of mourning (1994–2539)]
First dream vision (Age) (2540–2715)
   Petition to the God of Love for return of lover's heart
      (2716–2813)
Presentation of the petition and withdrawal to the Castle of No Care (2814–3070) [Letter to the God of Love (2982–3045)]
  Introduction of the Jubilee (3071–3137)
Roundel sequence (3138–4318) [one quire missing]
  Final banquet formalities (4319–4637)
Second dream vision (Venus and Fortune) (4638–5193)
  Encounter with the new lady (5194–5351)
Second ballade sequence (5352–6531)
  [Epistles: 5688–5783 and 6129–6170]

Appendices
I. English Poems Not Found in Harley 682 ..................... 381
II. Distribution of Ballade Forms ............................... 389
III. Corrections to Steele and Day Edition ................... 391
IV. Manuscript Abbreviation System ......................... 393
V. Documents .................................................. 394

Works Cited ...................................................... 397

Indices
  First Lines .................................................. 415
  Ballade Refrains ............................................. 422
  French Counterparts of English Poems ..................... 425

Notes
  Textual Notes ................................................ 429
  Explanatory Notes .......................................... 436

Glossary ............................................................ 541

Proper Names .................................................... 623

List of Illustrations

Text of Fortunes Stabilnes.
  London, BL MS. Harley 682, fol. 20v. ....................... ii

Chantilly, Musée Conde MS 76, fol. 46v. ...................... 334
O thow fool of alle mortel foolis!
Yif Fortune bygan to duelle stable,
she cessed thanne to ben Fortune.

—Chaucer’s *Boece*, II.pr1.113–15

La seule victoire contre l’amour
   c’est la fuite.

— French proverb

Myn hert, thou fondist, bi this light,
To fle from Lovis company.
It kan not be, O fool, fy! fy!
Thou hast therto, parde, no myght.
Hath not Fortune þe bihight
To ben his servaunt to thou dey?

— *Fortunes Stabilnes*, 4263–68
Preface

This edition, published on the five hundredth anniversary of the birth of Charles of Orleans, is not designed primarily for the use of students (at one end of the spectrum) or of linguists. I have had in mind from the beginning a broad middle range of users: Chaucerians interested in Chauceriana, Middle English scholars with interests in the fifteenth century, in dream visions, in love literature, in courtly literature, in fixed-form verse, in the narrator, in Fortune, and so on, Old French scholars with interests in all of the above, as well as in the legacy of Machaut and other French writers, codicologists and scholars interested in book production, manuscript layout, transmission history, and reception, historians of the late Middle Ages, and many others. These poems, more than others of the period, are interesting for historical reasons as well as literary and linguistic ones, and it is my hope that not only scholars of Middle English language and literature but medievalists of many other persuasions will find this edition useful. Although linguists will find much here of interest to them, I have done no more than provide them with material in a usable form. I hope that the fuller glossary and my attempts at explanations of troublesome passages and at interpretation through punctuation will lead to serious work on what, in places, must surely be some of the strangest Middle English ever written.

It is interesting to compare the fate of Charles’s English work with that of the *Kingis Quair*. As late as 1967, Derek Pearsall wrote that James’s poem had “hardly been given the kind of attention it deserves, the question of authorship having diverted criticism from its main task of elucidation.”\(^1\) Since then the *Quair* has been re-edited twice and has attracted some careful critical analysis, whereas, with few exceptions, work on Charles’s poem remains mired in arguments about the

---

\(^1\) “The English Chaucerians,” 226–27.
question of authorship, except when it is being plundered for material
to describe the duke's personal life and feelings. In preparing this edi-
tion, which I have called *Fortunes Stabilnes* after one of the author's
most striking phrases, an idea which serves to sum up the whole of his
narrator's circumstance, I have worked from the premise that Charles
of Orleans is the author of this work. All the significant evidence seems
to me to point in that direction, and, having presented much of it in
print, the burden of proof seems to me to lie now on those who would
dispute his authorship of the poems. It may be that more external evi-
dence will come to light, but more likely the only evidence we shall
ever have to work with lies here in the poems themselves. If others can
ask the right creative questions to force from the work itself some
clearer answers to the doubts of some readers (and I have no doubt
that such could and should be done), I will be pleased to adapt my
own opinions to suit the evidence.

My thanks are due in the first place to the late Bernard F. Huppé,
teacher and friend, in whose seminar on Allegory I first encountered
this work and who encouraged me to publish my analyses of the work
on Charles of Orleans. In 1984 I was invited to the Rossell Hope Rob-
bins Research Center for Medieval Studies in Saugerties, New York, as
an Honorary Visiting Scholar, where I was able to do some very con-
centrated preliminary work for this edition. I have missed Ross's help
on the remainder of this volume and am sorry that he did not live to
see the fruits of this work. In 1986–87 and again in 1987–88, the
Netherlands Institute for Advanced Study provided me with the physi-
cal and mental space to make use of European resources in solving
problems presented by this text. Similarly on this side of the Atlantic,
the University of Pennsylvania welcomed me as a Visiting Scholar and
provided the necessary resources for me to finish the job between 1988
and 1991. In 1992, Bloomsburg University gave me a release time
grant to complete the revisions. I am grateful to these institutions and
to their library staffs, especially to Dinny Young of NIAS. In addition,
the staffs of the Royal Library (The Hague), of the British Library, and
of the *Middle English Dictionary* have been most helpful. The British
Library and the Musée Condé and Lauros-Giraudon have kindly given
permission to reproduce the two manuscript pages in this book.

A number of friends and colleagues on both sides of the Sargasso
Sea have read and commented on longer or shorter portions of my
manuscript and answered many questions. Specific thanks to some are
scattered through these pages; I am grateful to them all. For reading
and commenting on parts of the manuscript my thanks to Jane Rob-
erts, Siegfried Wenzel, William Askins, Betsy Bowden, Sylvia Horowitz, and Erik Kooper. Lynnette Muir provided invaluable help on Charles’s French, and Thomas Birrell, equally invaluable bibliographical information in the early stages of my work. The readers of the edition for MRTS saved me from many errors both of fact and of interpretation; I could not have chosen better. My thanks to Ralph Hanna, James Wimsatt, and Derek Pearsall (who has offered encouragement repeatedly over the years and whose work I have plundered regularly). John Hurt Fisher, who read the text for the Committee on Scholarly Editions, helped me think through my methods and presentation in the final stages of revision, and the edition is the better for it. I am grateful for his careful reading.

Three people require special thanks. In the years before the Oxford Concordance Program and other such helps for scholarly computer users, Shoji Yoshikawa devoted massive amounts of time to producing for me rhyme indexes, concordances, and other computer aids from the mainframe at the University of Groningen— aids that have proved to be invaluable in the intervening years. He has been the very best of colleagues. Ken Heinrich has been an indefatigable help with the edition, solving bibliographical problems, locating resources, devising problem-solving tactics, and resolving both electronic and strategic computer mysteries and crises. I appreciate most deeply his continued faith in this project and in my ability to do it justice. To those who know him, I need not explain the difference that Professor Johan Gerritsen has made to this project; to those who do not, no amount of explaining would make clear how profoundly his standards, his clearsightedness, and his plain hard work and good will have influenced my work. While hastening to claim the errors that remain for my own, I dedicate this volume to him. It is an honor to call him colleague and friend.
Introduction

The Poem

THE POEMS OF BRITISH LIBRARY, MS. Harley 682 were published first by George Watson Taylor in 1827 and again by Robert Steele and Mabel Day in the 1940s.¹ My primary purpose in re-editing the work is to make the poetry more accessible to the reader. This edition is therefore different in a number of respects from the Early English Text Society edition, which presented the text diplomatically and provided a minimum of lexical and contextual guidance to the reader. Although the scholar who specializes in late Middle English will be able to read from a diplomatically presented text, such texts are not made for reading, but for study. Those who object to the addition of punctuation as unwarranted editorial interference may be reminded of the lack of critical interest in the poems since the publication of the Steele and Day edition, occasioned by their difficulty and by the many questions surrounding them. Users of this volume will find the introduction, explanatory notes, and glossary to be fuller than those of the EETS edition. Critical and codicological work has advanced significantly since 1945, so there is simply more to report on the literary, linguistic, and manuscript context. The glossary records all spellings in the work, and

¹ The very inaccurate Watson Taylor edition (actually not much more than a transcription) was published in only forty-four copies (for full references to all sources, see Works Cited list). The Steele and Day edition was first published in two volumes: introduction, text, and glossary by Steele in 1941; notes, various addenda and errata by Steele and Day in 1946. In 1970 the two volumes were combined into one with a bibliographical supplement by Cecily Clark. Marjorie Daunt's work on rhymes was originally planned as part of the second volume, but it appeared in 1949 as a separate article. Unfortunately, in combining the two volumes, references to the page numbers of volume two were not adjusted. The notes occupy the first 41 pages; thereafter for pages 42–46 read 302–6, for 47 read 307, for 48 read 308.
of course takes advantage of the work of the *Middle English Dictionary* (up to S, fascicle 12).\(^2\)

To avoid confusion, Charles's French lyrics are identified throughout by roman numerals; his English lyrics, by arabic, e.g., Ballade 9 (B 9) refers to his English poem; Ballade IX, to its French counterpart.

I have attempted, as far as possible, to provide useful and appropriate contexts for the consideration of many aspects of the work without engaging in the kind of romantic fantasy and amateur psychologizing that has characterized much of the work on the poetry of Charles of Orleans. On the other hand, there must inevitably be some conjecture on various matters concerning these poems, including the question of what contexts to place them in. I have attempted to err on the side of fullness, leaving it to the reader to discard material that seems irrelevant, rather than to present too few choices, which often has the effect of retarding further investigation.

*Fortunes Stabilnes* is a work in mixed forms; that is to say, it is a single work made up of ballades, roundels, and other lyrics, connected with passages of narrative verse, also in a variety of forms.\(^3\) The structure is unique in English (and probably in French as well) in that it is made up of about four times as much fixed-form as narrative verse, yet the narrative sections are themselves substantial—indeed essential to the work as a whole. One way to look at this collection is as an author-based collection of English lyrics presented within a frame. Another might be to read it as an English *dit amoureux*, a kind of catalogue of courtly motifs and rhetorical gambits in story form (the court of love, allegorical figures, the lady *sans mercy*, the debate of the lover with his heart, etc.); but it is much more than simply a pastiche of courtly ideas.\(^4\) The story of the English work is more complex than that of the

---

\(^2\) For a more detailed discussion of the presentation of the text, see the final section of the introduction.

\(^3\) Roughly 1300 lines of narrative verse survive. The missing first quire probably contained about 394 lines of narrative verse (see below). The 121 ballades and 96 (extant) roundels contain 4817 lines. The work also contains nearly 400 lines of lyric verse in miscellaneous forms; Charles seems to have wanted to accord to every "document," every "letter," every "complaint" a different verse form. For a discussion of the function of the various forms, see my article, "Poetic Form as a Mirror of Meaning."

\(^4\) Such set pieces are typical of all French and English courtly verse, both narrative and lyric. R. H. Robbins rightly observed that both were composed "for intellectual and social diversion and amorous dalliance among a minuscule elite group" ("Structure," 245).
corresponding French work that Charles composed more or less simultaneously, and it is both longer and more coherent; the French work retains a more fragmentary character.\(^5\) The work is in a form well known in the late Middle Ages, a pseudo-autobiography involving the love life of a somewhat foolish narrator named for the poet (the narrator is repeatedly referred to by other characters as Charlis and *duk of Orliance*), who is largely unsuccessful and desperately unhappy with the life that his service to the God of Love and Venus (and by definition Fortune) brings him.

**Argument of the Poem**

The missing first quire of the English poems in Harley 682 (see below, "The Manuscripts") contained an allegorical narrative detailing the lover’s first encounter with the God of Love and his court and his first sight of Beauty. The early ballades are among the closest “translations” of their French counterparts, and it is very likely that the opening narrative in the English work, too, closely resembled *La Retenue d’amours*, its French equivalent.\(^6\) Both were written very much under the influence of the opening scenes of the *Roman de la rose* and similar love allegories.

Early one Valentine’s Day morning, Youth awakens the narrator and leads him reluctantly to meet the God of Love. Cupid turns him over to Pleasant Beauty, who sends an arrow through his eyes into his heart. He surrenders to her and asks for pity, at which point she teaches him the rules of love. When the lover swears to serve him loyally, the God of Love commands his secretary to write a letter patent, which is then delivered to the lover, though the God of Love retains the lover’s heart. Here the opening allegory ends.\(^7\)

\(^5\) I suspect that the English work only pretends to be ordered by form, on the model of many French and Italian author-compilations (see Huot, *From Song to Book*, 211ff.). Charles’s French poems do constitute such a compilation (with a whiff of narrational sequence in the ballades), but the poet has turned the English poems into a much more coherent work which itself has many Continental models. That poets of the late Middle Ages were interested in being known for a body of work is obvious from Chaucer’s *Retractions* (and from Gower’s three major works, which support the head of his effigy in Southwark Cathedral), as well as from the many Continental examples. For more on the French work, see below, “Relation of English Poems to Their French Counterparts.”

\(^6\) The standard edition of the French poetry is that edited by Pierre Champion in two volumes, entitled *Charles d’Orléans: Poésies*. All references to the French poems will be to this edition unless otherwise noted.

\(^7\) A more detailed summary of the opening allegory of the French work
INTRODUCTION

The text of the letter patent, admitting the lover into the God of Love's service, follows (1–55). In a narrative section (202 lines) with which the English manuscript now opens, the lover thanks the God of Love but challenges him once again on the matter of withholding his heart from him (91–111). Love defends his arbitrariness and offers some final words of advice on how to gain the love of the lady (112–60). Looking once again at the lady (Benvete), the lover decides he dare not speak because Pity is asleep (161–74), and so takes up pen and paper (175–88), calls Hope to his side to help him (189–202), and begins the first sequence of ballades.

A series of seventy-four ballades follows (203–2539, including two five-stanza ballades, or chants royaux—Ballade 9 and Ballade 54). The majority are wooing letters from the lover to the lady. In the first, the lover addresses the lady straightforwardly and asks for her pity. Ballades 2–5 (231–349) concern the lady's eyes and the effects of her glances; in Ballades 6–8 (350–439), the dreamer has repeated problems—and discussions—with his heart. Then, in the first chant royal (Ballade 9, 440–90), the lover sums up the lady's charms. In Ballades 10–15 (491–673) the lady is apparently absent. Ballades 16–19 (674–89) deal with the lady's unkindness, and, after two more hopeful ballades (790–857), the lover returns to this theme with some regularity. The ballades from here on become more difficult to group. Daunger holds the heart hostage in Ballades 24, 25, 28, and 29. The heart is in serious distress of various kinds in Ballades 23, 26, and 27. Ballade 30 (1104–34) records an allyaunce between the lover and his lady, and thereafter there are references to a promise made, e.g., in Ballades 31–34 (1135–1249). The lady seems again to be absent in Ballades 33 and 36–40 (the lover talks with his heart again in Ballades 33 and 37). The woes that Fortune brings are the subject of Ballades 39–43 (1379–1547), but the lover challenges Daunger aggressively in Ballade 44 (1548–1600). In Ballade 46 (1629–57), the lover picks up an image introduced briefly in Ballade 22: the playing of a board game to determine the future of his love affair. In Ballade 47 (1659–88), one of the few truly joyful ballades, the lover says that the lady has declared her love for him ("Teys yow to whom y loue am and no moo"). This is followed by a Maying poem (Ballade 48), though not an altogether happy one, since he is separated from his lady (1689–1717). Ballades

precedes the text. The French original can be found in Champion, Poésies, 1–14. All references are to vol. 1 unless otherwise noted.
49–53 (1718–1872) deal with diverse subjects (53 is also a Maying poem). Ballade 54 (1873–1900), the second chant royal in the series,⁸ is addressed to the lover’s absent lady, reminding her of his woe and his loyalty. In Ballade 55 (1928–59), however, the lover receives news of his lady’s illness, and in Ballade 57 (1994–2025) she is dead. The remaining ballades in the sequence (58–74, lines 2026–2539), all mourning poems, are among the most eloquent lyrics of the entire work.

The bereaved lover falls asleep and dreams that Age⁹ appears at his bedside to counsel him to leave Love’s service while he can (2540–2635). Age identifies himself as the one who escorted the dreamer from Childhood into Youth (2556–61). He says that Reason objects to the dreamer’s continuing in this stage of life, in which he has been “gouvernyd longe in nycete” (2562–67), and warns that Old Age (Yelde) is looking for the dreamer (2568–71). Age therefore counsels the dreamer to leave the service of Love, enemy of Old Age, since the dreamer has a handy excuse in his lady’s death (2571–79). Nothing, he says, is more foolish than an old lover (2580–87). He tells the lover how to approach the God of Love (2588–2614) and warns him about Fortune (2615–35), who will bring him only pain. The dreamer awakes, considers the picture of the aging lover that Age has described, and decides to take the advice of that somber figure (2636–91). He decides to compose a petition for his release from service and the return of his heart (2692–2715); the petition follows (2716–2813). The lover presents his petition to Cupid and Venus at the parliament of Love (2814–16).¹⁰ Unable to convince him to take a new lady (2817–61), Cupid grants his request (2862–85), and his followers agree in confirming the lover’s release (2886–2901). The lover receives his heart (2902–9) and sorrowfully takes his leave (2910–17). The God of Love assigns Comfort to accompany him to the Castle of No Care (2918–57), where he will live out the remainder of his life in the company of Tyme Apast (2958–73), presumably in peace and contentment. The next day, the former lover

---

⁸ I use the term “ballade” for the two chants royaux in order to retain Steele’s numbering of the series as a whole.

⁹ Age is not Old Age; if he were, he would have no part to play in the opening allegory. He is age in the abstract—the messenger who transfers the narrator from one age bracket to another. Poirion defines Aage (in the French poems) as “durée de la vie” (Le Lexique, s.v. Aage). Goodrich translates Aage, “Years,” (Biography, 218). He is “Aetas rather than Senectus, here” (Burrow, Ages, 183).

¹⁰ The action from the end of the Vision of Age to the petition to the God of Love is described in a series of seven “narrative ballades” (2814–2981), ballades without envoys which are not lyrical but simply further the “plot.”
sends Comfort back to Love with a letter of thanks and an apology for his unseemly behavior at court, the result of his grief (2974–3045). He dates the letter “the thrittenthe day of Novembre” (3043) and signs it “the trewe Charlis, duk of Orlyance / That sumtyme was oon of yowre pore servaunce” (3044–45).  

Three ballades follow (82–84), the second of which announces a Jeewbile, or celebration of the narrator’s retirement (3071–3109), and the third, a banquet (3110–37). The food will be the “swettist mete” not of “motoun, veel, or beef, / Nor pigge, nor goos” but of “birdis smale.” These tidbits are metaphors for roundels (3119–20), and indeed a series of about a hundred roundels follows (3138–4318). The roundels are a miscellaneous collection, many of them in no particular order (except perhaps the order of composition). There are, however, a number of themes that run through the sequence. The series opens with one roundel (in the Troilus mold) expressing the speaker’s disdain of the lover’s life, followed immediately (3152–65) by a roundel on the compulsion of love and then a series on the perfections of the lady (Roundels 3–7, 3166–3235). From this point on, they are more readily analyzable by theme than by group:

Eye imagery: 9, 10, 22, 51, 68, 91  
Woe: 15, 19, 23, 32, 62, 92, and elsewhere  
Plea for mercy: 12, 13, 14, 16, 17, 21, 64, 89, 90  
The heart: 24, 26, 36, 68, 71, 87, 88, 93  
Praise of the lady: 59, 63, 69, and elsewhere  
Kissing poems: 33, 35, 37, 39, 41, 43, 47, 48, 57  
Absence of or from the lady: 38, 40, 42, 50, 52, 67  
Death of the lady: 65, 94, 101

In addition, Roundel 11 is addressed to the month of May (3283–95); Roundels 18, 45, and 54 involve the kind of imagery or allegory found in Ballade 50; Roundel 60 is a farewell poem. The last roundel (4305–18) returns to the idea of a banquet, governed by the image of the customary drinking of a cup of wine at the end of a meal. This is followed by a poem in rhyme royal on “saying grace” after the meal (4319–88), followed by the washing of hands (with a play on wash/

---

11 The corresponding French poem is dated 13 November 1437.

12 In my article “Structure of the English Poems,” I have not argued, as Sarah Spence claims, that the roundels “describe two love affairs of which the second is less courtly than the first”; the two love affairs are embodied in the two ballade sequences (“French Chansons,” 284n).
wish—4389–4479) and an invitation to dance after the serving of “spise
and wyne” (4480–83). “My Iewbile then is to yow doon, / And so my
newe fortune wol folow soon,” says the narrative (4485–86). After an
additional half-dozen miscellaneous lyrics that represent the after-dinner
dances (4487–4637), the second dream vision follows (4638–5189).

As the narrative opens, the ex-lover has been asked by an acquain-
tance who is not himself a poet to compose a roundel or ballade on the
theme of “fortunes stabilnes” (4638–63). Taking pen and ink to a cliff
overlooking the sea (4664–79), the narrator-poet obliges with a double
ballade on that subject (4680–4735). This is heavy work for a retiree,
and he falls asleep immediately upon finishing it (4736–38). In the
vision that follows, Venus comes floating over the sea, naked save for
a “kercher of plesaunce” about her middle, with an owl on her hand
(4757–67). In the comic encounter that follows, the narrator estab-
lishes with some difficulty who she is (4771–4800), then recounts his
sorrowful life (4801–64). But he elicits no sympathy for his grief from
Venus, who counsels him unequivocally to choose a new lady (4865–
82); this he resists (4883–4963). Looking up by chance, he sees over
Venus’s shoulder a golden chariot in which sits a richly-dressed queen
holding a wheel (4964–73), which is described in great detail (4974–
5049). At the top of the wheel he sees a beauty whom he mistakes for
his dead lady (5050–57). Unaware of what the dreamer has seen,
Venus assumes that he is having some sort of vision or fit (5058–74)
until she turns around (5079–99). Venus identifies the queen as Fort-
une (5100–5105). She assures him that it is not his lady sitting on
Fortune’s wheel (5106–12), but nonetheless offers the lady to him.
After some agonizing, he leaves the decision to her (5114–62), where-
upon she immediately offers to take him up to the top of Fortune’s
wheel to join the lady (5163–71). Dangling from her “kercher of
plesaunce,” he rises so high that he takes fright, and crying, “O lady
Venus, mercy!” he awakens himself (5184–89), but finds that he still
grasps “a gret pese of plesaunce” (5190–91).

Getting to his feet, he wanders into a wood (5194–97), where he
comes upon a company of lords and ladies playing the game of Post
and Pillar (5198–5206). Among them he sees the lady of the vision
(5207–9). An old acquaintance presses him to join the game in his
place, as he has torn his hose and must retire (5219–22). The narrator
joins in and heads straight for the lady (5233–41), to whom he con-
fesses his love and tremblingly requests—and receives—permission to
write (5242–5317). As evening approaches, he takes his leave of the
company and of his new love (5324–44).
A second sequence of thirty-six ballades follows (5352–6531), divided into three parts by the insertion of two epistles (5688–5783 and 6129–70). The new love seems considerably less sympathetic than was his first lady (see Ballade 103–6 and 108). The attitude of the lover is less courtly, and his fuse, shorter. After two fairly predictable lyrics (Ballade 85–86, cp. Ballade 1), the lover begins to complain of his treatment at his new lady’s hands: “how long wil ye straunge in his wise?” (Ballade 87); “The chaunge of youwre mystrust kan y not see” (Ballade 88); “giltles sleth me youwre disdayne” (Ballade 89); “yow y fynde more hard than eny ston” (Ballade 90); the lady has a hard heart (Ballade 91); “complayntoure causeles am not y” (Ballade 92); he complains of “this long dilay” (Ballade 93), and begs the lady to “haue me not in disdayne” (Ballade 94); he is “oppressid with thought, langoure, & hevynes” (Ballade 95); and finally, “we nedis must de-part” (Ballade 96). This ballade, in which he begs the lady to exchange hearts before they are separated, is followed by a letter in twelve stanzas describing the lover’s pain at their parting and begging her to think of him (5688–5783).

The ballade that follows (Ballade 97, 5784–5811) is a complaint, in which the lover compares himself to an anchorite and finds the hermit happier than he. The intricate patterning of Ballade 98 (5812–39) is unusual, as is the joy expressed in it (this patterning is picked up again in Ballade 100). Woe returns in Ballade 99, and, in spite of the lover’s bravado, he is reduced again in Ballades 102–6 to lamenting the lady’s cruelty (5924–6063). In Ballade 107 the lover announces to his heart that it is to be exchanged for the lady’s (6064–6100), but the exchange apparently does not take place, for in the following ballade (108) the lover petulantly takes his leave of Love (6101–28). This is followed by a second letter, in six stanzas, in which the lover, abasing himself, apologizes to the lady for his rash behavior (6129–70).

The third sub-section of this ballade sequence opens (Ballade 109) with a reference to a promise (unspecified) made by the lady (6171–98), followed by another apology (Ballade 110, 6199–6226). The next four ballades (Ballade 111–14, 6227–54), as well as Ballade 117, are positive declarations of the narrator’s love. Ballade 115 involves the strijf between the lady’s heart and eye (6342–66). Ballade 116 is a dialogue between lover and lady that turns on word-play involving the word occupy (6367–94). In Ballade 118, the lover defies Fortune (6420–47), but in the following ballade (119), the lady is clearly leading the lover down the proverbial garden path (6448–75), and in Ballade 120 the lover is again complaining of her unkindness (6476–6503). The
work ends inconclusively; though the final ballade (121) opens, "As for farewell, farewell, farewell, farewell" (6504), the lover speaks of seeing the lady again (6516), and it is unclear what the poet’s intentions were for ending the work, if indeed he intended to add anything more.13

Title of the Poem
An editor rarely has the opportunity to suggest a name for a nameless medieval poem. The English Poems of Charles of Orleans (the title used by Steele and Day) is unwieldy and inaccurate, and no other purely descriptive title has presented itself. The work is primarily concerned with the lover’s unsuccessful attempts to woo two ladies, the first of whom he loses to death, and the second, to the lady’s daunger. It is Fortune who takes away the narrator’s first lady in Ballade 61 (2116), and it is Fortune who presents him with the second (5049–54). In a series of ballades on the subject of Fortune in the first sequence, Fortune is represented in unequivocally negative terms. "Dost thou my deth conspyre?" the lover asks in Ballade 40. In Ballade 41 he hopes that Fortune will set him at the top of her wheel, but in Ballade 42 the assaults of Fortune ("which is of care princesse") exhaust him. What is more, Fortune is "gery" (966), "false" and "fulle of gret dispite" (1513), "seytfulle" (2129), "cursid" (2739), "crewel," and "ful of disseyvaunce," (4279); she is full of "dissayt and skorne" (6420), "fraude" (6421), and "mokkery" (6429). She "ployeth the tyran" (1398) with the lover, but he hopes to "don hir discomfiture" (1402).

13 Fols. 148 and 149 are ruled but contain no text. Steele divides the work (in his table of contents) into three parts, with the first part divided into "Love's Service" (my I plus A plus the first part of II, for which see my Table of Contents) and "Love's Service Relinquished" (the remainder of II). His second part is equivalent to B, and his third to III plus C. Though the corresponding parts of the work (especially the ballade sequences) are unequal in length, my division into six parts illustrates more clearly the structure of the whole, in that the introduction is substantial and the two dream visions separate the three sequences. Each of the narrative sections introduces a series of lyrics and involves an encounter between the narrator and an important figure or figures (first the God of Love, then Age, then Venus and Fortune).

I. about 596 lines (including the missing first quire)
   A. 2336 lines
II. 530 lines
   B. 1678 lines (including the missing quire of roundels)
III. 713 lines
   C. 1179 lines
(The missing quire of roundels increases B by about 112 lines.)
Although *fortune* is used to indicate mere chance in Ballades 65 and 66 (on the choosing of the flower or the leaf), it is much more often used to indicate a malicious force that thwarts the lover’s desires. This view of Fortune even crowds out her double nature, which is referred to only a few times (e.g., 1343, 2129, 6177). In the early, primarily theological, tradition, those who see Fortune as either solely good or solely evil are said to be deceived about the true nature of things (see Boethius 2.pr.1); Charles intended his readers to see his narrator-lover as (self-) deceived in exactly this way.

The idea of the unwavering animosity of Fortune is introduced early in the work, when Age cautions the bereaved lover in a dream not to trust her (2615 ff.). The old man gives the dreamer sound advice that includes a warning not to trust “Fortune, with hir chere covert, / Which wolle flatir to brynge thee fresshe in smert, / Saiyng she hath the sokoure to be lent” (2615–17), and who will tell him that his lady did not really die, thereby luring him back into an unfulfilled love affair. “Ware lest she eft brynge thee not in pyne,” Age warns (2623). Near the end of the work, Fortune, full of “dissayt,” “skorne,” and “fraude,” is still the enemy, and the narrator is still begging her to turn her wheel for him (6421).

The author himself employs the phrase “Fortunes stableness” in regard to a ballade (or rather a double ballade) the ex-lover—retired from Love’s service because of the death of his lady—intends to compose for another unsuccessful lover (4680–4735). The phrase is thus used at a crucial point in the work, when the lover has retired from the service of Love and the poem should logically be drawing to its conclusion. In his poem, the narrator “biwayneles” the stableness of Fortune, who does not operate in the way that many suppose, now hurting, now amending (4689); on the contrary, “sympille wights” like himself receive only adversity at her hand. The lyric ends with the paradoxical request that she turn her wheel (and she only appears to do so in the scenes that follow). It is his writing of a ballade on this subject that induces sleep and prompts the arrival of Venus. The goddess will eventually attempt to take him directly to the top of Fortune’s wheel—a position he never does attain (or, if at all, only briefly), judging from the course of the love affair that follows.

The phrase suggests an image unique in the vast medieval lore concerning Fortune—a fortune which is, for this lover, not ever-changing, but stable.\(^\text{14}\) It occasions the only properly imbedded lyric in the

---

\(^{14}\) Her stableness is, of course, an illusion. Though found here perhaps
work, a poem whose impending composition is announced and whose composition in turn triggers the dream vision of Venus and Fortune. The figure of Fortune is described in extraordinary detail, but it is immediately evident that the essence of the figure is not her dual nature (see below, "Literary Considerations: Fortune"). Contrary to all other references to her nature in the work, in his dream, the narrator sees an almost entirely positive Fortune, as if she were purely a product of the dreamer's wish fulfillment and therefore the opposite of the negative Fortune he knows in his waking life.

Fortune is thus represented throughout the work as a force to be reckoned with—and not a force for good. Fortune thwarts the lover in his first love affair by causing the death of the lady; she thwarts his second affair by offering a beautiful lady who turns out to be unkind. The phrase "Fortunes stabilnes" sums up the sad frustration of the central figure, the lover who cannot find any degree of contentment in his service to the God of Love because Fortune steadfastly refuses to allow him his turn at the top of her wheel. For all these reasons, Fortunes Stabilnes would seem an appropriate name for the work referred to heretofore by the title The English Poems of Charles of Orleans.

uniquely in the Middle Ages, the idea of a stable Fortune was known in antiquity, and, in the words of F. P. Pickering, "dug up" in the Renaissance (212 and passim).

15 Cecily Clark has pointed out an instance of the same idea in the French Rondeau CCXIII ("Some English Perspectives," 258), which plays on the proverb, "la roue de la fortune n'est pas toujours une" (Le Roux de Lincy, 2.327). Another instance of the idea occurs in Ballade XCVIII, in which the waters of Fortune are too calm for the boat of the lover to make any headway.

16 It has been suggested to me that this work is a sort of encyclopedia or summa of love poetry, in the manner of Machaut's Voir-dit and Remede or Grandson's Livre Messire Ote, Fortune being simply one important theme. Seen in this way, my choice of title does indeed skew the work. If these poems form a coherent story, however (romanesque, to use Poirion's damning word), as I believe they do, then the central theme of the work is infortune.

My reference in the subtitle to Charles's Book of Love is intended to emphasize my sense of the coherence of the work and to avoid the term "the English poems," since the English poems found in Appendix I, almost certainly from Charles's pen, are not part of it. What it should not be taken to imply is that this is a completely polished work, sent, perhaps by the author himself, out into the world in its final form. For a timely caution against such an assumption, see Pearsall, "Crux."
Prince and Poet

Biographical Sketch
Named for his uncle Charles VI, Charles of Orleans (b. 1394) was a prince of the house of Valois, son of Louis of Orleans and Valentina Visconti of Milan (cousin-german to Louis, thus herself half French). As a member of the royal house of France, as a vitally important pawn in the Hundred Years War as it was played out by the various French and English factions, each of whom seemed to vie with the other for distinction in greed, bad judgment, and vindictiveness, and as an important poet of the French Middle Ages, Charles of Orleans has been written about and analyzed from many points of view in order to support many kinds of arguments.\footnote{For a concise biography, see Fox, \textit{Lyric Poetry}, 1–31, or Purcell, 1–19.} I shall provide only a few facts, together with a chronology of the events of his life; I have provided the fullest detail for the period during which Charles was a prisoner in England.\footnote{The most complete and reliable biography of Charles's life is Pierre Champion's, \textit{Vie de Charles d'Orléans} (1394–1465). I have leaned most heavily on Champion's work, both his life of the duke and his other valuable publications, with occasional recourse to the work of Enid McLeod, who has treated much of the same material in English (with much unfounded supposition about the poetry). Another biography, by Norma Lorre Goodrich (filled with romantic fancy, and apparently published in a very limited edition), is difficult to find. Many hundreds of documents in libraries on both sides of the Channel (especially in London and Paris) have provided the material for each of them. In addition Charles figures in many of the histories (political, martial, and social) of the France and England of the late Middle Ages. Hella S. Haasse wrote a novel in Dutch based on the life of the duke. The first of her many novels, it proved so popular that it has never gone out of print in Holland since its first publication in 1949. The recently published English version is titled, not \textit{The Forest of Long Awaiting} ("La forest de Longue Actente," a phrase taken from the famous opening of Ballade CV, which has no English counterpart), but \textit{In a Dark Wood Wandering}, in order to call forth Dantean associations.} Charles's childhood was one of extreme wealth and culture.\footnote{For a succinct account of the fabulous luxury into which Charles was born, including a detailed description of the Hôtel St.-Pol (the "townhouse" on the Seine where Charles was born), a description of Valentina's progress through France to marry Louis, and many other fascinating details, see Graves, 1–57. Laborde's documentary account of the dukes of Orleans, of which Charles and his father, Louis, take up three-quarters, names, among others, 60 different doctors and surgeons; 39 painters and illuminators; 8 stained glass artists; 16 scribes; 17 sculptors and stonemasons; 60 architects, masters of the works, and master masons; 113 goldsmiths, enamellers, and engravers; 20 booksellers and binders;}
Surrounded by fabulous luxury, he was exposed to learning and learned 
people from an early age. 20 His mother was not only intelligent and 
lettered, 21 but attentive to and supportive of her children (including 
Louis’s son by Mariette d’Enghien, the wife of one of his officers). 22 
Charles spent his early years at a number of Valois castles in the Loire 
region, where he and his brothers were tutored in Latin by Nicole 
Garbet, bachelor of theology and secretary to Louis. Louis, though 
more distant than Valentina, provided his sons with a model of princely 
ambition, charm, largesse, and cunning. Charles’s early life was thus in 
some ways a “good preparation” for his future captivity in England: a 
life lived away from the seat of power, in semi-retirement with his 
mother and siblings, a life monotone, in the word of Champion. 23 

Charles was both orphaned and widowed before his fifteenth birth-
day: his father was assassinated by the Burgundian faction; his mother 
died, probably of grief; his wife died in childbirth. It was not unusual 
for the children of royal households to miss out on what we now call 
childhood, but Charles’s early years, though lapped in wealth, seem in 
many ways to have been especially hard. In 1415, at the age of twenty-
one, he was captured at the battle of Agincourt. Perhaps he was one of 
the lucky ones—much of the flower of French chivalry died that day—
but Charles himself never felt his fate was in any way fortunate. Pulled 
from under a heap of bodies on the battlefield, he was taken, together 
with other noble prisoners, to England, a land he had never seen, but 

98 minstrels, musicians, and clowns; 19 choristers; 16 embroiderers; and 26 fools 
and dwarves. 20

In 1401 Charles’s mother gave him and his brother Philip books illuminated 
with gold, azure, and vermilion and covered with Cordovan leather; they were 
seven and four and a half years old, respectively (Laborde, no. 5941). For more 
detail on Charles’s early education, see Champion, Vie, 19–22; McLeod, 21–22. 

21 She played the harp, owned a number of books, played at tables, and was 
very fond of equestrian activities (Laborde, nos. 5813, 6432, 5773, 5865, 5925; 
for a list of her books, see Champion, La Librairie, xvi–xvii). She also owned a 
silver astrolabe (Graves, no. 387, 103). “Valentine est destinée au siècle d’or: chez 
elle, cette curiosité intellectuelle du XIVe siècle semble se résoudre en une fine 
compréhension et en un entendement critique. Elle est douée de la forte intelli-
gence et de l’esprit souple de sa race; et elle est très belle femme” (Graves, 19). 

22 Champion, Vie, 23. I have no idea where N. L. Goodrich got the idea that 
Valentina “repudiated her son Charles on her deathbed” (Themes, 188).

23 “Prince des lis,” 8. His comparatively frequent references to childhood in 
his poetry (both French and English), a subject that does not spring immediately 
to mind in relation to love poetry in the courtly mold, may be due to his vivid 
memories of these years and their stark contrast to what befell him thereafter (see 
the introductory French allegory, the first dream vision, Roundel 65, etc.).
to which he had already consigned his younger brother, Jean of Angou-
lême, at the age of twelve, as a hostage. Charles spent twenty-five years
in captivity, shuttled from one English castle to another.

At the approach of his release in 1440, it was clear that not only the
French but also many of the English felt that a horrible injustice had
been done to the duke of Orleans. To hold a nobleman captive for
decades, to prevent him from effectively administering his lands and
exercising the social, legal, and governmental duties of his own culture,
bordered on the inhuman. Charles himself spoke in retrospect of his
feelings of despair and his desire for death while in captivity. 24 It is no
surprise that when he shook the English dust from his feet he cut off all
but a very few contacts with the land of his captivity. In spite of talk in
the earlier poetry of his narrator’s retirement to the Castle of No Care,
Charles did not withdraw from the world around him on his return to
France. He campaigned in Italy, rebuilt his domains, had a family, and,
above all, wrote and shared poetry with a wide circle of friends and
acquaintances. 25

While in England, Charles had “missed” many of the momentous
events of fifteenth-century French history: the death of Charles VI and
the accession of Charles VII, the repeated devastation of the north of
France by English armies, the siege of Rouen, the murder of John the
Fearless (the murderer of Louis of Orleans, Charles’s father), the
defense of his own lands by his bastard brother, the heroic count of
Dunois, and the entire career of his great champion, Joan of Arc. He
had been excluded from much of the peace process between France
and England that he longed so deeply to hasten and nurture. He had
not as yet met Philip of Burgundy (son of and successor to his father’s
murderer, but a future friend and ally) and Burgundy’s gracious but
shrewd wife, Isabelle.

Life sometimes seems to imitate art. Just as Charles’s narrator
retired from love, at the urging of Age, after the death of his lady, but
was later persuaded to take a new lady, so Charles himself mourned the
death of his second wife, Bonne, while captive in England but lived to
take a new young wife only weeks after his release from English captiv-
ity. They lived together for thirty years, apparently happily; 26 in the

24 For his own record of his despair, see Champion, “Prince des Lis,” 19, and
Vie, 547.
25 Even a cursory look at the “Itinéraire” at the end of Champion’s account
of Charles’s life makes this abundantly clear. See also, e.g., McLeod, 326–30.
26 It is worth mentioning that Marie took an active part in the literary life of
last eight years of their marriage Charles fathered three children, one of them the future Louis XII. During his long years in England Charles became *anglicisé*, according to Champion; he certainly became fluent in the language of his captors.27

Charles’s captivity in England is hardly to be equated with imprisonment, even though his movements were limited and his activities observed to some degree.28 A never-ending stream of goods and servants moved to and fro between the duke and his home, at least in the early years. The captured “property” of Henry V, Charles was a royal “guest” in the households of a number of English noblemen.29 To be sure, some of his accommodations were more congenial than others, and the ever-present need to raise ransom money for both

the court at Blois. She wrote poetry and collected books. The inventory of her library made in 1487 reveals a select but impressive collection, made no doubt with encouragement from her bibliophile husband (see Champion, *La Librairie*, 115–16), and his “Liber Amicorum.” “Charles d’Orléans presided over a brilliant and flourishing *psy* or Court of Love at Blois after his return from exile: the ancient traditions of poetic debate were fostered there, above all in the ballade and rondeau forms. At banquets minstrels sang, mystery plays were performed, and there was juggling and tableaux-vivants” (Wilkins, *One Hundred Ballades*, 141 n. 92).

27 “Prince des lis,” 20. Edward Halle (from whom Holinshed derived much of his information) wrote in 1548:

Imagin you that a prince of a bloud royal, brought into thraldome, restrained from liberty and liuyng farre from kyn and father, & farther from frendes, would not geue his diligent care to that mociion, by the whiche he might be restored, bothe to his auncient preheminence, possession and seigniory? Yes, yes, you maie be sure, he neither consulted on the matter, nor deferred the aunswere, but therunto gently agreed. What should I saie more? As some writers affirme, four hundred thousande Crounes were paiied for his deliuerance, although other saie, but thre hundred thousande: and so he was deliuered out of Engelande into Fraunce at that tyme, bothe speakyng better Englishe then Frenche, and also swearyng, neuer to beare Armure against the Kyng of Engelande. (fols. 139v–140r)

28 Champion (*Vie*) provides a great deal of information on this point, as does (perhaps not always so reliably) McLeod. See, e.g., Champion, chap. 8: “La ‘Prison’ Anglaise.” A fellow prisoner, the duke of Bourbon, sent to France for four of his falconers, implying that he was permitted to ride and hunt during his captivity (McLeod, 134).

29 He would hardly have ordered six hundred pipes of wine to be sent to him from France if he were not entertaining as well as being entertained by his hosts (Rymer, 10.263–65). Although Enid McLeod, in her biography of the duke, would have us believe that his need to administer his lands and raise the ransom for both himself and his brother Jean all but drove Charles into poverty, “poverty” in this context is a decidedly relative term.
himself and his brother must have caused him many sleepless nights even in the most pleasant of accommodations.\textsuperscript{30} He could never forget for a moment that he was in the hands of his enemies. Nevertheless, in the course of his long captivity he certainly enjoyed many civilized and peaceful days: while at Pontefract he went on outings to the country with his "host," Robert Waterton, and his family;\textsuperscript{31} the earl of Suffolk, Charles’s "host" at Wingfield, was fond of evenings of musical and literary entertainment; some of Charles’s English roundels show clear evidence of having been offered to one or another lady, probably as a compliment in some social setting or other; and Charles took part in lavish entertainments in London on a number of occasions, including the visit of Sigismund, king of the Romans, in 1416.\textsuperscript{32}

One of Charles’s guardians stands out from the others as important to his life and work. William de la Pole, earl (later duke) of Suffolk, with whom Charles lodged from 1432 to 1436, played a special role in Charles’s captivity. Suffolk’s life and political career are well documented. He was near Charles’s age and newly married when he requested the custody of the French prisoner in 1432, and the two apparently became friends. He was by all accounts a francophile, sympathetic to the French cause, or, to put it in a more neutral fashion, very interested in making peace between the English and the French. Charles travelled with him to Oxfordshire, where he spent time in and around Ewelme, which came to the earl from the Chaucer family.\textsuperscript{33} Charles’s bastard brother Jean, count of Dunois had made Suffolk’s acquaintance after the battle of Jargeau, when Suffolk and his brother John were the

\textsuperscript{30} Any reading of Charles’s life will give the lie to the romantic idea that he was passed from “guardian to guardian, one more solicitous of his welfare than the next” (Spence, \textit{French Chansons}, xiv).

\textsuperscript{31} See Champion, \textit{Vie}, 171–72, and Fox, \textit{Lyric Poetry}, 10–12. Waterton is hardly to be numbered among the “servants and ruffians” with whom Goodrich associates him, nor is there evidence that Charles was held “in an almost solitary confinement” (\textit{Themes}, 46). On the contrary, the duke had horses brought from France, presumably so that he could join the chase, as well as travel with his “hosts” when necessary. Waterton, the constable of Pontefract, had his own estate, Methley Hall, six miles away, where Charles was a frequent visitor (see Ellis, 2, where Methley Hall is referred to in a letter from Henry V as “Robertis place”; see also H. A. Hall). The parish church at Methley, where Charles would have worshipped, is still standing, and contains a chapel with fine tomb effigies of Waterton and his wife.

\textsuperscript{32} See Poirion, \textit{Le Poète et le prince}, 287. On the possible social context for Charles’s verse, see Strohm, esp. 18–19.

\textsuperscript{33} See below, “Chronology,” and McLeod, 187.
count’s prisoner (see below, “Chronology”); Suffolk was thus acquainted both with Charles’s condition as prisoner and with his family and home. Dunois had earned the earl’s friendship by releasing his brother. The friendship between the the earl and the duke lasted beyond 1440 when Charles returned to France, for Suffolk visited Charles at Blois.  

What kind of man was Charles of Valois, duke of Orleans? Though he was highly thought of in his own time (both as a man and as a poet), scholars who write literary history, after ignoring him for centuries, have often been less than kind to the duke. He has been seen as refined but ineffectual, weak-willed and self-centered. His reputation among English readers and even some French scholars was tainted (this is no overstatement) by Robert Louis Stevenson’s condescending essay on his life and works. Unfortunately the editor of Charles’s French poetry and a voluminous writer on both his life and work, Pierre Champion, took his cue from Stevenson. He read the duke’s poetry as a biography sentimentale and viewed the poet as a kind of Hamlet. He deeply resents the fact that the duke never mentions his champion, Joan of Arc, saying “dépit d’un talent charmant et de la bonté recon- nue par tous chez l’homme, est vraiment une tare d’une incroyable laideur.” His poetry, too, in an age which cannot easily appreciate obsolete fixed forms, has seemed to some artificial, superficial, and divorced from the realities of life.

34 The long duration of this apparently quite genuine friendship argues against the insinuation of a number of critics that Charles was involved in some sort of affair with the duchess of Suffolk (for which there is not a shred of evidence).
35 Even Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, his greatest and most vocal enemy, never once underestimated his intellect or his cunning. The chronicler Olivier de la Marche, in referring to a journey to Burgundy with the duke in 1447, termed Charles a mould bon rhétoricien (see Champion, Vie, 361). On his reputation as a poet, see Champion, “Du Succès.”
36 “For one who was no great politician, nor (as men go) especially, wise, capable or virtuous . . .,” he begins (164); “his birth—if we are to argue from a man’s parents—was above his merit,” he continues (165); and so on (164–201). This essay follows a highly opinionated biographical sketch and literary appreciation of François Villon (“His eyes were indeed sealed with his own filth”), during which he nevertheless concludes that Villon is “the one great writer of his age and country” (158–59). Late in Charles’s life, Villon was a guest at Blois, where he composed a poem on the birth of Charles’s daughter Marie (see Frank).
37 He speaks with approval of Stevenson’s essay repeatedly in “Prince des lis.” Goodrich summarizes the published attitudes of a number of scholars toward Charles as a man and as a poet (Themes, 14–24).
39 “Charles d’Orléans n’est poète ni par la passion, ni même par l’imagina-
It would be possible to counter these negative judgments with positive ones based on historical materials, but a few facts will suffice here. We know, for instance, that Charles was an able administrator and a good politician who worked tirelessly from prison to free his brother, govern his lands, and protect his property, that he was a loyal friend, that he worked for peace between France and England, that he suffered much sorrow in his life (not least because of his long imprisonment), and that he was devout. Charles of Orleans was not a passive prisoner. In comparison with the library of his contemporary, Philip the Good of Burgundy, Charles’s books reveal a serious, reflective turn of mind, one more interested in philosophy, science, and theology than in chronicle and romance. The two works he wrote in Latin demonstrate his seriousness as well as his genuine interest in religion. In addition, we know from his life history that he was well-read in philosophy, medicine, theology, literature (including the classics), and many other subjects, that he had an interest in clocks and other mechanical devices, and that he was a musician. It is evident from his writings as well as his diplomacy that he was always able to see more than one side of a situation and to act as reality dictated when idealism was impracticable.

These facts of Charles’s life are not irrelevant to an understanding of him as a poet. They should, at the very least, help in dissociating the

40 Doutrepont, Inventaire. This inventory is admittedly early; for Richard Vaughan’s description and estimate of Philip’s library, see his Philip the Good, 156–58, and his Valois Burgundy, 171–73. On the library of Charles’s brother Jean, see Crow, 92–93.

41 Because his library was established by his father and contained many books acquired from his parents, it is useful to consult the much smaller list of books that he brought back to France from England in 1440. This collection of nearly seventy books contains many religious and moral works in addition to works on government, medicine, geometry, and philosophy (Champion, La Librairie, xxv–xxix). According to Gilbert Ouy, Thomas Wynchelsey, Master of Theology (d. 1437), who founded the library at Greyfriars, London (and was, perhaps, le directeur de conscience du prisonnier), dedicated his Instructiorum providi peregrini to the duke (“Un poème mystique,” 64–69).

42 Jacques Charpier suggests that if he had lived a century later he would have been a humanist, but “il est pour son temps un ‘intellectuel’ aussi complet qu’on pouvait l’être” (64).

43 Champion, Vie, 654.
poet from his persona, the foolish and ineffectual but devoted lover. Charles did not spend his years in England either mooning over English ladies or idly "wasting his time" writing love lyrics in an attitude of "No Care." His reputation in his own lifetime as "le plus grand des amoureux" was based, not on notorious sexual exploits, nor yet on a state of continuous love-longing, but on his poetry and speech as a highly refined form of *luf-talking*, a discourse that displayed at once his nobility and refinement, his skill as a poet, and his ability to turn the stuff of everyday life into elegant verse.  

There was some interplay between life and art in the case of this work, as there is in most if not all works of art, but speculation as to which poem refers to which lady (wife or mistress) and at what period of time remains just that. It is not simply the conventionality of this poetry, however, that militates against the presentation of the narrator's *histoire* as autobiography:

One can only wonder at the strength of a poetic tradition which made this prince of the royal blood bewail twenty-five years of captivity in a foreign land almost solely in terms of separation from his mistress, and in a manner so veiled and indirect that it is not even known for certain whether or not the lady in question was an imaginary figure [i.e., France itself], his first wife, Isabelle . . . , his second wife, Bonne . . . , an acquaintance in England, or sometimes the one, sometimes the other, or even an amalgam of all four!

---

44 See Foulet, 378, Green, *Poets and Princepleasers*, and Stevens.
45 See, for instance, Goodrich's summary of hypotheses and statement of her own (*Themes*, chap. 4 and passim), and Champion, "A propos." Many scholars have fortunately refused to speculate on the "real" identities of the ladies of Charles's poetic world, but a number of scholars have given rein to their imaginations in providing Charles with feminine companionship during his years in England. Ethel Seaton's discovery of anagrammatical evidence for Charles's romantic encounters and other friendships has been generally dismissed by scholars (*Studies in Villon*, esp. "Charles d'Orléans and Two English Ladies," 20–35; "Charles d'Orléans and Some French Ladies," 36–44). Besides Anne Molins (who appears anagrammatically in one of the English poems in Charles's "auto-graph" manuscript), scholars have named the duchess of Suffolk or the wife of Robert Waterton (Champion, *Vie*), and even (in a coy sort of way) the duchess of Burgundy (Isabelle; see van Altena, 81)—in short, any woman known to have come into contact with the duke between 1415 and 1440. Would that such scholarly energy had been put toward investigating the duke's poetry.
46 Fox, *Lyric Poetry*, x; see also 152–56.
As Burrow has convincingly argued, life may imitate art; the traditional and conventional may as likely be real as fictional. It will not do to deny the "truth" of a narrative or lyric because it does not seem sincere, nor will it do affirm its facticity because it does seem so.

These [French] ballades should be taken as they stand.... They are essentially literary in nature.... That they are altogether devoid of autobiographical elements is, indeed, unlikely, but the evidence the texts supply is scant and does not enable us to reach beyond surmise. That they have kept their secrets over the centuries is, in a way, a measure of their success, for had he so desired, Charles could easily have been more specific.

Fox might equally well have been speaking of the English poems. Premature efforts to read the facts and feelings of the duke's captivity out of his poetry, far from giving us a deeper understanding of his work, have simply thrown up pseudo-factual barriers to a real understanding of what he wrote, when he wrote it, and why he wrote it. Charles crafted poetry as an ivory carver crafts a diptych: perhaps a believer in the religious scene he is carving, perhaps not, the craftsman is thoroughly at home with the vocabulary of his art and devoted to composing and executing an object which is beautiful, intellectually interesting, and sometimes affecting. Charles took his poetry very seriously as a craft and at the same time valued it lightly as only one (self-imposed) task among a hundred others. This also disqualifies him as a writer of straightforward autobiography. Champion saw this when he said of the duke, "Voilà le tour d'esprit du maître, à la fois réel et faux," and "C'est là une des principales difficultés que nous rencontrons pour entendre une oeuvre aussi sincère qu'artificielle, aussi artificielle que sincère."

Charles's was both a serious and a playful mind, and he had a sense of humor to match his wit. He loved subtle and complex ideas, techniques, and images. His utterly remarkable lack of self-importance led him to indulge in self-mockery and to play elaborate games with art

---

47 "Autobiographical Poetry." Much has been written on autobiography and pseudo-autobiography in medieval literature. See, e.g., Gybson-Monypenny, Zumthor, and the references in Burrow's article.
49 Fox, Lyric Poetry, 156.
50 Vie, 647.
51 "Prince des Lis," 44.
and reality. The primary subject was love—love, that is, of the highly-wrought, artificial, rule-bound sort popular in the poetry (and in the courtly mythology) of his age. This love was his training ground for learning his craft, but his purview broadened over the years to include subjects of all sorts—and, more importantly in regard to his English poems, to include attitudes of all sorts toward that love which had been his first theme. He began writing poetry before his capture by the English, and he was still composing poetry when he died at seventy. That many attitudes toward love would emerge in the course of such a long career is hardly surprising. It is often difficult to discern in his love poetry the degree to which he is being genuinely serious or genuinely playful, or whether in fact he is being both at one and the same time. The latter seems often the case.

It is more useful in the context of this edition to consider the kind of poet Charles is. It is possible to state some indisputable facts about him as a poet (in both French and English): he is extremely fond of word play and word patterning and acutely aware of the language he uses; he is deeply responsive to the cadence of language (Charpier speaks more than once of his “musicalité”). He is daring in his use of imagery and in his use of different registers. He is fond of proverbs and sententious sayings, of the paraphernalia of courtly verse, and of fixed forms. He is more interested in “micropoetics” than “macro-poetics” (and though he often revises his work in both French and English, he does not do so meticulously). Anything but sentimental or romantic, he is a master of wit; his sense of humor is frequently in evidence, especially in his later poetry (and it sometimes borders on the risqué). He is as avant-garde in his imagery and use of language as he

52 He wrote pseudo-autobiography on the one hand, and on the other displayed his poetry in public. One of the most charming details about his early life—a period when very few charming things befell him—concerns his attitude toward poetry. In 1414 he paid “276 liv. 7 s. 6 den. tour.” for 960 pearls to be used to embroider on the sleeves of a robe the words and music of his chanson “Madame je suis plus joyeux.” Five hundred and sixty-eight of the pearls were used to make the 142 notes, four pearls en quadré for each note (Laborde, entry 6241, 267; this work contains, in spite of its title, an invaluable inventory of the possessions of Charles’s family, including book inventories). On this robe and others like it, see Michel 110–11 (on the conspicuous wealth of his family, see 392–93).

53 Charles d’Orléans, 90; this is a useful little book. Jean Tardieu likens the French rondeaux to “[les] danses de mots” (Charpier, 94).
is retardataire in his themes and forms. His experiments in English poetry display more than a poet’s attempt to write in a foreign language; the English poems are an experiment in the English manner and in English forms as well.

The failure of critics to see the “play” in his English poetry has resulted in many unappreciative remarks about the duke and his work. Charles’s is a mind that never lapses, a mind darting here and there, taking in information from the outside world and guarding it carefully, acting always in a state of high consciousness, manipulating the world around it. Even when his English poetry fails as poetry, it is often possible to see and appreciate the patterning force in the poet that was wrestling with the English language, attempting to force meaning to march in step with fixed form. The faults in his English poetry are faults caused by lack of skill in a foreign language and lack of time for revision—or perhaps lack of interest in it. Charles is not the confused, helpless narrator, torn by his emotions, paralyzed by his compact with the God of Love, endlessly spinning out his eloquent but dolorous rhetoric because he is powerless to do anything else. It is easy to underestimate Charles of Orleans as a man and as a poet, and paradoxically it is Charles himself who has made it so easy for us to do so.

**Chronology**

**1394**

On 24 November Charles of Orleans is born, the first son (to survive past infancy) of Louis of Orleans (brother of Charles VI) and Valentina Visconti of Milan, at the royal Hôtel de Saint-Pol in Paris (but grows up largely outside the capital at various residences).

**1406**

At the age of eleven, Charles marries a sixteen-year-old cousin, Isabelle (daughter of Charles VI and Queen Isabeau of France), widow of Richard II of England.

**1407**

Louis d’Orléans is assassinated in Paris by the Burgundians under John the Fearless (23 November).

**1408**

Valentina dies at Blois at the age of thirty-eight (4 December); Charles comes into his inheritance (and becomes duke of Orleans) at the age of fourteen.
Isabelle bears Charles a daughter, Jeanne, but dies within a few days (13 September). Charles turns fifteen.

Charles allies himself with the Armagnac faction and marries the eleven-year-old Bonne, daughter of Bernard, count of Armagnac, and niece of the duke of Berry (15 August).

Charles sends his twelve-year-old brother, Jean of Angouleme, to England as a hostage in the custody of the duke of Clarence (14 November).

Charles's captivity begins

Charles, dressed in a suit of Milanese armor and newly knighted, is captured at the battle of Agincourt (25 October) and taken to England. He is nearly twenty-one.


In June Charles is sent to Pontefract (Yorks), in custody of Robert Waterton.

Entries in italics refer to shorter trips, usually known from the existence of dated documents. These “trips” do not represent all of Charles's travels in England, and the dates are not intended to be inclusive; they serve merely as markers of some of the duke's movements in England in an attempt to give the lie to the idea that he simply “pined away” for decades in one or another castle, as if in a kind of luxurious solitary confinement. His years in England were often very busy ones, though he certainly suffered from time to time from long periods of inactivity. For a parallel (but not identical) itinerary, see Champion, Vie, 659–87.

Charles was initially held in the Tower of London. John Fox chose as the frontispiece for his Lyric Poetry a reproduction of the beautiful miniature from British Library MS. Royal 16 F ii of Charles as a prisoner in the Tower with London Bridge in the background (also in Champion, Vie, 161).

Lucy de Angulo provides a useful map of the places Charles was held (80f.). See H. Armstrong Hall. Information on all Charles's keepers is available in Rymer, Foedera. More work needs to be done on all of Charles’s movements and acquaintances in England during this period.
1419
On 7 December Charles is given into the custody of Sir Nicholas Montgomery.

1419, Peterborough (Northants, now Cambs)

1420
Charles's brother Philip, count of Vertus, dies at the age of twenty-four; his half-brother Jean (later count of Dunois and commonly referred to, by himself and others, as the Bastard of Orleans), the only remaining male sibling in France, is sixteen. The custody of the duke is given to Sir Thomas Burton, warden of Fotheringay Castle (Northants).  

June, London

1422
Charles is moved to Bolingbroke (Lincs), in custody of Thomas Comberworth. Henry V of England and Charles VI of France both die. In 1427 Joan of Arc, supported by Charles's valiant and faithful bastard brother, Jean, count of Dunois, takes up the cause of freeing France and the duke of Orleans from the control of the English. In 1429 Henry VI of England is crowned at the age of eight.

London: at least once a year, except possibly 1426.
17-18 March 1427, Canterbury (Kent)
29 March 1427, Bourne (Lincs)  
4 September 1428, Peterborough (Northants, now Cambs)

1429
In December Charles is moved to Ampthill (Beds), in custody of Sir John Cornwall, Lord Fanhope, who also held his brother Jean.  

---

56 It is unclear exactly when Charles left Pontefract or whether he lodged with Montgomery, but as Burton was warden of Fotheringay Castle, perhaps he moved at this time (see Champion, Vie, 172; McLeod, 151).  
57 Laborde records the date as 1427 (no. 6437); Champion, as 1428 (Vie, 670).  
58 The question of when and how often the two brothers might have seen each other is a matter of dispute. Gilbert Ouy has written very persuasively in favor of the view that they spent a significant amount of time together in England ("Recherches"). Lucy de Angulo has written an extremely romanticized but largely unsubstantiated article elaborating on the findings of Ouy. Enid McLeod took issue with the findings of both. In turn, Cecily Clark (rightly, in my view) takes McLeod to task for a misplaced scepticism of Ouy's work, as well as for a certain
William de la Pole, earl of Suffolk (two years Charles’s junior), is a prisoner of Charles’s brother, count of Dunois, for some months after the battle of Jargeau in May 1429.

Cornwall’s house in London repeatedly during 1430

1431
Henry VI is crowned king of France in the cathedral of Nôtre Dame in Paris on 16 December. On 29 May, Joan of Arc is burned at the stake.

1432
Charles’s daughter Jeanne dies at the age of twenty-three; Charles’s second wife, Bonne, dies at some point between 1430 and 1435.59 Suffolk requests custody of Charles on 21 July.

17 June, London
December, Dorrington (Lincs)

1433
Charles moves to Wingfield (Suffolk), in the custody of the earl of Suffolk (and his wife Alice Chaucer). He is involved in peace negotiations with France which come to nothing.

Wingfield/Ewelme (Oxon)/Wallingford and Donnington (Berks)60
12 February 1433, Ewell (Surrey)
27 May 1433, Westminster
June 1433, Dover (Kent)
6 August 1433, London (with Suffolk)
September 1435, Calais

1436
In May Charles moves to Sterborough (now Starborough, Surrey) near the village of Lingfield, in the custody of Sir Reynold Cobham. In 1437 Charles and his brother Jean meet briefly, perhaps for the first time since 1412.61

“slackness” (“Some English Perspectives,” 254–55; McLeod cites the duke’s poetry throughout as though it were historical evidence).

59 Apparently no record of Bonne’s death has survived. Some confusion has been caused by the death of her mother, for whom she was named, in 1435.

60 These are all estates belonging to Suffolk (Ewelme and Wallingford via his duchess; see Smith, 112) to which Charles apparently often travelled with Suffolk. For general backgrounds, see Napier.

61 Though Ouy (“Recherches”) has argued that the brothers spent time
London frequently between 1436 and 1439
13 July 1437 Peterborough (Northants, now Cambs)
28 October 1437 Sheen (Surrey)

1438
In July Charles moves to Stourton (Wilts), in the custody of Sir John Stourton.  
25–26 May, 16 July 1438, London
28 July 1438, Winchester (Hants)
8 March 1439, London
25 May 1439, London
May–October 1439, Calais, Gravelines
May–July 1440, London/Westminster

1440
On 28 October Charles is formally released from captivity in a solemn ceremony in Westminster Abbey, from which Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, storms out in a rage. Charles sails for Calais on 5 November, where he is greeted by the Duke of Burgundy and his wife, Isabelle of Portugal, of the house of Lancaster, chief author of his release. He subsequently adopts the device XL and 40 to commemorate the year of his release.

Charles's captivity ends
1440
Charles, just turned forty-six, marries the fourteen-year-old Marie of Cleves, niece of Isabelle, duchess of Burgundy (27 November).

1445
Charles's brother, Jean of Angoulême, is released from English captivity after thirty-three years.

 together and shared books, he makes no attempt to establish when during their captivity this was likely to have happened. It is to be hoped that more work will be done on this question.

62 On the relation of the Stourtons to the Chaucers, see Manly and Rickert (hereafter Manly-Rickert), 614–15. Germaine Dempster suggests that Stourton was a close associate of Thomas Chaucer (407). See Joseph Stevenson, 1:432–33.

63 For a reproduction of this device, with Karolus, the usual form of his name, see Charpier, 209.

64 His brother was a man of a serious turn of mind (Champion calls him
1457
At thirty-two, after seventeen years of marriage, Marie of Cleves bears Charles a daughter, Marie.

1460
François Villon, a guest at Blois, writes a poem to celebrate the birth.

1461
Charles VII dies; Louis XI ascends the throne.

1462
Marie bears Charles a son, the future Louis XII, known during his reign as the Father of his People.

1464
Marie bears Charles a daughter, Anne.

1465
Charles of Orleans dies at the age of seventy (4 January) and his English poetry is soon forgotten.

Works
Along with his abiding interest in books and their contents, Charles inherited his father's impressive library, enlarging it greatly in his long lifetime. In addition to philosophy, medicine, and literature, he was interested in the games of chess and tables, an interest that found its way into his poetry; he annotated a book on the games of chess and

"l'érudit"), as the comments he wrote in the copy of the Canterbury Tales he had made for him during his years in England make clear (see Crow; Champion, "Liber Amicorum," 321).

65 His mother, Valentina, owned a library, as did many members of his family, including his third wife, Marie of Cleves. For inventories of all of these collections, see Pierre Champion, La Librairie. While in England he both had books brought from France and acquired books or had them made on the spot. An inventory of the books he brought back from England in 1440 can also be found in La Librairie, xxv–xxix. Karen Newman's statement that "he owned no romances and no classical works except Seneca" is not true (319); he owned works by Aristotle (6 MSS), Hippocrates, Galen, Aesop, Juvenal, Terence, Lucan, Virgil (4 MSS), Sallust (2 MSS), Cato (3 MSS), Ovid, and others, as well as a Lancelot, a Roman d'Arthur, and Le Saint-Grail. Her general characterization of Charles's library is skewed.
tables, which is extant.66 His collection of religious works, both theological and devotional, attests to his deep and informed piety. His own work, therefore, was fed by his wide reading on many subjects. Charles wrote poetry in three languages: Latin, French, and English. In Latin, he composed Livre contre tout pêche at the age of ten (a work on the seven deadly sins), the Canticum Amoris, in the last years of his captivity,67 as well as at least one lyric (Carole IV) and some Latin/French macaronic verse, (Chansons LXXXVI and LXXXVII).68

His early poetry in French, "le livre qu’il fit en Inglant," roughly parallels in part the early English poetry; it is made up of a long introductory allegorical narrative in decasyllabic couplets on the model of the opening of the Roman de la rose; a series of ballades which involve a shadowy story of a love affair, the lady’s death, and the lover’s mourning; and a dream vision in which Age convinces the narrator to withdraw from the service of Love. Love grants him the return of his heart and a quittance dated 1 November 1437. The lover withdraws to the chateau Nonchaloir, from which he writes to Love to explain that his unseemly behavior at his leave-taking was caused by his grief. Charles wrote many miscellaneous lyrics while in England, including at least fifty chansons, a few ballades not included in his larger work (including some on subjects other than love), and a few lyrics in other forms (complainte, carole). On his return to France, Charles continued to write poetry, preferring lyric forms, especially the rondeau, to narra-

---

66 Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale MS. lat. 10286; see discussion below, "Chess and tables." On his medical library and medical references in his poetry, see Robert W. Linker, 95–100.

67 For the text of the Livre see Champion, Poésies, 545–50. The Canticum Amoris opens with an exhortation from the poet to his heart to love God more than His creation and ends with an invitation to contemplate the Trinity. It is a work in the Franciscan mold and one clear piece of evidence that Charles had dealings with the Franciscans in England. For another, he returned to France with a volume of John of Hoveden, which he borrowed from the Franciscans of London and never returned (Ker, 123). For more information and the text of the poem see Ouy ("Poème" and "À propos"), who first identified the poem as Charles’s.

68 These last precede two of his English lyrics, suggesting that perhaps he considered those of his lyrics not written (entirely) in French a special category of verse. Champion says of the Latin carole, "la carole chantée pour Noël demeura un usage particulièrement anglais. Il est probable que cette prose latine . . . est une composition originale de Ch. d'O. en souvenir de sa captivité en Angleterre" (Poésies, 574). On the duke’s work in Latin and references to the language, see Planche, Recherche d’un langage, 96–105.
tive, and leaving behind him the by then antiquated chanson form. By
the time of his death he had composed some four hundred rondeaux.
In addition to Fortunes Stabilnes, nine English lyrics in his own
manuscript of poems by himself and his friends are frequently attribut-
ed to him, as are two poems found in British Library MS. Royal 16 F.ii
(see Appendix I for a transcription and an account of all known texts
of these poems).69 I have not offered commentary on the texts or the
manuscripts of any of the English poems not part of Fortunes Stabilnes.
They are included here simply for the sake of completeness.

The State of Charles's English
The tantalizing comment in Hall's Chronicle that, after twenty-five
years' imprisonment, Charles "was deliuered out of Englane into
Fraunce at that tyme, bothe speakyng better Englishe then Frenche,
and also swearyng, neuer to beare Armure againt the kyng of
Englane" is unfortunately too late to carry much authority,70 but
contemporary testimony concerning Charles's English comes from his
friend René d'Anjou, who wrote in 1457:

Car prins fuz des Anglois et mené en servaige.
Et tant y demouray qu'en aprins le langaige
Par lequel fus acoint de dame belle et saige,
Et d'elle si espris qu'a Amours fis hommaige....71

Champion then adds: "Mais ce passage du roi René est plus lourd de
conséquences. A mon sens, il rouvre la question de la traduction
anglaise des poésies de Charles d'Orléans et semble bien montrer que
le problème doit être étudié dans le sens indiqué par Watson Taylor,
point de vue qui a été nié par l'école néo-critique et naturellement par
la critique allemande."72 Enid McLeod remarks that King René's

69 His own manuscript, B.N. MS. f.fr. 25458, is often referred to as an
autograph manuscript. Though it is in fact only partially autograph, I shall refer
to it as the "autograph manuscript" for the sake of economy. It is important to
bear in mind, however, that the autograph portions (except for a few minor
corrections and the addition of a few headings) are all to be found in the section
of the manuscript ("le fonds primitif") written after the duke's release from
captivity (see Champion, Le Manuscrit autographe, 20).
70 1548 edition, fol. 111; 1809 edition, 193. Holinshed, in his chronicle, took
over the quotation from Hall.
71 From his Livre du Cuer d'Amours espris, quoted in Pierre Champion, "A
propos," 583.
72 "A propos," 584.
comment on Charles’s love life in England points not only to Charles’s knowledge of English for the purposes of “love talk” but just as certainly to the lady’s slender (inadequate?) knowledge of French.\footnote{215.}

Charles must have had ample opportunity to learn English, beginning with his first sojourn in England, at Pontefract, where he certainly went on outings with Robert Waterton and his family.\footnote{Ellis, Original Letters, 1.2.} Even if his keepers made an effort to speak to him in French, he must have been surrounded by people who were not of the nobility and knew little or no French. He was not, after all, a prisoner who lived in a cell, but a royal (and expensive) guest. Scholars are agreed that, although Charles was not at liberty to travel in England, he was certainly not deprived of the company of either his hosts or his servants. Surely it would have been in Charles’s interests politically, whatever status the English language had in his eyes, to learn English well in order to understand all that went on around him, \textit{especially} that which was not intended primarily for his ears.

That he was young enough to learn the language easily and that he had ample opportunity to hear English seems beyond question. There is nothing inherently implausible about the proposition that he left England speaking better English than French. That he would have had access to English books seems equally certain. His brother Jean did. An English prisoner himself for thirty-three years, Jean of Angoulême had a copy of the \textit{Canterbury Tales} made for him in the Northern dialect he must have spoken.\footnote{See Crow, “John of Angoulême,” 86–99. Susan Crane has recently called into question the long-held assumption that the annotations in Paris, B.N. MS. fonds anglais 39, commenting on the content, are by Jean and not his scribe, Duxworth (lecture, New Chaucer Society, 1992).} One of the manuscripts Charles brought back to France with him contained “a great many prayers addressed to different saints, several of them English, which seem to suggest that he had read similar texts in English and had them translated.”\footnote{McLeod, 166. For a detailed description see Champion, \textit{La Librairie}, 80–81 (Laborde 6524). The English saints include St. Thomas of Canterbury, St. Thomas of Lancaster, St. Frideswide, St. Etheldride, and St. Edythe.}

In a three-part letter to his lord, Philip of Burgundy, written in 1433, Hue de Lannoy describes a somewhat tense meeting with Charles of Orleans in the presence of the earl of Suffolk, his “host” in England at that time. Charles clearly did not feel free to express himself
to the Burgundian embassy, nor was he satisfied with the strained communication which had passed between them, for, Lannoy says,

about two days after this came to us one called Jennin Cauvel, the barber of the earl of Suffolk, and one of the guards appointed by the said earl over my lord of Orleans, and he said to us, 'I have always been a true and loyal Burgundian, and moreover I am a native of the country of my lord of Burgundy, of his town of Lille, and therefore I love him with all my heart as my natural lord. And that I may caution you, since it has been openly said that my lord of Orleans thoroughly hates my lord of Burgundy, and that if he could escape, he would make fierce war on him, and do him much damage, I assure you on my faith, because I speak French, he is pleased to put more trust in me than in any other of his guards, or in any one whatever in our house'77

and he proceeds to assure the Burgundian embassy of the duke's friendship.

This passage says more than that the house guards were accustomed to speaking English. If this guard is telling the truth (and I see no good strategic reason for him to lie about it), then French was not commonly spoken by anyone in the household of the earl of Suffolk (which is not to say that the earl and his family could not speak French), and, as the barber makes clear that it was no extraordinary thing for the duke to converse with his guards, Charles felt more comfortable or confident with—felt he could trust—a French speaker more than a speaker of English (because the walls didn’t have French-speaking ears?). Conversely, Charles must have carried on day to day intercourse with the members of the earl's household in English. This would square with recent ideas on the status of English in the early fourteenth century.78

In describing in the same letter his reception by King Henry VI to his lord the duke of Burgundy, Hue says of the young king that, when presented with letters from Burgundy, he "asked us very graciously, and in the French language, how you were, and where you were."79

The king was about twelve years old at the time. In a similar episode,

77 Stevenson, Letters and Papers, 2.1.235–36.
78 See, for instance, Berndt; Kibbee characterizes the period between 1362 and the Age of Printing as one in which "French is dead as a mother tongue in England, even among the highest nobility" (92).
79 Stevenson, Letters and Papers, 2.1.225.
INTRODUCTION

Froissart comments on the French of Richard II in 1395. It is most unlikely that Hue would have noted that the king spoke French unless it were in some way remarkable.

Two of these poems he entered into his personal manuscript himself, using English orthography (thorn for th, the ampersand, etc.), which implies that he not only recognized the symbols but was in the habit of using them. Pierre Champion adds, “une de ces pièces, transcrite de sa main, est la combinaison de deux autres pièces que Charles d'Orléans a écrites en français.” The entire passage reads,

que Charles d’Orléans ait parfaitement su l’anglais, c’est ce que laisse entendre le discours que Gloucester prononça quand il fut question au conseil anglais de renvoyer en France le duc prisonnier. Et cette notion résulte aussi des pièces anglaises qui se rencontrent dans le ms. fr. 25458, c’est-à-dire dans le petit registre des composition de Charles d’Orléans en partie autographe. Or, une de ces pièces, transcrite de sa main, est la combinaison de deux autres pièces que Charles d’Orléans a écrites en français.

One of the two source poems is Chanson LXI, of which Champion says, “La pièce anglaise transcrite par Ch. d’O. p. 346 du ms. O est comme la traduction de cette chanson” (Poésies, 2.567). (This chanson is the eighth beyond the end of the series adapted into English.) He never states which is the other source poem, but the very fact that Charles reworked material used earlier, and in another language, will be material to a later argument. In commenting on another English poem in the autograph manuscript (Chanson LXXXIX, Poésies, 2.569), Champion notes two images which are borrowed from French poems found in the same manuscript (Ballades XVIII and XLIII).

Authorship of the English Poems

Fortunes Stabilnes, which includes nearly all of Charles of Orleans’s work in English, has been the subject of a long and fitful controversy concerning its patrimony. The controversy over the authorship of these English poems began in 1827 when Sir Thomas Croft flatly denied George Watson Taylor’s attribution of a body of poems he found in the

80 For an English translation see Ker, Chronicle of Froissart, 6.147.
81 See Champion, Poésies, 2.569.
82 “A propos,” 583–84.
British Museum to Charles, duke of Orleans. Francisque Xavier Michel echoed Croft's sentiments (if not his arguments) in 1838—and so the lines were drawn. A number of Continental scholars from a fairly early date followed Michel and Croft in declaring (sometimes categorically, sometimes in extensive discussion) that the poems must be the work of a (presumably English) translator. Anglo-American scholars have generally, though not exclusively, supported the claim that Watson Taylor made for the duke's authorship of the work. In the absence of documentary evidence (beyond the work itself, which names Charlis, duk of Orlyaunce three times), proof of Charles's authorship cannot be conclusive, but the manuscript evidence seems to favor overwhelmingly Charles as author. There is strong linguistic evidence, too, that the poems were written by a Frenchman; the only reasonable deduction from that evidence is that that Frenchman can only be Charles himself.

If Steele and Day are correct in invoking Chaucer's "definition" of "jubilee" in the Summoner's Tale (1859–62): to celebrate having held an office for fifty years, the narrator is indeed old at the time of his jubilee—hardly less than sixty-five at least if he entered Love's service very young. Such an age does not at all accord with the lover's repeated statement that he wants to avoid Elde (which he has apparently succeeded in doing), or with the action that follows the jubilee. The narrator is obviously celebrating his retirement, but this need have no connection with a period of fifty years. (In fact, if a papal jubilee is

---

83 The primary workers in this vineyard are Poirion ("Création poétique" and "Un secret désir"; Cigada, L'Opera, 54–56, and "Christine de Pisan," Stemmler, who subsumes the arguments of earlier German skeptics, and MacCracken ("An English Friend"), whose arguments are refuted by Jansen ("Fairfax Poems"). In the 1920s, Pierre Champion, the editor of Charles's French poems, did not take a firm stand on either side of the question, calling the English poems "une énigme."

84 The primary defenders are Steele and Day, Goodrich (Themes), Fox ("Poète anglais??"), and Cellini. John Fox's strongly argued article is built on suggestions by Steele and Day (made throughout their volume, but especially in an appendix "On the Relation between the French and English Versions" [302–6]), in which they discuss divergences, linguistic peculiarities, translation strategies, and word play. Cecily Clark, while declaring the dispute open, presents evidence for Charles's authorship of the work in "Charles d'Orleans: Some English Perspectives" (as well as in her review of Sasaki). An exhaustive list of scholars who have commented on the authorship question will be found in the forthcoming volume of the revised Wells Manual on the lyric, but the significant voices in the controversy can all be found listed in the Works Cited in this volume.

85 3104n.
being implied—and it is not certain that it is—Urban VI declared a jubilee of thirty years as early as the 1300s.) The term may mean no more than the poet himself says it does: a time of release and retirement from service.

It is difficult to see how Harley 682, which is laid out very much like the autograph manuscript, could have come into being unless both manuscripts were made prior to 1440 in England (and only the latter taken back to France). If Daniel Poirion were right, that the “jubilé” of Ballade LXXII was written in 1444 to mark Charles’s fiftieth birthday, four years after his return to France, Poirion’s hypothetical “English translator” could hardly have written a version of the same poem (Ballade 83). If the jubilee poem was written before 1440, the question remains as to why the manuscripts are so similar in layout (see below, “The Manuscripts”). Why pattern the layout of the English roundels, for instance, after the French chansons, copying one poem to a page and leaving the upper portion of the page blank? It is difficult to see why a translator would care about such details of layout, especially as he had no material, either pictorial or musical, to give him any reason to leave so much space blank. It would seem to be an artist’s (and owner’s) quirk rather than a copyist’s sense of propriety which would dictate such a choice.

In the margins of the autograph manuscript of French poems, some

---

86 The order of the poems is very similar; the chansons/roundels have space above each for decoration which was never filled in; the fixed-form verse always begins on a new leaf.

87 “Un secret désir,” 517, and Le Lexique, under jubilé. In “ Création poétique,” Poirion seems to realize that there is something amiss here, for he says of the jubilee, “Cette présentation [in the English poems] change complètement le sens du recueil, lui imposant une mise en scène dont on voit mal les raisons. A moins que Charles d’Orléans n’ait précisément fêté son Jubilé” (193). Although the duke plays on various details of his own experience in his poetry (both French and English), he gives no warrant for reading his poems as straightforward autobiography—quite the reverse, as the Burgundy poems attest.

88 Sometime after 1453, his personal secretary, Antonio Astesano, translated Charles’s French poetry into Latin (Bibl. Grenoble MS. 873), likewise leaving space above each roundel. This manuscript was written with Charles’s permission and under his supervision (see Champion, Poésies, 1.xii–xv). There are other anomalies to be accounted for, too. If the “translator” were interested in tidying up the French work and making it more regular and “romanesque” (Poirion’s term), why include the little miscellany of poems at the end of the roundel section (after a poem of twenty-four stanzas with no French counterpart ending the “jubilee” section), written in various forms and performing no very clear function in the whole?
poems have been renumbered, and the re-ordering was adopted by the scribe of the English manuscript. Poirion has suggested that perhaps Charles corrected his copyist, who transcribed the French poems in the wrong order and that the English order is therefore perhaps the correct one. If this is so, the autograph manuscript must have been in England when the English copy was made, or vice versa. Poirion says that

Le fonds ancien de O [the autograph manuscript] peut donc avoir été rédigé avant son retour d’Angleterre. . . . C’est peut-être ce livre que le poète a ramené, définitivement constitué et que désigne un inventaire: “Le Livre des Balades de Monseigneur a ung fermouer a ses armes” (De Laborde III, 6.545). Mais il n’est pas impossible que le manuscrit définitif ait été composé un peu plus tard, lorsque le duc eut retrouvé le calme, après l’agitation de son retour et ses rêves d’action politique.

But the autograph manuscript could not have been made in France; it must have been made in England before 1440. The question has been settled by Patricia Stirnemann, who has identified the (English) decoration of the autograph manuscript with that of other manuscripts made for the duke in England and established that Champion’s analysis of the stages of composition of the manuscript accords perfectly with her own art-historical findings. She dates the manuscript 1439–1440, places it in England (London), and identifies it tentatively with item 65 in the December 1440 inventory of the duke’s books: Plusieurs kaières de parchemin, nouvellement escripts et enluminez, apportez d’Angleterre, qui ne sont point relies.

Unlike French ballades, which may have stanzas of varying lengths but the same rhymes in every stanza, English ballades that have survived from the Middle Ages are written most commonly in eight-line stanzas (the seven-line stanza is a close second in popularity), with a new set of rhymes in each stanza (three is usual). The ballades of Charles’s second sequence demonstrate a movement away from the stricter demands of French prosody to those of English, a movement that took place at a certain time in his literary life and that involved a number of different kinds of changes all at once (see Appendix II for a

89 “Création poétique,” 190. Later copies of the French manuscript take no account of the marginal renumbering.
90 “Création poétique,” 192.
91 Avril and Stirnemann, 180–81.
summary of forms). It is difficult to see why a translator would have felt, with all his attempts to "match" the style and content of the French poems, that he could simply use a drastically different (English) form for a number of the ballades he himself composed.

Near the end of the work are translations of two poems by the duke of Burgundy (Ballades 111, 6227–54, and 113, 6283–6313). They are based on letters (in ballade form) exchanged with the duke of Burgundy, as part of the process of reconciliation which eventually led to Charles's release in 1440. The letters in question, two out of a handful of poems exchanged, were written in 1439, at a time when the English were being extraordinarily careful of their prisoner. The author of the English poems had these two poems in his possession, for he produced two English love poems based on them, addressed to the lady of the second ballade sequence.92 Whoever wrote Ballades 112 and 113 must have had access to the correspondence that passed between Orleans and Burgundy (which does not appear in Charles's autograph manuscript). Charles was no longer in the friendly, cultured household of the earl of Suffolk at this point, but in the charge of Sir John Storton in Wiltshire, and he had good reason to believe that his release was near. To whom, then, would Charles have entrusted these two ballades? No single piece of evidence argues so strongly for Charles of Orleans as the only possible author of the English poems.

Internal evidence confirms the conclusion that Charles wrote Fortunes Stabilnes. The poet's preference for masculine rhyme and his habit of rhyming on unstressed final syllables; his conflation of [-i:] and [-e:] (as well as [i] and [e]) rhymes; his un-English word order; his occasionally bizarre spellings; his use of unusual or incorrect prepositions, tenses, parts of speech, and colloquialisms; his dependence on a few prefixes, like for-, a-, and en-; and his creation of forms ending in -ment—all point to a Frenchman, who can only have been Charles, as author of the work.93 The most interesting confirmation of his authorship, however, lies in the sound play spotted by Steele and Day and analyzed further by Fox.94 The reason their arguments have not been fully accepted is perhaps that not enough attention has been paid to the

92 See Charles's ballade-letter to Burgundy on the subject of the necessity of dissembling, and especially of concealing their friendship (Ballade XCIV).
93 For detail on all these points, see my article, "Harley 682."
94 In his "Poète anglais?" but doubted by Poirion ("Création poétique") and Stemmler, who consider the word play the errors of an English translator.
unlikeliness (for the work of a translator) of some of the correspondences between French and English poems. For instance, “N’a pas long temps qu’alay parler / A mon cueur” (Ballade VI) becomes “Not long ago I hyed me apase / . . . myn hert forto counsayle” (Ballade 6, 350). Here “[N]a pas” has been transmuted into “apase.” In another passage, the sound of “agree” is transposed into “in gre”: “Recevez le, s’il vous plaist et agree” (Chanson XXVI); “And him in gre take as yowre servaunt swore” (Roundel 26, 3511). There is no possibility here of translation (or mistranslation) of meaning—only of a play on spelling and sound. This kind of word play is not unusual in the work; in fact such “sound-alikes” are sprinkled thickly through the poems. Steele and Day have included a number in their notes, but further instances are recorded in the explanatory notes in this volume, and there are surely more to be discovered. Their density accords with the wit and word play of other sorts in both Charles’s French and his English poems, and argues for common authorship of both.

Date and Provenance
The date of the completion of the English poems and their arrangement in the form in which we have them can be fixed with some accuracy. The poetic exchange with Burgundy that Charles rewrote as Ballades 111 and 113 (see above) took place during 1439. Charles left England in 1440, leaving the manuscript behind. The Harley manuscript, which was almost certainly laid out using the French manuscript as a model (or, less likely, vice versa), must accordingly be dated 1439–1440.

The dates of composition of the earlier poems can be established with no such certainty, however. Charles may have begun composing poetry in English before 1420, or he may have begun a decade later. Some of the poems may have been composed in large groups while others were “strung out” over very long periods of time. Of course Charles must have begun only after he had acquired enough English to make the work appealing, but we know with some certainty only that the poems were composed between, say, ?1420 and 1440.

---

95 For more examples of this sort of word play, see my article, “Translator?”
96 I have addressed some of these questions in “Harley 682.” Attempts to date the poems by references to May Day and Valentine’s Day within the poems are unconvincing and extremely problematic.
97 Enid McLeod, Charles’s biographer, seems to know which poems were composed when (as do some other scholars), though no one has presented any
INTRODUCTION

Nor do we know in precisely what part of England they were composed, since Charles was moved many times in the course of his captivity. We do know most of his movements in detail, however, so that clues to his composition may lie in historical records in a number of noble houses in the Midlands and around London (see above, "Chronology"). Where Charles left the manuscript on his return to France is uncertain. His last residence was Stourton, in Wiltshire, but he spent time in London repeatedly during his last years in England (as he did throughout his captivity), and he might have had the manuscript made there or had it with him when he last visited there.

The Influence of Fortunes Stabilnes on Later English Works

Fortunes Stabilnes seems to have attracted little attention from the fifteenth century to the nineteenth, finding its way, even in fragments, into no early printed text. It was apparently read by at least a few people in the immediate aftermath of Charles’s departure from England, however. At least one copy was made of Harley 682 (see below, "The Manuscripts"), fragments of which are to be found at Oxford and Cambridge. This or another copy was probably read by the author of The Assembly of Ladies. In particular, the description of Attemperance in that work seems to echo Charles’s description of Fortune (519–39). Written in the literary dialect of London English in the third quarter of the fifteenth century or a little later, probably by a practicing poet, The Assembly of Ladies gives us a glimpse, at least, of the immediate afterlife of Charles’s English work. At the same time, it provides some evidence that the manuscript Charles left behind may have been left in or near London or have quickly made its way into that general area. Robert Steele has suggested that Charles’s work influ-

solid evidence to support such claims. Champion went so far as to present a detailed Chronologie of Charles’s French poems (xxii–xxvi), but then he believed that

cette histoire [of his poetry], le poète la disposera harmonieusement; le recueil de ses compositions s’augmentera progressivement, suivant les péripéties de sa vie intérieure. Préface, conclusion, anniversaires, fêtes de Saint-Valentin et de mai, rien ne manque à cette chronologie sentimentale.

(Vie, v–vi)

I trust I am not alone in believing that it is not sound practice to read either biography or (literary) history from art (which is not to say that a knowledge of biography or history cannot be useful in the study of literature).

98 In his edition of the poem, Pearsall has detailed the borrowings from Fortunes Stabilnes (The Floure and the Leafe, 18 n. 1).
enced Richard Roos in his translation of Alain Chartier's poem, *La Belle Dame sans merci*.  

**Literary and Formal Considerations**

**Sources and Influences**

The influences of contemporaries and predecessors (from both sides of the Channel) on Charles’s English poetry are often subtle and diffuse. B. A. Windeatt’s descriptions of Geoffrey Chaucer’s borrowings as “creative adaptation” or “re-creative translation and refashioning” or an “imaginatively selective response to the larger movement of his sources” might equally well apply to the borrowings of Charles of Orleans.  

Though verbal echoes of various writers are to be found in *Fortunes Stabilnes*, ideas and images are more often reinterpreted and recombined with other borrowings or with Charles’s own creations to produce passages which carry the (sometimes unmistakable) fragrance of other works without looking at all like them.

**ENGLISH:** Daniel Poirion writes of the “influence anglaise” even on Charles’s early chansons, and indeed various English influences played upon all that Charles wrote. While Charles took his French literary tradition with him when he went to England and made use of it in both bodies of poetry, his greatest debt among English poets is undoubtedly to Chaucer, though specific debts are usually difficult to pin down. *Fortunes Stabilnes* is a remarkably original work, however traditional its forms and however well it fits into certain categories of tradition and technique current in the fifteenth century. Specific borrowings from Chaucer’s work are relatively few, though verbal echoes do occur. Steele and Day, for instance, point to a “general resemblance” between “The Complaint unto Pity” and lines 161–74 of Charles’s poem.

---

99 He does not support his claim that Roos borrows phrases from Charles (xix), but I have noted a few verbal parallels in the explanatory notes.

100 There is no better introduction to Charles’s approach to his sources than Barry Windeatt’s preface to *Chaucer’s Dream Poetry*, ix–xvii. Though I would not claim that Charles’s English poetry is comparable to Chaucer’s in quality, both seem to have approached the process of “creation” from the same direction, using the work of others freely but never imitating it slavishly.

101 *Le Poète et le prince*, 287.

The most striking parallel between *Fortunes Stabilnes* and Chaucer's work would seem to be Ballade 72, which depicts the lover wakened by "an oost of foules" who are choosing their mates on Valentine's Day, but in fact Charles may have borrowed this scene from the French poets Grandson or Christine de Pizan, or even from Gower. If he did borrow anything from the *Parliament of Fowls*, he took very little, contenting himself with a few details of setting and an occasional phrase.

For material more to his liking, Charles turned to the *Book of the Duchess*. His fusion of lover and narrator has interesting implications in the latter half of Charles's work, as the narrator is faced with his lack of success in love. The lady, unlike the good, fair White, is described almost entirely in terms of her external charms (beauty and demeanor) and her effect on others, whereas Chaucer's knight dwells on his lady's inner virtues. (The poet's failure to attribute virtue to the lady explicitly is unusual in substantial works involving *fin amors.*) Like the Black Knight, Charles's narrator plays chess with his enemy, though he names him as Daunger, aided by Fortune (Ballade 61). Like him, our lover has lost his queen (*lady*). It is Fortune, however, who has taken his lady, "overthrown" his game, and "mated" the lover. Verbal parallels also imply a knowledge of Chaucer's poem (cf. *Book of the Duchess* 595–97 with *Fortunes Stabilnes* 5856–58, Ballade 99). Evidence that Charles of Orleans knew the *Book of the Duchess* by the time he

103 All four make use of this convention and their work may well have been known to Charles (see Henry Ansgar Kelly, 64–76, 134–38, Bennett, and Braddy, 71–85). That Ballade 72 has a French counterpart that is very similar to the English could be taken as evidence that he had encountered this set of ideas in the work of a French poet (for a translation of Grandson's *Le Songe saint Valentin*, see Windeatt, 120–24), but it is just possible that he used an English formulation of the idea in his French poem (Ballade LXVI). For a summary of French and English poets who wrote on the subject, see Oruch, 557–61. Sarah Spence is mistaken when she states that I have argued that Chaucer influenced (Charles's?) French poetry in my article "The English Poetry of Charles of Orleans" (*French Chansons*, xxxii).

104 Steele and Day detail the parallels, and Goodrich lists a number of general similarities between the two works (*Themes*, 88 n. 36). Of course not all the details mentioned here were unavailable to Charles from the French tradition—quite the contrary. Yet the density of parallels suggests that the Frenchman knew the English poem.

105 This is an interesting inversion of an older tradition that juxtaposes chess, which is dominated by skill (i.e., virtue), and dice, which is dominated by fortune (see Tronzo).
composed much of his first sequence of ballades would seem to give the lie to those who would date his acquaintance with Chaucer’s works to his years in the household of Alice Chaucer, countess of Suffolk.¹⁰⁶

¹⁰⁶ When Charles took up residence with them in 1433, Alice Chaucer, Geoffrey’s granddaughter was (fairly recently) married to William de la Pole, earl of Suffolk (though only twenty-six years old, it was her third marriage; she was eight years older than the earl—Roskell, 184). This fact, together with the clear sympathy between the two noblemen which is evidenced in the records, has led many to suppose that Alice Chaucer introduced Charles to her grandfather’s poetry (see Crow, 88 n. 5, who refers to Champion’s quaint suggestion that Chaucer may have had an affair with her [see “A Propos,” 584]). There are a number of assumptions involved in this proposition: that Alice was interested in (and perhaps owned copies of) Chaucer’s poetry, that no other Englishman whom Charles had met had presented the prince (who was known to write poetry) with a sample of the best the English had to offer, and that Charles did not encounter Chaucer’s poetry until he had been in England for nearly twenty years.

None of these assumptions, except perhaps the first, seems at all likely. Manly and Rickert, in describing the Chaucer manuscript owned by Charles’s brother Jean, mention that Sir Thomas Comberworth, Charles’s keeper between 1422 and 1429, owned a Chaucer manuscript (404), and Martin Crow says that Jean’s Chaucer manuscript was corrected from an exemplar “which we should like to think belonged to Alice Chaucer and was lent through her husband, William de la Pole, to his friend, Angoulême” (96; see also 99). There is a good deal of wishing going on here. The magic inherent in the name Alice Chaucer does not seem to warrant the charming assumption that she was the first to present the French poet with the work of the Father of English Poetry—still less the even more charming assumption that she taught him English, as Gustave Cohen once suggested (125). Van Altena claims she herself wrote poetry as well (194, Xn) and that some scholars have suggested that she may have written the English poems (195, XIn), but neither statement is supported by a citation.

For the possibility that there may have been a Chaucer manuscript in the de la Pole family, see Manly and Rickert (235, 613; also 614–15); but no copy of her grandfather’s work is to be found in the list of the personal belongings she removed from Wingfield to her own house at Ewelme after her husband’s death, though a number of other books are listed (Travis-Cook, 18–20). Travis-Cook’s list of books is incomplete, however, as Carol Meale demonstrates (208). Though the duchess is thought to have commissioned Lydgate’s _Virtues of the Mass_ (a commentary on the mass, according to Schirmer, 176)—a work more likely to appeal for its religious sentiments than for any literary ones—her acts of patronage on Lydgate’s behalf say nothing about her interest in her grandfather’s poetry (see Pearsall, _Lydgate_ 162, 258; for some doubt as to her patronage, see Samuel Moore, 204). Carol Meale has kindly provided a transcription of the list of Alice’s manuscripts removed from Wingfield to Ewelme in 1466, among which appear a _frensh boke of quaterfitz Emond, a frensh boke of temps pastour, Christine de Pizan’s Citee de dames, a frensh boke of the tales of philisphers, and Lydgate’s translation of the pilgrimag_. Germaine Dempster has suggested that Chaucer “no doubt must have known well” Suffolk’s father and grandfather (407). More work needs to be done on this group of people and their manuscripts.
Charles's setting of the encounter of the narrator with Venus on the seashore may owe something to Chaucer's sandy landscape in Book 1 of the *House of Fame* (see below, "Setting"), and Charles's ride on Venus's "coattails" up to Fortune's wheel in the second dream vision, his fear of heights, and his loud cry of "O lady Venus, mercy!" which wakes him from his dream would seem to owe something to Geoffrey's flight in the claws of Chaucer's eagle.  

Charles read *Troilus and Criseyde* and echoes it. Both lovers have memories of their absent ladies. Charles justifies his misery by describing his memories of his late lady to Venus (4822–44); Troilus rides through Troy sharing with Pandarus his memories of good times with Criseyde (V.561–81). The later passage was clearly not written with the earlier one in hand (as Lydgate's imitations often seem to be). Charles rather remembers the scene (which is surely one of the most pathetic and heart-rendering in Chaucer's poem) and uses (twice, at lines 3416 and 4923), for his own quite different purposes, the idea of memories of a lady lost.  

It is much more important to recognize the way in which Charles's work is suffused with Chaucerian material and techniques than to spot such parallels. Chaucer may not be Charles's exclusive source for his narrator, but his "Chaucerian" narrator does not develop fully until after the first ballade sequence has been written, and in the second dream vision Charles's humor is broader and the incongruities of the lover's situation are more evident than in the first. That these narrative techniques appear suddenly in a highly developed form that has no

---

107 Though the similarity of Charles's description of the Venus floating on the sea (4760–67) to Chaucer's in *HF* (132–37) and *KnT* (1955–62) is probably fortuitous, as such brief descriptions are standard, the relationship of Venus as teacher to ex-lover as obtuse student is strongly reminiscent of the relationship of the eagle to Chaucer's narrator, though precise parallels are difficult to draw.  

108 In addition to the phrase "dubbil sorow," in Ballade 99 he echoes the "Litera Troili" (V.1373–79). For other verbal parallels, cf. 333 : iii.131 and v.923; 4962–63 : v.991–93; 5630 : ii.392; 5874 : v.1596; 6216–17 : iv.587–88; 6314–15 : v.1317–18. Although the "Troilus stanza" was popular in England in the early fifteenth century, the fact that it is the verse form chosen by Charles for the second (and I would say Chaucerian) dream vision may lend some additional credence to the idea that the author may have known the *Troilus* by this time.  

In a passage that occurs early in the work (56–202) but was probably composed quite late (see below, "Order of Composition"), he echoes Chaucer's "Complaint unto Pity" (161–74, see also 629).
place in Charles's earlier French poetry points directly to Chaucerian influence.\(^{109}\)

Charles's acquaintance with the works of John Gower yielded a number of distinctive details in *Fortunes Stabilnes* that indicate his careful reading of the latter's work.\(^{110}\) Gower's portrait, in his *Confessio Amantis*, of an aging lover forced to come to terms with his unsuitability for love, who subsequently withdraws from Love's service, may have been the model for Charles's handling of the vision of Age and the lover's retirement to the Castle of No Care. Genius's demeanor and counsel in his final speech in the *Confessio* suggest those of Age, and the document, written in sadness, that Gower's narrator addresses to Cupid and Venus as the result of Genius's advice looks much like that composed on the advice of Age and presented to the God and Goddess of Love by Charles's narrator. Both poets deal with the incompatibility of love and age. One difference is, of course, that Gower's lover is genuinely old, as the mirror Venus gives him proves. Charles's lover, on the other hand, cannot have reached old age (or passed the age suitable to the service of Venus), since the God of Love tries to interest him in a new lady and Venus considers him ripe for a new love affair at the end of his period of "retirement."\(^{111}\)

---

\(^{109}\) On the relation of the narrators of Machaut to those of Chaucer, see Wimsatt "Guillaume de Machaut," and William Calin, "Machaut’s Legacy."

Helen Louise Cohen suggests that the poet's replacement of a reference to *Yseud* with *Alcest* and his addition of *Dido* to his list of heroines in Ballade 64 may point to his acquaintance with *LGW* (*The Ballade*, 275). For a series of suggestions of borrowings from Chaucer, see Hammond, *English Verse*, 215. Much that has been written in recent years on French-English literary relations presents a useful backdrop for this work; see e.g., the work of Wilkins, Wimsatt, and Crépin.

\(^{110}\) Burrow suggests that "during his twenty-five years of captivity in England, the French prince could hardly have failed to learn something of an English poem then much in vogue, the *Confessio Amantis*; so it is not surprising to find that his 'Songe en complainte' [the French version of the vision of Age and withdrawal from love] bears a distinct resemblance to the closing pages of Gower's poem" (*Ages*, 186; see also "Portrayal").

\(^{111}\) Another possibility is that we are to see the narrator as the kind of old fool (*senex amans*) that Age warns him about, but I see no evidence of this in the encounter with the new lady or the second ballade sequence.

Burrow has detailed resemblances between the withdrawal from love of Charles's lover and Gower's ("Portrayal of Amans," 19–20, and *Ages*, 186–88). Aging lovers are also well known in French literature. Machaut (*Voir-Dit*) and Froissart (*Le Joli Buisson*), among others, portray the incompatibility of Love and Age (see Burrow, *Ages*, 157–60; also his "Langland"). It is no surprise that the matter should arise repeatedly, since figures varied significantly. In Froissart's terms, youth (*fonece*), or the age appropriate to Venus, lasts only from ages
It is likely, too, that Charles was acquainted with Gower's *Cinkante Ballades*, given the striking similarity in the way each poet treats the idea of Fortune. In the *Confessio*, Gower seems to have anticipated, in a less brilliant way, Charles's concept of *Fortunes stabilnes*. Having presented his supplication in Book 8, Gower's lover makes his final plea to Cupid and Venus:

I se the world stonde evere upon eschange,
Nou wyndes loude, and nou the weder softe;
I mai sen ek the grete mone change,
And thing which nou is lowe is eft alofte;
The dredfull werres into pes fulofte
Thei torne; and evere is Danger in o place,
Which wol noght change his will to do me grace.

(8.2259–65)

It requires no more than a substitution of a word to change the *stabilnes* of *Danger* into that of *Fortune*. In Ballade 20 of *Cinkante Ballades*, Gower develops the idea further:

Fortune, om dist, de sa Roe vire ades;
A mon avis mais il n’est pas ensi,
Car as toutz jours la troeve d’un reles,
Qe jco sai nulle variance en li
Ainz est en mes deseases establi,
En bass me tient, q’a lever ne me lesse
De mes amours est tout ceo qe jco di,
Ma dolour monte et ma joie descresce.

Apres la guerre om voit venir la pes,
Apres l’ivern est l’estee beal flori,
Mais mon estat ne voi changer jammes,
The idea is clear enough, but Gower muddies the concept of *stabilnes* by introducing a refrain (Ma dolour monte et ma joie descresce) which implies the idea of alternation.\(^{113}\) Charles’s ballade (4680ff.) on the nature of Fortune is, by contrast, clear and direct.

**FRENCH:** Charles’s own library was impressive. Among the literary works he owned were the *Roman de la rose* (two copies), Jean de Meun’s *Testament*, Arthurian material, works by Chartier, Froissart, Deschamps (ballades), and many other French authors, as well as anonymous poems and fables and the works of a number of classical authors, including Virgil and Statius. He owned a book entitled *Questions d’amour,* another called *Jardin d’amours,* various books designated simply *Ballades,* and a copy of the *Cent Ballades.*\(^{114}\) He both ordered books to be sent to him in England and acquired books there or had them copied. In his youth, Charles was surrounded by minstrels, musicians, and poets. His father, Louis, himself a contributor to the *Cent ballades,* entertained Froissart, Garencières, Boucicaut, and other poets and was a patron of Deschamps and of Christine de Pizan; we know that Charles read and admired Christine’s poetry, for he adapted one of her poems into English.\(^{115}\)

---

\(^{113}\) Gower seems unaware of the wonderful possibilities this paradox presents; he employs the usual idea of mutable Fortune much more frequently in his poetry (as in CA 8.585–89). The second stanza of this passage also contains a formulation which bears a striking resemblance to 5436–39.

The influence of Lydgate, another likely English model, given the amount of and area from which he wrote, is impossible to trace. Although we know that John Lydgate visited the earl of Suffolk during Charles’s stay at Wingfield and that, as a friend of Alice’s father, Thomas Chaucer, he is very likely to have met the duke either at Ewelme or at Wingfield, I have been unable to find any convincing evidence that Charles knew Lydgate’s poetry (as James I surely did). Lydgate does provide a large body of poetry which is useful for comparative linguistic and syntactical purposes, hence the many references to his works in the explanatory notes. See McLeod, 187; also Pearsall, *Lydgate,* 161–63, and Schirmer, 234–35).

\(^{114}\) Champion, *La Librarie.*

\(^{115}\) On Louis’s court, see Champion, *Poésies,* xxiii. On Charles’s adaptation of a poem by Christine de Pizan, see Urwin, and Cigada, “Christine de Pisan.” He owned copies of her *Livre de prudence, Livre du corps de police, Chemin de longue étude,* and *Étires sur le roman de la rose.* For a statement on the French influences on his early French poetry, see Champion, “Prince de lis,” 42.
Influences on Charles’s work are thus not far to seek. His poetry inevitably betrays an acquaintance with the *Roman de la rose*, especially in the early work, but its influence may well have made itself felt as much through poems written in the intervening years as through direct contact with the work of Guillaume and Jean. Charles’s opening allegory, however (now lost in the English version), is strongly reminiscent of *Amant’s* adventures in the Garden of *Déduit*.  

Charles could hardly have escaped the influence of Guillaume de Machaut and his followers, most of whose works were known to him. Though Chaucer provided the most graphic models, the inept and comic aspects of Charles’s narrator would mark no serious departure from the tradition created by Jean de Meun, Machaut (*Le jugement du roy de Behaingne, Remede de Fortune, Le Voir-Dit*, and especially *La Fontaine amoureuse*), and Froissart. Charles’s structuring of a narrative containing dream visions interspersed with lyrics in fixed forms, which are carefully prepared for within the narrative, all on the subject of love, is evidence that he shared in the literary tradition of Machaut, Froissart, Deschamps, Grandson, Christine de Pizan, and many others. That tradition was already developing the use of the debate and pseudo-autobiography, the narrator’s preoccupation with Daunger, Fortune, and despair, and the presentation of realistic and pseudo-legal documents.

Daniel Poirion has suggested that Charles, in some of his early French poems, was influenced by and shares something of the style of

---

The point has frequently been raised that Charles has left no evidence of having owned books in English. Although much can be learned by studying the lists of books he owned, it is dangerous, if not foolhardy, to argue from the absence of certain titles or kinds of books that he must not have known or cared for them. Following this line of reasoning, for instance, we would have to conclude that he did not know (or did not care about) most of the works of Machaut, Froissart, and many other forerunners and contemporary (love) poets (including François Villon).

116 On Froissart’s reading of the *Rose* “through the medium of Machaut’s reworkings,” see Huot, *From Song to Book*, 304. Charles was exposed to the same medium, as well as to the poems of Froissart.

117 Daniel Poirion says, “On n’a pas retrouvé la trace des oeuvres de Machaut dans la librairie personnelle avant 1440; mais cet auteur figurait dans celle de Dunois en 1468. L’influence du maître semble se confirmer dans l’affabulation du “Service d’Amour,” interprétation lyrique du thème de l’éloignement. Mais il est évident que les thèmes, les motifs, le langage de Machaut ont exercé une influence diffuse sur tout le lyrisme de cette époque” (*Le Poète et le prince*, 277–78; this passage is part of a larger discussion of French influences on Charles; see also Champion, “Prince de lis,” 42).

118 See Douglas Kelly, 178–82. It is even possible that Charles was influenced by French poetry written in England by Englishmen, e.g., Gower’s *Cinkante ballades* (see above).
Alain Chartier, but Chartier’s influence is also discernible in the later English poems. The abjectness of the lover and the commonsense, practical approach of both Venus and the new lady to the problem of love recall a number of similar ladies in French courtly verse, but Chartier created the paradigm of such ladies. What is more, John Fox suggests that, although it is possible that he arrived at it independently, Charles may have found his important attitude of nonchaloir (No Care) in Chartier’s work.

Le Songe vert, which apparently influenced Oton de Grandson, also has a number of ideas in common with Fortunes Stabilnes, particularly with Charles’s development of the transition from the narrator’s first love to his second. The tone of Le Songe vert is utterly unlike that of Fortunes Stabilnes, with none of the broad humor of the second dream vision. Even so, it may have provided a framework for Charles’s conception of the reinvolvement of the bereaved lover in love.

Closer to home, we know that in his early years Charles was a friend of Jean de Garencières, who died at Agincourt in 1415, and that in his French poetry he imitated some of the young poet’s work, as well as that of Oton de Grandson. Grandson’s “Complainte de Saint

119 See Le Poète et la prince, 286, where he says that Charles received Chartier’s poems by 1431. In “Création poétique” (207–8) he compares Charles’s Ballade XXVI with a rondeau by Chartier (Piaget, 56; see also Hoffman, 50–52). The unique manuscript of the poems of Garencières contains works by both Chartier and Charles (Laidlaw, 23).

120 See, e.g., Sabatier, 328. Steele suggested (see below) that Charles in turn influenced Chartier’s translator, Richard Roos.

121 Lyric Poetry, 63–64. Nigel Wilkins mentions in passing that the word is used by Machaut, but, he says, the duke “takes the theme and exploits it in far greater depth than any of his predecessors. Nonchaloir is a departure from traditional courtliness, and it is the key attitude in the poems of Charles d’Orléans’ maturity” (Ballades, 141).

122 Wimsatt discusses the relationship of a number of “poems of complaint and comfort” including Le Songe vert and Grandson’s complaints, in his book Chaucer and the French Love Poets, chapter 8. For the text of the poem, see Constans. The taking of a new love by a bereaved lover is not very unusual in French literature. Grandson’s bereaved persona in his “Complainte de Saint Valentin,” for instance, finds a new love who closely resembles the lady he has lost to death.

123 Pierre Champion points to both relations in Vie, 244–45. For details of the personal and the literary relationship between Charles and Jean, see Poirion, Le Poète et le prince, 279; Fox, Lyric Poetry, 66–69; and the authoritative dissertation of Y.A. Neal, esp. 195–215. For the work of Grandson (or Gra[u]nson), see Piaget. All of these scholars discuss the relation of other poets’ works to Charles’s French poetry, but not to his English. Charles had already written poetry in
Valentin” not only contains the idea of the choosing of sweethearts on Valentine’s Day, but tells of a bereaved lover who refuses to follow the dictates of the God of Love to choose a new lady, arguing that he should be left to his grief.  

His dolorous “Livre Messire Ode,” a complex work in mixed forms, even contains a pseudo-document of the kind Charles was so fond of.

ITALIAN AND LATIN: All his life Charles, duc d’Asti, was acquainted with “things Italian.” His mother, Valentina Visconti, who came from Milan to marry the dashing prince Louis of Orleans, was a cultured woman. She brought with her as part of her dowry the lands of Asti, lands Charles was not to visit until after his return from captivity in England, in 1448. Christine de Pizan was welcomed at the court of Louis and Valentina. In later years, Charles’s secretary, Antonio d’Asti (Astesano), a Lombard who lived at Blois from 1461 to 1463, translated Charles’s French poetry into Latin. The duke owned the works of a number of Italian authors, though none of them apparently in Italian. Among the Latin works he owned were Boccaccio’s De Casibus (two copies, at least one inherited from his father) and De Mulieribus claris (two copies), and Petrarch’s Epistole. He owned another unnamed work by Petrarch in a French translation, as well as Le Trésor by Brunetto Latini (two copies, one of which he inherited from his father).

The only Italian Charles used in his poetry, however, is in Rondeau CCLVI, a macaronic lyric in French and Italian, of which Champion

French before Agincourt (see below, “Order of Composition”).

124 When Love shows him a beautiful lady, he immediately capitulates. It is his arguments for resisting the new love, however, which are most evocative of our narrator’s presentation of his petition before the parlement of Love (see Piaget, 183–93; on the linking of the work of Grandson and Charles by a contemporary, Martin Le Franc, see 144–45).

125 See 1548n. Piaget describes Grandson’s “Livre” as a poem of “2465 vers octosyllabes rimant deux à deux, dans lesquels sont intercalées de nombreuses pièces: ballades, chansons, complaints, débat du Coeur et du Corps, lettres en prose et en vers” (143–44); the detailed summary that follows reveals a close relationship between the images and ideas of the two young poets (144–53).

126 An inventory of her books made in 1388 can be found in Champion, La Librairie, lxix–lxxi. Fox discerned no Italian influence on Charles’s poetry via Valentina and makes the further claim that she was not “a great reader” (Lyric Poetry, 5–6).

127 For more detail, see Champion, Poésies, xii–xv.

128 An inventory of 1455 includes payment to one Bertran Richart “pour escripre le livre de Françoys Petrac, en francoys, pour MdS” (Laborde, 6776).
says “la pièce est farcie dans le dialecte d’Asti.”129 In his discussion of Italian influence on the poet, John Fox says that the time was not right in northern France for poets to adopt Italian humanism or to imitate the poetry it produced.130 As earlier scholars have noted, Charles’s poetry looks backward rather than forward in theme, form, and style; his innovations are technical and linguistic, and involve subtle sophistication rather than avant-garde leaps.

Charles composed two works and a few lyrics in Latin (see above, “Works”). Although it is not possible to say in which language Charles read Boethius’s Consolation of Philosophy, he clearly knew it well. He owned at least seven copies, in Latin and French (at least two of them glossed—one by Nicholas Trivet), of which he had two with him in England.131 His knowledge of the work is evident throughout Fortunes Stabilnes, though specific borrowings are difficult to pinpoint.132 Likewise, he surely knew the Aeneid, whether through the Latin or the French (see below, “Setting”). He owned two copies of the poem (at least one in Latin), as well as two other manuscripts which included works by Virgil.133 The meeting of the narrator with Venus echoes Aeneas’s encounter with his mother. Like Aeneas, the narrator does not recognize Venus, who has come to put an end to his unhappiness by introducing him into the good graces of a lady.134

129 Poésies, 588.
130 Lyric Poetry, 49. See also Champion, Vie, xi; Poirion, Le Poète et le prince, 618; Douglas Kelly, 222 (Cocco is of another opinion, as is Foffano). The matter is one of no great import to this work, for whatever contact he had with Italian humanism and poetry must have taken place for the most part after his release from captivity in 1440, when the English poems had already been written.
131 Champion, La Librairie, 21–22, 26–27.
132 Except perhaps for 4869: “Remembre must ye that ye ar a man.” On the relationship of the Consolation to Fortunes Stabilnes, see Goodrich, Themes (190–92), who injects a good deal of interpretation into her comparisons, and Douglas Kelly (discussing the French poems, 123–37).
133 Champion, La Librairie, 112–14. Goodrich (Themes, 190) states that “Champion found that the poet took home to France three copies of the Aeneid” (citing La Librairie), but no works by Virgil are listed in the 1440 inventory (see La Librairie, xxv–xxxi), though the four I have mentioned all appear in the 1417 inventory.
Although Charles’s mother, Valentina, owned manuscripts in German and he mentions Alemant in a list of languages in Chanson LXXX, there is no evidence that he knew or read German himself (see Planche, 113).
134 We know from Chaucer’s House of Fame (219ff.) and his legend of Dido that the Dido and Aeneas sub-plot was well known and was considered appropriate material for late medieval love poetry (see House of Fame discussion above and Goodrich, Themes, 188–90).
Themes and Conventions

SETTING: Unlike Chaucer and his followers, who seemed to revel in physical descriptions, especially of interiors, Charles employs a variety of settings without describing any of them in any detail. Even a superficial comparison of Charles’s poetry with that of Chaucer makes clear that Charles is no lover of nature. He includes no Chaucerian catalogues of trees or birds; he is emphatically a poet of the great indoors. In the lost opening allegory (which can be reconstructed by referring to its French counterpart), the prospective lover meets Dame Jennesse and is taken immediately to “un manoir / Trop bel assis et plaisant a voir” (103–4), which he enters but makes no attempt to describe further.

At the end of the first ballade sequence the God of Love holds a parliament where, although no buildings or rooms are described, the setting is clearly the hall of a lord. The lover retires to the Castle of No Care, a day’s ride from the God of Love’s court, which is also referred to as a manor but is not described. While in retirement, the narrator gives a banquet for his fellow lovers, during which the food and ritual are detailed, but the setting is left largely to the reader’s imagination. We are, again, in the hall of a lord’s castle.

The second dream vision was written when the poet was in a different frame of mind or subject to different influences, or perhaps it was simply composed much later than much of the rest of the work. Suddenly, full, Chaucerian-style description of the setting pours from the poet’s pen. The dreamer falls asleep on a turfed bench (as Chaucer’s narrator in the Legend of Good Women does) built on a shiny, glass-like cliff overlooking the sea. Where the rough waves lap the shore, the lover sees a lady floating ashore on the waves, and the poet begins his description of Venus. This setting, reminiscent of the story

135 Poirion discusses Charles’s avoidance of the pastoral themes popular in his day (Le Poète et le prince, 488–94); Charles “situe le plus souvent son espace poétique dans le décor familier de sa chambre, avec un mobilier sommaire fait de coffres et d’armoires” (Ro. 18), for “C’est un paysage artificiel que l’on préfère, malgré tout, au paysage naturel” (490). It is the flowers embroidered on Fortune’s mantle, not those in the field, that he describes with such obvious enjoyment.

136 On the Court of Love as a court of law and a feudal court (and indeed a feudal court is a court of law), see Stevens, 164–67.

137 On settings in late medieval poetry, see Derek Pearsall and Elizabeth Salter. Landscapes and Seasons, chap. 6, 176–77 (in which they mention the limitations of the “landscapes” of Charles’s French poetry).
of Aeneas's encounter with his mother on the Libyan beach at the outskirts of Carthage, may have come to the poet through his reading of Virgil, or it may have been suggested to him by Chaucer's account in his *House of Fame*. The scene may also have been shaped by the landscape Geffrey finds himself in at the end of Book I: a sandy desert "withouten toun, or hous, or tree, / Or bush, or grass, or eryd lond / ... / Ne no maner creature / That ys yformed be Nature," in other words, beyond the bounds of civilization. Geffrey's response to this prospect is, "O Crist ... that art in blysse, / Fro fantome and illusion / Me save!" (484–94); the strange barrenness of Charles's sandy landscape is reinforced by Venus's cry, "Allas that ther nar ny of hir sum boch!" (5089).138

Charles's setting is decidedly not a desert, however, but a seashore. What makes this setting remarkable is that, though common enough in romance, it is virtually unique among late medieval dream-vision settings. Temples, prisons, gardens, yes, but a scene set on a wild seashore is contrary to all that medieval love allegories and dream visions have prepared us for.139 The sea is, of course, a common enough image, for instance, in Chaucer's *Troilus*, but Charles has expanded that image and amplified its implications for his dream vision. The sea is indeed the Sea of Fortune (as it is in so many late medieval works), but also the sea of worldly delights associated with Venus.140 The course of the love it heralds is surely hinted at by the fact that the setting in which the lover encounters Venus is no man-made one.

After awakening from his dream, the narrator wanders into "a grene

138 See Benson, *Riverside Chaucer*, HF 482–88n; also Patch, "Chaucer's Desert." Deschamps describes the desert in his *Lay du desert d'amour* as a place where "il n'a fuelle, ne boys vert, / Herbe, fleur, fruit n'autre verdure; / Tout chant d'oiseil y et desert" (De Queux de Saint-Hilaire, 236–40).

139 Compare, for instance, the seashore as Chaucer represents it in the *FktT*: far from being a setting for a love vision, it is a horrible and dangerous place, hostile to human life and limb. I am grateful to Sylvia Horowitz for drawing my attention to this contrast. A later parallel to this seashore scene is to be found in the prologue of Sir David Lindsay's *The Dream* (late 1520s), in which the narrator, who has spent the night in *heusy thocht*, goes to the seashore "pensyue in hart," with pen and paper "to Register, in ryme, / Sum mery mater of Antiquitie." There he falls asleep in a cave "in the Roche" overlooking the shore of a sea which clearly represents *Instabiltie* (57–147). I am grateful to A. C. Spearing for bringing this poem to my attention. On Lydgate's and Charles's views of landscapes, see also Pearsall and Salter, 176–77, 193.

wood shade” where he encounters a group of noble ladies and gentlemen playing a game of Post and Pillar “vpon a launde” where the grass is “soft, smothe & fayre” (5198–99). Again, he finds his lady, not in a setting made (or organized) by man, such as an enclosed garden (the usual locus amoenus of courtly play), but in the wildwood. Al- though in the romance tradition “the rules and forms of normal society are suspended or defied” in the forest, that is certainly not the case here. The order of the game, with its elaborate rules spelled out (and itself a metaphor for the love game to follow), must have presented the medieval reader with a piquant contrast to the “natural” setting—and boded ill for the commencement of a new relationship.

THE HEART: After the lover, the heart is perhaps the most important character in this work, at times occupying more of his attention than even the lady does. Although heart imagery is traditional and ubiquitous in late medieval love poetry, two aspects of Charles’s use of the heart are unusual. The idea of giving one’s heart to the beloved is unremarkable, but the graphic way in which the poet expresses the pain of living without a heart returns the process to its imaginative beginnings. Charles brings the metaphor to life by returning the physicality of the transaction to his poems:

... y haue leyd this many yere agoo
Without an hert...
Hit nys but evene of loue myracle, lo.

Who ist may lyue or longe goon on his feet
Without an hert, as y my lijf haue lad?
Now certis noon, that dar y yow bihet
In such turment as y haue ben bistad. (797–803)

141 This setting provides a marked contrast to that of the game in the Book of Hours discussed in the “Courtly Occupations” section, below. There the players are clearly outside the city, which appears in the background, but within a low, hedged area (a kind of playing field) around which noble spectators sit in small groups. The action of Clanvowe’s Cuckoo and the Nightingale takes place on a launde within a wode, but it is birds the lover finds there, not courtly games. Chaucer’s Black Knight laments in a symbolic sort of forest that, like Charles’s, is conspicuously lacking in any kind of stream. On the classical backgrounds to medieval landscapes, see Curtius, “The Grove” and “The Pleasance,” 194–200.
142 Hanning, 158.
143 The word hert occurs 337 times in the work. For a summary of the imagery of the heart in the French and in the English poems, see Purcell, 21–22.
When the God of Love returns his heart, which is on the verge of death, he places it in his “bosom” (Ballade 78), an action which we are free to read as, in effect, putting it “in a safe place” but also actually replacing it in his chest, an action which Chaucer chooses to distance from his audience by placing it in Crisseyde’s dream (T&C 2.925–31).

What is more, the heart is an important character “qui ressemble au poète comme un frère,” especially in the first ballade and roundel sequences. Early on, in Ballade 6, the lover laments to the lady, “myn hert and y thus haue ye brost atwayne,” and indeed this describes perfectly the situation which informs most of the work. The lover argues with, cajoles, encourages, lectures, and even censures his heart. In their interactions the lover is often the rational, dependable party; the heart, the rash or emotional one (see Ballade 43, Roundels 71, 72, 87, for example). The heart is also often the suffering one, defenseless and near death because of the unkindness of the lady. The lover holds frequent conversations with his heart, at times lamenting its collusion with his eyes against him (or the heart’s victimization by the lady’s eyes). Most important from the literary point of view, the lover and his heart are often at odds. They argue, dismiss, or disbelieve one another—in fact create the impression of two quarreling friends rather than of two parts of a single personality.

Though the conflict between the lover and his heart and eyes is common in courtly poetry, their exchanges owe something ultimately to the medieval genre of the debate, especially those involving two parts of the same human being: body and soul, heart and eye, etc. One notable difference in the structure of the “debate” in Charles’s works from that of many other debates is that the narrator is one of those debating rather than an observer who can learn from the action played out for his benefit. Although no formal debates are staged in For-
tunes Stabilnes, oppositions between Love and Elde, and the flower and the leaf both owe something to this tradition; in addition, the dialogue between Venus and the lover mirrors the discussions between many lovers and their less starry-eyed friends and confidants, which in turn owe something to the debate genre. Venus’s Boethian approach to the lover’s problem suggests that the poet has woven the “advice of a practical friend” thread through an “advice of a supernatural figure” fabric—two strands of the debate tradition.

LOVESICKNESS: Charles seems to offer a serious representation of lovesickness and its treatment. When his lady dies, the lover withdraws from the service of Love (both legally and physically) to the Castle of No Care; the lover is under a doctor’s care in Ballade 71; in Ballade 82, the plaster of No Care applied by Time Past has lain against the lover’s heart for so long and so softly that he says he is healed of the “disese” called “Lovis Malady.”

His retreat, too, sounds as if it contains many of the proper elements to aid in his cure: retirement, good company, food and drink, and song (poetry)—in a word, distraction. At No Care he should occupy himself with dispassionate, social amusement if he wants to be cured, as he claims, but on no account should he occupy himself with thoughts of love. Venus otia amat (Remedia Amoris 143). No Care proves not to be a place of no care, however; it is rather a place to indulge in fantasies of love that only aggravate his condition. Though which of the two is and which ought to be in control of the other. For a summary of the medieval works and earlier scholarship on the subject, see Hammond, “Eye and Heart,” and Hanford (see also Bossy). Robert Descaux, the editor of the French poem (a Middle English translation of a French debate poem by Michault Taillevent), believes that its author was influenced by Charles (42). See also the “Complainte du Corps et du Coeur” that forms part of Grandson’s Livre messire Ode. The work closes with a series of fixed-form lyrics and verse in other forms which resemble Charles’s ballades in tone and subject matter (Piaget, 441ff.). Of course, many courtly poets before Charles employed the same imagery, including Dante in his Vita Nuova.

Charles’s mother, Valentina, owned a Traité de l’ame et du coeur (Champion, La Librairie, xvii), conceivably a version of the debate between “The Part Sensitive & the Part Intellective” (see Conlee). I am grateful to Elaine Beretz for suggesting the relevance of this tradition to Charles’s poetry. Two useful books on the medieval debate, both with bibliographies, are those by Vogel and Reed, who refer at a number of points to this work (see also Utley, “Dialogues, Debates”).

148 See Wack 150, 190–91, 234–35 (also her quotation from Gottfried von Strassburg, 64), and Douglas Kelly, 239.
released from Love's service, immediately following his letter of gratitude to the God of Love, the lover admits that his eyes are still looking everywhere for "plesaunt bewte," however much he tries to restrain them (Ballade 82). Enshrouded in his retreat, he claims to be completely free of the pangs of love—in fact he sleeps very well (Roundel 1), yet the very next poem opens,

Now holde him sylf from loue, let se þat may,
For as for me y may kepe me no more.
I nede must loue for any greef or sore. (3152–54)

And so it goes. He swears off love, then falls at the first provocation. The medieval reader would have no doubt that the cure is a failure, nor would he be at all surprised by the lover's reinvolvement in love. Proof that the cure has not worked is provided both by the content of the final roundel and by the state of mind of the narrator after his banquet is over (4638–44). After his long, doleful account to Venus of his hermit's life and their argument over the merits of faithfulness to a dead lady, Venus remarks,

And where ye cast alway from loue withdrawe,
A feith, y trowe yowre labour vaylith not,

and indeed it does not, for the lover is drawn into a new love affair that is in many ways more painful and less rewarding than the first.  

### Courtly Occupations

**MAYING, THE FLOWER AND THE LEAF:** All of the occupations here presented are part of the "game of love" as described so intriguingly by John Stevens. Stevens discusses the role many of the individual lyrics in this work probably played, how they might have fit in to the social life in which the duke found himself, and, as a result of both, how we might most properly respond to the work, both in its parts and as a whole. Charles of Orleans and Chaucer provide a substantial

---


150 Gower's lover has an easier (or at least a simpler) time of it. When age approaches and he realizes that he is no longer fit to play the role of lover, he withdraws once and for all. Charles's lover talks about approaching age—and does so very graphically—but cannot escape what would seem to be a hopeless situation.

151 See esp. chap. 9. For a discussion with a different focus, see Pearsall, *Flour and the Leafe*, introduction.
amount of material for his arguments, which are worth careful consider-

Ballade 48 refers to the custom of young people “maying” or riding out into the countryside in companies to gather may (hawthorn) blossoms. The lover says to his heart, “Lete vs at wode go geder may in fere / To holde of oure oold custome the manere” (1692–93). Unfortunately, the lover and his heart will not share the company of the lady, as the day requires, for Daunger has caused her to be absent. References to the month of May, generally in the opening lines of ballades, punctuate the first ballade sequence, but the lover can never join in the celebration of the season of love. In Ballade 17, for instance, the narrator is miserable because of his lack of success; in Ballade 53 the day is stormy, but he trusts the God of Love will “amend” it; in Ballades 65 and 66 the lover laments the death of his lady (see also Ballades 42 and 70).

In Ballade 65, the first of May is a day the lover happens to be spending in a gracious company who decide, “for to expelle alle thought heue,” to play the game of choosing between the flower and the leaf. This lyric and the one that follows it may have been composed for an occasion and later incorporated in the growing collection. The lover chooses the leaf, since his “flower” has died, but in the following poem (Ballade 66) the “flower” appears to him while he is between sleep and waking, chiding him for his lack of constancy to her memory. When the “flower” takes him to task, he replies that he will always honor her above all others. He defends himself from her “crew-elte” in accusing him of faithlessness, saying “Me thynke y haue deservid not wherfore.” His rhetoric and his defense create an odd effect that may leave the reader wondering about his usually abject devotion to his lady and his profession of boundless grief at her death (see 2233n).

ST. VALENTINE’S DAY: Charles makes use of Valentine’s Day as a method of “dating” a document, as a day set aside for love and mat-

152 Maying is no mere rustic pursuit; Mason describes Henry VIII’s idea of an appropriate celebration (21–22). His claim that Charles wrote his May poems out of Chaucer’s KnT (1500–1512) is probably not justified (165). For an extravagant depiction of such a maying procession, see the calendar page for May in the duke of Berry’s Très Riches Heures (see also Mitchell, and Hussey, 112, where the children of Venus include an elegant young man, his head wreathed with may). Representations of young noble people carrying or wearing hawthorn branches are common in medieval manuscripts. For Malory’s account of Queen Gwenyver’s maying, see Stevens (187).

153 See Pearsall, Floure and the Leafe, and Marsh.
There, the conjectural of exhaust Lydgate, return related good VI). esp. chaloir.

CCXLVII), Linus CHESS lover, birds tyne” (5488) but makes no reference to the day (see also Rondeau VI). Ballade 72, one of the poems mourning the death of the lady, takes place on Valentine’s Day, though it is clearly the day on which birds and men are supposed to choose their mates. Though the lover is lying in his bed “of newous thought,” the ballade does not actually contain a dream, as we might expect, nor does the joyous day and the choosing of avian mates presage any kind of new beginning for the lover, who, awakened by birdsong, congratulates the birds on their good fortune and laments the loss of his “maystres.” He concludes:

Als wele is him this day that hath him kaught
A valentyne that louthy him, as y gesse,
Whereas this comfort sole y here me dresse
Vpon my bed so hard of Noyous Thought.

(2479–82)

CHESS AND TABLES: Two board games, both of which were often related to love or fortune by medieval poets, figure prominently in

---

154 The French version is dated in the same way.

155 Charles seems to have written Valentine poems more regularly after his return to France (Champion, Poésies, xxvi). “Charles of Orleans, even more than Lydgate, established Valentinus in hieme as the patron of love, leaving the Valentinus vernalis of Chaucer and Grandson in the cold” (Kelly, St. Valentine, 152): in his French poems Valentine’s Day falls in Lent (in Rondeaux CLXI and CCXLVII), on Mardi Gras (in CCCLV), and on Ash Wednesday (in CLXII); for the texts see Champion, Poésies, 2:382–83, 431–32. These references do not exhaust the list of Charles’s French poems on the subject.

For a survey of literary references, see Oruch (553–62); Henry Ansgar Kelly also discusses Charles’s references to Valentine’s Day (146–52). Champion’s use of such references to May or Valentine’s Day to date their composition is highly conjectural (1:xxiii–xxvi).

156 Rondeau III presents an even more miniaturized version of this situation. There, however, instead of resigning himself to tossing and turning in his bed of “Noyous Thought,” the lover receives treatment from his physician, “Nonchaloir.”

See also Le Songe Vert; Gower’s Ballades 34 and 35 (Cinkante Ballades, 365–66); Lydgate’s “Flour of Curtesye” (Skeat, Chaucerian and Other Pieces, 266–74, esp. 1–91). Grandson also uses the occasion to lament, not to rejoice (Piaget, 183–93 and 481–86).
Charles's poetry. He was interested in chess as more than just a literary image, however.\textsuperscript{157} In 1457 he paid the expenses of a professional chess player, one Juvenal Negro, for playing against him during his stay at Blois.\textsuperscript{158} He owned a number of chess boards, one of which he brought back home from England. His third wife, Marie of Cleves, and various members of his household are known to have played chess. He inherited his love of the game from his father, who bet (and lost) large sums of money on it.\textsuperscript{159} One luxurious volume that he owned and annotated—which contained, among other things, a treatise by the Lombard Nicolas de Nicolaï on endgames (B.N. MS. lat. 10286)—includes, next to the first illustration of a board in play, the arms of France and England; above another, a battle scene; and below the same; a game between a lady and a gentleman. As a game of war and at the same time a game of love, chess must have resonated on many levels for Charles.\textsuperscript{160} The game of chess was an old and popular metaphor in courtly poetry. It is not surprising, therefore, to hear the narrator report that he has played chess against "false Daungere," aided by Fortune, and has lost his lady (another name for a queen), for whom he cared more than his knight, bishop, pawn, or rook (Ballade 61). He will be checkmated, he says, unless he can get a pawn "queened." He is so confused by Fortune's play that he does not know where to move his pieces.

By all accounts the modern power of the queen did not exist before the third quarter of the fifteenth century.\textsuperscript{161} Before that time, the

\textsuperscript{157} This is one instance in which any similarities between Charles's poem and Chaucer's BD must be weighed against our knowledge that Charles himself had a lifelong interest in the game. On medieval chess, see Murray, \textit{History of Chess}, esp. chap. 9: "Chess in Mediaeval Literature," and Strutt, 250–55.

\textsuperscript{158} This amounted to forty \textit{lives tournois} (Champion, \textit{Joueur d'échecs}, 1). The information on Charles's games is taken from this slim volume of sixteen pages, which contains a plate showing Charles's annotations (on which see also Legrain).

\textsuperscript{159} On wagering on chess games, see Murray, 474–75. The word \textit{chaunis} in 5028 may be a dicing term.

\textsuperscript{160} The same volume includes the \textit{Livre des Echecs Moralises} in a French translation of the Latin, by the Italian Jacobus de Cessolis.

\textsuperscript{161} Eales finds "certain evidence" of the new game only "by the 1490s" (71) by discounting a 1471–75 dating of the "Göttingen Manuscript" (73–74), a collection of openings and problems apparently derived from another "larger collection" (74). "Medieval chess" had apparently all but disappeared by the very early sixteenth century (75–76). He finally settles on "a target date between 1470 and 1490 for the innovation . . . , though it remains possible that the new game was devised earlier and 'lay dormant' for a while before it began to achieve popularity" (76). I am grateful to Gerard Dulles for bringing this book to my attention and sharing some of his considerable knowledge of chess with me.
queen could move only one space at a time and only diagonally. In the new game, the queen became the strongest piece on the board.\textsuperscript{162} Another change in the rules of the (European) game is that when the pawn reached the far end of the board and was “queen-ed,” it also acquired vastly increased powers.\textsuperscript{163} In addition, “soon after 1600” it became usual to warn the opponent that one was about to capture his queen by saying “Guard” or “Queen.”\textsuperscript{164}

Curiously, the allegory of Charles’s ballade emphasizes precisely these points about the game: “In my lady lay all my sikernes,” the lover says, for “all my warde that kepe my lady dere.”\textsuperscript{165} The word \textit{warde} (Fr \textit{gardes}) evokes the rhetoric of the new game (it refers directly to the queen’s role of protecting the king on the board, the narrator—lover being the king in this case). He does not know how he can endure the loss of his lady, “without so be y make a lady new,” that is, unless he can get a pawn queened. In light of these curious details in his use of the chess metaphor, it is difficult to believe that he was completely unaware of the rules of the new game.\textsuperscript{166} A closer look at the \textit{Book of the Duchess} in light of this historical puzzle might also be rewarding.

\textsuperscript{162} Formerly, the rook was the strongest piece. At about the same time, the new game takes its name from the queen (because of her new powers) in a number of European languages: \textit{It scacchi de la donna}, \textit{Sp axedrez de la dama}, \textit{Fr eschés de la dame} (Murray, \textit{History of Chess}, 776; see also 503–5), or even \textit{eschés de la dame enragée} (Eales, 72). The Middle English equivalent is of course \textit{lady} (Murray, 426–28). Murray’s statement that the use of \textit{lady} “argues an ignorance of chess on the part of the translator” certainly cannot be said of Charles of Orleans, as Murray admits (431). His comment on the use by both Chaucer and Charles of the chess metaphor is that it is unreal and unconvincing (752). Murray finds Charles’s indebtedness to Chaucer’s chess references in \textit{BD} (652–87) “obvious,” but he does not explain why he finds Charles’s use of the chess metaphor unconvincing. Given Charles’s interest and expertise, I suspect that Murray has missed something.

\textsuperscript{163} See Murray, 776–77.

\textsuperscript{164} \textit{Dame} or \textit{Gardez} or \textit{Gardez la reine}, says Murray, in Germany and Holland (388–89; he denies that the call originated in France). Eales cites an instance of saying “Check and guard” (when both the king and queen were attacked) in a poem by Surrey, who died in 1547 (76).

\textsuperscript{165} Ballade 61; not a likely statement if, as Eales writes, the queen “was a rather weak piece, weaker even than the king” (72); he goes on to say that “the reformed queen combined in one piece the moves of rook and (modern) bishop, becoming at once the strongest unit on the board.”

\textsuperscript{166} The only difficulty is the referent of “that” in 2123, which seems to accord the knight (rather than the rook) more power than the queen. The French version reads: “Je n’avoye pion, ne chevalier, / Auffin, ne rocq qui puissent ma querelle / Si bien aidier” (Ballade LVIII).
The game of *tables* took many forms in the Middle Ages, as it does today, and it seems to have taken second place only to chess in Charles’s interest in and love of games. The second treatise in the volume of works on games just mentioned (B.N. MS. lat. 10286) concerns *tables*. Charles owned a number of *tabliers* including an Italian marble board given to him by his mother. Charles’s persona, too, plays “the short games of tablis” under the tutelage of Love in Ballade 46. He has a hard time of it, however, because Fortune turns the dice against him. In the envoy, the lover calls on Love to teach him some way of escaping “this iupart [problem, difficult move] here” and winning the game. The poet mentions another form of tables in the second dream vision; remembering his dead lady, the lover recalls playing with her “at the lorche” (4830–31; rhyme: “chirche”) in a window seat.

POST AND PILLAR: After his meeting with Venus and Fortune, the narrator encounters his new lady engaged with other “ladies and ther wymmen” in a game of Post and Pillar “with many a squyer and many a knyght” in a forest clearing. Post and Pillar is a chasing game, similar to “Twos and Threes.” In French it was called *le jeu des fagots* (or *le tiers*). Couples (a “post” and a “pillar” or, taken together, a *fagot*)

167 He seems to have enjoyed these games even while travelling by boat on the Loire (Champion, *foueur d’échecs*, 1, 7). In fact “tables” (from L. *tabula*, “tiles” or playing pieces) was the generic name for a game with a great many variations, much as “cards” is today. Backgammon is one outgrowth of the early game, as is French *trictrac* (Murray, “The Medieval Game of Tables,” 58; see also Strutt, 248–49).

168 For a description of two *tabliers* and a box of playing pieces for chess and tables owned by Valentina, see Graves (nn. 91, 93, 801, 66, 140–41).

169 For a discussion of the game played, see 1629–57n.

170 *Lorche* (*F. lourche*) survives today in the expression “to leave in the lurch.”

171 The game is also known as “Round Tag,” “Faggots,” or (in the version I played as a child) “Three Deep” (Opie and Opie, 82–84). The game of Post and Pillar as described by Charles would not seem to have given rise to the expression “from pillar to post” (an expression abundantly attested in the *OED*, s.v. pillar, sb. 11; as well as by Whiting and Whiting, and by Tilley). The reference to being made to dance “from pillar to post” in Lydgate’s *Assembly of Gods* (1147) makes clear that the modern meaning of the phrase was already in use in the fifteenth century; that it has no direct relation to the game is perhaps suggested by the reversed order (“post” is made to rhyme with “toss’d” in various texts). Iona Opie has suggested that the name of the game derives from the popular expression rather than the other way around (private correspondence).

172 The French game is remarkably similar to the one Charles describes, even
stand in a well-spaced circle. The one who is "it," who must stay outside the circle, chases another player, who may dodge in and out of the circle. If the one being chased is caught, the chase reverses; if he wishes to rest, he joins one of the couples, forcing that man to flee.

The narrator's friend asks that the players make room for the new player (who will, of course, be "it"), presumably because they have crowded around the player with the unfortunately torn hose (5221–22). The narrator then quickly tags "on ... of the rowt" (that is, the man he is chasing) during his first turn. At this point, the chase reverses, and the fugitive dodges away from his pursuer ("the corse ... droue me here & there"), making as straight as possible for the new lady. Once there, he can talk to her, necessarily being at some distance from the next pair of players. In fact this is said to be one of the delights of the game: the combination of fresh air, excitement, and an opportunity to flirt (engage in "courtly speech") in private with a series of partners.

At a certain point, the lady realizes that the two running players are headed their way (5317), and their tête-à-tête is interrupted as the player who is being chased takes refuge with them, forcing the narrator to leave her company. It was unthinkable that the ladies would be involved in such strenuous and potentially undignified exercise; they were spaced out and stationary, and all the running was done by the men.

The illustration of the game in the Book of Hours of Adelaïde of Savoy confirms this, showing two male runners. Within a low, square enclosure (emphasizing the contrived and civilized nature of the activity), three lords and three ladies stand in couples at some distance from one another, each of the ladies with her arms around the gentleman standing in front of her. A group of stylishly dressed young people, sitting and standing outside the low wall, look on. A walled city in the background implies that this was a "country" activity (accentu-

in a form recorded as late as the nineteenth century by Legay.

173 In the post-medieval French terminology, Cavalier and Dame together comprise a fagot. Charles's narrator can immediately see that this is the game that they are playing because the couples have their arms around each other (they gan eche othir fast in armys hold), as in the Chantilly manuscript (see below).

174 "Autant il est doux lorsqu'on fait Fagot de se trouver réuni à une personne que l'on aime, autant il est piquant de s'en voir séparé, souvant à dessein, par un jaloux qui vient se parter brusquement devant vous, et qui vous force l'un ou l'autre à prendre la fuite" (Legay).

175 Chantilly, Musée Condé MS. 76 (formerly 1362), fol. 46v (see p. 334). The mid-fifteenth century depiction of the game of Post and Pillar illustrates the month of April (see Bouissounouse; Plummer, 42).
ated by the one little tree which stands just inside the enclosure and a rough rock just outside it) which took place in a constructed area just outside the bustling city—quite unlike the isolated setting in *Fortunes Stabilnes*. Two young men (the one who is "it" and the one who is chased) feint around one of the three couples. The illuminator of this manuscript (the Master of Adélaïde de Savoie) was "apparently trained in the Loire region," a fact which would at least suggest that this game was one Charles knew from his childhood, though he may well have taken part in such courtly games during his stay in England.

**Allegorical Figures**

VENUS: Venus is mentioned as accompanying the God of Love and co-issuing documents, but she does not actually appear (except briefly in Ballade 70) until after the narrator has retired from the service of Love, at which point she appears in a vision to attempt to interest the ex-lover in a new love affair. The balance of the poem between the powers of the God of Love and his mother is thus similar to that in the *Roman de la rose*, in which Venus makes a dramatic entrance near the end of the work to effect what the God of Love alone seems unable (or unwilling) to bring to a conclusion. The contrast between a grand and dignified God of Love and a more earthy Venus may also point to the *Rose* tradition. In his *Fontinne amoureuse*, Machaut creates a goddess with a scornful attitude toward the lover and enough wit to match that of Charles's. Her undisguised pleasure at the sight of Priapus (1675–84) and her biased recounting of the Judgment of Paris (1715–2144) show her to be an earthy, manipulative schemer. She upbraids the lover disdainfully for his sloth (or ignorance?) and then follows up with a gentle, coaxing, motherly speech of enticement which is entirely successful.

Charles's Venus appears much like Chaucer's goddess in the *Parliament of Fowls*, clothed only in a "kercher of Plesaunce" (a refinement of Chaucer's "coverchef of Valence"). Unlike this Venus in the temple

---

176 Plummer, 42.

177 Douglas Kelly, in discussing the duke's French poems, refers to Venus as "the source of burning rage in Guillaume de Lorris" and to "the rollicking cynicism of the goddess in Jean de Meun" (204), though he finds the Venus figure of Charles's much shorter French work very different from that of the *Rose*. She is certainly a more fully developed character.

of Priapus, however (and more like the Venus of the *House of Fame* and the *Knight’s Tale*), she appears floating on the sea (the Venus of the Marine Triumphs), with doves fluttering in the air above her head (see above, “Setting”). Charles’s decision to present Venus in this setting has numerous implications. Her birth from Saturn’s genitals, cast into the sea, was a story well known to the writers of courtly literature of the late Middle Ages, and the ocean setting evokes that aspect of the Venus story.¹⁷⁹ Her image is made more ominous by the presence of an owl on her hand. The first modern response to this image (“but that’s the bird of Pallas Athena”) reflects the Renaissance revival of Greek and Roman iconography; a medieval audience would be more likely to associate the bird with death, darkness, and lasciviousness.¹⁸⁰ At the same time, the owl was used in many medieval representations as a parody of courtliness (in place of a falcon), and may be so intended here.¹⁸¹ The figure of Venus is thus represented at the

¹⁷⁹ See Twycross. The event is described in the *Roman de la rose*, 5533ff., and the castration is depicted in Bodleian Lib. MS., Douce 195, reproduced in Robertson, pl. 3. Lydgate gives a fuller description of the series of events in *Reson and Sensualyte*, 1444ff. His description of the Venus is yet another example of goddess as cheesecake (1563ff.). See also Gower (*CA* 8.2273–76).

¹⁸⁰ An extensive search of material of the late Middle Ages and Renaissance has turned up no more precise “meaning” for the bird. Chaucer refers to owls more than once (*NPT*, 4281–82; *SqT*, 646–50; *PF*, 343; *LGW*, 2253–54; also Braddy, 84–85). Sloth rides a goat, carrying an owl on his wrist, in Gower, *Mirour de l’Omme* (Macaulay, *French Works*, 889–900; see also *CA* 3.585ff. and note). Among French authors, see Philippe de Mézières (*Le Songe du vieil pelerin*, 108). William Calin says the screech owl chased by the gerfalcon in Machaut’s *Le Dit de l’alerion* represents “either vices which have undermined the falcon’s personality or, more likely, a vicious, unworthy lover” (*A Poet at the Fountain*, 99). In the desert of Deschamps’ *Lay du desert d’amours*, “Le cahuant [chat-huant] chante et murmure / Ses chans de mort” (lines 257–58).

It would be no surprise to find an attribute of Venus that suggested *luxurial* lechery (see next note). On the association of the bird with lechery in the work of Bosch, see Bax, 208–13; for an owl in a love garden by Master E. S., see Lehrs, 302, no. 214: Der Liebesgarten mit den Schachspielern. In German folklore, the owl was often associated with love charms, (Bächtoldt-Stäubli, s.v. Eule; see also de Gubernatis, chap. 6). Though many of these works (like the owl of *The Owl and the Nightingale*) would not have been available to Charles, they illustrate that a cluster of negative significances for the owl (not really balanced by positive ones that might in any way be associated with Venus) was widespread.

¹⁸¹ The owl is often associated with apes (thus with lust and foolishness), and many clearly parody courtly figures (see Pearsall, *Nun’s Priest’s Tale*, 4282n, 190; Rowland, 12; also especially Janson, and Randall). For an owl being flown as a bird of prey, see the marginal illustration in the Rothschild Canticles (Yale, Beinecke Library MS. 404, fol. 134r; Randall, 113.543; Yapp, 130–31).
outset as both a parody of an icon and a figure that bodes ill for the lover.

She contrasts markedly with Age, the only other figure who appears to the lover to give advice, comfort, and aid. Whereas the advice of Age is sound and genuinely helpful (at least in intent), the much stronger advice of Venus, who debates with the lover at far greater length, is designed to plunge him back into the life of misery from which Age had attempted to rescue him. Her sharp-tongued sarcasm sets her apart from other supernatural figures that so commonly appear to ailing lovers in courtly poetry (usually in the Lady Philosophy mould), and her brisk, high-pressure selling techniques force him into a corner from which he can extricate himself only by leaving the vital decision concerning his future up to her. Her solution to his problem is as immediate and efficient as it is far-reaching; she takes him directly to Fortune’s wheel.

Charles’s goddess, like Machaut’s, laughs at the lover, confident that his poor defenses will give way at the mere sight of the proper love-object. Charles, however, even goes so far as to create a character who panics at the thought that she might be seen (and unkindly judged) by others who find her on the shore in a state of undress with a man (5086ff.). Venus’s embarrassment at being caught with Mars in Vulcan’s net makes sense in the context of the laughter of the gods; Venus’s embarrassment at being thought a “loose” woman by mere mortals is quite another matter.182

Her function in the dream vision is closely tied to that of Fortune, who appears in the sky while Venus and Charles the narrator are talking. She indeed seems to be partially defined by her close association with Fortune, who descends like a queen in the kind of golden chariot Venus herself sometimes arrives in, though it is drawn by white horses rather than Venus’s white doves. Gower’s identification of Venus with Fortune may furnish a further piece of evidence that Charles of Orleans knew the Confessio Amantis: “Bot sche which kepth the blinde whel, / Venus . . .” (1.2490–91). In the final book, Gower’s Venus counsels the aging lover to leave the service of Love, saying, “So goth the fortune of my whiel” (8.2880). These passages might well have provided the raw material for Charles’s creation of a garrulous Venus and a dumb Fortune who work in concert to initiate a new love affair. This is not to say that other poets do not mention Venus and

182 See RR, 18077–86 (Dahlberg, 301).
Fortune together, but that the intimate connection Gower presents is particularly striking.\textsuperscript{183}

**FORTUNE:** Robert Steele has declared Charles’s description of Fortune “by far the fullest and most detailed in medieval literature.”\textsuperscript{184} It at once describes an imaginary being with extraordinary supernatural attributes and a magnificently dressed woman of high rank of the early fifteenth century. The description shows a nice—indeed an exceptional—appreciation of the arts of working with textiles and gems and an interest in design, all of which probably points to a more general interest in fashion on the part of the poet. This should come as no surprise; Charles’s love of fine clothes is well attested. Fortune’s surcoat sprinkled with laughing and weeping eyes, her elaborate mantle, her necklace of whirling dice suggest that the poet not only found the subject of fortune interesting in itself, but took equal pleasure in devising a rich and fabulous costume for this Queen of the World. Fortune appears as sumptuously dressed as Venus is carefully undressed.

In a number of particulars the description takes up standard details in the depiction of Fortune in manuscript illustration: her surcoat trimmed with ermine and jewels, her copious mantle tied around her shoulders, her crown and flowing hair.\textsuperscript{185} The surcoat (\textit{surdce ouvert}) was by the time of Charles’s captivity quite \textit{démodé} in both England and France, but it survived for another century as ceremonial dress for royalty. In addition to this, however, Fortune is dressed in a style more appropriate to the turn of the century than to, say, the 1430s, when the love of jewel encrustations and elaborate patternings had given way to simpler, heavier styles. Charles is therefore probably describing a costume more typical of pre-1415 France than of anything he had seen more recently in England.

The surprising quality of the description is the masterful integration

\textsuperscript{183} For further discussion of Fortune and her relation to Venus, see Patch, \textit{Fortuna}, 96–97; Mulder, chap. 3: “Fortuna.”

\textsuperscript{184} xxxiii.

\textsuperscript{185} The best collection of representations of Fortune is Kurose’s \textit{Miniatures of Goddess Fortune in Mediaeval Manuscripts}. A representation that includes nearly all the details mentioned is from B.L. MS. Harley 621, fol. 217, where it illustrates Boccaccio’s \textit{Des cas des nobles hommes et femmes} (pl. 121, c. 1480). For a general idea of the extravagances of style of the period Charles probably had in mind (1400–1415), the best general impression can be had from the \textit{Très Riches Heures} of Jean de Berry; the best detailed descriptions of such costumes can be found in Scott, chap. 4: “International Gothic, c. 1380–c. 1420.”
of the splendid with the miraculous, so that it is nearly impossible to
tell when the description is possible of realization on this earth and
when not. Fortune's mantle presents a good example. It is copious and
made of silks that change color like the rainbow (4998–5002). Alan of
Lille had presented just such a robe on his figure of Nature, "woven
from silk-smooth wool, kaleidoscopic in its various colours."

In earthly terms, however, Charles is describing a rich garment of shot
silk, in which the warp threads are of a different color (or colors) from
those of the weft; as the cloth moves, the color changes and shimmers
in a way that is very confusing to the eye.

Alan's Nature wears a mantle decorated with birds and beasts that
declare her nature visually, just as Fortune's changeable nature is
figured forth in the changing heavens pictured on her mantle, whose
material is made to look like clouds (some dark with rain, others
broken to reveal sunbeams) and moons in all their phases—images that
seem in fact to be, not static, but moving. On the one hand this ap-
ppears miraculous, but on the other, it describes accurately the kind of
richly-figured (embroidered, appliqued, or brocaded) cloth that was
popular with the nobility in the early fifteenth century. Alan speculates
that the underclothing of Nature is decorated with the rich diversity of
the plant world, and the little flowers embroidered on the lining of
Fortune's mantle may owe something to such a conception, but the
effusive admiration of the narrator for the workmanship of the garment
implies that the finely-embroidered flowers also function simply as an
example of the overwhelming richness and elegance of Fortune's
costume. Detail by detail, the costume of Fortune can thus be "read"
both as contemporary fashion and as extraordinary clothing (for details
see explanatory notes), or as both at once—the description is a tour de
force.

Although most of the details of Fortune's costume are in some
sense twofold, the negative aspect of her character (and therefore of her
gifts) is almost totally absent. Only the weeping eyes on the "ermine"

186 See 2.230–415 (76–85). Fortune resembles Alan's Nature in a number of
other particulars as well. Chaucer, of course, cites Alan in his discussion of Nature
in PF, as did many authors in the intervening years for various personifications.
Though Charles may have known Alan's description firsthand (as Chaucer
evidently did), he may also have gotten it elsewhere. Machaut, for instance,
compares Fortune to the moon and a stormy sea in his Remede de Fortune.

187 Referred to in both English and French as changeante (see Michel, Re-
trim of her surcoat, the rain from the clouds on her mantle, and perhaps the pansies embroidered on its lining, all mentioned in passing, are anything other than sumptuous and beautiful, and even these details are subordinated to the dominant note of elegance and refinement. It is true that "somwhile she lowrid sore," but even the whirling dice of her "serpe" are simply "ful of verryaunces." The reference to those who fall from Fortune's wheel is quickly forgotten as the narrator spies a most beautiful lady at its topmost point. This attractive but largely one-sided view of Fortune is additional evidence that the narrator suffers from the blindness of one seduced, and seduced perhaps most of all by himself.

Form
Long poetic works written in mixed forms were never popular in England.\(^{188}\) On the Continent they were fairly common but varied greatly in structure. One of the most "potent" works of the Middle Ages (to use Eleanor Hammond's term), Boethius's *Consolation of Philosophy*, was written in alternating verse and prose, but Charles would have found more recent models in the works of Guillaume de Machaut, whose *dits* are written in narrative verse interspersed with lyrics in a variety of forms. His last great work, *Voir-Dit*, adds epistolary prose to these.\(^{189}\) Froissart's *Le Livre du trésor amoureux* contains a hundred and twenty-eight ballades divided into three groups introduced by narrative sections. Christine de Pizan composed *Le Livre du duc des vrais amans* and *Le Prisonnier desconforté*, both composite works, and like many other French poets, she also wrote two ballade sequences, which she entitled *Cent Balades* and *Cent Balades d'amant et de dame*.\(^{190}\) From such works as these and many others, Charles of Orleans has taken these two structures (works in mixed forms and sequences of poems) and made them one. He intercalated two series of ballades and one of roundels into a larger structure made up of pieces of narrative verse and lyrics in a variety of other forms. The second

---

\(^{188}\) Chaucer, of course, embedded a number of lyrics in his poetry, but they constitute an extremely small proportion of his output (see Moore, 107–9).

\(^{189}\) For a list of Old French narratives prior to Machaut containing lyrics and excellent discussions of Machaut's *Dits*, see Calin, *Poet at the Fountain*, 70 and passim. For a broader discussion of the "erotic autobiography," often in mixed forms, see Gybson-Monypenny, 133–52.

\(^{190}\) For a discussion of ballade sequences, see Cohen, *The Ballade*, 109ff., and *Lyric Forms*, 29–33.
dream vision, even more than the first, seems to be an experiment in the *dit amoureux* genre.

The result is a single, complex work made up of at least two very different kinds of poetry, lyric and narrative, but with the lyric heavily predominating. The roundels are presented in no thematic or "narrative" order, but the two ballade series each document a love affair somewhat in the way later sonnet sequences in English do. The unusual tension thus created between the lyric mode and the "story-telling" mode requires of the reader periodic shifts in his attention that are perhaps not always comfortable or easy to make. As works in which love was treated in a narrative as well as a lyric mode were all around Charles, in France as well as in England, it cannot be very surprising that he would try his hand at a love narrative, even though he wrote no other narrative verse.

Many individual lyrics were probably not written primarily to take a place in this work but to fulfill some other purpose: to compliment a lady, to show off Charles's skills among his hosts, or simply to express the thought of a moment. On the other hand, many of the lyric or narrative "sections" of the work could not have been written to stand alone in this way and operate only as parts of the larger whole. It is thus possible to refer to an individual lyric as a poem and also to allude to the whole work as a poem.

This complex structure was certainly not envisioned by the poet from the outset. Charles's original plan may have included the introductory allegory, the first ballade sequence (during which the lady dies), the withdrawal of the narrator from the service of Love, and his retirement to the Castle of No Care, during which he presents a group

---

191 Cohen makes this comparison in *Lyric Forms*, 13. Steele and Day attempt, unsuccessfully, to treat the roundels as if they contain the same sort of shadowy story line as do the ballades (3138n). C. S. Lewis described the sonnet sequence as a "prolonged lyrical meditation, chiefly on love," and the lyric sequences in this work are certainly more like meditations than "stories." In fact, Lewis's analysis of the nature of the English sonnet sequence and of misperceptions of its nature applies remarkably well to earlier lyric sequences, including these (Sixteenth Century, 327-28). R. H. Robbins aptly describes the illusion created by the lyric sequences: "[they are] comparable to the frames of a cartoon film strip. Passing from one frame to the next, the reader himself creates a kaleidoscopic effect which gives the illusion of action (i.e., narrative)" ("Structure," 263 n. 50).

192 Some of the roundels especially ("As for the gyft ye haue vnto me geve, / I thanke yow lo in all that in me is." "Wherefore, wherefore make ye thre nayes? whi?" ) seem to betray a sense of social occasion more urgent than preparation for a collection would be likely to demand.
of roundels. The end of the roundel series would have signaled the end of the work. This is the French pattern. The body of English verse is much larger than its French counterpart, however; nearly all of the remaining roundels, the vision of Venus and Fortune, and the second ballade sequence exist only in English.  

ORDER OF COMPOSITION: It is difficult to say in exactly what order many of the poems were written, but some attempt to reconstruct the pattern of composition may be useful as an aid to understanding Charles’s development as a poet in English. Champion (among others) has suggested that the (French) allegorical opening and some of the first ballades that follow it, as well as the first chansons, were composed in French before Charles was captured at Agincourt at the age of twenty-one. The fact that the first fifty-seven English ballades all have French counterparts and occur in virtually the same order in both manuscripts (O and H) lends support to the supposition that they were composed in more or less that order and probably in one period of activity. Similarly, the first fifty-two English roundels parallel the French versions (chansons) closely and were probably composed during this same period. All these poems have French counterparts, and it seems likely that Charles’s change in the plan of the work happened after the French work was virtually finished. The fact that the second half of the roundel sequence and nearly all of the poems in the second ballade sequence have no French counterparts would seem to indicate

---

193 See the Index of French Counterparts; Appendix II presents the situation of the ballades in a more graphic form.

194 “Elles datent bien vraisemblablement de son adolescence, les ballades juvéniles et fraîches, les chansons gracieuses . . .” (Champion, Vie, 241). He says of the reference to the narrator in the Lettre de retenue as “a present jeune d’ans,” “C’est la seule indication, d’ailleurs vague, sur la date du poème (vers 1414)” (Poésies, 551, 407n). He even gives a detailed chronology of the French poems; according to him, the first nine ballades were written before Agincourt (Poésies, xxiii–xxv). Charles’s embroidering of the words and music of one of his poems on the sleeves of a velvet doublet while he was still in France is not the behavior of a beginner. There was a regular exchange of goods and information between Charles and his estates in France throughout his captivity, so that there was no difficulty in obtaining those things he most wanted or needed from home, including poetry he had written. N. L. Goodrich points out that there is no mention of prison in the earliest ballades (Themes, 159).

195 “Il est impossible de n’être pas frappé du parallélisme que présentent ici ballades et chansons” (Champion, Vie, 243). His statement is equally true of the first fifty or so English ballades and roundels.
that they were written later, after Charles had redesigned the work to include a second love affair. The fact that the composition of the work stretches over a period of many years probably means that it was created in a number of pieces interrupted by various other activities such as Charles’s movements from castle to castle, his visits to London at the command of the king, his furious attempts to raise money for ransom and upkeep, and so on. Many of the lyrics may have been composed before much of the narrative frame was conceived as a vehicle for them.

The section of verse which immediately precedes the first ballade sequence (56-202, without French counterpart) is also probably a later piece. Camargo speaks of the resumption of the allegorical narrative at this point, as if the patent were embedded in a longer narrative, which he refers to as the allegorical introduction.\(^\text{196}\) There are reasons to believe, however, that this narrative was written much later than the rest of this part of the work (Steele and Day guess 1436-1437\?). Poirion corroborates this theory in his discussion of the order of their composition.\(^\text{197}\) It is very likely that the (lost) opening allegory was written in couplets, as the French version is, whereas this narrative is in rhyme royal. It is also quite unlike the group of “narrative ballades” (75 to 81) that the poet used to further the action after the first dream vision, narrative poems with French counterparts, written in the more conservative “early” style. The tone of the exchange between the lover and the God of Love, too, differs markedly in the two narratives. Here it resembles more closely the naturalness of the lover’s dealings with Venus in the second dream vision than the formality of those with the God of Love in the opening allegory or in the withdrawal from love following the first dream vision.

It should not be surprising that a number of individual lyrics read as if they were written for occasions, perhaps with no immediate thought of inclusion in a larger work.\(^\text{198}\) In fact a number of the poetic “documents” in the work begin on new leaves, implying perhaps some desire  

\(^{196}\) 100-1.  
\(^{197}\) “Création poétique,” 191.  
\(^{198}\) A number of lyrics that Machaut claimed to have written for his Voir-Dit were actually composed much earlier (see Calin, Poet at the Fountain, 171, and Brownlee, 101). On the careful construction of a “showcase” for the lyrics of Jakemes in his Roman du castelain de Couci, see Huot, From Song to Book, 123-24. Many of the lyric sequences and works in mixed forms must have been constructed in this way.
to keep options open in the organization of the work; the patent with which the manuscript as we have it begins, for example, is at the top of a new leaf on a new quire. It is difficult to say, however, when or over how long a period of time the later lyrics were written, or when the second dream vision was composed, though Ballades 112 and 113, modelled on poems exchanged between the duke of Orleans and the duke of Burgundy, must have been written after the exchange of (French) poems in 1439, and the final ballades contain a kind of wit and word play that suggest that they were composed very late in Charles’s captivity. 199 The fact that the order of the autograph manuscript is very close to that of Harley 682 implies that both probably received their final organization in preparation for the making of fair copy fairly late in Charles’s captivity.

It is impossible to say when Charles first began to write in English, just as it is impossible to know when he was first exposed to the works of Geoffrey Chaucer. 200 Charles may have encountered Chaucer’s name and his work at any time during his years in England, from his very first sojourn at Windsor. Since he was known as a poet as well as a prince, any of his “hosts” or their guests might have offered him English poetry to read. The second dream vision was clearly written under the influence of the English poets (it has no French equivalent) and was certainly conceived in a period later than the early ballades and roundels.

To summarize, the order of composition may have gone something like this: when he started composing in English, Charles began by adapting material already written in French, viz., the allegory of the God of Love, around fifty ballades, and a similar number of chansons. As time went on, he composed adaptations of virtually all of the poems he had composed in French for an untitled work about a love affair that ends tragically, at the same time turning out individual lyrics in various forms as time and occasion presented themselves. 201 At some

199 Poirion writes, “En effet les essais de datation jusqu’ici entrepris par les critiques donnent l’impression que l’essentiel de l’œuvre a été composé durant deux périodes assez restreintes de sa vie: 1432–1440 et 1450–1458,” citing Champion’s chronology (xxiii and xxiv), Steele (xxix), and Cigada (“Studi su Charles d’Orléans”).

200 If pressed, I would guess that the first ballades and roundels were produced during Charles’s first ten or even fifteen years in England. Ann Tukey Harrison says that it is “generally accepted” that the French Ballades LV–LXX were written around 1425, but she does not explain how she arrives at that date (Allegorical Mode, 60).

201 Robert Steele was convinced that the English poems preceded the French.
later date, probably in another place, and certainly after having read the poetry of some of his English counterparts, he recast the work, planning a dream vision in which Venus and Fortune would conspire to entrap the narrator into a new love affair, followed by a second ballade sequence. It may also have been around this time that he composed the section of narrative verse that precedes the first ballade sequence. He then assembled and ordered the lyrics in hand, organizing them and filling in gaps with new lyrics where necessary. In polishing the structure of the whole in preparation for the making of a fair copy, he moved a few of the poems that did not fit in well from the first ballade sequence to the second and wrote a few new ballades for the mourning section of the first sequence.\(^{202}\)

Ballades 111 and 113, based on French poems he exchanged with Philip the Good, were written in 1439. The whole work was then copied at some point during 1439–1440 in the order in which we have it. Because Charles’s life in England was never settled for long, and two or three uninterrupted years were all he could hope for before he was once again escorted to a new place of residence with different accommodations and a different pace of life, his rate of composition may have varied greatly from time to time. It would be foolhardy to attempt to date individual poems in the absence of concrete evidence.

In its earlier stages the work may have been conceived as a much longer composition than was realized. The second ballade sequence falls far short of the first, with only thirty-seven ballades in the latter sequence to balance the eighty-four in the former (or seventy-four if those following the meeting with Age are discounted). The nearly one hundred roundels likewise suggest that the poet had a larger work in mind. On the other hand, Martin Camargo suggests plausibly that the shape is probably what the poet intended, since the second love affair is recounted in exactly half as many ballades as the first (74:37),

\(^{202}\) See Appendix II. I do not mean to suggest that the mourning poems were not written when the poet was actually in mourning. Originally many of the lyrics were probably occasional poems that were later used as part of the larger work (Ballade 59 is an adaptation into English of a poem by Christine de Pizan), which is not to say that the poet could not compose an effective mourning poem in the absence of the death of someone close to him.
subdivided into groups of twelve, twelve, and thirteen.\textsuperscript{203} If it is intentional, what does this say about the two affairs? It is impossible to say with certainty what Charles's plans for the total work were at any point.

The two love affairs, related to the audience only through balladette letters written to each lady, differ markedly, even while they share the same form and much the same rhetoric. Charles may have intended them as contrasting accounts of two types of love affairs such as are, for instance, represented by Machaut in his \textit{Judgment of the King of Bohemia}, in which a lady who has lost her love to death contends that she sorrows more than the lover whose lady is unfaithful to him, and vice versa. A similar sort of contrast, though less sharply drawn, informs this work. The lady of the first ballade sequence is not distinctly unkind, but the lover is frequently separated from her, and in the end Death takes her from him. The new lady is decidedly less kind, but there is less talk of separation. Its very inconclusiveness may have been the "ending" Charles was aiming at: of this kind of love there can be no end. The portrayal of the response of the lover to these two different love predicaments was probably the primary interest of the ballade sequences to a fifteenth-century audience.\textsuperscript{204}

\textbf{STYLE:} Derek Pearsall has described Charles's style thus:

\begin{quote}
Long before Wyatt, he introduces the intimate, passionate speaking voice into English courtly lyric, \ldots at the same time laying it under the strictest formal controls of rhetorical artifice and allowing a mischievous irony to flicker among the hot sighs and tears.\textsuperscript{205}
\end{quote}

Elsewhere he has remarked on its "new, intimate, personal, passionate quality and \ldots stylistic inquisitiveness and wittiness which it is difficult to find elsewhere in courtly lyric before Wyatt."\textsuperscript{206} On the other

\begin{footnotes}
\footnote{203}{Camargo, 105.}
\footnote{204}{His ending resembles that of Guillaume de Lorris's \textit{Rose}; that is, he ends with a lyric, which does not—indeed cannot—generate narrative, but is essentially self-absorbed and static. On this view of the \textit{Rose} see Huot, \textit{From Song to Book}, 89–90, 141, 159–61. The lyric mode is, she says, "ephemeral and open-ended."}
\footnote{205}{\textit{Old English}, 217.}
\footnote{206}{"The English Chaucerians," 234. An editor of some of his French poems describes Charles, equally insightfully, as "un poète inimitable avec son art à la fois raffiné et plein d'abandon, avec son mélange extraordinaire de préciosité et de}
\end{footnotes}
hand, Pamela Gradon has analyzed a number of lyrics as examples of what she calls the "abstract style."^{207}

Any attempt to analyze the style of *Fortunes Stabilnes*, however, becomes a discussion of at least two styles; the poems known to be early have some stylistic differences from those known to be late. The fact that it is impossible to know precisely when many of the poems were written and to place them, therefore, in the compositional continuum complicates the matter, but the division into early and late does provide a basic context for discussing them. The early work (the first ballade sequence, the withdrawal from love, the retirement of the lover, and the first fifty or so roundels) is marked by minimal description, generally abstract language, legalistic feudal terminology, and a close adherence to the machinery of love of the courtly style.^{208} The narrator is effusively doleful, teetering on the brink of foolish excess in his suffering and grief (although the mourning poems are at times indeed moving).^{209} When dealing with superiors (the God of Love, Age, the lady), he is generally abject, or at least exceedingly humble.

The narrative section that contains the vision of Venus and Fortune and the meeting of the new lady, followed by the second ballade sequence, presents the same characters and the same problems, but cast in a slightly different light. Here the style is not very legalistic and is much less abstract.^{210} The amount of description, especially in the second dream vision and in the encounter with the lady that follows, is substantial. The (ex-)lover is recognizable as the same character, yet he

---

nature!" (Mary, 207). John Fox also provides an insightful analysis of the style of the French lyrics in *Lyric Poetry*, 69–71.

207 336–47.

208 The addition in the English version of various "homely phrases" has been much remarked on. In spite of these and of many sometimes startlingly concrete images, much of the language remains more abstract than readers of English poetry are generally accustomed to and may sometimes for that reason seem somewhat colorless. For a few of his legal and feudal terms in French and English, see Goodrich, *Themes*, 142 n. 16, and Steele and Day, xxxviii–xxxix.

209 It is especially difficult to discuss the style of a sequence of poems, since some of them may not have been written in the first place for the work at hand, but for some other purpose on some other occasion.

210 Introducing this style early in the work by inserting a piece of narrative verse before the first ballade sequence (if indeed that is what he did) has the fortunate effect of lessening the sense of inconsistency between what might otherwise feel like two incongruent sections of the work. In this earlier narrative section he takes the God of Love to task quite firmly for hoarding hearts and eschews the feudal gingerbread that decorates all his other encounters with Cupid.
INTRODUCTION

has apparently “developed” as a result of the experience of his first love affair. After his initial meeting with Venus, he treats her much less formally than he did the God of Love. The new lady, too, after their relationship is under way (that is, after the second ballade sequence has begun) comes in for some very straightforward language; the lover is now much more demanding and much less willing simply to wait for his lady’s grace. His suffering turns to anger much more quickly (though he repents quickly enough).

Perhaps most striking is the injection of a broader style of humor into the second dream vision, with the result that the lover’s situation during the second ballade sequence is even more pathetic than it was in the first. The marked incongruity between the courtly lover’s perpetual grief and Venus’s frank expectation that her servants must “use their members” if they are in working order is humorous. In his later work, the poet moves away from his strict adherence to the more formulaic aspects of love poetry in the courtly style as he finds his feet in the English idiom. As Cecily Clark has suggested in another context, the later English poems (including the later roundels) anticipate the later French work in their more wide-ranging tone and subject matter, their independence from much of the Roman de la rose machinery, and their more sceptical attitude toward that special brand of love. In the later poems Charles finds a new brilliance and concision, and it is easy to find in them the seeds of the disillusionment that overtakes his persona in the French poems written after his return to France.

Throughout the work, Charles’s poetry is characterized by exclamations, repetitions, and sudden shifts in thought and syntax. Though the lover adopts a superficially formal manner and mode of address, he frequently peppers his pleas and his laments with colloquialisms and gives way repeatedly to violent emotional surges represented by ragged syntax and rhetorical questions. In calmer moments, the lover writes intricately patterned lyrics such as Ballades 59, 98, and 100.

211 On this interplay of parts of the work, see my article “Poetic Form.”
212 “Some English Perspectives.” For example, in Roundels 70 and 88, in the lyric beginning line 4553, or in Ballade 119.
213 For example, in Ballades 92 and 108. His later marked love of proverbs, too, is anticipated, for example, in Ballades 104 and 108.
Verse Forms

THE BALLADE: Although the English sample is small, it would seem that the variety of ballade forms was much greater in French than in English. In the French the basic requirements were “three stanzas, a refrain, the same rime-scheme in every stanza, and, under some circumstances, an envoy.”214 Within those strictures, the ballade could vary considerably in stanza length, in rhyme scheme, and in number of syllables per line. The majority of English ballades, on the other hand, have seven- or eight-line stanzas (Troilus stanza or Monk’s Tale stanza215), are usually written in decasyllables, and employ a new set of rhymes in each stanza. As in French, the envoy is optional.216 Perhaps it was the very fixed quality of this fixed form that made it unattractive to English poets.

In the earlier ballades (most of which have French counterparts) Charles of Orleans employs a variety of forms. His stanza length varies from seven to fifteen lines (his envoy varies from four to eight lines); he writes in both octosyllables and decasyllables; he uses thirty-four different rhyme schemes, but he uses a single set of rhymes for each poem. In the ballades without French counterparts, however, he adopts the stricter English structure. He uses seven-line or eight-line stanzas and a decasyllabic line. He also takes frequent advantage of the one freedom the English form offers: he introduces new rhymes in each stanza.217

Thousands of ballades were written in France in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. Machaut and the poets who came after him all tried their hands at at least a few. Ballades were used to show off rhetorical and versifying skills, to tell “stories,” to mock and satirize, or to praise

214 Cohen, The Ballade, 49.
215 Chaucer popularized both these stanza forms, which he borrowed directly from the French, where they were common in ballades.
216 See Wilkins, One Hundred Ballades, 4. This fact has often been misunderstood, and a number of scholars, both French and English, have implied that the envoy was required in English but much less common in French ballades, or vice versa. A number of ballades in the autograph manuscript of Charles’s French poetry are followed by blank spaces for envoys which the poet apparently never completed (Champion, Le Manuscrit autographe, 18 [N.B.: page numbers are incorrect]; they include Ballades I, V, VI, X, XIX, XX, XXXV, XXXVI, XLIV, LI, LVIII, LXV, LXVII).
217 For a summary of the ballade structures, see Appendix II; on ballade structure in English, see Cohen Lyric Forms, 38–47. See also Jansen, “Fairfax Poems,” 213–15.
the Virgin Mary. They were used singly, embedded in longer narrative works, or composed in sequences. One of the reasons for the form's popularity was perhaps its very flexibility. Beyond the requirement of three stanzas with refrain, the poet could do more or less what he or she liked. The variety of ballade forms created by Charles is therefore not remarkable.

One of the challenges of the form was of course to wed each stanza in turn to the same final line. In many cases, Charles uses three or four identical refrain lines, but occasionally he alters them slightly to fit a different syntactic or rhetorical structure. He seems to feel freer in his later ballades (without French counterparts) to deviate more from the initial refrain line. In Ballade 86, for instance, the refrain lines are

As for a while it shulde suffisen me
Withouten more the which suffisid me
My fore request so wold suffisen me
But graunt my yeft and hit suffisith me;

in Ballade 90,

That in my resoun fynde yow hard as stoon
That yow y fynde more hard than eny stoon
For ought y pray y fynde yow but a stoon
That y may fynde yow softer then a stoon.

Ballade 98, one of the most intricate of all the ballades, divides the refrain lines, the first two beginning with "welcome," the last two, with "welcome no more." This ballade also employs anaphora in the first stanza, identical pairs of line openings in the second, and alternating pairs of line openings in the third; it ends with identical line openings in the last two lines of the envoy. This sort of formal elaboration is unusual in these ballades, however. Much more frequently the ballade simply turns on an image introduced in the first stanza, sometimes developed further in the second, often with a new twist to the train of thought (and no further development of the primary image) added in the third. The envoy performs very important and varied functions, in part because it carries a strong reinforcement of the idea in the refrain line by repeating it with only three intervening lines: it may reinforce the speaker's case, call on Love or Hope for aid, cry out for the lady's pity, or reflect on the poem's message.\(^{218}\)

\(^{218}\) For a more extensive discussion of the rhetorical development of the ballade, see Poirion, *Le Poète et le prince*, 374–98.
The ballade has in fact two very important loci of meaning: the opening line and the refrain. These lines are often powerful and memorable; Charles seems to have crafted them with exceptional care. Ballade 40 opens with a question ("O Fortune, dost thou my deth conspyre?") which lingers in the mind, however commonplace the thought. Its refrain ("Alas, alas, and is this not ynough?") punctuates the litany of the lover’s griefs. Anyone who has spent time with this work will know at least a few of these lines on which Charles seems to have lavished so much attention ("If y koude make my wanton wisshis flee"); "Shulde y me make a lady newe? Fy! Fy!"); "The man forlost that wot not where he goth"; "That all is broke and newe to make ayene"). In some cases the refrain line itself carries the dominant image of the poem, as in Ballade 45: "In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyeene." It is the quality of the refrain lines that makes the mourning poems among the finest of all the ballades ("God haue hir sowle. Y kan no bettir say.").

Two ballades in the first sequence (Ballade 9 and Ballade 54) contain five stanzas plus envoy, a form often referred to as a chant royal, though the two names (and indeed the forms) were sometimes confused even in the late Middle Ages. The chant royal was a form considered suitable to serious subjects, and the envoy was often addressed to the prince of a puy or a divinity. The first of these two (440–90) catalogues the lady’s "thewis goode" (good qualities) at length, and the envoy is addressed to all ladies. The poem is not remarkable in itself but may have been intended as the culmination of the first group of ballades addressed to the lady (Ballades 1–9) (it is followed by five poems in which the lady is apparently absent). The

---

219 Poirion, "Function of the Refrain." Both loci are ideal places in which to use standard aphorisms or verbal gambits in the game of love (see Stevens, 196–97 n. 20).

220 We know that Charles was fond of asking his friends to write lyrics to an opening line of his choice, as the eleven ballades opening Je meurs de seuf auprès de la fontaine attest (see Champion, Poésies, 156, 191–92, 194, 196–200, 202–3). See Fox, Lyric Poetry, chap. 6: "The Ballades."

221 It is for this reason that I have included an index of refrain lines as well as an index of first lines. In searching for a particular ballade, it is often the refrain line, repeated three or four times, that is the most memorable.

222 See Poirion, Le Poète et le prince, 361 (for analysis of the form, see 369–74), but see Wilkins, One Hundred Ballades, 77, where exactly such a lyric by Deschamps is labelled chanson royal. Champion includes the French counterparts of both Ballade 9 and 54, without comment, among Charles’s ballades, as Steele and Day do the English.
second chant royal contains no address in the envoy, but records an exchange of vows between the narrator and his lady (see 1873–1927n). The ballade on Fortune's stableness, which contains seven stanzas (4680–4735), should probably be described as a double ballade with envoy.

THE ROUNDEL: The roundel, generally consisting of sixteen lines in this work, is much briefer than the ballade and cannot therefore sustain the elaboration possible in a ballade. The adjective often applied to the roundel is "slight." In fact, much of the earlier prejudice against Charles of Orleans as a poet was based on the fact that he concentrated on the very similar "trivial" form in French, the rondeau. On the other hand, more recent scholars have valued his mastery of the form, seeing him as the apex and epitome of the late medieval lyric poet and the last to compose in a great tradition. The roundel can be valued, like the haiku, precisely on account of its strictures of size and form, which result in highly polished gems rather than brocaded garments or richly furnished halls. The roundel differs from the ballade, too, in that the two focal points in the poem, the first line and the refrain, are one (i.e., the refrain is found at the beginning, middle, and end of the lyric). The length of the refrain (two to four lines) makes it predominate even more over the rest of the poem. If the final repetition of the refrain should really include the first four lines of the poem, then it is obvious that there is really very little "space" in the roundel for development of any kind.

The roundels are much more homogeneous qua form than are the French ballades (the nine twenty-one-line roundels being the only exceptions). They are written in octosyllabic or decasyllabic lines, in a single rhyme scheme. The French counterpart of these English roundels is not the French rondeau, but the variety of the rondeau known as the chanson (and so the French counterparts to the roundels are labelled in Charles's autograph manuscript). The roundel as it

223 "A rondelet is a carving in words," says John Fox of the French rondeaux (Lyric Poetry, 121). He makes interesting comparisons between the ballade and the rondeau (116–31).

224 The only exceptions are Roundels 55 and 56, in which the seventh line rhymes on a instead of b, and Roundel 59, which rhymes baab in the last quatrain rather than the usual abba.

225 At the end of PF, the narrator "sings" a roundel to music "imaked . . . in Fraunce." Champion notes that "les recueils de chansons sont rares au xve
appears on the page is generally fourteen lines long. The first words of the first two lines are repeated in lines 8–9 and again in 13–14. A one-line capital at the beginnings of lines 5 and 9 indicates a division that is generally supported by the content. After an opening four-line unit, the roundel usually contains some kind of turn in the fifth line, which introduces a second four-line unit, the second half of which is the refrain. This is followed by another turn in line 9 (But and For are favorite opening words for these lines).

The English manuscript indicates the repetition of two refrain lines in the middle of the poem and two lines at the end. The scribe of the French chansons in MS. 25458 usually repeats two lines in the middle but only one at the end. Why? Linker and McPeek explain: "the Scribes habitually curtailed the writing of refrains as a matter of saving time, parchment, and energy, since they were writing for readers who were undoubtedly familiar enough with the lyric form to know how to interpret the abbreviations..." 226 Gérard Defaux has nevertheless established beyond doubt that the chanson, an essentially musical form, calls for the repetition of the first two lines in the middle of the poem, but the first four lines at the end. 227 He agrees in this with another scholar well known for his work on the fixed forms both in French and in English, Nigel Wilkins, whose printing of Charles of Orleans’s chansons has served as a model for the roundels in this volume. 228 John Bedyngham, a contemporary of Charles, set the words of Roundel 14 to music. In 1983 this

siècle," and further that "les chansons de Charles d’Orléans présentent tout à la fois une originalité et en quelque sorte une anomalie qui ne peut s’expliquer que par le goût particulier de l’auteur, le milieu musical où il a passé son enfance, la connaissance singulière qu’il avait de la musique" (Poésies, xxxiv).

226 114.

227 "La Poétique du secret," esp. 230–39. This is true in the case of a fourteen-line chanson; longer chansons were also possible. There has been a long controversy on the proper form of Charles’s French rondeaux, as well (which can be traced with the help of Deborah Nelson’s recent bibliography: Barroux 1939; Françon 1941; Wilkins 1969; Defaux 1972; Jodogne 1973; Françon 1975; Garey 1980). The fact that the chanson is essentially a musical form (and one that would not survive long as a favorite) does not mean that it was always set to music, but simply that it was written according to rules that derive from a musical form. Gregory Bouman is currently working on these issues with regard to Charles of Orleans’s English roundels.

228 “Structure of Ballades.” He prints the proper, full form in One Hundred Ballades, nos. 93–96; see also 136 n. 71 and 138 n. 78. See also Kastner (who does not seem to distinguish between the rondeau and the chanson), 251, for an example by Deschamps of the form he calls rondel double, and 253, where he prints Charles’s Rondeau L in the same form.
song was recorded in exactly the form I have presented here: a full (four or five line) refrain recurs at the end of each roundel. What is not present in the manuscript is enclosed in square brackets.

The opening line of the roundel is often an "attention getter," either because it is aphoristic or proverbial or because it is phrased as urgent direct address. Roundel 47 is a good example of the latter:

Ye are to moche as in my dette, madame,
Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere,
Which wold full fayne, if hit were yowr plesere,
Ye payde hem me in savyng of yowre name,
So that of dette y ought yow not to blame
Which dar not don, me thenke, hit for daungere.
Ye are to moche as in my dette, madame.
Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere.

Wite ye, y haue a writ out for þe same
To tache yow with! y rede yow pay hem here,
Lest ye be restid with an officere
Of Loue! Fy! fy! hit were to gret a shame!

229 Fallows, "Words and Music"; Fallows also published a transcription of the words and music ("Two Mid-Fifteenth-Century English Songs"), including the words to the French version of the poem as well. The music appears in fourteen manuscripts. The recording, by The Medieval Ensemble of London, is entitled "Mi Verry Joy."

230 The brackets also serve to retain the correspondence of the line numbering between this edition and that of Steele and Day, i.e., the (usually) two additional lines are unnumbered.

"After Machaut no major poet was able to set his or her lyrics to music: Deschamps, Froissart, Christine de Pisan, Alain Chartier, Charles d'Orléans, François Villon" (Wilkins, Music, 3). It was not at all uncommon, however, for musicians of the day to set lyrics written by others to music; what is more, because the forms were fairly fixed, it was easy to borrow the music from one lyric to sing the text of another (in this regard, see Fallows, "Words and Music," as well as Droz and Thibault). Evidence suggests that Charles was a musician who played the harp (as his mother had) and perhaps also the organ, but we have no evidence that he ever composed any music (his secretary, Robert Vilot, gave the duke a "tres belle harpe" in 1457 [B.N. MS. Pièces Originales Vilot, no. 23]; in return the duke helped to finance the construction of a house for him near Orléans. There are regular household expenses for restringing and repair of harps. See Soyer and Trouillard, Cartulaire, 371; Champion, La Libraire, lvi n. 3). The harp should not be thought an unlikely instrument; Philip the Good also played the harp (Vaughan, Burgundy, 168, and Philip the Good, 160), as did James I (McDiarmid, 45) and Charles's own brother Jean of Angoulême (Crow, 91).
Ye are to moche as in my dette, madame,
Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere,
Which wold full fayne, if hit were your plesere,
Ye payde hem me in savyng of youre name.

The roundel opens with a strong, spoken accusation, followed by an only slightly softened (“swete”) explanation of the problem in the second line. The first two lines must be detachable from, yet coherent with, the next two because the refrain is used in two different forms, and each must be capable of being read as a complete statement. Line five, which begins with “So,” is not so much a turn as an explanation of the consequence of the lady’s desired “payment.” Line nine, however, represents a kind of new beginning, a strong turn towards the legalistic and mock-severe. Far from trailing off, either in harshness or in pressure placed on the lady to “pay up,” this quatrain makes a forceful demand in the strongest of terms, which in turn paves the way for the repetition of the opening quatrain, which by contrast now sounds much more gentle and “smiling” than before.

The tension in this roundel between legalism and love points up another characteristic of the roundels, their clever playfulness. Unlike the ballades, many more of the roundels are joyful and teasing, and they give the impression more often of being exchanged with the lady in person rather than of being sent to a lady who is far away. John Fox’s observations on the ballade, rondel (rondeau), and sonnet are to the point:

Both [the rondel and sonnet] involve a repetitive pattern, inherent in the rondel, optional in the sonnet where its use is not dictated by the structure. The sonnet leads smoothly through a carefully ordered rhetorical progression to its climax, whereas the rondel remains imprisoned within its circular movement and can only culminate in its starting-point, a similar state of affairs prevailing also in the ballade. Ballade and rondel alike are formalized exercises in breadth, not depth.... They provide a lyrical approach to ... experience as against the relatively intellectual approach of the sonnet. They are a set of variations on a theme, musically satisfying rather than intellectually so since they achieve their effect through neatness and symmetry of form, and not, as in the sonnet, through an ordered progression to the
mentally satisfying conceit of the last line.\textsuperscript{231}

OTHER VERSE FORMS: Charles also employs other verse forms. He seems, in fact, to have chosen a different form for almost every “piece” in the work. The opening letter patent (1-55), which rhymes $aaab$ $becc$, etc., is written in decasyllabic lines except for every fourth line, which is tetrasyllabic. The narrative that follows (56-202) is in rhyme royal. The Vision of Age (2540-2715) is in stanzas rhyming $ababbaab$. The petition addressed to the Cupid (2716-2813) is in twelve-line decasyllabic stanzas rhyming $aab$ $aab$ $bba$ $bba$, with trisyllabic lines in 2, 5, 8, and 11. The withdrawal from Love (2814-2981) is recounted in a series of seven “narrative ballades,” poems in eight-line stanzas with refrains but no envoys. The letter from the ex-lover to Cupid (2982-3045) is in eight-line stanzas rhyming in couplets. The end of the banquet is recounted in rhyme royal stanzas (4319-4486), as is the second dream vision and encounter with the new lady (4638-5351) and the second epistle (6129-70). A handful of miscellaneous lyrics that mark the end of the “jubilee” are in various forms (see 4487n). The first epistle (5688-5783) is in twelve “Monk’s Tale” stanzas. Charles, a technically versatile poet, enjoyed the challenge of many verse forms with their various difficulties and used form as a fundamental element in his poetic composition.

VERSIFICATION: Much of Charles’s English verse is unusually regular. Eleanor Prescott Hammond speaks of the poet’s “good ear for rhythm.” He was, she says, “both bilingual and a good metrist. He twists his syntax with a strong hand, using sometimes difficult inversions. He wastes no words; he is not clumsy, and he does not blur the light tenderness of the French, though he does occasionally add firmness and freshness”—and she cites a few of his graceful lines.\textsuperscript{232} Charles makes frequent and effective use of enjambment, both from line to line:

\begin{verbatim}
When that next approchen gan the fest
Of Loue and semblid was his parlement  (2814-15)
\end{verbatim}

\textsuperscript{231} Lyric Poetry, 130.
\textsuperscript{232} English Verse, 215. She also remarks on the “superiority of verse-flow” in the poems (16, 214-15). “The handling of English rhythm by Walton is so much better than by either Hoccleve or Lydgate that he, with the translator of Palladius and the translator of Charles d’Orléans, deserves especial attention from students of the English metre written in this bewildered period” (40).
and from stanza to stanza:

... and as y shope me hir to kis
She wayfid me and lokid passyng straunge.

(4777-78)

Though an occasional line does not seem to scan, he is capable, on other occasions, of elegant marriages of syntax and meter.

Vpon a launde, the gras soft, smothe, & fayre
That likyng gret hit was me to bihold,
And homward þus as y gan me repayre
I fond a company, some yong, some olde,
That gan eche othir fast in armys hold,
For at the post-and-piler did þei play;
And all were gentil folkis, dar y say. (5198–5204)

He can also write convincing conversational lines. The lover, in discussion with his heart, says,

"Seest thou not well that Fortune doth vs fayle?
Hast thou good lust to lyue in sorow?" "Nay,
Iwis," he seide, "y trust more to attayne.
I had a praty look yit yestirday,
As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne." (363–67)

The bulk of the lines of Fortunes Stabilnes are decasyllabic; most of the remainder are octosyllabic (and Charles rarely introduces extra syllables into a line).233 It is instructive in the matter of versification to look at the French poet’s work in comparison with that of an Englishman writing French verse: John Gower. Macaulay says of Gower’s Mirour de l’Ommne that the verses

have an unmistakably English rhythm. . . . One of the reasons for this is that the verse is in a certain sense accentual as well as syllabic, the writer imposing upon himself generally the rule of the alternate beat of accents and seldom allowing absolutely weak syllables to stand in the even places of his verse.234

Similarly (but looking in the opposite direction) the verse of the French

233 For a fairly detailed discussion of the meters of Charles’s French ballades, see Fox, Lyric Poetry, 106–11.
234 French Works, xlv–xlvi.
poet writing English seems occasionally weak in precisely this, the alternate stresses expected in English verse. That Charles allows some stress patterns that are not always comfortable for English readers points to the verse as the work of a Frenchman. Though the quality of his English verse far surpasses that of his English contemporaries in the regularity of its cadences, he never succeeds in suppressing entirely his French poetic inclinations.

Charles writes three regular variants of the five-beat decasyllabic line: headless lines, "Lydgate" or broken-backed lines, and lines with one or more inverted stresses. Headless lines are common, as in "Fleth the shott of swete regard" (3873) or "Wynne the game withouten more dowtaunce" (1636). Often, as here, they are the opening or refrain lines of lyrics. One of his finest is the opening line of Roundel 24, a poem of despair: "Hit is doon. Ther is no more to say."

Charles also writes many Lydgate lines (or lines in which a syllable is lacking at a medial pause): "O stedfast trouth, displaye thi baner" (944) or "For his plesaunce sum fayre lady make" (2675). The first two feet of "Aftir wyntir the veer with foylis grene" (5436), the second foot of "Where y sorow the deth of my maystres" (2477), and the third of "Which axid me whithir y was away" (2398) are apparently inverted (or perhaps Charles did not hear the stresses clearly). In addition, two unstressed syllables very occasionally take the place of one, as in line 5999: "The tothir is he which lyvith in plesaunce."

This could also be seen as an instance of elision, but in any case elision between (rather than within) words is uncommon in these poems.

It is difficult to know how to scan the opening line of Ballade 76 (in which the lover protests vehemently the God of Love's suggestion that he take a new lady): "Allas sir! allas sir! pardoun me!" Such lines (which lack syllables or contain nonstandard stress patterns) frequently occur at the significant points in the lyrics, such as the opening lines, implying that they are intentionally odd.

---

235 The stress on prefixes is not uncommon and that on the final syllable is typical of Charles's verse. The rhyming line is "And fresshe assayle this newe and strong fronter" (also sometimes spelled frontre).

236 See also 6230.

237 The strain of the opening cadence is often pointed up by the easy flow of the line Charles composes to follow it, in this case: "'For while y lyue hit may not be,' quod y." The French version of the line, by contrast, runs smoothly: "Helas! sire, pardonnez moy."

238 It is not always clear why this should be so (see, e.g., the opening lines of
INTRODUCTION

A disconcerting peculiarity of Charles’s meter is that he sometimes drops, in the midst of a passage in decasyllabic verse, into octosyllables for one, two, or more lines, then switches back to ten-syllable lines. Within a roundel written in decasyllables he writes

So wolde y pray you, gef y durste or may,
The sight to se as y haue seyne,
Forwhi þat craft me is most fayne
And wol ben to þe howre in which y day.

(Roundel 69)

Charles is not unique in this alternation, however. The author of the (decasyllabic) Middle English translation of Michault Taillevent’s *Le Débat du coeur et de l’œil* also drops into octosyllables at various points, for example,

Like as frute may not wexe ripe kyndely
But if he take of the sonne summe manere heté
In like wise I may not lyue trewly
Withoute thy counseille wherfore cause grete
I haue to blame the sith I may not gete
Sith of hir alas the harde while
I am not like with hir to mete
Howe maist thou forth me thus begile.240

The fact that the original is written in octosyllables would lead naturally to the suspicion that the translator was simply inattentive in his regular “padding out” of eight-syllable lines into ten. The matter is more complicated in Charles’s case, however, for even in the second

---

Ballades 46, 83, 88, 97, 111, 113, and Roundel 43), but see also Fox, *Lyric Poetry*, 106–11. Occasionally syllables seem to be omitted following exclamations or questions, as if they took up more *time* than ordinary discourse:
- What haue y doon offense that ye so are
- Glad me to sle? Alak! am y not he

Some problematic lines include 1383, 1676, 1776, 2541, 2905, 3997, 5500. Other lines occasionally have an extra syllable, e.g., 1261, 1786, 1566, 2169–70.

239 Many of these lines are pointed out in the notes. See esp. the lover’s petition to Cupid and Venus, where the many octosyllabic lines do not seem to fall into a regular pattern (2716–2813).

240 Stanza 33, lines 257–64; Hammond, “Eye and Heart,” 246. Although the meter is frequently faulty (the second line of the stanza, e.g., is too long unless *if* is a scribal intrusion), the final two (perhaps three) lines are definitely octosyllabic.
INTRODUCTION

dream vision, which has no French counterpart, he falls repeatedly into octosyllables. The Boke of Cupide may present some evidence that the problem is not that of a translator, however. As his editor points out, Clanvowe also drops occasionally into octosyllables. There are lyrics in which this variation in line length seems conscious and effective, however, as in Roundel 24.

Developing some idea of the poet's understanding of English pronunciation patterns will help the reader in coping with most lines that do not seem to scan. Inflectional final -e's (true or false) are not pronounced, though plural, oblique (verbal) endings often are. Thus in line 2700 ("And thus of loue and his goode folkis alle") the plural ending of "folkis" is pronounced (but not the two final -e's). In line 2662 ("Even clene renounce here louys werkis alle"), the first word is monosyllabic (as it is elsewhere), and the plural and possessive endings are pronounced. The spellings -id, -ith, and -ist are not always an indication that the syllable is to be pronounced, however:

And that she shall be helid hastily.
But what y say he settith not therby,
Saue wayle and wepe and prayeth in every stounde.

(1941–43)

The verbal endings are pronounced in the first two lines, but not in the third.

---

241 For instance lines 5037–85, where lines shift erratically between eight and ten syllables.
242 E.g., lines 152, 202 (see Scattergood, 18). On the other hand, these octosyllabic lines could, I suppose, be taken to indicate that the work is a translation of an unknown original.
243 Charles's resistance to the pronunciation of -e is perhaps remarkable in a French poet who was often turning eight-syllable lines into ten-syllable lines and who had a collection of techniques to fill them out. To take an example at random, none of the final -e's in Roundel 35 are pronounced, neither nouns, verbs, adjectives, nor adverbs (3637 is headless; even and atones are disyllabic; presentid is trisyllabic). In general, if a line does not seem to scan, it is a better strategy to look for words with "adjustable length" than to begin pronouncing final -e's. A single possible exception is the form wolde, which seems to be disyllabic on occasion.
244 In lines 2556–57, the preterite ending does not require a syllable (Charles's usual stress on -yng is emphasized):
He stent awhile and aftir resonyed me,
Salyng, "My frend, ne takist thou of me cure?"
In 1811, menyss is monosyllabic, as is semeth (1826) and makist (1838), but deservith (1825) is trisyllabic, and spekist (1840) is disyllabic (see also 346, 368, 1292).
In some words syllables are frequently (but not always) elided (even, eyen, ellis, yvill, onys, besily, hardly, hastily, neuurtheles); in others, extra syllables seem to be implied (gret[ǐly], 5684; humb[e]ly, 2434, 2902, etc.). These and other words may vary in length. In lines 2639 and 4736, poor(e) is disyllabic (cp. puer, 4809), but it may also be monosyllabic (5341).\textsuperscript{245} Eyen may be mono or disyllabic. Rememb[e]fraunce is apparently more often tetrasyllabic than trisyllabic (\textsuperscript{-}e is unpronounced).\textsuperscript{246}

Normally unstressed parts of words may receive stress. The re-prefix is often, but not always stressed.\textsuperscript{247} Charles may rhyme louver on the second syllable (504). Stress may fall on inflectional endings, as in hertis (6171) and louely/swetely (441–43). A guide to pronunciation of individual words is provided in the notes.

The rhyme in the English poems has its peculiarities, too, and Charles’s linguistic background again acts as a guide to his practices in English. Because French verse is not governed by stress patterns, the terms “masculine” and “feminine” in regard to rhyme are applied somewhat differently. The terminology can therefore be confusing. “Feminine” rhymes in French involve the rhyming of the last two syllables, but only in cases in which the final syllable is \textsuperscript{-}e: taire/faire. If the last two syllables rhyme and the final one is not an \textsuperscript{-}e, the rhyme is called “double”: voudrez/toudrez. (Both would qualify as “feminine” rhymes in English—if the final \textsuperscript{-}e were pronounced, that is—as in tango/mango.)

On the other hand “rich” rhyme requires that the consonant preceding the last tonic vowel of the line be identical: grever/eschiver. (This kind of rhyme is not distinguished in English from the one that follows—carouse/arouse, amount/dismount.)\textsuperscript{248} French also has a kind of rhyme known as “poor” rhyme, or rhyme involving the vowel of the

\textsuperscript{245} Power(e), too, may go either way.

\textsuperscript{246} E.g., 2198. I base such statements on the fact that lines including words such as humbly and remembrance are regularly a syllable short (see encombraunce in 5989). The phrase by he rood seems to have only two syllables (e.g., 5321). Charles does not hesitate to adjust the number of syllables to be pronounced to suit his line; company is usually three syllables, but in 481 it is two.

\textsuperscript{247} Chaucer, of course, stresses this prefix on occasion, too. Other prefixes, too, may be stressed or unstressed, as need arises: in 534 displaysyn is stressed on the first and third syllables; in 5525 amende is stressed on the first.

\textsuperscript{248} Kastner refers to this rhyme in French verse as “masculine,” though it is more commonly called “rich” (39), but the terminology was variable in the Middle Ages.
INTRODUCTION

final syllable and whatever follows it, for example, semblant/devant, bateau/rondeau.\textsuperscript{249}

We may summarize by saying that, roughly speaking, the English terms “feminine” and “masculine” are equivalent to the French terms “double” and “poor” respectively (“rich” rhyme falling somewhere in between). Avoidance of “rich” rhyme would therefore preclude “feminine” or “double” rhyme. In an age in which feminine and double rhymes were extremely popular and masculine rhymes were dubbed “poor,” Charles chose the latter overwhelmingly in his French verse.\textsuperscript{250} Such rhymes as louer/yow fer (504–6); louely/womanly (441–43); redel/as she (1864–66); powerel/prayere (2180–81) must therefore have seemed perfectly acceptable to Charles. Unlike Chaucer’s poems or those of his other followers, the English poems contain very few feminine rhymes.

In Ballade 29 Charles rhymes of his/goodis and that is/grevis on the final syllable; similarly, in Ballade 49 he rhymes wisshis/ther nys and me is/woundis. Now, Chaucer rhymes these same parts of speech, but only as feminine rhymes (false goddis/forbode is, MchT 2295–96).\textsuperscript{251} Charles shares his preference for the final -is spelling with the Northern poets, but none of them share his preference for treating the plural noun ending as a masculine rhyme.\textsuperscript{252} His belief that plural noun endings could fall in stressed position makes for awkward stressing in

\textsuperscript{249} Assuming that the stress falls on the final syllable, this would qualify in English as a normal “masculine” rhyme: arise/defies. Hammond also discusses “cheap” rhyme in English, which is rhyme “merely of suffix” as in softly/openly (Chaucer, 501). This should not be confused with rime pauvre.

\textsuperscript{250} Kastner comments that Charles, “unaffected by the prevailing fashion,” avoided rich rhyme (49). The French poet who comes closest to his high proportion of masculine or “poor” rhymes is his friend Jean de Garencières. John Fox’s discussion of Charles’s attitudes and those of his predecessors and contemporaries toward rhyme in this context is both interesting and useful (Lyric Poetry, 132–36). His discussion is, however, potentially confusing because he uses the term rime assonante for what I, following Kastner, have called “poor” rhyme (Fox’s use of the example semblant/devant makes this clear). Kastner uses the term “assonance” to refer to a likeness of final tonic vowels alone: bel/per (40).

\textsuperscript{251} In T&C he tends to rhyme -is only with monosyllabic words, with the common exceptions ywis and amys (see Masui).

\textsuperscript{252} See Daunt, 149. Henryson rhymes blynnis/within is (“The Annunciation” is full of such rhymes); Dunbar, who more often tends to rhyme plural nouns with each other, rhymes delyt is/wrytis (98); Douglas, skant is/wantis (9) and abufe is/behuffis (33). In none of these instances is the stress on the final syllable. (Charles shares with many of the poets of his age a tendency to rhyme on the -ing suffix.)
the remainder of the line. The root of a two-syllable rhyme word is often unstressed, whereas the prefix of a three-syllable rhyme may receive unusual stress.

Though Marjorie Daunt treated the matter of Charles’s rhymes in detail, her attempts to justify Charles’s practices sometimes lead her to underestimate the peculiarities of his rhymes.253 Admittedly, some of Charles’s rhymes appear to be more unusual than they are because of frequent “misspellings” such as mette for meet, hir for hire (wage), deyuure for devere (Fr devoir), enpresse for emprise, pressen for prissoun, etc., but some of his rhymes are truly odd.254

Charles frequently treated -y [-i:] and -e(e) [-e:] as good rhymes, much more frequently than did other fifteenth-century poets.255 Often either he or his scribe appears to attempt to mask this license by adjusting the spelling to suit the rhyme, for instance, bode/necessite/affynyte (24ff.) but body/Araby/foly (Ballade 9).256 In Ballade 106 eye rhymes creweltel/ye, but in Ballade 116 it rhymes ocupy/by. In Ballade 53, rede (ready) rhymes degre/she; in Ballade 44 heue (heavy) rhymes she and vnwothe, be. Perhaps the poet’s most interesting conflation is Ballade 42, where the rhymes are mercy/worthi/mysere/aduersite/me/parte/theellade.

253 135-54. Because the article is unfortunately riddled with typographical errors, it should be used with caution. See also Jansen, “Fairfax Poems,” 221–24, where he bases his work with rhymes in Harley 682 and Fairfax 16 on the results of our discussions of Charles’s rhyming habits.

254 On the spelling of James I, see McDiarmid, 44–45. The peculiarities of Charles’s rhymes are pointed out as an aid to reading; for further detail, readers are referred to Marjorie Daunt’s discussion.

255 Norman Davis says of the language a century after Hoccleve that [ε:] was raised so that it rhymed with [i:], as in bel’clerely (501). In Charles’s day, “All the words in question could be heard with [i:], the original [ε:] ones on account of the GVS, the original [i:] ones in spite of it—not, indeed, from the same speakers, but that is quite a different story” (Johan Gerritsen, private correspondence). Either Charles heard this change in its early stages and adopted it as his own pronunciation (at least in his poetry) because it afforded him so many rhymes, or he simply did not hear the difference that Englishmen did. The linguistically conservative nature of courtly poetry may have contributed to the maintenance of the distinction between the two sounds by other poets of the period.

256 Other spelling variants in rhyme position are Ballade 1 worthe (but Ballade 9 worthi), Ballade 12 curtesy/party (but line 320 curtese, Ballade 22 parte), Ballade 53 luste (but Ballade 12 lusty), Ballade 76 lade (but Ballade 9 lady), Ballade 37 compaine (but Ballade 43 company). In some cases the spellings within a lyric do not match: Ballade 12 happy rhymes adversite/me (cf. Ballade 45 happe); Ballade 21 mercy rhymes tranqullitise (cf. Ballade 66 merce); Ballade 87 foly rhymes felicite/see, (cf. Ballade 32 fol); etc.
Although most of these instances are taken from the earlier ballades (with French counterparts), such rhyming and spelling patterns are evident throughout the work. The matter is more complex, however. In other cases Charles apparently tries to rhyme them against each other, as in Ballades 35, 43, 45, and 76. The rhyme group [-e:] plus [-i:] is by far the largest Charles used. He evidently depended on it to give him a tool he would otherwise lack in English: a rhyme which included a huge number of common and uncommon words and could be used for many parts of speech, yet lacked the complicating factor of a final consonant.

In the matters of rhyme and meter, therefore, one might speculate that Charles exhibits some of the same tendencies in his English poems that he does in his French: he nearly always rhymes on the final syllable alone, he seems to choose a few final syllables that he can depend on, and he may in some cases value syllable count over stress pattern. Other factors may, of course, account for some of the observed phenomena: a Frenchman’s analysis of English sounds, dialectal (and class) variation in English sounds during this period, the inexorable march of the Great Vowel Shift, or a combination of these (and perhaps other) factors. What can be said with certainty is that Charles employs rhymes that are not usual in the work of his native English contemporaries.

Charles commonly rhymes words with the vowels in wesshe and disshe (4389–91), hence: forfelle/wille (709–11); yet/sitt (5056–57); set/witt (5259–60); etc. He seems not to distinguish between a number of other rhyme pairs, either: loo/do (4408–9); pardon/doon/mone (moon) (4081–85); doon/suspicioun/gardoun (6216–21). In the matter of vowel length, Marjorie Daunt is forced to admit that “in some cases the spellings are so confusingly used that it is difficult to come to any decision as to the length of vowel:— e.g., el, eel, ele, ell, elle. Cf. deel, dwel. 5310.” She concludes that “on the whole Charles seems to keep the groups distinct, though there are a few ambiguous cases.”

5220ff.), and in other cases ough with of (of/bithought [Roundel 66]).

It is impossible to say whether Charles twisted his grammar to suit
his poetic ends or whether he simply borrowed French forms uncon-
sciously, but comparison of his English work with Gower’s French
work may be instructive. Gower “was freer than continental writers
[writing in French] in making grammar give way before the require-
ment of metre and rhyme.” Charles does do something of the
same sort not only in his English poetry, but even in his French. In
lines 2897–98, the form délyuerment (rather than deliverance) provides
his rhyme. In Ballade 34, he follows the French in rhyming on départe-
ment (separation), though his usual form is departyng. His usual form is
gouernaunce, but in Ballade 78 the lover says of his heart that Love had
it longe in gournement (under his control); the corresponding French line
rhymes on ligement. All of these -ment forms in the English poems are
perfectly acceptable French forms unattested in fifteenth-century Eng-
lish. In addition to his use of this suffix to make nouns out of verbs,

Il est intéressant de voir ces mots [i.e., the nouns created] entrer
en concurrence avec d’autres noms, purs ou construits sur un
autre suffixe, et dont le sens est à peu près le même: alegeance/
allegement, decevance/decevement, gouernance/gouernement, main-
tien/maintenement, pensee/perser/pensement. Il y avait là une métá-
morphose extérieure qui permettait d’exprimer la même idée
dans différents systèmes de rimes. Le poète semble avoir consi-
déré ces mots comme de simples synonymes.

Charles also uses this technique (or lapse) to create rhymes in -aunce:
deseraunce (desire), deservaunce (deserving), and desperaunce (despair).

---

259 On the former, see Daunt, 146.
260 Legge, Anglo-Norman Literature, 360. McCaulay says that Gower “takes
liberties with the forms of words in flexion in order to meet the requirements
of his rhyme. . . . The first of these [expedients] is a tolerably extensive disregard
of gender. . . . A much more wide-reaching principle is that which has to do with the
‘rule of s’. . . . Rhyme . . . must be the first consideration, and a great advantage is
obtained by the systematic combination of the older and the newer rule” (xvi–
xviii). My general impression is that Charles’s English was not quite as good as he
thought it was; he seems to have valued fluency and the effects and relations of
sounds over accuracy (or “correctness”).
261 See also 1447 and note. Charles’s “borrowings” seem to have worked in
two directions; Staehle identified three English words used by Charles in his
French poems: desserte (from desseruir, E deserve), galimafree (OE gallimawfre
sic], and meschief (E mischief; Staehle, 15–16).
He employs the French form *servaunce* for *servaunt* (3045). In addition, he uses present tense verbs for preterite (1773 [inf], 5025); plural verbs for singular (2777, 3724, 6105) and singular for plural (4027); plural nouns for singular (2048) and vice versa (4881); and even adds an adverbial ending to adjectives (line 474, see also 5017n). He obviously has difficulty with rhymes, choosing unusual words or using them in unusual senses: *go* [trans.] for “leave (a place)” (4609) or *avaunce* (2975) and *prance* (2978) for “go.” Such instances are mentioned in the notes, as are various other peculiarities in the rhymes. Though Charles appears to repeat a rhyme word occasionally, I have not found a single instance in which a word was clearly repeated with the same meaning.

**Relation of the English Poems to their French Counterparts**

In reworking the same material in English that he used in French, Charles sometimes worked very closely from the French text, but sometimes diverged totally from his original. The patent that opens the (extant) work is a good example of a poem closely translated from the French, though even here there are significant differences. On the other hand, the third stanzas of Ballades 8 and 73 in English differ significantly from their French counterparts.

One of Charles’s most intriguing poetic techniques is his playing on the sounds of French poems in composing his English poems. In Ballade 23 “Loyal Espoir,” for instance, becomes “Royall Hope.” The pair “rolid”/“enroillié” (“rusted”) from the French and English refrains of Ballade 83 (3081) is especially piquant. Since Charles

---

263 On this tendency in Chaucer, see Ross, *Miller’s Tale*, 3182–86n: “changes from preterite to present occur frequently throughout *CT* (and in all ME literature), sometimes with the effect of the ‘historical present,’ but just as frequently without any apparent purpose” (129).

264 Although Charles often used the same rhyme words in both versions of a poem, he did not hesitate to vary the rhyme schemes when it suited him (see Cohen, *The Ballade*, 268–71).

265 The fact that lyrics sometimes begin as close translations but move away from the French original seems sound evidence for seeing Charles as a poet trying out his skills in English in preparation for composition in his newest language. See also the envoy of Ballade 83, the final lines of Roundel 19, and note to Ballade 49. I have generally noted significant divergences from the French versions in the explanatory notes.

266 John Fox gives a French example of the late medieval preoccupation with sound: in his “Balade equivoque, retrograde et leonime” the poet begins each line with the final syllable of the previous line, but with a change in meaning.
frequently played on differences between the two languages, “bending” spellings, sounds, and meanings to suit his fancy, the use of the French for solutions to the problems in the English poems is itself problematic. To depend on the French poems to explain the English is to revert, perhaps not quite consciously, to the old “translator theory” and to deny the poet his right to diverge from a prior text to create a new poem. As Derek Pearsall has said of the relation of John Gower’s Latin glosses on his English text, "Surely a poet is entitled to misappropriate his own work."\(^{267}\) I have therefore cited the French version of an English poem in the notes only where an apparent crux has demanded some solution (or at least some creative guesswork), where two equally attractive readings are involved, or where the differences are for some reason especially interesting. For many additional comparisons between the two bodies of poetry, the reader may wish to consult the notes of the Steele and Day edition or the Champion edition.

Some differences between the two bodies of poetry are systematic. The English poems are more dramatic, more vivid, more concrete, more colloquial, more impassioned, and more pessimistic than the French. For example, the many expressions using \textit{short} do not occur in the French poems.\(^{268}\) In Ballade XXXII, the lover gives the lady his heart:

\begin{quote}
Lasse, laisse, maleureuse et dolente!
Lente me voy, fors de soupirs et plains.
Plains sont mes jours d’ennuy
\end{quote}
\textit{(The Middle Ages, 324 n. 10)}

For another example, see Christine de Pizan’s “Ballade à doubles rimes” (Roy, 3.191); for sound play of a different sort, see Machaut’s rondeau (\textit{Louange}, no. 264), part of which is reproduced in Johnson, 56–57.

\(^{267}\) “Gower’s Languages,” paper read at the 25th International Congress on Medieval Studies (Kalamazoo, MI, 1990). Cecily Clark has quite rightly taken to task those who would use the English poems as handy translations in presentations of Charles’s French poems. In speaking of John Fox’s adoption of this method she says, “these [English poems], which themselves need and often are accorded further glossing, are no sops to the ‘general reader’, for even a Middle-English scholar will use Charles’s French to explain the Middle-English versions, rather than the other way about” (“Some English Perspectives,” 257). More recently, Sarah Spence (\textit{French Chansons}) has presented the French chansons (those that have English counterparts) in this way. Douglas Kelly’s use of this technique may mislead the reader into applying his (sound) interpretation of certain French poems to their English counterparts without taking the English context and structure into proper account.

\(^{268}\) Steele and Day list a number of these differences (305). Compare Pearsall’s analysis of the differences between Chantier’s \textit{La Belle Dame} and Ros’s translation: “Ros tends to be more colourful, more vigorous, more obvious, in a sense more English” (“English Chaucerians,” 226).
Humblement vous en vueil prier
En le gardant en loyauté,
Soubz clef de Bonne Voulenté.

The English version intrudes a question—and a pretty unlikely one at that:

In my most humbil wise y yow requere
To kepe in trouth—how? in an holow tre?
Nay, vndir kay of faithfull volunte.

(Ballade 32)

The colloquial tone of some of the verse derives from the process of turning octosyllabic verse into decasyllabic:

Je suy pris et ne puis entrer
Ou point que desire souvent;
Dieu me doint une fois gietter
Chance qui soit aucunement
A mon propos . . .

(Ballade XLVI)

But take am y, and y not entre may
The poynt y wolde—the more is my grevaunce—
But Jhesu graunt me (loo, what may y say?)
That y may onys attayne sum happe chaunce
To my purpos . . .

(Ballade 46)

Ballade 40 opens “O Fortune, dost thou my deth conspyre? / Onys let me pese, y pray thee hertily!” whereas the French version reads simply “Fortune, vueilliez moy laisser / En paix, une fois, je vous prie” (Ballade XL). The English narrator calls on death more frequently and discusses his misery at greater length. The sum of these differences is a verse that is stronger (and sometimes less subtle) and a narrator who is more emotional, at times more demanding, and occasionally more foolish than his French counterpart.

269 The more emotional tone of the English is in no sense un-French. For a comparison of Machaut’s (and Chaucer’s) rhetorical excess as compared with Boccaccio’s more restrained tone, see Wimsatt, “Guillaume de Machaut,” esp. 278–84.
Language

The Language of the Poems

As many readers of Fortunes Stabilnes have noted, much of Charles’s language is simply good fifteenth-century English. If it were not, the poetry could rightfully be relegated to the category of obscure curiosity and forgotten. In considering the oddities of Charles’s English, therefore, it is important to bear in mind that many stanzas read without any appreciable difficulty or sense of strangeness. In addition, a number of Charles’s linguistic quirks are systematic, so that a knowledge of them and their causes will diminish the disruption they may cause to the flow of the verse.\(^270\) The difficulties of Charles’s English spring from a variety of sources: (1) his inclination toward complex syntax; (2) his unusual, sometimes seemingly random, word order (perhaps an effect of the greater flexibility of French in this regard, because it was—and is—a more highly inflected language than English); (3) his willingness to use an “incorrect” form in order to produce a usable rhyme; (4) his imperfect grasp of register in English, resulting in a mixing of words, expressions, and proverbs which may be obscure to us because they were not thought properly to belong to the body of “literary language”; (5) his borrowing or invention of words when he knew of no appropriate word (as in his free use of prefixes to make new words); and (6) his evident confusion in the matter of such “mortar” of the language as conjunctions and prepositions, evidenced by his frequent use of them in given contexts not attested elsewhere.

Because the work exists in only one manuscript and that manuscript is probably at only one remove from the work of the poet himself, its spellings may reflect some of Charles’s own spellings. Even in an age that lacked standardization, some spellings are little short of incredible. Charles (apparently) writes: *aise* (ashes), *enpresse* (emprise), *poore posse* (purpose), *sore* and *sowre* (swore, rhymes *tresowre*), *ben wayd* (bewailed), *fawkoun* (facioun), *ennysen* (enseigne), *shihit* (shift?), *shrympe* (?), *reresse* (rehearse). These may, of course, not represent Charles’s actual spellings but the scribe’s interpretation of what he saw, but they are clearly

\(^{270}\) He uses some unusual expressions repeatedly, such as “set [n]o poynyt ashore” (6268, 6181), a number of proverbial expressions with *shirt* (296, 494, 2775, 3199, 3346, 5364), and expressions involving pronouns, such as “that are it ye” (209), “hit am y, Age” (2558; Fr: “Je suis Aage”), “to chaunge it am not y” (4624), “nede y must ben he” (5759). For a longer list of related expressions see Steele and Day, xliii.
problematical (the scribe’s spelling seems otherwise unremarkable). A number of the cruces and linguistic peculiarities in the work may in fact be due to the scribe’s attempts to make sense of words he did not recognize. The spellings of Harley 682 are often not a very good guide to meaning, though they might, in the right hands, provide a guide to some of Charles’s pronunciations.

How French is Charles’s English? Though strong influence of French diction would not be surprising, it is difficult to generate a list of Gallicisms that is at all impressive. Given the fact that nonce borrowings from French were probably common, it is not easy to point to a significant French lexicon within Charles’s English one.271 There are a handful of such instances. It is true, however, that many French loan words have since been lost, making the poet’s language look, at times, more Gallic than it really is.

The language is more clearly marked as the work of a foreigner by such things as the many uses of prepositions in certain collocations that are not otherwise attested; the over-use (perhaps misuse) of certain affixes (especially for-, en-, and a-) but also his frequent use of aphetic forms;272 the opaque proverbs not attested elsewhere;273 and the occasionally tortured syntax.274 The frequently unusual stress patterns (myssyn “to come to an end,” stressed on the second syllable) may point to unfamiliarity with the language, but more likely Charles was simply counting syllables (see above, “Versification”).

The poet had at his disposal a number of one- and two-syllable words he could use to adjust his meter, among them what, but what (both used as exclamations), lo, yea, certes, parde, and as.275 His use

271 I count a total of twelve French words unattested in fifteenth-century English (or one in more than fifty lines): affoyle, delyuerment, departement (separation), deseraunce (desire), deservauce (deserving), desperaunce (despair), gouernement (gouernance), oblyaunce, pancer, patise, pechere, servaunce (servant) (in addition amverse, though not attested in French, is probably a form of enverse). Of these, the ones ending in -ment and -aunce are simply skewed forms of words that are attested in English and are therefore easy to understand in context. It is difficult to believe that words like affoyle or pancer or oblyaunce would even sound “foreign” to English ears in the fifteenth century.

272 Not unusual in English forms of French words (see Mossé, 37, par. 42).

273 On Charles’s use of proverbs in his French poetry, see Champion, Vie, 648–50. Whiting and Whiting list a number of Charles’s proverbs, citing only Fortunes Stabilines. Three of Venus’s proverbial statements find no entry in any proverb book I have consulted (lines 4779, 4783, and 5097), a shame because the poet uses them to characterize her (by their very commonness, I suspect).

274 See Pearsall, Old English, 217.

275 The two most common one-syllable words in this work (apart from
of exclamatory but what! is unusual (see line 322n). His as, too, is used more liberally and in more different syntactical positions than is usual in late medieval texts.\(^{276}\) Lo always seems to head the list of “padding words” held against the poet, but Marjorie Daunt, in her discussion of the usage of both Chaucer and Charles, defends his placement of the word as frequently meaningful.\(^{277}\) For instance, both poets sometimes use the word to add emphasis to the word or phrase that precedes it, as in “I here agraut it, lo, vnto the free,” where “lo,” as it were, confirms the grant. It is true that many of these words and others like them helped the poet, in some cases, to turn octosyllabic French verse into decasyllabic English verse, but it does not follow that such words are therefore simply empty syllable markers with no lexical function in the verse.

The use of to (or f"orto, neither one to be translated) before the second of two verbs in the infinitive (when omitted before the first) was not unknown in Middle English (see OED, s.v. to B.V.19), but Charles makes unusual use of this sort of supposedly parallel construction.\(^{278}\)

pronouns and prepositions) are probably lo and as. Charles uses both in different ways, many of them unfamiliar. He may insert lo between an adjective and noun (165) or use it to emphasize a word or phrase which immediately precedes or follows (or to draw out a line dramatically), as in lines 184 and 188. The word is often used in conjunction with as (as lo[o]: 45, 196, etc.), probably for the same purpose. In conjunction with ywis, it functions to add emphasis, as in line 67. Marjorie Daunt compares Charles’s uses of lo with those of Chaucer (“Rhymes,” 153–54). The frequency of the word in this work has probably been overestimated; it occurs 200 times, or an average of once in 46.7 lines, though its use is, admittedly, often concentrated in a few lines (as in the stanza beginning in 182). At other points Charles makes very little use of it.

\(^{276}\) A number of its uses were apparently influenced by French usage. The word as “occurs in a number of peculiar uses, often seemingly redundant” in Middle English, and “there is some reason to assume that as was not uncommon in Middle English colloquial speech” (Mustanoja, 331, 333; see 331–35; see also MED, s.v. as, also). According to Prins, “the use of redundant as seems to be based on French. There are French parallels in nearly all cases” (57–60; many of his English examples are taken from Chaucer). It is not necessary to assume in these cases that Charles was lapsing into French habits, however, as most were also used by the English poets of the late fourteenth century (see, e.g., 2865 and Mustanoja, 332). For a single lyric which contains a number of different constructions with as, see Roundel 9 (Charles uses this little word 839 times).

\(^{277}\) 153–54. Eleanor Hammond agrees (English Verse, 215). Charles’s padding is as nothing compared with that of Lydgate.

\(^{278}\) An example of this construction is 2704–8, where “to take” is parallel to “rekewre” (see also 4105–6, 4876–77, 5371–72). A number of such constructions are noted in the commentary. In 5166 (“ye geve it hir and never forto chaunge”),
INTRODUCTION

In 2778–80, for example, he uses this construction with an imperative. As Steele and Day note, “this construction suggests that a foreigner is writing English” (2780n). In addition, the poet seems to have understood the prefix be- as a form of the verb “to be” (rather than as a prefix meaning “around”) and thus wrote benway[ly]d, benfalle, benleue, benholde, etc. Hammond speaks of the “easy command of English” evidenced in these poems, and despite all its peculiarities, the language often does flow naturally, as if their author were a fluent, if not always correct, speaker of English.

Summary of Forms

Though the regular noun plural is -is (-ys, -es, -s, occasionally -en), Charles sometimes omits the suffix to suit the rhyme. The possessive occurs both with ending and without. The regular spelling of the feminine pronoun is she (Revisors A and B: sche), rarely hit; the possessive form is hir, rarely her. Hir and her are also used rarely for their; thym rarely for hem (or them). The pronoun is often used before the referent or repeated after it. On occasion Charles omits a required reflexive pronoun. The use of final inflectional -e in adjectives and adverbs is generally, but not always, correct.

Though -en endings are attested for many verbs, they constitute

“for to chaunge” must be some sort of absolute construction (see also 176–78).

These words are frequently written as two in the manuscript. Steele and Day state that the usual infinitive form in the first 500 lines is be; thereafter, ben (749n). In fact the 278 instances of be and the 138 instances of ben occur throughout the manuscript. The ben form is twice found in rhyme position (192 as bene, 1626; see also 3621, 3627). They go on to say that “the prefix is generally spelt ‘bi-’ in this MS., which suggests that an earlier form had the spelling ‘be-’” (749n). There are instances of forms that change in the course of the manuscript, but they must wait for a later investigation. (The scribe also writes benware.)

See woo (5583), terme (5882). One double plural, fetis, appears in 4140.

The genitives without ending include: candil, 5988; candill, 1807; day, 1714; hert, 2200; heven, 4091; lady, 157, 4469; marit, 285; oxyan, 1382; pite, 252; servaunt, 5532; Phebus, 2455.

E.g., “I haue / Made / And / the service and prayere / haue songe hit hevyly” (2297–2300; see Mustanoja, 132); “I shall hit spare / All my quarell / / My wrath also and all my vyll willyng” (1453–55); or “yowre trouthe, gefe me hit, now we mete, / A pryve swe, sweete cosse” (3834–35).

Adverbs may lack the ending (as in abowt, soft, comyn, dredles, fast, last) or may appear both with and without final -e. Adjectives which would have fallen into the OE weak declension often, but not always, lack final -e (as swet, 2241, fresh, 2202, etc.).
only a tiny minority of occurrences (often only a single instance). Second person singular verbs occasionally use -ith (-ist/-yst is the usual form). Third person singular occurs in a variety of forms: -ith/-yth, -eth, without ending, -is/-ys, -es, and rarely -en. In addition to the form without ending, the plural may occur with -ith or -eth. Subjunctive forms are generally without ending, but exceptions are prevaylen (3130), staynyd (5804), bynden [sing.] (4114). In addition to the usual endings on preterite forms of weak verbs, some occur without endings. Past participles occur more often without y- than with it; a variety of suffixes appear: -id/-yd, without ending, -t, -(e)n, -ed, -e (descending order of frequency). There is a tendency to drop the final -d of the participle before a following dental or vowel.

Dialect

*Fortunes Stabilnes* was written in the first half of the fifteenth century in a Frenchman’s English that is an unusual kind of “spontaneous Mischsprache.” For that reason the work may (or may not) contain in some cases a better representation of the language as it was spoken (with fewer of the constraints imposed by the written language) than do many other linguistic documents. It will certainly be of interest to those working in the growing field of medieval translation.

It is not possible to identify Charles’s dialect, if indeed he could be said to have one. The scribe did his best to impose a semblance of Chancery Standard on what he received from the duke, but his “tidying up” did not extend to some of the rhymes. A few scattered

---

285 As bryngith, 2219, 4292, speditth, 4601.
286 See bynden, semen, werken. Individual words may take various endings.
287 See also sayne (say, 2149), taken (6203).
288 E.g., Chaunge, start, karfe, sterre. (The spelling -ed is rare.) The plural rarely has -en.
289 E.g., agarneshe, 1077, bimase, 4161.
290 The term was used of Charles’s language by Jeremy Smith (private correspondence); the term Mischsprache is used by Benskin and Laing. Charles’s English is unlike the material they discuss in that it is not an overlay or “mixture” of discrete sets of dialectal forms, but a genuine hodgepodge of forms that he gathered from random sources in learning the language.
291 Jeremy Smith disagrees with Marjorie Daunt’s conclusion that Charles’s English is “distinctly conservative for the date at which he wrote” (private correspondence; Daunt, 147). Angus McIntosh suggested to me (based on the spelling of the manuscript) that the scribe may have come from the area of Northampton-Rugby (private correspondence); the scattering of Midland forms (such as silf and liff) may therefore be attributable to the scribe rather than the author.
Northern words, such as *layre* (lore), *manaunce* (menace), *warlwer* (worse), *stere* (stir), and forms such as *whan* (when), *tan* (taken) point either to Charles’s active acquisition of English during his stay at Pontefract in the early years of his captivity (1417–1419) or to his association with a person or persons who spoke Northern English during some stretch of years in which he was acquiring the English language actively. The former is entirely likely, as he seems to have gotten along well with his “hosts,” accompanying the Waterton family and household on outings from the castle to Methley until the king put a stop to them.292 On the whole, however, the language of the poems is not markedly dialectal.293

The Manuscripts

The work is extant in one manuscript, London, British Library MS. Harley 682 (H), which lacks the first and fourteenthquires. The remains of a single copy made from H around the middle of the fifteenth century (Ox) are to be found in the Bodleian Library, Oxford, and the Cambridge University Library; a brief description of the two fragments follows the material on H. Brief information on manuscripts containing other English lyrics presumably by Charles of Orleans can be found in Appendix I.

Description of the Manuscript

Charles of Orleans, English poems 1439–1440

1. fols. 1r–147v. The god Cupide and venus the goddes / ... / To eftsone þt y may yow more biwray.

A single work in a variety of fixed and other verse forms on the subject of secular love.

2. fol. 148v. A record of the debt of one Tomas Pryor for a purchase of cloth.


293 For further examples and analysis, see Daunt, and Crow (89n). After an initial year and a half in and around London, Charles never got further south than Peterborough for any length of time for over twelve years.
fols. ii + 1-74, 74*, 75-148 + iii. Foliated in 1876 (first end flyleaf). Parchment, c. 196 x 142 mm. Thirty lines. Eighteen quires in eights and a final one in sixes. Collation: 1-198 206 (-1.1-8, -14.1-8, -15.7 [a stub remains]). Unfinished: lacking capitals, rubrication, and decoration (see below). Binding: rebound in 1926 and again in 1969 (date inside back cover) in half red morocco with the Harley arms on both covers. Outsides of a number of quires show dirt and wear, indicating that the work remained unbound for some time after it was written. Parchment and ink: The parchment is good but not exceptional, with very few holes or discolorations. It is clean of hair follicles and generally evenly colored except for the last quire. The ink is dark brown, but pales occasionally to yellow, as on fol. 95r. Plates can be found in Steele and Day (frontispiece, fol. 134r) and Spence (French Chansons, preceding 1, fol. 61r).

Quire signatures probably occurred on 1–4 of every quire. Some thirty now remain, in quires e, f, g, i, k, l, q, r, and s, taking the form: leaf number + quire letter. From the fact that e is the fourth extant quire, it is apparent that a quire is missing prior to e.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Folio</th>
<th>Quire</th>
<th>Catchword</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>[a]</td>
<td>[quire missing]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>1-8</td>
<td>what</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>9-16</td>
<td>Butwhat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>17-24</td>
<td>Inabidyng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>25-32</td>
<td>This</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>33-40</td>
<td>Ther nys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>41-48</td>
<td>Carfull</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>49-56</td>
<td>We shall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>57-64</td>
<td>As oon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>65-72</td>
<td>hit is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>73-79</td>
<td>The greet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[Folio 75 was missed in the numbering and afterward numbered 74*]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>80-87</td>
<td>[m] O fayre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>88-95</td>
<td>[n] Benyse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>[o]</td>
<td>[quire missing]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>96-102</td>
<td>[χ] [only stub of leaf following fol. 101 remains]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
As all catchwords prior to e are in order, it is apparent that the missing quire is a. The inaccuracy of the catchword on n and the lack of catchwords on χ may indicate that χ was added to the MS at a late stage (though p also lacks a catchword). The regular make-up of the rest of the MS (and the numbering of spaces for roundels in χ before the texts of the poems were written) indicates that these quires will also have been eights.

The present opening quire can be further identified as a unit by its much thinner parchment than the next; the parchment of the final quire is of markedly inferior quality to the rest. The identity of quires n–p and r–t is also established by the binding thread; quires b–m offer no further evidence of make-up. Hair faces hair, and flesh, flesh except in quire p, where the pattern is hf/hf/hf/hf/hf/hf/hf/hf.

*Pricking and ruling:* ruled throughout in ink. Four single compartment rules (three for fols. 65r–72r, which have no top ruling) the full length and width of the side, forming a written space of c. 128 x 72 mm, ruled for thirty line-spaces by means of roulette (not template) prickings in the outer margin. The horizontal bounding rules cross the fold. A pair of pricks was made for the lower bounding rule near the outer margins, then thirty lines were pricked for, starting at these pricks, upwards still nearer the margin. The upper bounding rule is on the top pricks, the vertical bounding rules have been separately pricked for in top and bottom margins. Text is written below top line.

Bifolia containing roundels were ruled at one go, which accounts for the fact that roundels of different lengths often have extra lines (usually one to three) ruled above them. In two cases (fols. 79v and 87v) extra lines were ruled, probably to accommodate unusually long roun-

---

294 For further support of this statement, see above, “Argument of the Poem,” and discussion of marginal numbering in “Transmission History,” below.

295 The missing leaf between fols. 101 and 102 would have been ruled (recto and verso) with fourteen lines as is its conjugate, fol. 97.
dels. Each roundel was intended to end at the bottom of the side. The first eight roundels, occupying the last four leaves of quire i (61r–64v) are written on fully-ruled leaves, as are 65r/72v (the outer leaf of k, probably ruled in error) and 103r (first leaf of p); in both cases this is because the ruling was made by bifolium rather than by folio. Up to fol. 95v, the place where the text of the roundel begins on these leaves is invariably marked by a horizontal stroke in blind. The lyric beginning in line 4485, written in dimeter, is laid out in three columns with double vertical rules between the columns at the bottom of the leaf (fol. 107r). An extra line is ruled at the bottom of 44v, from edge to edge, giving thirty-one lines.

Leaves 41–42, 47–48, 113–16, 119–28, and 133–34 show prickings, following the identical system, in the lower margin, which suggests that they were made for a manuscript in folio. Four of these show signatures (of the kind described above), viz. 4d on 114v, 2d on 121v, 1d on 122v, and 3d on 128v.296 This falls into a pattern showing that a quire d intended for a folio MS in fours was used to make the two inside leaves of quire q, the whole of quire r, and the two outside leaves of quire s of our MS. As most of the parchment in the MS is of the same color and quality (except for the first and last quires), it is probable that the whole batch was originally prepared for a folio volume which was not in fact made. It was later “rouletted” (Steele’s term) and prepared for use in a MS of half the size (that is, the present volume).297

Quires n, o, and χ and the plan of the roundel series:

The roundels are numbered, first in plummet, later in ink.298 Neither of these numberings is written by the scribe of the other Arabic numbering in the manuscript (discussed below); these zeros are crossed from right to left, whereas other zeros in the manuscript are always crossed in the opposite direction. The two numberings are parallel as

296 Steele’s folio numbers are incorrect (xvi). These numbers are found in all cases on the verso of the leaf to prevent any confusion between them and the numbers relevant for the construction of this volume.

297 On differences between H and O in the order of a few ballades and roundels, see below, “Relation of Harley 682 to Charles’s Autograph Manuscript,” and 3311n.

298 It is not certain that the numbering in ink was done significantly later than that in plummet, and in fact, if I read Steele correctly, he suggests (xvii) that they may have been written by (my) Revisor B (see below). If this is true (and in light of the discussion below), it is probable that both A and B (if they were in fact two different people) were in Charles’s employ.
far as fol. 91v (4053), where the numbering in plummet is 62 and that in ink (correctly, according to what we now have) 63. The numbering then proceeds as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Plummet</th>
<th>Ink</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>fol.</td>
<td>92r (4066)</td>
<td>blank</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>92v (4081)</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fol.</td>
<td>93r (4095)</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>93v (4109)</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fol.</td>
<td>94r (4123)</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>94v (4137)</td>
<td>blank</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fol.</td>
<td>95r (4151)</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>95v (4165)</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

At this point the numbering in plummet ceases and that in ink, assuming a missing quire \( o \) after roundel 71, numbers the next roundel 87.\(^{299}\) This numbering proceeds without exception through 98; however, folios 100r (numbered 95) and 100v (96), 101r (97) and 101v (98) are devoid of text. A leaf has been cut out after fol. 101, but the stub retains the number 99 on the recto. Folios 102r, 102v, and 103r are unnumbered; all are ruled, but fol. 102r contains no text. Steele’s numbering of roundels 101 and 102 is incorrect; they should be 102 and 103, if all blank and missing leaves are accounted for.

Codicological evidence seems to point to the loss of a quire \( o \) at some point, as well as the addition of a quire \( \chi \) after the entire MS had been quired but before it was copied. The order of production was apparently as follows: the sheets were quired and ruled. Catchwords were added. At this point the discovery was made that there had been too few leaves allotted for roundels. An additional quire was made up, to take its place between \( o \) and \( p \). The roundel numbers were inserted (probably to 100) and then corrected. The text was copied. This accounts for the fact that, though the catchwords do not match in this section, the numberings in ink include the missing quire \( o \) and continue into \( \chi \), even numbering leaves which had not yet received text.\(^{300}\)

---

\(^{299}\) This quire, like \( k \), must have contained a blank; one would expect the following quire to begin with 88.

\(^{300}\) And some leaves in fact never did. The fact that the outer leaf of \( k \), which was fully ruled in error, was not exchanged for another leaf and saved for later use, but used for roundels in spite of the full-page ruling also suggests that the MS was entirely ruled before copying began.
There is further evidence of disruption of the original plan in this part of the volume. Quire χ (and p, which follows it) has no catchword. The catchword “Be nyse” at the end of quire n (fol. 95v) does not match the “Thou shalt” of fol. 96r (χ), but it does match the “Be nyse” of fol. 96v. Given the unusual collocation of opening words, it is reasonable to assume that the “Be nyse” roundel (Roundel 87) may have originally belonged in the missing quire, but that some error or change of plan necessitated moving it to the early part of the following quire after the catchword was written. The existence of blank leaves numbered to receive roundels in χ confirms the assumption of a plan in a state of flux. It is clear from its content that the last roundel, occupying the first leaf of a quire, was designed to end the series.

Coupled with the fact that centuries of fixed-form lyrics were extremely common and that some leaves were left blank to receive roundels, this points to the likelihood that the scribe was waiting for poems not yet written (or not yet delivered) to complete the series. Whether Charles was still writing roundels for the series at this time or whether he had simply not yet decided on their final order (or on which to include), it is clear that the scribe was at this point a bit ahead of him.

**Scribal Layout of the Roundels**

Each roundel is written at the bottom of a leaf with a varying number of (ruled) blank lines above it. The assumption that Charles must have intended to include musical notation in the manuscript has been based in large part on these apparently inexplicable spaces left above the chansons (in the French manuscript) and roundels and the discovery in an inventory of Charles’s books of “quatre feuilles ou [sont] plusieurs Chansons notées.” This was taken by Champion and others to be

301 Two of the numbering systems (1 and 6, see below) show hiatus in quire n, hiatus which involve the remainder of the roundel series. Fol. 71r is ruled, but blank.
302 The corresponding series in the autograph manuscript of chansons contains eighty-nine lyrics. It is possible that one or more unnumbered leaves were intended to receive some sort of decoration; the final two roundels (on unnumbered leaves) are here numbered 102 and 103 by codiological inference.
303 Champion, *La Librarie*, xxviii, xxxii (Laborde, vol. 3, inventory no. 6560: “ung autre petit livre ou sont plusieurs chansons notées”); see also Champion, *Le Manuscrit autographe*, 35–37; *Vie*, 235, 260–61. Champion’s brief discussion of the relation of music and poetry since Machaut is accurate, but that the chansons were intended to be sung is not the inevitable conclusion of his argument. Champion reinforces this misconception by referring to “quelques pièces notées”
a *cahier* containing chansons from Charles’s French work. Alice Planche suggests that Charles left blanks because he did not like “les musiques neues” of his day.\(^{304}\)

The theory that the spaces above each roundel were originally intended for music has no support. The layout of the text is not that chosen by scribes who are presenting words to music. In such cases, the two musical “structures” of the roundel are generally presented on staves at the top of the leaf, accompanied by the corresponding words of the opening of the poem (in the case of the fourteen-line lyric, four lines). The remainder of the poem occupies the bottom of the leaf. In *Le Manuscrit autographe*, Champion admitted that “cette disposition ... pour inscrire un air de chanson est tout à fait anormale dans les chansonniers du quinzième siècle,” but went on to suggest that perhaps the space was reserved for polyphonic music.\(^{305}\) His suggestion is difficult to understand, since such music requires a repetition of each musical line and so takes up much more space than monophonic music, whereas a number of the poems allow far too little space on the page even for monophonic music. Roundel 55, especially, occupies two-thirds of a fairly small written area, and is anyway composed in a lyric form which could never be fitted to the music of the chanson.\(^{306}\)

Full-page lineation, where it occurs in the manuscript, is not intended to receive music, and music could not have been written on the

---

in Harley 682, by which he can only mean the rough sixteenth century (or later) notes added above the roundels on fols. 100–103 (La Librairie, lvi, n. 6). Sarah Spence claims that Champion showed that “the amount of space Charles had left corresponded exactly to the amount of space needed for music that would fit the lyrics,” but she does not indicate where (French Chansons, 283).

\(^{304}\) She says that the blanks were not left because Charles was too lazy to have the program of the manuscript completed (as, she says, Champion believed), nor for reasons of economy, nor yet because of Charles’s faith in the unaccompanied lyric (“Charles d’Orléans et la musique du silence,” 447). Sarah Spence agrees with her in Chansons, xviii; but see her “French Chansons,” 283–84 and n. 3. Nigel Wilkins first suggested to me that the idea of space left for music was perhaps incorrect. On the suggestion that Charles was himself a musician and for much interesting information on musical activity on both sides of the Channel, see Wilkins, “Music and Poetry.”

\(^{305}\) 36n. For a description of the layout of Old French chansonniers, see Huot, *From Song to Book*, 47ff. For an example of the layout of polyphonic chansons, see the following facsimiles: *Album de Marguerite d’Autriche, Pavia, Biblioteca universitaria Aldini MS. 362* (this manuscript has associations with Charles’s court at Blois); Chansonnier Nivelle de la Chaussée. For other comments on music and the chansons, see Champion, *La Librairie*, lvi.

\(^{306}\) The same is true for the lyrics in short lines at the beginning of folio 107v.
lineation we have on the leaf. In these instances, rather than with musical staves, the leaf was simply ruled from top to bottom to receive text, although the decision to place only one roundel in the lower half of each leaf may indicate that there were at one time plans for a series of decorations or miniatures of some kind above the roundels. What is more, a number of other poems in various forms (not roundels) receive the same treatment on the page (see below, "Relation of Harley 682 to Charles’s Autograph Manuscript"). Some leaves that begin with a series of ruled, but blank, lines, mark significant beginnings and would probably have received decoration of some kind if the manuscript had been finished. Full-page lineation would have been no hindrance to a series of decorations or illuminations, as pictures were often painted on ruled parchment, and not only when the paintings were an afterthought.

Most late medieval manuscripts were first ruled in their entirety. Thus many folios with whole-page paintings were originally ruled, are contiguous with text folios in the gathering, and still show traces of the ruling through their paintwork.

Sylvia Huot describes in some detail the illustrations of a series of Machaut’s lyrics. Struck by the unlikeliness of illustrating lyric (rather than narrative) verse, she says,

It is in itself significant that the poems would have been illustrated even when there was, so to speak, nothing to illustrate except the voice itself. The idea of having the lays illuminated, rather than any visually suggestive aspect of the poems themselves, clearly motivated the work.

---

307 Fols. 61r–65r, 72v, 103r (and all of the chansons in Charles’s manuscript of his French poems) are fully ruled. Sarah Spence provides plates of such leaves from each of the two manuscripts on facing pages (French Chansons, following xlii). Nancy Regalado arrived at many of the same conclusions independently of my work, but kindly made available to me at a late stage in the preparation of this book her forthcoming article, "En ce saint livre: Mise en page et identité lyrique dans les poèmes autographes de Villon dans l’album de Blois (Bibl. Nat. ms. fr. 25458)," in L'Hôtelerie de Pensée.

308 Byrne, 130. This contradicts Champion’s assertion that “cette place ne peut avoir été réservée pour une miniature puisque le vélin est réglé” (Le Manuscrit autographe, 36n; see also Byrne, 119–22).


310 264–65 (italics mine). In Appendix B, a table of miniatures in selected
On the other hand, Nancy Regalado, after studying the manuscripts of Charles’s French poems, has concluded that the blank spaces were not planned to include either music or decoration. She writes,

Ces espaces blancs dans l’album de Blois illustrent le principe courtois de la libéralité qui manifeste la puissance et l’appartenance par la largesse. Gaspiller ainsi une partie de la surface d’une page coûteuse, c’est faire preuve de libéralité: la mise en page élégante et généreuse de ce recueil correspond à la mode de la vie de cour.311

The fact that the copies of both Charles’s autograph manuscript of the French poems (G and M) and of Harley 682 (Ox) contain the same blank spaces above the roundels/chansons would seem to support her hypothesis.

The Work of the Scribe and the Revisors
The uniform appearance of H belies the patchwork of its production history. What we have is in some cases little more than a rough draft; in others, heavily revised work. Charles handed these pieces (lyrics, sections of narrative verse) in their various states to a scribe who copied them. The manuscript is immediately interesting because of the extensive (and at a few points intensive) work of two revisors.312 Their

[Text continues with footnotes and references]
work points up the fact that, however uniform the manuscript may be in appearance, it was copied by a neat (but occasionally inattentive) scribe who made the best he could of what he was given. Ralph Hanna speaks of the "confusions of unsupervised scribes when faced with messy 'foul papers,' whether revised or unrevised." However well planned the work as a whole was, given the evident unevenness in revision, the scribe must have received a stack of work, in some cases single lyrics or small groups of lyrics on separate leaves, in some cases longer narrative pieces written in quires, all produced at different times and under different conditions, in more or less phonetic spelling and involving various corrections. "In such a situation," Hanna continues, expunctions may be ignored, interlined and canceled readings fused, marginal additions overlooked, and those on inserted leaves misplaced. There are no very secure grounds for distinguishing scribal mishandlings of authorial lections from possible authorial rewritings or from hesitations in the initial process of composition. This is the sort of situation in which H was apparently produced.

It is evident from both his French and English poems that Charles, though he corrected and revised, was not the sort of author given to careful correction, and the omission of many small words, as well as the strange spellings, may be due to his carelessness. In some cases the scribe shows a good deal of care, not only in the general neatness of his work but also in, for instance, his insertion of virgules between similar or identical words to indicate to the reader (or the next copyist?) that the repetition is no error. Some of the garbled passages suggest that he did his best to make sense of a messy wad of parchment pieces. Nevertheless, if many of the small omissions of pronouns, prepositions, articles, etc., are not his, he did not make a very concerted effort to make them up. In addition he miswrites many small words, perhaps through inattention, perhaps because he had some difficulty reading the copy he was given.

crossing out (rather than erasing) and entering new text either between lines or in the margins?

---

313 26. He is here generalizing about manuscript production rather than commenting on the copying of a particular manuscript.

314 Ibid. The situation is complicated rather than simplified by the fact that only one copy of the work has survived.

315 For a discussion of the scribe's punctuation, see my article, "Punctuation."
In addition to the work of the main scribe, extensive corrections and revisions were entered in two other hands, which I have labelled A and B. It is difficult to say positively whether Revisor A worked under Charles’s direction. It is highly probable that he did, for B (who worked after him) certainly did.\textsuperscript{316} Even if A did not, he was nevertheless an intelligent reader and a careful worker.\textsuperscript{317} He generally erases very thoroughly before he enters a correction, which he places in the text line; it is impossible therefore to recover the original text in most cases.\textsuperscript{318} He also seems to have completed a number of lines left incomplete by the main scribe, perhaps because the poet was stumped for rhymes (e.g., 904, 2141, 5088). His spellings, like those of B, differ from those of the main scribe.\textsuperscript{319} Steele counts fifteen examples of the work of A, “nine in the first sequence and six in the Book of Jubilee.”\textsuperscript{320} I think his revisions were much more extensive and have identified more than twice that number. The work of Revisor A is almost certainly prior to the work of Revisor B, for A never incorpo-

For a useful discussion of the nature of scribal variations in Chaucer’s works and some of the reasons for them, see Windeatt, “Scribes.”

\textsuperscript{316} He may have numbered the roundels (the two sets of numberings are probably in the same hand). I have replaced Steele and Day’s term “corrector” with “revisor” because many (though probably not all) of the changes made in the text were surely authorial in inspiration. The work of these revisors (if indeed there were two) should not therefore be treated simply as scribal alterations, but, at least in some cases, as authorial improvements of authorial readings. This should not be taken to mean that the authorial revisions are always superior (on whatever grounds) to the versions of phrases and lines found in the textual notes—in fact some revisions in the margins are erased—but simply that the printed text represents the latest version of the work from the author’s hand.

\textsuperscript{317} One bit of evidence that he did work for the duke is his correction in line 3746 of the characteristic Carolian expression, “but what.” Though we cannot read the original, the revised version of line 1060 is close to the version Charles wrote in the French counterpart of this poem: “J’ay mis; mon cœur en est d’accort.” It is possible to surmise from this that Corrector A is making authorized corrections, though the case is far from proven.

\textsuperscript{318} On occasion Steele posits an under-reading that I cannot confirm. I have identified such cases in the notes with [S].

\textsuperscript{319} For instance he writes sche, schesse (choose), schepe (ship), schore (score), seche, thay, thare, hathe, freche (fresh), weche (wish, which), plesser (pleasure), destance, desdayn, wrofft (wrought), dryffte (course). Steele postulates that these spellings are those of the author, perhaps because of some Northern forms among them (xxvii), though they are not in Charles’s hand. For a paleographic description, see below.

\textsuperscript{320} He goes on to say, “there are no corrections in this hand in the second sequence” (xxviii).
rates B’s marginalia. The only case in which both worked on the same line confirms this (see 3082n).

The work of Revisor B was carried out for Charles himself.\(^{321}\) It consists of interlinear revision or correction, minor marginal revision, and (in eight cases) the revision of whole lines.\(^{322}\) His work rectifies many errors and improves many lines, but his was not a really thorough revision—one reason for believing that he was not working for himself. All but two or three of the corrections are evident improvements, often involving the addition of omitted one-syllable words or the correction of pronoun reference.\(^{323}\) In some cases the changes are so slight (“ay” for “lo” in 585) that the change would seem to have made a difference only to the author. Some seem purely a matter of the author’s taste, as in the revision of “so moche ygrowe” to “so smothe ygrowe” in 4671 (or in that of 5007). If the scribe himself made up the missing (but hypermetric) line at 5825, he was remarkably sensitive in matching the word patterning of the stanza. In two cases, Revisor B has replaced a line which translates the French with an entirely different line (781, 3359); it is difficult to see why a revisor working on his own would do this. Conversely, in lines 1519 and 1771 Revisor B actually brings the lines closer to the French versions. Taken together, the nature of the corrections points to someone working for the author. Steele counts sixty-nine entries by B, “forty-five in the first sequence, fourteen in the Book of Jubilee, and ten in the second sequence.”\(^{324}\) As he does not identify them as such in his notes, his numbers are difficult to corroborate.\(^{325}\)

Some poems were fairly thoroughly corrected or revised; others were obviously not.\(^{326}\) In spite of all the correction work, the text is still

\(^{321}\) We know that Charles corrected his own work; there is plenty of evidence of that in his autograph manuscript.

\(^{322}\) In a ninth case he inserts a line omitted by the main scribe (line 5827; Steele counts ten line-revisions). Revisor B nearly always uses carets both in the margin and in the line to indicate where the correction is to be read.

\(^{323}\) The fact that he occasionally wrote what seems like nonsense (cave, pevechere, antys) may in fact argue that he was copying someone else’s suggestions rather than improving the text with his own.

\(^{324}\) xxviii.

\(^{325}\) I have counted fifty-seven entries and recorded them in the notes.

\(^{326}\) Presumably some lyrics were corrected on the leaf on which they were originally written and handed to the scribe in that form; others, in similar form, were not much more than drafts. For examples of heavily corrected lyrics, see Roundel 10, Ballade 57.
very rough in places, indicating that the poet probably never gave it a thorough revision. It is not possible, given what we know, to state with any certainty why this is the case (though the manuscript is unfinished). The many octosyllabic lines within decasyllabic poems, the omission of many small words, and the apparent miscopying of many more (e.g., as for us) may indicate that Charles was preoccupied with other matters toward the end of his captivity and had no time for polishing.\textsuperscript{327} He may, moreover, have been prevented by frequent moves in the final months of his captivity from giving the poems his sustained attention (see above, "Chronology"). This may also explain why the work was left behind in England when he returned to France.

Steele relegated the work of Revisors A and B to the textual notes, even though he acknowledged that the alterations (at least of the "second revision") "were made under Charles's eye."\textsuperscript{328} In the interest of presenting readers with what the author wrote in as close to its final form as possible, I have incorporated all of B's work into the text.\textsuperscript{329} Both because Revisor A probably had access to corrections by the author and because original readings are not generally recoverable, I have incorporated all of his corrections into the text as well. Though I have attempted, wherever possible, to identify the author of the corrections (main scribe, A, or B) in the textual notes, because it is not always possible to be certain of whose penwork one is studying, nothing should be inferred from a lack of identification in an individual note. In addition to these adjustments to the text, there are various instances of interference with the text in unidentifiable hands (see below, "Transmission History").

\footnote{327} Though the care with which Charles preserved his autograph manuscript (and the carelessness with which he left Harley 682 behind in England) has often been remarked upon, Champion comments on Charles's lack of attention to detail even in his French work. In speaking of Charles's corrections in the autograph manuscript he says, "Tout cela avec une certaine nonchalance d'ailleurs, car le bon duc n'allait jamais au bout de ses entreprises et il ne finissait jamais rien" (Poésies, xix n. 2). Minor scribal errors and omissions are detailed in the explanatory notes.

\footnote{328} xxvii. Even changes made by the main scribe are recorded at the bottom of the page, as in 2072, where Steele writes, "are corrected by overwriting to and." Steele's discussion of scribes and hands is potentially confusing. Revisor A's is the work Steele calls the third revision; to Revisor B he attributes the second revision. I am sure they worked in the reverse order. He seems to judge the value of each revision by its closeness to the French version (see 2248n).

\footnote{329} There are a few exceptions in cases where I could make no sense of the corrections: cave, 2039; pevechere [v], 2508; 3082 (where A has erased original).
Paleographical Description

The main scribe writes an erect bastard hand with anglicana ductus but mainly secretary forms. The hand is compact and extremely regular, with well-formed letters and minimal use of hairstrokes or other flourishes. Anglicana forms include the two-compartment $a$, the complex form of $g$, and $h$ in which the lower half is closed by a stroke to the right at the bottom of the first downstroke. The yogh is awkward, thin, and seldom used, and then only to save space. The well-formed thorn is used more regularly, though not usually. $I$ and $y$ usually, though not always, receive a "dot" in the form of a fine, slanted hairstroke. The scribe has no distinctive form of upper-case $h$, $y$, $l$, $v$, or $w$.

Revisor A writes a crude, formal hand, with the thick, tapering descenders (especially double $s$ and $f$, the first of the two headless) that slant to the left and a straight-backed $d$ that slants in the opposite direction, both typical of many French hands of this period. Descenders, especially on $y$, are short. His letter forms are sometimes erratic; he uses various forms of $d$, $h$, and $y$. His cramped, angular, and smallish letters are often written with very black ink and a not very well trimmed pen. Because he erases thoroughly and writes his corrections in the line, it is nearly impossible to recover original readings. In a number of cases he seems to have completed a line that had been left unfinished by the main scribe.

Revisor B writes a legible, more cursive hand than the main scribe, forming his sometimes tiny letters carefully in a fine, almost spidery hand. His final $s$, as well as his $r$, take the modern form; the descender of his $h$ turns up. When replacing an entire line (in the margin), he sometimes writes in what might be called his book hand. He tends to erase or cross out very lightly and to place his corrections above the line or in the margins (usually with carets), allowing us to read the original version in most instances.

---

330 On the scribe's abbreviations, see Appendix IV.

331 Sometimes marginal corrections are accompanied by a cross (as in the frontispiece), commonly placed in the margin to indicate the need for correction (see the anon. Palladius epilogue: "A now my lord biholdith on his book / For sothe al nought he gynnyth cossis make / With a plummet ..." [Hammond, English Verse, 206]).
Transmission History

1) Six names are written in the margins of the MS:
   In a sixteenth-century hand: “Elizabethe Gelle” (struck through) (fol. 101v), and “Tomas Wyssedune” (fol. 75).332 The first, written on a blank leaf, occurs in a draft of a letter:

   _Ihesus_
   Ryght welbeloffed Elizabeth gelle
   I hartely and loffyngly recommmend me
   vn to yow glad to her off yowr welffar [?]and
   trvstynq yn hall myty god that yow be
   yn good helthe the cavs of my wrytyng to
   yow at thys tym I pray yow send me word
   whether yow be wylyng hor No hor ells I
   porpos ha Nother waye ther ffor I do
   yow to war for I dovt Nate for to be sped
   ffuul well and I tarre a whylle for hefare [= every]
   body moste tarre a spas and ther for
   I pray yow let me haff sum word a
   gen shortly and ther for I pray yow
   wythe Dely gens send me sum
   word of yowr mynd schortly
   or ellys I am de termyned
   a nother wayas for I ma not
   a byed here fare ye well
   my youre [?] wy

   At the top of the next leaf the same hand has written “for nella.”
   The second name (in the same hand) is accompanied by a macaronic text, which, like the letter above, begins in a sort of book hand but rapidly gives way to a more cursive script:

   _NoN coNturbetur cor vest[r]um Neqve_
   for my dethe spyrytum verytatys
   et gavde be the cor vestrum allelya alleya
   Tomas Wyssedune
   [pen trials]

332 A number of marginal names and readings differ from those of Steele, who was apparently influenced by Wright’s interpretations of marginalia (Fontes Harliani).
mysterere mychy domine et exavdy
of oracyonem de ... for a pes [?] of
fustons the pece ys ————xxiiijd
also be <ys> houre houre end & for remedie

The same person seems to have copied the first line of Roundel 92 at the top of fol. 99r ("as he that no thing may profyt"), as well as the opening of Roundel 69 at the top of fol. 95r ("The smylyng mouth and laughing The smy").

In another sixteenth-century hand: "John Halesby" (fol. 95v). The words that follow, scrawled upside down, are nearly indecipherable:

Wy liue [?] relyond
for john holowy c[?] peces
odd j

In the lower margin in the same hand, part of the first line of Roundel 71 is copied ("lo myn hert what tolde").

In another sixteenth-century hand: "Yohanne Tredecrofft" (and beneath it) "de Rycardi Holt" (fol. 111).

In another sixteenth-century hand: "Thomas Pryor" (fol. 148v). The name occurs in a bill or record of debt. A large discoloration has rendered it largely undecipherable except in ultraviolet light, but an old photograph bound into the back of the manuscript (about which no information is available) is much more legible. The record is five lines long, of which (with the help of Johan Gerritsen) I have been able to read only the following:

... tomas Pryor ows
me ffor ij elles off hollond clothe
the price yerof a nell ———— viijd the
summe yer of all ———— xvjd

These notations would seem to suggest that the manuscript was at some point in the hands of people associated with the cloth industry. One "John Holloway, clothworker," is mentioned in a deed written in Coventry in 1677.333 (On the face of it, Coventry seems too far from London to be convincing, but further investigation may turn up significant links.)

333 Alcock, 45.
2) Three shelfmarks appear on folio 1r:

173 (top left, ink): shelfmark of Edward Stillingfleet (1635–1699, royal chaplain, popular London preacher, dean of St. Paul’s, antiquary, and bishop of Worcester). Harley 7644 (1685), the catalogue of Stillingfleet’s library, contains the following entry: “173 MS in Old English Poetry (Incip.) The God Cupid & Venus the Goddess MSS in Perga.” The appearance of this shelfmark on the first folio of the extant MS indicates that the first folio was lost before the mid-seventeenth century.334

60 [crossed out] 59.A.18 and below it 682. (top center, ink): shelfmark of Robert Harley (a number of MSS in the series had shelfmarks that were apparently off by one, which he—or more likely his librarian Humphrey Wanley—corrected). Harley bought Stillingfleet’s manuscripts in 1707.335 Addit. 45,703, Harley’s catalogue336 contains the following entry on fol. 13: “59.A.18. A Parchment-book in 4to containing divers old English Love-Poems celebrating a Lady beloved by Charles Duke of Orleans, who was Prisoner in England, in the Time of K. Henry.”337

7/VI A (top right, pencil): former British Library shelfmark.

3) Other marginal notations include:

39v, 40r, 41r (lower margin): a series of comments on the poems above, largely erased and indecipherable, in a sixteenth-century hand. On 39v (4 lines) I read: “... hy lyve a fer ffrom al plaiser as anny on alyve ...”; on 40r (4 lines): “... and sayd that dethe had takyn ... of alle his world ...”; on 41r (one line): “anoder gen hys complaint w ... eche” [w above line with caret].

103r (three lines of music with words, the second copying the first, probably all sixteenth century):

334 Efforts to trace Stillingfleet’s purchase of the MS have to date been unavailing. The MS is entirely untypical of the books he owned (e.g., B.L. MSS. Harley 665–904, 939–51, 964–1038), which perhaps implies that he acquired it in a batch of other material that interested him more.
335 Wright, Diary, xix, xxviii, and Fontes Harleiani, 316.
337 The entry in the revised and corrected Catalogue of Harleian Manuscripts in the British Museum adds only “K. Henry the Fifth.”
mysterere mihi domine et exsady <x>
mysterere mychy domine et exhody
oracyone yn de . . .

103v (in blank above text, 4 lines in a hand not found elsewhere in the MS):

Ethypum tertas iam feruida torruit estas
In cancro solis dum voluitur aureus axis
Silua prata virent frondent nunc
omnia rident.

In the margins of H are no fewer than eight series of marginal numberings, some of which have mystified the scholars to whom I have shown them, including those who have worked with large numbers of comparable manuscripts. Only one of the numberings is clearly a record of work done by a scribe for receipt of payment. Two others are simply attempts to number the roundels (see discussion of quires n, o, and χ above). None of the remaining five has been adequately explained. None are printers' casting-off marks. As it seems impossible to ascertain when the notations were inserted (though some are clearly early), it is difficult to know if they are of any importance in the transmission history of the text. One useful piece of information, however, can be gleaned from them: by projecting the counting intervals backwards (as Steele knew), it becomes clear that the missing first quire must have contained about 394 lines. (The corresponding

338 The numberings consist of:
1. a dash in the left margin every 64 lines;
2. a 10, 20, 30 count, the numbers placed at intervals of 80, 80, and 96 lines (256-line “takes”);
3. a cross in a circle (at 256-line intervals);
4. a cross in a circle plus a triangle pointing to the right, at 256-line intervals (correction of 3);
5. a cross in a circle plus a triangle plus a point, at 256-line intervals (apparently to distinguish 3 from 4);
6. a count by sevens (tens in the roundels, hundreds marked by Cs), for payment of a scribe;
7. numbering of the roundels in plummet;
8. numbering of the roundels in ink (on 7 and 8, see above). All the numberings, in the left margin, are sometimes inaccurate. Steele, who details the numberings somewhat inaccurately and incompletely (xvi–xvii), seems to assume that numbering six was made for payment of Harley 682; more likely, it was made for payment of a copy of this MS. For a manuscript which may be comparable, see Manly-Rickert, 513.

339 xvi–xvii. This rules out the suggestion made at the beginning of Steele and
French material, "La retenue d'amours," fills 400 lines.)

Relation of Harley 682 (H) to Charles's Autograph Manuscript (O)

Charles's personal copy of his French poems (Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale MS. fr. 25458), written partly in his own hand, bears a number of similarities to H. The two manuscripts are of similar size and shape. According to Champion, O, like H, is in gatherings of eights. The order of the poems is substantially the same (but unlike that of any of the other French manuscripts). In particular, a handful of ballades in the French autograph manuscript are renumbered in the margin. Daniel Poirion has suggested that Charles corrected his copyist, who transcribed the French poems in the wrong order. The order of the English poems follows this corrected order, but none of the copies of the French manuscript take account of it. In addition, a disarrangement of the roundels in H is explainable on codicological grounds, and, properly rearranged, they follow exactly the same order as the French chansons (see 3311n).

A comparison of the layout of H with O reveals many similarities and a few differences in conception. Precisely because the two manuscripts were written by different scribes, their similarities imply that one (probably H) was laid out on the model of the other. The decorated initials were completed in O, though other decoration (for instance, above the chansons) was never finished. The patent from the God of Love and Venus begins at the top of 1r in H, whereas it runs on from the end of the opening allegory (14) in O; at the end of the patent in each manuscript, however, the remainder of the leaf is blank.

The layout of the ballades was conceived differently by the two scribes. The scribe of H (with one exception) makes little attempt to

Day's notes that perhaps the omission of the opening allegory "was the deliberate act of Charles himself, since he wrote an entirely new introduction, ll. 56–202, in its place, feeling perhaps the difficulty of representing himself as a shy, inexperienced youth" (261). Whatever his reason for composing the verse following the letter patent, it was not to replace the opening allegory.

340 Le Manuscrit autographe, 13.
341 " Création poétique," 190 (see above, "Authorship").
342 Perhaps, as Johan Gerritsen once suggested to me, the blank was left for (a painting of) the seal attached to the patent. Such playfulness would be appropriate to Charles's style and temperament. The narrative that follows in H (omitted in O) begins at the top of a new leaf and ends at the bottom of another. O is paginated.
adjust the ballade to the leaf, breaking the text wherever it is convenient. The scribe of O tries (often unsuccessfully) to write one ballade per side; if he encounters a long ballade that spills onto a second side, he either leaves the remainder of the second side blank (Ballade IX) or attempts to squeeze all of the following ballade into the remaining space (Ballade IV). Since both manuscripts are about the same size and are ruled for thirty lines per side, this means that the O scribe cannot leave space between stanzas (though he sometimes leaves space for an envoy that was never added). In addition, he uses two headings fairly consistently: “Balade” and “Lenvoy.” The scribe of H begins by copying O’s layout; the first seven ballades are run together without any blank lines. He apparently found this layout not to his liking, however, for beginning with Ballade 8 he left two spaces between ballades and one between stanzas (he uses no headings).

The scribe of H was confronted with the opening of the second vision in the middle of 49r, so he simply left the usual two blank lines and continued the text. At the same point, the scribe of O had only three lines remaining on the side (99) and so wrote the heading “Songe en complainte” in the top margin of the following leaf. That he did not feel strongly about beginning new sections of poetry other than fixed form lyrics on blank leaves, however, is evidenced by his placing “La Requeste” (the petition) at the bottom of 105 with only two lines remaining for text. The spacing of the opening of the petition (2716) and the opening and closing of the letter to Cupid (2982–3045) are treated almost identically by the two copyists. That the scribe of H omits all headings may point to their source in O as scribal.

The roundel/chanson sequences, like the (first) ballade sequences, each begin on a new leaf. In the French manuscript the chansons do not follow the withdrawal from the service of love (the “Balades de plusieurs propos” intervene), but they do begin a new quire. The chansons are laid out in the same way that the roundels are—with one chanson/roundel at the bottom of each side—but the chanson leaves in

---

343 This plan results in various makeshift solutions. Ballade VIII is thirty lines long (including the heading “Balade” and the following blank line), so the heading “Lenvoy” is squeezed into the margin.

344 Similarly, he begins “La departie damour en Balades” in the middle of the leaf (109) and the “Copie de la quittance dessus dicte” (112) near the bottom.

345 The “narrative ballades” that follow receive the usual heading “Balade” in the French, but no heading (as usual) in the English. Once again, the French scribe attempts to copy one ballade per side.
O are all ruled for thirty lines, whereas in H only those leaves that belong to the quires adjoining the ones containing the roundels (i and p) are fully ruled.\footnote{One side of the outer bifolium of k (65r/72v) was apparently ruled in error.}

The one significant difference in conception is that the scribe of H apparently left room for decoration or illumination (or simply for the luxury of empty space) at points in the manuscript other than on the leaves of roundels, including 14 blank lines at the top of the first leaf of ballades (203), 15 lines before the "saying of grace" (4319), 12 lines between 4388 and 4389 (the "grace" and the "washing"), 19 lines before the tiny three-stanza lyric written in three parallel columns (4486), a number of lines before each of the ensuing lyrics (4505 [14], 4520 [14], 4537 [14], 4553 [11], 4569 [8], 4591 [8], 4613 [5]), and 15 lines at the beginning of the second dream vision (4638). From this point on, the layout of H is entirely unremarkable, with no special treatment given to the ballade on Fortune (4680) or the end of the second dream vision (the second ballade sequence begins below the middle of fol. 124v).

The general impression H makes, with narrative or linking sections of verse sometimes ending at the bottom of a leaf, sometimes with the last few lines left blank, and lyric sequences sometimes beginning on new leaves, is that of a fairly well-planned manuscript, produced with one eye on the autograph manuscript, but with some differences based on scribal taste (the spacing between stanzas and omission of head- ings), others based on authorial decisions (the inclusion of more decoration), very few loose ends, but a substantial mix-up near the end of the roundel series (see the description of the manuscript, above).

The autograph manuscript contains nine lyrics in English (eight roundels and one ballade), none of which appear in H.\footnote{Steele suggests that they may possibly have been intended to make up (some of) the "missing" roundels of the English series and says, "the personal character of two of them will explain their absence," but he gives no evidence for this hypothesis (xxxi, n.). Steele and Day further suggest that Charles may have taken them home from England with him, citing items 39 and 44 in the inventory of goods taken to France in 1440 (see line 3138n): "the first, two quires of ballades, the second, four leaves of Chansons notées" (see Champion, La Librairie,}

\footnote{Steele suggests that they may possibly have been intended to make up (some of) the "missing" roundels of the English series and says, "the personal character of two of them will explain their absence," but he gives no evidence for this hypothesis (xxxi, n.). Steele and Day further suggest that Charles may have taken them home from England with him, citing items 39 and 44 in the inventory of goods taken to France in 1440 (see line 3138n): "the first, two quires of ballades, the second, four leaves of Chansons notées" (see Champion, La Librairie,
spelling systems differ markedly from that of the Harley scribe should come as no surprise, since two poems were written by Charles himself, without a scribe to "correct" his spelling, and the rest were written by a French scribe. It is no evasion to suggest that their awkwardness may be attributed to the author's long residence in France, where he had little use for the language he learned in England. Many questions surrounding these poems have yet to be answered. I have included them here only because they complete the extant oeuvre of Charles of Orleans in English (Appendix I), but I have not attempted to address the many questions their appearance in the autograph manuscript raises.

The "Oxbridge" Manuscript (Ox)
Two fragments of a single copy on parchment of Fortunes Stabilhes made from H have survived. The two leaves of this manuscript that Thomas Rawlinson gave Thomas Hearne (which had in the meantime been used as pastedowns), Hearne pasted into volume thirty-eight of his Diaries on 3 September 1712. They contain Roundels 9, 10, 15, and 16. The other fragment of two leaves, which had also been used as pastedowns, survives as Cambridge University Library MS. Additional 2585 (1). They contain Roundels 5 and 6 and Ballades 59 and 60 (sans envoy).

Ox was a finished manuscript; the initials are rubricated. The manuscript is ruled for thirty (or thirty-one) lines. The roundel pages xxvii–xxviii). For reasons expressed earlier, neither is likely to be a sheaf of Charles's roundels.

Jansen has determined that the odd error in line two of the ballade was the result of the French scribe's mistaking an ampersand for an English word and writing "to se fro" ("Fairfax Poems," 218; see Appendix I, no. 7).

Oxford, Bodleian Lib. MS. Hearne's Diaries 38, fols. 261–64. They are transcribed inaccurately by Bliss (265–67) but much more accurately by Haus-knecht.

As in H, Roundels 9 and 10 and Roundels 15 and 16 each occupy recto and verso of one leaf.

Formerly Additional MS. 4047 (Item 20). In the case of the Cambridge fragment, we know that the leaves were used in binding the Sphaera Ioannis de Sacro Bosco (Paris, 1561), because the shelfmark (M-11-62) survives on one of the leaves. For more detailed information and a generally accurate transcription of this fragment see Rossell Hope Robbins, "Fragments." Robbins was the first to realize that the fragments were at one time part of the same manuscript.

Ballades 59 and 60 are laid out exactly as in H, with one line of Ballade 59 running onto the top of the verso and the first three stanzas of Ballade 60 filling the rest of the leaf. Roundels 5 and 6 occupy the recto and verso of fol. 63 in H.
are fully ruled, although, as in H, the roundels are relegated to the bottom of each leaf.\textsuperscript{354} Falconer Madan dated the Hearne fragment from the writing as c. 1430–1440. R. H. Robbins suggests that, if H is dated 1440, “the Cambridge-Bodleian hand, which is surely contemporary (with somewhat more flourishes in the capitals), can best be dated near 1450.”\textsuperscript{355} The Oxbridge scribe made a few slight but generally systematic changes to his original (presumably H): final y into i (sometimes e), i into e, k into c, and gh into h.\textsuperscript{356}

The scribe of the Hearne fragment took the corrections (at least of B) as authorial. B corrected line 3271 (“In hir he shall se gret larges”) by adding “a” above the line with a caret before “gret” and “and hvug” above the line with a caret before “larges” (giving: “In hir he shall se a gret and hvug larges”). Because there was no other space, he wrote “hvug” after “larges” rather than together with “and.” The scribe of Ox decided to copy the corrections of B, but, not realizing that the caret placed before “larges” marked the place for both words, he wrote “and larges hugi” (perhaps trying to make a rhyme with “goodly” in the following line) in place of “and huge larges.” He also takes over the marginal replacement of a whole line by B in 3359.\textsuperscript{357}

Without bringing other kinds of evidence to bear, it is difficult to say more than that Ox was probably made very soon after H. The hands are similar in many ways and the spelling systems are remarkably similar.\textsuperscript{358} The poems of the Hearne fragment are glossed in a later hand; the Cambridge fragments are not glossed, but do contain marginal comments in Latin. The two fragments seem to have led quite different afterlives. More work obviously remains to be done on these fragments.

Editorial Principles
I have worked throughout this edition on the principle that editing is by nature interpretation. I have therefore not attempted to hide the fact,

\textsuperscript{354} It is interesting that the scribe followed the layout of H in this regard (as did Charles’s secretary in his Latin translation; see Champion, \textit{Poésies}, xv); as in H and O, the top half of each roundel leaf is left tantalizingly blank. Did the Oxbridge scribe know what the space was being left for, or was he following his exemplar slavishly? (Robbins, like so many others, suggests it is for music, but see above, “Layout of the Roundels”).

\textsuperscript{355} 503.

\textsuperscript{356} For examples see Robbins (“Fragments,” 503).

\textsuperscript{357} He takes over the correction of “are” to “and” in 2072 as well.

\textsuperscript{358} Robbins, 503.
but to highlight it. I do not think it is possible to edit invisibly; the final result will always and by definition show evidence of the cultural and other biases of the editor. It has seemed to me more useful, therefore, to make my biases as clear as possible, so that the reader can enter into them or avoid them as he wishes. To that end, I offer a detailed description of my presentation of the text, I discuss various interpretations of individual passages in the explanatory notes (including suggestions for alternative punctuation), and I offer some options in the glossary. I have thereby attempted to close off as few avenues as possible to the reader with a lively imagination and intelligence who "would have read it differently."

I have taken my cue in this from E. Talbot Donaldson, whose essay on "The Psychology of Editors of Middle English Texts" has seemed to me to be both honest and sensible. He says there, for instance, "this situation [of doubting the MS reading] seems to me to impose on an editor the responsibility to print, in his text, where no one can miss it, the reading he considers right." Refusing to interpret (by presenting an unpunctuated text, for instance, or neglecting to record emendations the editor believes would recover the original meaning of the text) would, I feel, simply result in further neglect of these poems. Interpreting the text without making clear that I am interpreting would be dishonest, and, in those cases where I have doubts, I have not hesitated to express them. I have in all cases tried to present what I think Charles wrote, to be aware of my own interpretive acts, and to point them out to the reader. My highest priority has been to provide a trustworthy text and an apparatus from which it is possible to determine (as exactly as possible) what the manuscript says.

Presentation of the Text
I have chosen to enhance the accessibility of these poems by adding modern punctuation (eschewing only the apostrophe, as is customary). I have punctuated the text solely to make it easier to read (i.e., I have not necessarily pointed logically, but, where appropriate, rhetorically). While attempting to add no superfluous punctuation, I have

359 Speaking of Chaucer, chap. 7, 118.
360 I have not usually set off the word lo(o) by commas because it seems often to be used simply to take the place of an otherwise syncopated syllable. The use of commas would throw the word into greater relief than the rhetoric demands. I have, however, surrounded it by commas when not to do so would cause some possible reading difficulty.
not hesitated to punctuate "dramatically," with frequent use of the dash, the exclamation point, and parentheses. The poetry itself seems to call for such punctuation: sentences are sometimes left unfinished, speakers change frequently, asides abound, and lamentation rises on every side. To attempt to make do with commas and periods alone would be to try to build a house using only a hammer and screwdriver.\(^{361}\)

Because the work exists in a unique manuscript, I have taken the opportunity to provide material in the textual notes which would normally not find a place there. In addition to recording scribe corrections and revisions and my emendations, I have recorded the locations of scribal corrections, variants from the Oxbridge manuscript (see above), and identification of correcting hands (where possible).\(^{362}\)

The paraphrases at the foot of the page should not be mistaken for literal translations. In some cases I have attempted to convey both the sense and tone of the original; in others I have tried to indicate as economically as possible the drift of a statement, sometimes doing violence to the Middle English syntax in the process (where an exact explanation would be cumbersome) and often sacrificing elegance for clarity. A literal translation must be constructed from the glossary in all cases.

Despite my giving the text a modern look by the addition of punctuation, I have otherwise been conservative in my treatment of it. I have maintained original spelling, including thorn and yogh. Word division has been regularized conservatively.\(^{363}\) I have emended only where I was convinced some sort of error was involved. I have therefore left "swete avise" stand for "suit to devise" (156) and "preysid" for

\(^{361}\) Some readers will object to the addition of punctuation on principle as "interpretation" of the text. I fully realize that in many, many instances I might have punctuated particular lines differently, in some cases revealing slightly different meanings (for example, lines 519–28). On the other hand, the diplomatic text is difficult enough to have deterred many readers (and teachers) from enjoying the work. Once the cruces have been identified and thrashed out, there will be a place for an extremely lightly punctuated text for general use. In the meantime, purists can use the Steele and Day text, which is still generally available.

\(^{362}\) The textual notes follow the explanatory notes in this volume because it was not possible to print them on the text pages. The advantage of this arrangement is an uncluttered page, and the brevity of the notes minimizes the inconvenience of having to consult them there.

\(^{363}\) For manuscript word division, see Appendix III and Steele and Day.
“pressed” (166) because these spellings are recorded in the fifteenth century. In such cases, I have glossed the easily misreadable word or phrase at the foot of the page.

Abbreviations have been expanded silently, since Steele has indicated them in his edition. Spellings chosen for the expansions are brought into line with those found elsewhere in the manuscript. The scribe favors yr following u (except in the word euery), whereas after v he may use either ir, yr, or in some cases er; I have tried to follow this preference in expanding abbreviations except where the text shows another spelling of a particular word (usually a compound) to have been used more or less consistently (see Appendix IV).

I have taken over the scribe’s formatting of the text in most cases, but have deviated from it in the following ways: I have (1) numbered the ballades; (2) consistently spaced between stanzas where the scribe fails to do so and omitted other blank lines (these are indicated in the explanatory notes); (3) regularized the use of large capitals at the openings of stanzas and the capitalization of the letter following each large capital; and (4) written out the refrains of roundels.

(1) In addition to the ballade numbering, at the end of each lyric or narrative section the reader will find either a reference to the corresponding French poem in Champion’s edition or an indication that the poem has no French counterpart.

(2) Ruled or unruly spaces (listed in “The Relation of Harley 682 to Charles’s Autograph Manuscript,” above), are not reproduced in the text but are included in the notes. Manuscript spaces above the roundels are not reproduced. I have spaced between units originally marking musical phrases (in the MS. marked only by one-line capitals).

(3) In the matter of capitalization, I have followed in parallel two different courses. I have capitalized the first word of every line, even though the scribe does not have in his repertoire a capital form of h, k, y, l, v, or w, and occasionally simply slips up. It is clear that the scribe intended to capitalize the first word of every line (including the first

---

364 For a list of corrections of Steele’s text see Appendix III (but note that he represents marginal corrections at the bottom of the page, not in his text, which accounts for numerous differences between our texts). Because final e is usually not pronounced, crossed (final) double l has not been treated as an abbreviation for -lle (though those instances where Steele does not record it are noted); the reader may add a final e mentally if he or she desires. In a handful of other cases I have treated the tittle as otiose as well; such instances can be found in the textual notes.
INTRODUCTION

letter following a capital two or more lines high), and his (rare) failure to do so (or writing of a second capital after a space for a single-line capital) has no further implications for the study of the manuscript or the text. In addition, I have interpreted initial ff as the scribe’s form of F. Because the scribe does have a small form of j, e.g., in lijf, catijf, and in numbers (vij), I have not regularized the small forms of ilj. For the sake of consistency, I have therefore printed the (much less frequent) single capital form for both I and J in the manuscript as I.

I have sometimes modernized the scribe’s usage of capitals at points other than the beginnings of lines. The one exception to this is the first person singular pronoun: inasmuch as the scribe nearly always uses y, it seemed to me to clutter the page inordinately to capitalize it throughout. I have therefore left it as a small letter except at the beginning of a line or sentence (where the scribe writes I). I have generally capitalized God except in the phrase god wot and a few other tags.

In many cases it is difficult to know when Charles intends a noun to act as a personification and when he does not; the poems are full of very weak personifications. Because the setting off of such “quasi-personifications” often makes the syntax of his sentence more readily transparent, I have chosen to capitalize them whenever I saw in them a possibility of personification (i.e., in general, whenever they “act” in some way). Medieval readers could choose for themselves how to interpret them (and probably no two readers interpreted them in exactly the same way), but then medieval readers were much more accustomed to the style of this poetry than are modern readers. As in all matters of punctuation and layout, it is pointless to argue that medieval readers had a different page before them; they also read with different eyes.

---

365 Instances in which he neglects to capitalize the letter following a two or three-line capital (except for h, y, l, v, w, which have no capital forms, and letters which are doubled or ligatured) are: 1076, 1601, 1629, 2716, 3180, 3250, 3447, 3503, 3531, 3545, 3559, 3601, 3803, 4011, 4053, 4151, 4235, 4736, 5408, 5464, 5784, 5980 (see also 4015n).

366 Another example of interference by punctuation is the enclosing in quotation marks of proverbs. On the one hand, one might argue, we would not need quotation marks around the proverbs familiar to us (You can’t tell him anything—like father, like son.), and so it would seem superfluous to do so to medieval proverbs. On the other hand, quotation marks provide the readiest method of indicating on the page that the literal sense of the line in question is (or may be) problematical for a special reason—a reason that quotation marks make immediately evident. Having chosen this course, it was of course necessary to enclose all
(4) There is little in the way of editorial precedent to guide the editor in laying out the roundel (never a popular form in English) on the page. Nigel Wilkins has provided valuable information for the layout of rondeaux that were written to fit musical forms, and his arguments can be applied to the English roundels.\textsuperscript{367} Since neither the syntactic structure nor the scribal layout seems to contradict the musical structure (which is not to say that these poems were written to be sung), I have laid out the roundels according to Wilkins’s suggestions (see above, “The Roundel”). Italicizing the expanded refrains is not merely an overly-precise antiquarian touch. I have worked through-out to maintain Steele and Day’s line numbering in order to make cross-referencing easy. I have therefore presented all implied but un-written refrain material in italics, thereby both clarifying what actually exists in the manuscript and retaining Steele and Day’s line numbering.

Steele and Day created titles for a number of the segments of verse that make up \textit{Fortunes Stabilines} and divided the whole work into four parts (numbered as three). In keeping with their deep interest in the relation between the French and English poems, they headed each section (or poem) with a reference to the corresponding French text. They numbered each lyric prominently and headed each one with a reference to the corresponding French poem. I have chosen, rather, to limit the intrusion on the page of either structural demarcations or references to another body of poetry. Titles of sections have been kept as descriptive as possible and are to be found only in the Table of Contents. Ballade and roundel numbers have been placed as unobtru-sively as possible on the page. References to French counterparts follow each lyric or narrative section.\textsuperscript{368}

proverbs in quotation marks in order not to imply a difference between those with which we are familiar and the others. My guiding principle in all such decisions was to place the best, most transparent reading as close at hand as possible. Though this is not a painless text to read, it is the best compromise I could devise in order to provide a genuinely medieval text to a late twentieth-century reader of Middle English, or in other words, to present a reading experience as close to that of the work’s original audience as possible, without alienating the (experienced) reader.\textsuperscript{367} “Structure of Ballades, Rondeaux,” 337–48. For an example of Wilkins’s editorial presentation, see his \textit{One Hundred Ballades}, 114–16. Note that the roundels correspond to \textit{chansons} and not to \textit{rondeaux}. Charles wrote both in French, primarily \textit{chansons} while he was in England, but \textit{rondeaux} almost exclusively after he returned to France.\textsuperscript{368} The roundels are numbered in the manuscript; the ballades are not.
Emendations, which are very few, are surrounded by [ ] if they supply something missing, and by < > if they change an extant reading. Both are recorded in the textual notes (except where an entire word has been supplied) and all are mentioned in the explanatory notes. Scribal revisions are likewise recorded in the textual notes and, where possible, identified as work of the main scribe, [Revisor] A, or [Revisor] B.
When Nature first created me, says the narrator, she first gave me into the governance of Childhood (Enfance); later a messenger called Age (in this case something like Growing Up), under orders from Nature, transferred me to the care of Youth (Jennesse). Early one Valentine’s Day morning, Youth awakens the narrator and announces that he must go to meet a certain lord (un seigneur). The narrator humbly asks who this may be, but when Youth tells him that it is the God of Love, he declares he is too young and begs to be allowed to put off this service, which he has heard will bring him pain (tourmens).

Youth insists, painting a glowing picture of the joys of love, but adds that the choice is his. The narrator answers graciously that he will obey her this time, but that she must promise that neither he nor his heart will be coerced into anything. Youth promises that she will not force his heart to do anything, but that Beauty will change his mind.

The narrator dresses, and the two make their way to Love’s castle (manoir). Youth announces to the porter (Compagnie) that she has brought Charles, duc d’Orlians; the porter opens the gate immediately, welcomes them, and announces them to Venus and Cupid. The porter returns with Fair Welcome (Bel Acueil) and Plaisance, and all four accompany the narrator to the presence of the Roy souverain, where his courtiers are dancing and singing. They kneel. Youth presents Charles, “de la mason de France, / Creu ou jardin semé de fleur de lis,” to Cupid, the God of Love.

Love welcomes him, saying that he knew his father and many others of his lineage, who served him well, and asks if he has ever been

---

1 Jennesse represents the proper age for love, an age governed by Venus, according to Froissart (see introduction, “Sources and Influences: English,” n. 28). Goodrich is thus mistaken in thinking that “Orleans represents himself as a child still with his governess whom he calls ‘maistresse’” (Themes, 83).

2 Charles’s father, Louis, was by all accounts a brilliant, handsome man; this
pierced by love’s dart (though the young man, he thinks, looks too young). “Come closer,” says Cupid, “let us discuss this.”

His heart trembling, the narrator asks Love to be kind. Cupid answers that he cannot leave until he falls in love. Cupid calls forth Plaisant Beauté and orders her to assail the narrator, to keep him from rest or sleep, just as she dealt with Samson and Solomon. Beauty tells him sweetly that he must obey Love and then sends an arrow through his eyes into his heart. This rouses (esveillier) his heart, which feels happy. The narrator rebukes his eyes and asks his heart to remove the dart, but it is too late. The lover laments: he hates his life and desires death, he hates his eyes and his heart, and he hates the arrow.

Blaming both the God of Love and Beauty,3 he falls suffering (malade) at the feet of Love, apparently dead. The god laughs, taunting him with his weakness (“You should see yourself in a mirror!”). Youth intercedes to ask for a respite, but Cupid refuses until the lover surrenders.

Beauty lifts the lover’s head and places it in her lap (saying, “I arrest you with these hands”), counselling him once again to surrender, and the lover does so (addressing her as “young, gentle princess without peer”), asking for pity. Beauty then intercedes on his behalf. Cupid (Amours) responds by giving the lover into her hands, commanding her to subject him completely to her will. Beauty then teaches the lover the ten rules (points) of love:

1. serve Love loyally in spite of your suffering;
2. put your heart in one place; love one lady with your whole will, without desiring to change (or divide) your allegiance;
3. guard your countenance and your manner in keeping Love’s secrets;
4. never boast of Love’s favors.

These are the most important, but there are six more rules:

1. be jolis (joyous, agreeable, well turned out);

may be the son’s tribute to his father’s obvious sexual presence.

3 Much has been made of the possible identity of one “Lady Beauty,” presumed by Champion to be Bonne d’Armagnac, Charles’s second wife, and by Steele to be Maud, Countess of Arundel (xxxiv). In fact Beute is never used as a form of address (i.e., a name) in the ballade sequence, and here, as the personification who teaches the narrator about love, she is simply a borrowing from the Romance of the Rose.
2. be exceedingly courteous and gracious;
3. seek honor and pursue valor;
4. be generous;
5. seek out the company of people of honor;
6. sixth and last, be a diligent scholar in Love’s school; learn the arts of love: how to make music, dance, write (faire) songs, rhyme ballades, etc. These are the ten commandments of the God of Love.

With his hands on a book, the lover promises to serve loyally and to keep the commandments of love willingly. The God of Love commands Good Faith (Bonne Foy), his chief secretary, to write a letter patent (Lettre de retenue), which, sealed by Loyalty with the seal of Love, is then delivered to the lover. The God of Love retains the lover’s heart, however, _en gage_. When the lover protests that he needs his heart, Love responds that his physician, Hope, will keep him from dying until he is able to obtain one to replace it.

[Here the extant text begins:]

---

4 For a description of the gestures involved in the ceremonies of homage and fealty, see Stock, 50–51.
The god Cupide and Venus the goddesses
Which earthly power han on all worldly gladnes:
We hertly gretyng sende of oure humbles
To louers alle,
Doyng yow wite the duk that folkis calle
Of Orlyaunce, we him amyte and shall
As oure servaunt, which hath but yeris small
Of yowthe yit spent,
And we haue him assignyd on oure rent
The fayrist pencioun aftir his entent
Forto enyoy bi oure lettir patent
While he good lust;
Hopyng forto fynde him trewe and iust,
As in oure part, that we no thing dislust
Him to avaunce (lo, this we trust
In yowre entent);
Wherfore we gyve strayt comaundement
To alle whiche ben as of oure parlement
Him forto helpe and ayde in eche turnement
In all they may,
Without disdayne or any frawdyng way—
As ye ben glad oure plesure <to> obay,
In forfetyng (now herkyn what y say)

5 The paraphrases are in no way intended to diminish or obviate the reader's need to use the glossary. They are provided to help the reader with syntax and word order and to clarify passages in which the spellings of the text might lead him or her astray. As they are often free, the accomplished reader of Middle English is invited to disregard them.
Informing you (that)
9 out of our revenues
12 as long as he pleases
13-16 Hoping to find him loyal and honorable to us, we entrust to your attention that we do not at all lack the desire to advance him
23 On pain of forfeiting . . .
Bothe good and bode—
Him to susteyne in his necessite
Ageyn Desdayn and his affynyte
(Cursid Daunger and wickid Ielowse
And fals Dissayt),
For thorough envious sleightis they awayt
Mi trewe folk to hurt and to affayt,
Of which that he is on, in my consayt,
Syn he is swore
As me to serue eche othir wight tofore,
Not only now but his lyue euyrmore,
To payne him sifl for any greef or sore
In his seruage;
For sewrte more, he leuys in morgage
His hert, without disdayne of corage,
Not to refuse in thenkyng it bondage
(The more biholde
Ar we to hem, god wot, a thousand fold!);
Wherfore he shall not say he hath myssold
As his good will—Crist forbede þat he shuld,
Hit were fowl doone!—
But for ensample most abone
To cause yong folk to loue more sone;
That causith as this: we him gardone
Vndir oure seele,
Wherfore as loo bileue yow wele,
Oure feodaries or counselle,
We this haue doon not to repele
In no manere.
Gyve on the day of Seynt Valentyn þe martere
As in the Castell of Humbill Desere
As for the tyme oure counsell holdyng here.

Ch. 14, lines 401-57

25 “to susteyne” is parallel to “forto helpe and ayde” (19).
30 Of which followers he [Charles] is one, in my opinion,
37-39 As a stronger pledge, he leaves his heart as security without thinking it
beneath him [and showing it by] refusing [to part with his heart] because he
considered it [i.e., feudal tenure] servitude
47-48 That [i.e., his setting such a good example] causes this: we reward him
49-51 Wherefore, our retainers and council, believe that we have enacted this not
[with the intention that it is] to be withdrawn
Hen in myn hond was tan me þis patent
I seide, "My lord, O very god puysshaut,
   Of pryncis prince, O prince most excellent,
For all the world is to yow obeyshaunt,
I, poore wrecche, bicomen yowre servaunt;
Mi witt so dulle hyt ys and y vntaught
That y kan not athanke yow as y aught,

"For to my will my tunge kan not suffise;
Twene ioy and woo my gost supposid is
As this to thynke and this oft to avise
My witt as now so renneth this and this,
But as humbly y thanke yow lo ywis,
As kan be thought in any maner hert
—Or more, if more that reson kan aduert,

"Of that as loo hit likith youre good grace
Me to reward more then y am worth[y],
For which that y, while y haue lyvis space,
Mi sely will shall shewe to do trewly
Yowre plesore. Sely will? Nay, verily,
Mi grettist will shall be forto deserue
What ye haue doon, not now, but to y sterve.

"<Sterve>? Fy, my speche hit squarith oft,
For though y wolde, alas, hit may not be
Deth to take, for hit suffisith nought,
For of the deth ye haue revid me
That in me now as nys ther lijf, parde,
But even the self lijf ye haue me lent,
This may y not <deserue>, in myn entent

59-60 because all the world is obedient to you, I . . . have become your servant
63-66 Because my tongue cannot express my will; my spirit is placed between joy
and woe, that is, I think this [one joyful thing] and then consider this [something
woeful], my mind now races to and fro so much
70-74 Because it pleases your highness . . . in return for that I . . . will teach my
humble will to do faithfully that which pleases you. . . . [see note]
76 what you have given [me], not [only] now, but till I die.
78-79 For though I wish to, alas, it is not possible to suffer death, for it is not
permitted
81 so that there is no life in me now . . .
83-84 in my opinion, I do not deserve this [my treatment] at your hands, . . .
"That ye haue doon, but Ihesu wis me so
That what y do may be to yowre plesere.
And if y euyr wilfully as loo
Yow do offence, the seluenoure martere
Mot y bicomme, y myghti God require,
For well y wott that kan me not bitide
Though that y lyuyd a thousand worldis wide;

"Wherfore as this biseche yow licence
Me forto graunt, as of yowre nobill grace,
To sewe, aftir my childisshe ynnocense,
As for myn hert an othir to purchase,
Whereas ye haue betake myn for a space.
A space? Ye, for while y lijf endure
I gete it not ageyne, this am y sure!

"Yit oon persone as <oon> hert doth suffise;
What nede is hit to haue more then ynough?
Me thynketh hit were an vngoodly gise
To hoker moker hertis. Wote ye how?
I mene as this: when they be <gyven> you
And ye bitake a thousand on body
That on lust not depart, fy, nygardy!

"Alas! what shulde it to my lady greue
Though that y kepe her hert while sche dethe myn?
Bet were hit so then suffir me myscheve
As for my trouthe, this wot ye well and fyne,
They not preuayle though y my silf forpyne;
To hate for loue hit were to fowle a syn,
Me thynkith now, in case as y am yn."

91–94 For this reason I beg you to grant me permission ... to petition ... to obtain another heart to replace mine
98 Yet [for] one person one heart suffices
101 to hoard hearts ... when they are given to you
105 ... what harm would it do my lady
107–9 That would be better than to cause me to endure misery in return for my loyalty, you know that very well; she does not profit [from keeping it even] though I torture myself [i.e., it causes me great pain].
The god Cupide as therwith lokid sad
And to me seide, "Ahim, what wanton hyt!
I wende right well atamyd ben thou had,
But well y fele as now thou lakkist witt,
For this y woll thou knowe: how that hyt sitt
The forto like in what is my plesere;
And where as that thou seidist to me here

"How y a thousand hertis take to on
As forto kepe, y gesse y do it well.
Shuld she hir hert depart to euerichon?
Nay, sir, let be, right neuyr a dele!
Take which she lust best, wilt thou entirmelle?
Lete hir leue the remenaunt me biside
And y shall well as for ther ese provide.

"Suche wordis leue, hit is but foltisshenes,
And go thi wey to purchase ... now let see ...
To wynne the hert of thi lady maystres,
For as for thyn, y take it hir, Bewte,
And yit she lete it ly twene hir and me,
As thou mayst se, as yit she doth it wayfe,
As she were loth more then hir Owen <ressayue>.

"But and thou kanst hir othir wise conquere,
I woll be glad to helpe the as y kan.
Let se how that thou kanst thi servise bere.
Remembrir the, thou art a gentill man;
Aftir that <scol>, so, loke thou folow than,
For thou shalt wite that ther be scolis thre
As in owyng not al of oon degre:

"For gentill must be wonne with gentiles,

113 ... "Well, how unruly you are!"
116-17 ... that it is fittig for you to be content with what pleases me
119 how I give a thousand hearts to one person
123-4 If she takes the one she likes best, will you interfer? Let her leave the rest
with me.
129-30 for as for your heart, I gave it to her: Beauty, and she lets it lie ...
132 As if she were loathe to receive more than was her due.
Bi goodly speche and curteys countenaunce.  
The more that they ben sett as in nobles,  
The more assure thee in thi gouernaunce;  
Tyme to speke and not payse in balauce,  
For to nobles longith sewte of curteys speche  
As he fynt tyme bi mouth or writyng seche.

"The marchaunt wijf—nay, pe doughtir of burgeys—  
With giftis grete to fresshe them in aray  
So maist thou when ther fauoure best, y gesse,  
But, what, a cherlis doughtir dawbid in clay  
As strokis grete (not tippe nor tapp, do way!),  
But loke who that most fowlist kan bigynne  
The rewdisse child so best lo shall he wynne,

"But as for the, thou must do othirwise,  
For y haue gyven thyn hert to othir place.  
Go forth thi wey sum goodly swete avise,  
So as thou kan, to gete thi lady grace;  
For, as for me, y shall in euery case  
(As y haue seide) the helpe in what y may.  
Now fare thou well, y kan no bettir say."

And so he him withdrew forto disport  
And y myn eye to Bewte threw afer  
And sawe right well abowt hir stood a sort  
That y, god wot, ne koude devise a wer,  
For gret Disdayne and crewell lo Daungere

143–46 The higher they are set in nobility [the more noble they are], the more [carefully] you should control your behavior; the time to speak and [the time] to remain silent is very important [i.e., may tip the scales], for to nobility belongs petitioning in courtly terms, as he [the suitor] finds time to entreat [the lady] in person or in writing  
149–52 in this way you can best win their favor ... but ... [you can win] ... a churl’s daughter ... with heavy blows (don’t bother with mere taps!) but whoever begins [does it] most harshly  
155–156 for I have bestowed your heart on [one of] another [higher] social rank ... some pleasing suit devise  
159 ... help you in any way I can  
163–64 ... that she was surrounded by [such] a company that I ... could not think of a worse [one].
They preysid hir so nygh and round about
That, what for drede, not durste y in þat rowt

(Not for myn hed!) oo word vnto hir say
Lest that they wolde my mater ouyrthrowe,
And well y thought if that myn hert so lay
In suche a plite as myght y right well knowe,
That, to myn harme, retourne hit wold & growe,
For Loue wolde that Bewte shulde it kepe,
And she was loth, for Pite was aslepe.

Then thought y me was best to make a bill
Bisechyng Bewte of hir benygne grace
Mi poore hert that she not suffir spill
But forto kepe as for a tymys space
Vnto y may hir faoure more purchase,
For wold she graunt me to kepe it euyrmore
Then were y hool of many a greuous sore,

And, if she wolde more ferre of goodlihede,
To leue me not as man without hert
But graunt me loo, liche to a pynnys hed,
Part of hiris to that my rewde desert
To graunt me more as may hir lo convuert
And as me thought in this that y no blame
Deseruyd lo for which to do the same.

166 they pressed so closely about her
169–72 lest they thwart my enterprise, and I thought certainly if my heart lay in
such a plight as I knew it surely to do, it would return to me [rather than stay
with my lady] and grow [back into my body], to my great sorrow
175–88 The two stanzas, taken together, make one statement. The bill in 175
returns in 188, and “biseching” (176) governs “that she not suffir spill / But forto
kepe and To leue me not . . . But graunt me.” “Forte kepe” (178) is parallel to
“spill” (177).
179–80 until I might obtain more of her favor, for if she would grant me that she
would keep it forever
182–88 And [bisechyng her], if she wished, of her grace, to go further, not to
leave me a man without a heart, but to grant me some of hers (even a pinhead’s-
worth) until my worth (which is small on account of my inexperience) may
change her mind [and cause her] to grant me more, and it seemed to me that I
deserved no blame in this matter for doing the same [i.e., making the bill].
me withdrew and called you Hope
Out of the pres into an herber grene
As in my childisshe witt if you koude grope
Sum pryty thing that myght hir plesere bene,
But even liche as hit were a swarme of bene,
So gan ther thoughtis to me multiply
To helpe me fynde, if they koude, remedy.

Good Hope, as loo, was no thing to seche,
For penne and papir had he found anoon.
“A trouthe,” quod y, “here lakkith not but Speche
And Konnyng, but alas they be my foon.”
“O tewche!” quod Hope, “so as thou kanst, do on,
Forwhi Good Will, hit may thi case preuayle
For which that y bigan all this trauayle.”

No French

Ost goodly fayre aboue alle þo lyuyng,
I yow biseche that ye lust pardone me
(I, wrecchedist wrecche, youre grace here abidyng);
This forto say me dryvith necessite,
Forwhi y may no lenger hide, parde,
But that ye nede must knownen my distres,
For all my comfort lo that are it ye;
So ben ye sowl my lady and maystres.

My greef to playne, albe y not konnyng,
Loue causith this my nakid wordis fyle,
For youre servaunt bcome y lo beyng
(God helpe me so) the first tyme that y see
How ye excellid alle othir in bewte
That, as me thought, all worldly lo gladnes

191 To see if I could find anything in my puerile mind
196 Good Hope was not hard to find
201–2 for Good Will, for whom I went to all this trouble in the first place, may help your case. “hit” repeats “Good Will.”
211–15 Although I am not skillful in expressing my grief, Love causes them to take flight, for I became your servant, submitting, . . . the first time I saw how you surpassed all others in beauty, [so that]
Were me bifalle, yowre servaunt forto be,  
So ben ye sowl my lady and maystres.

Of gyft y dar not axe so gret a thing  
Of yow, bicause y knowe me not worthe,  
But fro this tyme, my lijf forth dewryng,  
If that ye lust graunt me yowre seruice fre,  
That wolde y axe withouten wage or fee:  
In yowre seruyce to spende my lustynes,  
No more y wishe nor axe in no degre,  
So ben ye sowl my lady and maystres.

Allas, madame, as wakith yowre pite  
And me forgyve as of my symples,  
Which am yowre man my lyuys quantite,  
So ben ye sowl my lady and maystres.

Ch. 17, B I

A  
S plesith yow yowre eyen to pressen  
And cast them me no more, my ladi bright,  
For when ye me biholde, the self sesoun  
(Bi verry god!) ye sle me lo vpright,  
Which ouyrthrowith myn hert in such a plight  
That what to doon not wot y well ywis.  
Without yowre helpe to deth bus am y dight,  
Myn only ioye and souereyne hertis blis.

Not dar y yow desire, for no chesoun,  
To gyue yowre hert to me, but what as right  
If ye lust doon, me thynke hit were resoun  
I had yowre hert toforne eche othir wight  
Syn ye haue myn (als, shewe[th] it lo at sight  
That without hert not may y leven this),

222 If it please you to permit me [to enter] your service without hindrance  
231–32 Please imprison your eyes and cast them in my direction no more  
239–41 I would not dare to ask you ... but if you want to deal justly (with me), it seems reasonable to me  
243 ... (moreover, it appears at a glance [i.e., it is obvious] that ... ) “it” is the subject of “shewe” (probably a scribal error for sheweth).
But geyne youre will not kan y sryue nor fight,
Myn only ioye and souereyne hertis blis.

I am to bold to holde this opynyoun,
But on my gilt as lete youre mercy light,
Syn that youre plesaunt body and fawkoun
Hath me thus tane maugre all my might
For prisoner, abidyng day and nyght
Youre pite sewt of which if that y mys
The terme as of my deth then is it pight,
Myn only ioy and souereyne hertis blis.

So sore me werieth Loue that y afright,
Madame, as lo my sewte wherfore it is
To holde my sylf youre sely poore knyght,
Myn only ioy and souereyne hertis blis.

Ch. 18, B II

Ret perill is in hasty biholdyng;
Such thynge as may encause a body dye,
All kan it not ben had the eschewyng
Though hit be wrong, right, witt or foly.
When Plesaunce cometh vnsto an hert lusty,
A yong desire and fresshe with hir bryngyng,
To let his hert, who hath ther then konnyng
But he woll sende þe sight out of Fraunchise?
This comyn cometh—hit is no straunge þing—
As well to foolis as vnsto folkis wise.

Whiche eyen brynge of þat þei haue seyng
A report so gracious and goodly
Vnsto the hert, which gvyth his heryng
Therto, which doth him loue so feruently

247 I am too bold in holding this opinion
251–53 . . . awaiting day and night your pity [that I have] sued for, which, if I lack [it] (i.e., you do not pity me), the time of my death is then fixed
261–62 Although avoiding it is impossible, whether it be wrong or right . . .
265–66 who then has the skill to stop his heart? but he [the heart] will send the eyes freely
That he kan not eschewe to sende him spy
Eft for sumwhat that may be his likyng
Which byndith him for all his lijf, beyng
Hert and body to Loue and his servise
(This comyn cometh—hit is no straunge þing—
As well to foolis as vnto folkis wise),

Which causith oft full paynfull abidyng
Or he may passe the gate of Iupardy
(The tyme so long, vnsewre the releuyng)
As of Comfort to fynden remedy
Which slepith oft as in a nede trewly,
For who to Loue that geveth attendyng
A martir lijf he hath most resemblyng,
Which greef is more then to be maddid twyse!
This comyn cometh (hit is no straunge thing)
As well to foolis as vnto folkis wise.

God of Loue, ne takith displesyng,
Though that y say as y haue knowlechyng
As of yowre bond the rage and gret Iuyse;
This comyn cometh (hit is no straunge thing)
As wele to foolis as vnto folkis wise.

Ow may he him diffende, þe pouer hert,
Ageyn two eyen when they vpon him light,
Which nakid is withouten cloth or shert,
Where in Plesere the eyen are armyd bright?
As wepen noon kan helpe, y yow bihight,
So nygh they are of Louys allyaunce,
For ther nys wight may stond geyne þer pusshaunce.

275–76 ... submitting heart and body ...
282–85 to get relief from Comfort, who often sleeps when one needs him badly,
for whoever attends on Love, he has a life most resembling that of a martyr
289–91 ... do not take offense, though I say that I know the madness and the
punishment of your domination
Then must he deye or yelde him as cowert
(For to gret shame is flight for any wight)
Or manly to abide his grevous smert
To that, aswowne, he ouyrthrowe vpright
And so ben yelde, but what bihouyth fight?
Bet is hit yelde him to ther gouernaunce,
For ther nys wight may stond geyne þer per pusshaunce.

That hit is this ye do right well aduert,
Mi lady dere, to me, yowre scomfitid knyght,
For, in good trouthe, y myght it not astert;
When ye the dart of Loue vnto me pight
Thorugh out myn eye, not knew y day nor night;
So was y brought (no wondir) to vttraunce
For ther nys wight may stonde geyne þer per pusshaunce.

If that myn harme to yow preuaylen myght,
Yit shulde y then agre with my greuance
Which y haue tane as thorugh myn eye sight,
For ther nys wight may stonde geyne þer per pusshaunce.

Fayre madame, yowre goodli lookis spare,
Yowre wordis, eek, so full of curtese,
For, Ihesu <wot>, they harme (and ye vnware)
Mi foltisshe hert; but what, if so that ye
As my request lust not graunten me
In losyng of my gret aduersite,
As lete me goon with myn vnhappy chaunce
Without more assaut to passen fre
Which y haue for yowre plesaunt acqueyntaunce.

This wolde y swere (but vnnethe lo y dare):
That gretry wrongith Loue yowre crewelte
Syn that ye smote me with the dart of Kare

304–5 until, in a swoon, he fall headlong to the ground and so submit, but what use is fighting?
329 that your cruelty wrongs Love greatly
And me forto comfort ye lust not see;  
I trowe ye caste y shulde a martir be.  
But wolde God to fele ye myght ben she  
On of the stechis lest of my greuaunce,  
But fy! allass! hit were to gret pite  
Which y haue for yowre plesaunt acqueyntaunce!

What haue y doon offense that ye so are  
Glad me to sle? Alak! am y not he  
Ye brought toLoue? and wolde y square?  
Ye woll not lete me that in no dege  
To gyue me pese (hit hurt yow not, parde!)  
Or graunt me ellis as my desire, in fee;  
This woll be spoke yow shame, no valyaunce:  
That to my trouthe ye shewe no bounte  
Which y haue for yowre plesaunt acqueyntaunce.

O fayre madame, now lefith this fantase;  
As graunt me pese or, with yowre grace, avaunce  
That y might say, “O what felicite  
Which y haue for yowre plesaunt acqueyntaunce!”

*Ch. 21, B V*

Ot long agoo y hyed me apase  
In secret wise myn hert forto counsayle  
Him silf forto withdrawe as for a space  
Out of Louys paynfull thought and trauayle,  
To which he seide me, “Nay, sett there a nayle!  
Speke me no more therof, y hertly pray,  
For, god wot, to loue y shall me payne,

---

333-35 But I wish to God you might be the one to feel one of the tiniest pricks of my misery, but fie! alas! it is too much distress  
337 What offense have I committed . . .  
339-44 . . . and would I complain? You will neither release me even a tiny bit in order to give me peace . . . nor grant me my desire . . .; this will be spoken of to your shame, not to your merit, that in return for my loyalty . . . “Lete” (340) is parallel to “graunt” (342).  
347 grant me peace or . . . assist [me]  
354 [in answer] to which he said to me, “No, I stop at that!”
For y haue chose the fayrist that be may,  
As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne."

"Now pardone me," y seide, "as in this case  
For whi y say hit for oure bothe avayle  
With all the power that god well in me hase,  
That in good trouthe thou dost me to mervayle!  
Seest thou not well that Fortune doth vs vs fayle?  
Hast thou good lust to lyue in sorow?" "Nay,  
Iwis," he seide, "y trust more to attayne.  
I had a praty look yit yestirday,  
As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne."

"Allas!" seide y, "thou fonyst, as haue y grace,  
That for oon look thi lijf lust to biwayne!  
For countenaunce or lookis of hir face  
Knowist thou hir thou3t?! Ye, cast me lo a kayle!"  
"O pese!" quod he, "now, good, y lust not rayle  
Nor y bileue no word thou dost me say,  
For trewly serue y shall and neuyr fayne  
Of good which is the best—leue this aray!—  
As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne."

O ywis, madame, in this maner aray  
Myn hert and y thus haue ye brost atwayne;  
But what, swete hert, as gide vs such a way  
As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne.

Ch. 22, B VI

Euyr more to loue oft haue y thought,  
So ouyrchargith me my greef and payne,  
For in this world was neuyr wight ywrou3t  
That euyr Loue more grevid, dar y sayne,

361 with all the power that good will in me has
370-71 Can you read her thoughts by her manner or her facial expressions?  
Answer that! [see note].
374-75 for I shall serve her who is the best of all good things loyally and never refrain [from it]—stop this behavior!
But in the ende, to say yow trouth agayne,
For any greef that may be to me sent,
I sewre yow, bi god, hit woll not be,
Forwhi y kan not make him to consent—
Myn hert, the whiche that maystir is of me.

Though ther be weyes many, who hat sought—
But what, no force, y ley them on be playne,
Thynkyng that Sokoure shall me sett aloft
As in comfort or hope, oon of the twayne.
Allas! if y had power to restrayne,
Hit shulde be doon, ywis, as sone as ment—
Or souner if ther myght be quantite;
He shulde no more in Loue be resident,
Myn hert, the which that maystir is of me.

For bi sweetnes y wot that now and oft
Of prati Hope Loue fedith him certayne,
That all his lyue to lyue so he ne rought;
He lust not knowe that he me doth forpayne,
Me drenchyng so in teeris fele that rayne,
For of Plesaunce his wounde hit hath a tent
That nought he sett bi myn aduersite
But of my lijf thus holdith the iugement—
Myn hert, the which that maystir is of me.

So many wordis loo as y haue spent
Hit greuyth me, but what hit more, parde,

387 . . . it will not happen (that I leave Love)
390–91 Though there be many ways [to leave the service of Love] [for] him who sought [them]—well, no matter, I lay down [my arms] on the field of battle (i.e., refuse to try to find them)
396 Or sooner, if there could be [such an infinitesimal] quantity [of time]
399–402 For I know for certain that sometimes Love feeds him [my heart] with sweetness of pleasant Hope so that all his life he does not mind [Love's hard service]; he [my heart] does not want to know that he makes me suffer grievously
405–6 so that he cares nothing for my misfortune but has the power thus to decide my fate
408–11 That I have expended so many words grieves me, but what hurts me more is that I have given (not given but wasted [i.e., given with no return]) my heart . . .
Me hurt that y haue geve (not geve but spent)
Myn hert the which that maystir is of me.
Ch. 23, B VII

W
Hen y am leyd to slepe as for a stound
To haue my rest, y kan in no manere,
For all the nyght myn hert aredith round
As in the Romaunce of Plesaunt Pancer,
Me praiyng so as him to hark and here,
And y ne dar his welle disobay
In dowtyng so to do him displesere.
This is my slepe yfalle into decay.

In this book which he redde is write & bound
As alle dedis of my lady dere,
Which doth myn hert in laughtir oft abound
When he hit rett or tellith the matere,
Which gretyly is to prayse, without[en] were,
For y my sif delite it here, mafay,
Which, if thei herde, so wolde eche straungere;
This is my slepe yfalle into decay.

As with myn eyen a respit to be found
As for an howre (y axe not for a yere),
For which dispite welnygh he doth confounde
That they ne kan fulfille my desere,
For which to rage and sighe as in a gere
He farith, so that even as well y may,
As make him stynt, likke out a cole of fyre.
This is my slepe yfalle into decay.

Thus may y, loo, more souner wyn my bere
Then make my froward hert to me obay,

420 In this book that he reads is written and bound
428–31 [I ask my heart for] an hour's respite for my eyes... for anger at which
(that they cannot [read, and thus] fulfill my desire [because they are sleepy]), he
is nearly destroyed
436 Thus I may sooner attain my bier
For with myn hurt he doth him sifl achere;
This is my slepe yfalle as in decay.
*Ch. 24, B VIII*

Resshe Bewte, riche of yowthe & lustynes,
The smylyng lookis casten so louely,
The plesaunt speche governyd bi wittynes,
Body well shape, of port so womanly,
The high estat demenyd so swetely,
The well ensewridnes of word and chere,
Without disdeyne shewyng to lowe & hye
(For whiche all folk hir prayse, and so do y),
Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.

So well bicometh the nobill, good princes
To synge or daunce in all disport, trewly,
That of such thing she may be callid maystres.
What that she doth is doon so pratily
That noon it may amenden, hardily.
She is the skole of all goodly manere:
Who hir biholt may lere that is witty
Or in sight hath hir deedis to aspy;
Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.

Bounte, Honour, Astat, and Gentiles—
They rewle hir hert, so are they well worthi,
For trouthe she wantith noon, nor stedfastnes.
Nature in hir hath shewid gret maystry
Hir forto make and forme so propirly
In euery poynt to stonde as Dame Sans Pere
Of alle that lyue, god wot, vndir the sky.
I say not this, but alle hir seth with eye;
Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.

441 . . . scattered so graciously
448 Apparently this is the main clause introduced by the rest of the stanza.
449–50 It becomes the noble, good princess so well to sing . . .
455–56 who looks at her or observes her deeds, and has the wit, may learn from her
465 Not only I say this, but all who lay eyes on her
She is more like, then woman, a goddess;  
I trowe that God hath sent hir, Almyghty,  
Into this world to shewe his gret larges:  
What vertu he kan sett in oon body!  
She is the sovl fenyx of Araby  
Which may not be thorugh praysid in a yere;  
Hit to presume as were a gret foly,  
For noon hath wet thereto suffisyngly;  
Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.  

If ther be wight ytane with heuynes,  
Biholde hir swete demene, and remedy  
I warant he shall haue of his distres  
As for the tyme, a reles sodeynly  
Of euery payne, forgote in his party.  
A paradise hir company is it here,  
A hool complet without greef or anoy,  
The more biholde, the more delite, forwhi  
Alle thewys goode this hath my lady dere.  

Ye ladies and alle fayre, bothe lowe and hie,  
That herith this—me preysyng my lady—  
I yow biseche to take no displesere.  
I say hit not to yowre disprayse forthy,  
But me to shewe hir servaunt to y dy.  
Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.  

Ch. 25, B IX

Adame, a trouthe not wot y what to say  
Nor bi what ende that y shulde first bigynne  
The wofull lijf vnto yow to biwray  
Which shertith me more nerre than doth my skyn.  
Hit forto speke, as well lo may y blyn—

477 let him behold her sweet demeanor ...  
483 the more he beholds, the more delight, because  
489 but to show myself to be her servant till I die.  
495-96 I might as well be silent as describe it [my woeful life], because words will not bring me nearer [to you]
Forwhi bi speche not kan y be the nerre;  
What helpe, god wott, as shulde y bi hit wyn,  
Syn hit is so that y am from yow fare?

What y now se hit noyeth me, mafay,  
But y for drede my countenaunce forpeyne  
As with my mouth to shewe a laughtir gay  
When that myn hert as wepith me withinne.  
A martir me to calle hit were no synne  
If Cupide make a seynt as of louer  
For paynys thikke endewre y, lo, not thynne  
Syn hit is so that y am from yow fer.

But neuyrtheles y humblly thanke yow ay  
For yowre writyn; my woo hathe pesid syn  
With Swete Comfort y took the selvyn day,  
The whiche y more sett by then all my kyn  
That neuyr fro my brest as shall hit twyn,  
Which chaungith not, y pray yow as y dare,  
For now my blis on hit is to myssyn  
Syn hit is so that y am from yow fare.

My ledy hert is lightid vnto tyn  
Bi Comfort, loo, but absence doth me war  
That more y lust to wayle then laughe or gren  
Syn hit is so that y am from yow fare.

Ch. 27, B X

His fer from yow am y, lady mastres,  
Savyng myn hert which left is with yow ay.  
In company of Woo and Gret Distres

508-512 ... my woo has been alleviated since [your writing] by Sweet Comfort [which] I took [to myself] the same day, whom I value more than all my kin “The whiche” (510) refers back to “Swete Comfort” (509); “hit” (511) refers to the letter; and “changith” (512) is an imperative. “Which” (512) refers in a general way to the lady’s positive disposition toward the lover.  
513-14 for now the happiness it [the letter] gave me has ended, since I am far from you.  
519 Thus I am far from you ...
I lyue, and loke for comfort day bi day
Of Plesere, which Absence holt vndir kay,
That y ne may now stroke youre sidis pleyne,
For, if y myght, me fle wolde Gref and Peyne
And y shulde fynde (so seith me Esperaunce)
Bi purchase of my derkid eyen twayne,
As moche of weele as y haue displesaunce.

If euyr wight as knew of heuynes,
Then gesse y wele that y haue made assay
As ferforth loo and of as gret larges,
Forwhi of woo my peere not haue y say;
Yet not ne recche y what y dewren may
In displesyng fals Ielowsy, certeyne,
For y a port of ioy me do restrayne
—And yet they spie how y lyue in penaunce;
As an vnhappy day mote they atayne
As moche of weele as y haue displesaunce!

Take hit in gree, O goodly yong princesse,
Syn that ye knowe wherfore y am away,
Which, aftir this, shall turne vs bothe gladnes—
Though that y wolde most fayne, without nay,
Ben with yow, swete; but what, y hit delay
And leue the ioye y faynest wolde attayne,
But, yong and oold, to serue and neuyr fayne
I shall yow loo and pray this in substaunce:
That God yow graunt (which power hath & mayn)
As moche of weele as y haue displesaunce.

I haue of woo so gret an aboundaunce
That teeris salt my hewe doth all forstayne,
But sende me, lord, a lak and make me fayne—
As moche of weele as y haue displesaunce.

Ch. 28, B XI
Yn that y absent am thus from yow fare
(God wot, madame, how hit doth me ennoy!)
I humbly biseche yow as y dar,
If hit plese yow of yowre curtesy,
When ye are sovl, withouten company,
A mollyng, swete loue cosse to wishe in me,
With a quyk hert and a thought lusty,
Forto aslake my gret aduersite.

Bi nyght to slepe haue y no power:
Thought cometh on me, Lust werrith me (not y why),
In which thought oft y thynke—and neuyr þe ner—
That y in armes haue yow, my lady,
For which y clippe my pylow lo and cry
“O mercy, Loue,” and “Make me so happy
That y may see this thought or that y dy
Forto aslake my gret aduersite!”

Hope makith me a promis in manar
He will me helpe, and saith me, “Care not, fy!”
But what, the long abood sore doth me war;
Yet, where so be y witt do or foly,
I holde my pese, so trust y him trewly
(And Hope surmounte daungerous Crewelte
That he not long shall holde of me mastry)
Forto aslake my gret aduersite.

In trewe seruice thus more and more ioy y,
The God of Loue bisechynge humbly
Vpon my carfull case to haue pite
And of my wille to gyue me sum party
Forto aslake my gret aduersite.

Ch. 29, B XII

558 . . . to wish to me [i.e., to send in your thoughts]
563 . . . — but [it] never [actually brings me] any nearer [to you]—
567 that I may see this thought [i.e., what I am thinking of] before I die
569–70 Hope makes me a kind of promise that he will help me . . .
574–75 (if Hope get the better of disdainful Cruelty so that he shall not have control over me for long)
Al be hit so y selde haue of yow sight,
Yet mowe ye thyneke that y am yowris ywis,
As bi the oth y haue vnto yow hight:
In all y ought, so am y ay yowris,
Forwhi plesaunce nor ioy, god wot, ther nys
Nor othir good that folke me gevyn may
(I promys yow, bi God which is but oon)
That shall this will bireyve me to y dey
Saue only this, the verry deth aloon.

Ye wote right well the oth y to yow plight
All to ben yowre, in tyme toforne this,
And with yow left, stide of <me>, lady bright,
The plegge with me the which most louyd is,
Which was myn hert y gafe all, bi his
Counsell, to dwelle with yow for onys and ay,
Which that y holde and euyr shall in oon,
For ther nys wight kan lette me yt, mafay,
Saue only this, the verry deth aloon.

Ye neuyrtheles bileue y verry right
If y yow tolde how that y fare amys
Ye wolde haue pite, or eche othir wight,
On greef y dewre, myn owen sovll hertis blis,
For as of woo, the way noon nede me wis,
For wite ye well that y from day to day
Laboure therynne, and haue do longe agoon,
That y ne ought desire, well may y say,
Saue only this, the verry deth aloon.

O fayre, which y so fayne wolde see and kis,
Which y biseche God graunt me sone, or this,

589 that shall take this desire from me till I die
594–95 the pledge which is dearest to me, which was my heart that I gave wholly
597 “Which” refers to the oath of line 591.
601–3 that if I told you . . . you would have pity on the grief I endure before [you
would pity] any other suitor . . .
606–7 labor in [woe], and have for a long time, so that I desire nothing . . .
610 which [favor] I pray God grant me soon, or this [one],
If so to graunt me be not to his pay:
I humbly beseech him that anoon
To gyue me so no more (O welaway!)
Saue only this: the verry deth aloon.

Ch. 30, B XIII

\[Ow what tidyng, my lady mastres?
How farith oure loue, y pray yow hertily?
For, in my side, y make yow sewre promys
In oon purpos, that y me kepe trewly
Without contrary thought in my party:
Which is that y shall serue yow to my last
As only yowre; wherfore (as wot ye how)
As in yowre part now be not childisshe gast,
But in liche wise, let se, aquytith yow.

Al be that Daunger hath, and gret Distres,
As of long tyme soiournyd all to nygh
Mi nakid hert, thorough force of hir rewdenes,
Of turnys straunge him shewyngh full many.
Allas they shulde so haue ther dwellyng (fy!)
In Louys court, but Pite slepith fast!
Yet y shall do my part in what y mowe
As with my trouthe him forto ouyrcast,
But in liche wise, let se, aquytith yow.

For though the ennoy of Payne and Heuynes
Long tyme hath had ther course bi gret maystry,
Yet in the lusty sesoun of gladnes
Woll come my socoure (truste y verily)
Vnto oure hertis bothe, for (wot ye whi?),
Yet haue y Hope as y had tyme apast
Saue only yow which y most truste now,
For where my mynde is sayle ye ar the mast,
But in liche wise, let se, aquytith yow.

613 to give me nothing else . .
618 With one purpose, . .
626 . . . through the force of their cruelty, playing many dirty tricks on him
634 have had their day for a long time . .
Let me not goon as oon vnknowe, vnbast,
For yowre y am, as y haue made a vow,
That knowist thou lord, to knowe bat power hast
But in liche wise, let se, aquytith yow.

Ch. 31, B XIV

Y wille, my loue, my verry sorse of blis,
As thynkith this: what part y am, certeyne,
That neuyr y forgete yow lo ywis;
Wherfore y wolde pray yow not disdeyn
Vnto the tyme y see yow eft ageyne,
That ye lust to bithynke him for a stound
The which that litill mercy yet hath found
In yow, if so y durst it to yow sayne.

Al be hit yet that y say not but this:
But that y ioy and wele do moche atayne
In yow[re] swet company—forwhi ther nys
Hit to deserue in me, this wote y playne,
But neuyrtheles y wolde haue passyng fayne
The reward which to trewe loue shuld habounde,
Of which ther is all straungenes on the ground
In yow, if so y durst it to yow sayne.

J trewly serue yow as my power is;
So oft y haue (or ellis y serue in vayne)
Such gift as Loue doth vnto folkis his:
Reward of grace forto aslake ther Payne;
Wherfore do as ye may content vs twayne:
Acordith my desire! O cum of, round!

644 ? who acknowledge you [for my (feudal)] lord, knowing what power you have
647-48 ... that wherever I am ... I never forget you
651 but that you be pleased to think of him [i.e., me] for a while
656-57 ... there is nothing in me to deserve it, this I know for certain
660 of which [instead of a reward] there is [in you] the greatest aloofness in the world
663-64 so I ought to have ... such a gift as Love gives unto his followers
666-67 therefore do what will content us both: grant my desire! O hurry up, quickly!
To moche refuse ynorishid is and wound  
In yow, if so y durst it to yow sayne.

Hit is but coward Drede yow doth restrayne;  
Were hit well doon, for trouth me to confound?  
I nolde it happe shuld for a thousand pound  
In yow, if so y durst it to yow sayne.  
Ch. 32, B XV

Adame, ye ought well know, to my semyng,  
What ioy that y haue had or yit plesaunce  
In yowre seruice for this, without gabbyng:  
To gidere yet y neyr had puysshaunce  
Oon only plesere to my suffisaunce,  
But even as sone as that y haue it raught  
Daunger birevith hit me (such is my chaunce),  
The small plesere that y haue to me kaught.

I knowe no ricches in this world beyng  
Which may content to lessen my grevaunce  
But it be what that haue ye well demyng,  
Mi verrry ioy and sovl remembraunce,  
But Daunger hath banysshid myn affyaunce  
And me from yow, that now y serue of naught,  
Which hath be tane out of my gouernaunce  
The small plesere that y haue to me kaught.

Not hit as small, forwhi hit suffisyng  
Is vnto me in hauyng esperaunce,  
Forto rescuyue in aftir tyme comyng

675–78 what joy or pleasure I have had in your service before now (this is no lie): never yet had I power to gather even one single pleasure to content myself with  
680 “hit” is in apposition to “plesere,” in the next line.  
683–84 that can suffice unless it is that which you certainly have an inkling of  
[but I will not mention]  
687–88 ... so that now I am useless, by which [action] has been taken [i.e., he has taken] out of my guardianship  
690–93 It [the pleasure] is not small, for it suffices me by giving me hope of receiving in the future a great abundance of happiness.
Vnto my weele so gret an habundaunce.
I trust it shall not fayle, bi such penaunce
That y woll take for Daunger threat abaf,
Which woll enrique me lo well more þen Fraunce,
The small plesere that y haue to me caft.

O fayre, sumwhat vnto myn allegeaunce
As thynkith now (hit doth me aturbaunce)
When ye se tyme; hit ned yow not ben taft
(Withouten yow to lede is displesaunce)
The small plesere that y haue to me caft.

His ioyous tyme, this fresshe cesoun of May
When Florra shewith of flowris abundaunce
That eche ennoy ought to ben layde away
And forto take all gladsum lo plesaunce,
I fynde my silf withouten recoueraunce,
Most out of way oon ioy forto conquere.
Eche thought and care so doth myn hert forfelle
That y haue (well y may avaunte and swere!)
The contrary of all my wrecchid wille.

O Loue, alas! not se y lo this day
Oon wight but that he hath sum suffisaunce—
Saue y—in loue, which am (O welaway!)
The most woofful caytijf lo of Fraunce
That faylid haue of all myn esperaunce,
For when y gaf, in all y had power,
Mi silf only yowre seruice to fulfille,

694-97 I trust that it [hope] will not fai me, through the pain I receive in defeating Daunger
698-702 O fair one, now consider [giving me] some relief (it [the misery that Daunger gives me] causes me distress) when you deem it time; you do not need to be taught ([you know that] to live without you is unhappiness) the little pleasure I have obtained
705-6 when every kind of suffering ought to be laid aside [in order] to take up all kinds of delightful pleasure ... “And” is redundant.
708 most far from winning even a single joy
FORTUNES STABILNES

I had not went haue founde bi no manere
The contrary of all my wrecchid wille.  

But what, syn hit is this to that y day,
I bere shall, as y kan, my greet penaunce
Forth in my trouthe (what may y betir say?),
For in my trouthe is all myn affyaunce
Maugre Daunger and all hir allyaunce;
For ther nys greef that shall me do forbere
Though that Disdayne thus evyr war me stille
She shall not cause me do this, nave y fere:
The contrary of all my wrecchid wille.

Without comfort havyng in anywhere,
Thus wayle y loo that myght as well be stille,
For me so nygh is brought—it may no nerre—
The contrary of all my wrecchid wille.

Ch. 34, B XVII

\[D\]

Isplesere, Thought, Wrath, Woo, ne Hevynes,
Nor Turment noon that kan to me abounde,
Ne yet for dowte to dyen in distres—
Power haue ye noon—all haue ye me prisounde—
Mi feithfull wille to chaunge in any stounde,
That y haue tane to serue and evir shall,
Thorugh which y thynke ther shall to me rebound
The grettist good that may to me bifalle.

\[F\]

For when so is ye greue me, yet, dowtles,
Hope saith, "Endure it forth and be iocound!"
Bihetyng me my lady and maystres
Shall witen of the woo me doth forwound
Not long to come, gyf so y pursew round,

719 I had not thought to have found . . .
737–39 you have no power . . . to change my faithful will, . . . that I have chosen to serve [the lady] . . .
744–46 Assuring me that my lady and mistress shall know very soon of the woe that wounds me terribly . . .
All nys that Payne but that y haue him all,
But y truste wyn, to make me hool and sound,
The grettist good that may to me benfalle.

Ne sparith, hardily! do me youre rewdenes!
Shewe what ye kan! y haue yow all pardonyd,
For sone y hope of Comfort and Gladnes,
Syn shame hit were for trouthe me to confound.
Thus with "No forse!" my care y cast to ground,
Which y endewre for my fayre lady small,
But welle benwaylyd <will they> when is found
The grettist good that may to me benfall.

Thus am y he whos hurt in blak is gownik;
Yet thorough myn trouth Good Hope y to me calle
That in short tyme this shall be me gardownnid:
The grettist good that may to me benfalle.

Ost goodly yong, O plesaunt debonayre,
Yowre sendyng which me gaf comaundement
A balad forto make, ye speke so fayre
That with glad hert y shew here myn entent;
Resceyvith hit as hit is to yow ment.
Ye mow well se, if ye lust to bihold,
The greef that doth my swelty hert forrent,
As bi the mowth y lever had yow told.

Yowre goodlyhed, hit doth me to repayre
To be youre man in what God hath me lent,

747-48 although there is no pain but that I suffer them all [i.e., all those pains named at the beginning of the poem], but I hope to gain . . .
750 Spoken to the personifications named in the first line.
752 for soon I hope for Comfort and Happiness, since it would be a shame to harm me in exchange for my loyalty
756 but they will complain bitterly when [I] have found
758 Thus I am he whose heart is garbed in black
763-64 . . . you address [me] so courteously [in] your missive which commanded me to compose a ballade
Desiryng most, of alle lyvith vndir ayre,
Yow forto serue; but what, the gret turment
That y endewe syn that y am absent!
And eek to write me noyeth dowble fold,
For gyf y myght bi othir wey or went,
As bi the mowth y leyvr had yow told.

Suche is Daungere, my crewell aduersayre
That of long tyme hath me in armes hent,
In euery deede so fynde y him contrayre,
That he ys glad to se m[e] thys Forschente.
More to <reherse> hit were but laboure spent;
What greef y lede and haue of dayes old
Hit axith space, wherfore, if ye assent,
As bi the mowthe y leyvr had yow told.

Go, rewdisse bel, complayne my ponysshement,
But, welaway! y wolde if that y shulde
—For forgetyng to knowe my iugement—
As bi the mowthe y leyvr had yow told.

Hen y last partid fro myn hertis swete,
Whiche rewlith me in woo or hopis glad
(Whom Ihesu saue and graunt hir sone to wete
As ioy of all her faith[fulle] thoughtis sad),
Whiche y lete bere the pouer hert y had
Away, and neuyr sy syn of hit blynke,
That nyght or day hit wondir doth me thynke
How y haue leyd this many yere agoo

772 desiring most, of all (who) live,
779 Who for a long time . . .
782–85 To enumerate [my troubles, i.e., in this letter] further is a waste of time; the misery I suffer and have for a long time requires time, wherefore, if you were to assent, I would rather tell [them to] you in person
787–88 . . . I would have if I could have—because you might forget my fate—because I would rather have told you by mouth.
795–96 . . . and never caught so much as a glimpse of it since, so that it seems to me continually to be a miracle
Without an hert, sechyng my pittis brynke;  
Hit nys but evene of Loue myracle lo!

Who ist may lyue or longe goon on his feet  
Without an hert, as y my lijf haue lad?  
Now, certis, noon (that dar y yow bihet!)  
In such turment as y haue ben bistad!  
But Loue wold haue his power knowen or rad,  
Sum tyme in lengthe or sumtyme in a prynke,  
To cause good will in louers hertis synke.  
Him forto trust, what nede ye wordis moo?  
They mowe perceyue whiche tastid haue his drynke;  
Hit nys but even of Loue myracle lo.

Whan Pite sawe how freely that y lette  
Myn hert bandoun, Mercy my lady rad  
To rewe me, wreche, al were y no thing mette,  
And leue hir hert with me (syn myn y nad)  
So for myn owen, me chargeyng all, and bad  
Hit forto kepe, which (where y wake or wynke)  
So shall y do, though tornys sesse or synke  
That y thorugh Daunger haue, my crewell foo;  
But how y lyue and in such sorow swynke,  
Hit nys but even of Loue myracle, lo!

What nede y more my papir spende or enke?  
Who hath assayde wot where it be soo,  
For gyf y iuge who leffe in such a shenke,  
Hit nys but even of Loue myracle lo.

Ch. 38, B XX

798 seeking the brink of my grave  
806 In order to cause good will to sink into lovers’ hearts  
810–14 When Pity saw how freely I let my heart give himself up, Mercy advised my lady to have pity on me ... although I was not at all worthy, and to leave her heart with me ... in exchange thus for my own, entrusting [it] entirely to me, and bade [me]  
816–17 even though the tricks ?cease that I suffer at the hand of Daunger ... [see note]  
822 for if I consider who lives in such an awful state
Onure and prays as mot to him habound
That first did fynde the wayes of wrytyng,
For comfort gret ordeynyd he that stounde
To suche as haue of louys Payne felyng,
For when to speke they naue tyme nor metyng
To say ther ladies of ther aduersite,
Yet doth it them a gret tranquilylite
What grevous lijf they lede, as semeth me,
Only for loue and feithfull trewe servyng.

Who so that write how he is wrappid & wounde
In suche greef as kan kepe him from laughyng,
And so may sende it to his lady round,
Which is the leche to all his soore felyng,
If then to rede hit be to her plesyng,
She may right well therin perceyue and se
What woofull gouernaunce endewrith he,
Of whiche Pite may geue hir, hit mevyng,
That his desert is reward of mercy,
Only for loue and feithfull trewe servyng.

That hit is thus in myn hert haue y found
And knowe the craft, for when he tath sekyng
Nothyng kan him appese vpon the ground
To he haue send or made sum endityng
On the fayre which is his most likyng,
Of which, if so that his fortune be
To haue a response, of hir gret bounte,
He tath therin so huge a reioysyng
That forget is he had on his party
Only for loue and feithfull trewe servyng.

841-42 on account of which [perception] Pity may prompt her, if the letter moves her, [to decide] that what he deserves is . . .
845 and [I] know the art [of writing love letters], for when my heart takes to sighing
852 that forgotten is [what] he had for his share [i.e., suffering]
But what, madame, Crist ewre me so that ye
May vndirstonde as bi my mouth telyng
What y haue dewrid in tymys quantite
Only for loue and feithfull trewe servyng.
Ch. 39, B XXI

All be that of my fare or sely case
I gesse ye take full litill remembraunce,
Yet if to wite hit lust yowre good grace
My poore estat and nakid gouernaunce,
As wite ye well that ferre from all plesaunce
Am y and garnysshid with aduersite
As moche—nay, more—than eny wreche of Fraunce,
God wot in what aforecursid parte.

Allas! and yet ne haue y doon trespace
Wherthorugh y ought to beren such penaunce,
Forwhi my draught hath ben in euery place
As to my trouthe in my derk esperaunce
To purchase me good will, but variaunce
Of Hope y fynde at my necessite,
Which levith me clene withouten rekeueraunce,
God wot in what aforecursid parte.

daunger hath pleyd a draught tofore my face,
But and y may rekeuyr <my> puysshaunce,
In spite of him, y trvst forto abrace
As in his stide anothir allyaunce,
Forto ayelde his wrongfull doon grevaunce
Of Thought and Woo that this wolde slene me,
Albe y brought as now at the vttraunce,
God wot in what aforecursid parte.

868–71 for I have moved all over the board, in my gloomy hope, in order to gain for myself [your] good will in exchange for my loyalty, but in my hour of need I find Hope inconstant
875–76 but if I may recover ... I hope to embrace ...
879–80 [at the hands] of Misery and Woe who thus want to slay me, though I now be vanquished completely
now or nevir make sum ordenaunce
And me avenge, my verrv sovl fyauce
(I mene but yow, my maystres and lady)
[Which ha]n with Daunger falyn at distansce
God wot in what aforecursid party!

Ch. 40, B XXII

Royall Hope, to long y se the slepe!
Awake! and in sum ioyous thought arise,
And sum plesaunt remembrauence to kepe
Send to myn hert (fro whom? shall y devise?
The fayrist borne, as Loos now gevith prise!);
Hem to reioyse thou did but well indede,
For Woo of weele hath raught him pe franshise,
Wherfore (alak!) now faylith him not at nede.

Of plesser Daunger hathe hym pot to wepe
Syn that he now is fer in such a wise
That he may not his worldly ricches grepe,
Which lady is of his hy enterprisse.
O, what hert hath suche destene as lyse
In him? O Hope, come socoure him! O spede
Thee now! he hath thee callid more then twyse,
Wherfore (alak!) now faylith him not at nede!

For pouerte, abeggyng muste he crepe
Where louers dwelle, but what for, krost off peyes?
Nay, for gladnes, which fawte of doth him drepe.
So parte almes to poore that for hit cryes!
O helpe, lete not ourse selynes arise!
Thenke on the poore, and with yowre almes fede!
Without yowre grace, he ellis for sorow dyes,
Wherfore, alak, now faylith him not at nede!

892 you would do well indeed to please him
895–98 Daunger has put him from pleasure to weeping, since he [my heart] is so far away [from my lady] that he can not obtain his earthly riches, [i.e.,] the lady [which is the object] of his noble endeavor [see note]
906–7 So give alms to the poor [one] who cries for them! O, help, let not our [heart and lover] misery increase!
O ye which bere the prays of all partise,
In whom all vertu hath a grete entryse,
Myn hert which hath, saue yow, noon opir crede,
Helpe him from helle; brynge him to paradise,
And now, allak, ne faylyth him not at nede!

Ch. 41, B XXIII

In louers paradise as them among,
Not long to come, myn hert shall haue a place,
And ellis, a trouthe, me thynkith he had wrong,
Considerynge this: the grevous grete has
—Not on or twayne, they passe a thousand bras!—
In servyng of his fayre and swete mastres,
Which daungere hath in hold, alas! alas!
Only to spel me this in heuynes.

And so hath holde (O welaway!) to longe
Mi poore hert this cursed, trayter face.
But what, Good Hope as bit me comfort fonge,
And saith he wolle outplegge him in short space;
But, woo is me, he spete so slow a pace!
O Ihesu graunt he holde me his promes,
For Sorowe doth eche membir me arase
Only to spel me this in heuynes.

O Loue, grete almes myght thou vndirfonge
As to ben pitous on this sely case,
For to alle suche it wolde example honge
That listith wel as in thi servyce trace
When they parceyue how hit lust the of grace
So poore a sufferant <ayde> of thyn humbles
Which ondert Deth doth this manace
Only to spel me this in hevynes.

919 Considering this: the great griefs he has
923 Only to slay me thus with misery.
924–25 And so this cursed, traitorous one has held . . . my poor heart too long
933–35 for taking pity on this (my) miserable case, for it would present an
eample to all those who wish to serve you
938 Whom, undeserved, Death thus threatens
Thou-wotist-what, to sett me in gladnes
Or, Antropos, thou brest my lyvis lase
Only to spel me this in heuynes.

Ch. 42, B XXIV

Stedfast Trouthe, displaye thi baner!
Support my right, y pray the hertily,
And fresshe assayle this newe and strong Fronter
Of Thought and Woo that this on why
(O welaway!) hath holde felonsly
The litill Ioy y had, for prisonere,
So that to me they make him a straungere—
I biseche God acursid mote they dey!

When that y ought bere forth a gladsom chere
In placis straunge or ellis in company
Not kan y shewe but who seith a manere,
For though my mouth outshewe a laughtir dry
Or speke a sportfull word, yet verily
Distres and Daunger, with Payne in fere,
Abak they thristen my poore Plesere.
I biseche God, acursid mote they dy!

In cherte, allas, who had ther her,
Or made of Ioy, me thynke, so moche as y?
Wherfore of right (as Resoun doth me lere)
Yet at the lest y ought haue sum party,
But in baneshe as now thus doth he ly
Ferre fro myn hert as bi the false conspere
Of gery Fortune and Woo, hir counselere.
I biseche God acursid mote they dy!

But and y had as of hem the maystry
(As wolde God the terme that hit were ny!),

947–48 ... who thus wrongfully ... have held wickedly
954 I can display only a counterfeit [of good cheer]
960–61 Allas, who here held dear or made of Joy ... as much as I?
I shulde not mysse to brynge hem to ther bere,
For which alwey that this is my prayere:
I biseche God, acursid mote they dy!
Ch. 42, B XXV

Rennyng Desire to see my fayre maystres
Hath newe assaylid the nakid, pore loggyng
Of my faynt hert, which dreipth in distres,
That in eche where within his fyre brennyng
Hath he so sett that in a gret feryng
Stande y, god wot, lest hit woll not ben queynt
Without thi grace. “O God of Loue,” y cry,
“Helpe now myn hert, pat many helpe hast sent!”
—Thus calle y for yowre socoure pitously.

But what if so y spille thorugh yowre lacches?
I yow biseche but this vnsely thyng:
That ech of yow do synge for me a messe,
And sone in Paradice haue y trustyng
Among louers to se myn hert sittyng
As a gret seynt and martir, for turment
Hath he <evene> for his trouth and al onewhi,
For which as now in this grevous talent
Thus calle y for yowre socoure pitously.

976–77 So that everywhere inside [my heart] he has so set his fire burning that I stand in great fear
996–97 . . . for he suffers torment for his loyalty and that entirely unjustly
What nede y spende more enke or parchment,
That fele the crampe of deth myn hert so nyghe
As thorugh this rageous fyre which hath me hent?
Thus calle y for youre socoure pitously.

Ch. 44, B XXVI

Yn hert hath sent abowt, ye, fer and nere,
For his welwilleris, frendis, and allyes,
As wherefor? whi, ther advise to here,
To haue counsell of grete thingis which hat lyes
On him, as this: how he may his enemyes,
As Thought and Woo with ther cursid allyaunce,
Best discomfit (that moyan wold he lere),
Which willith to distroy his joyful chere
As in the Prison of Grevous Displesaunce.

For in desert they putt haue his Plesere,
And Ioye he holt of them but in patise
Saue Comfort cometh to se him in a gere
And makith him a maner of promysse
Them to banysshe. Lo in this maner wise
Hope hath him oft achasid Disperaunce
Which kepith Ioy fro me as a straungere,
That causith this: my hertis rage martere
As in the Prison of Grevous Displesaunce.

Myghti God, y humbly thee requere
That y may se the tyme sone to arise
That euery man may to his desere
Without safcondit seche ther entirprise,
And then may Loue, if so he werken wise,
Of Daungere take but right a small douteance;
Then wold myn hert and y bothe laughe in fere
Which now in sighis doth him silf atere
As in the Prison of Grevous Displesaunce.

1014 ... according to the terms of a bargain [see note]
1018 Hope has repeatedly chased away Despair [from] him [the heart]
1029 Who [my heart] now wears himself out with sighs
Syn Absence thus me holt & from yow tiise  
Mi hert complayneth that ye myght agrise  
Hem forto here, myn owen sov suffisaunce,  
Me praiyng this to write yow, lady dere:  
That he hath not all that he wolde desere  
As in the Prisoun of Grevous Displeasaunce.  
Ch. 45, B XXVII

O<ff howe,> myn hert! the schepe off Freche Teydyng  
Hope hath afresht with lusty Recomfort  
To cary to the fayrist borne lyving,  
Which is myn hertis lady and cheef resort,  
And if he may attayne the ioyfull port  
(In self passage, y mene, to his desere),  
The See of Fortune playn to his plesere,  
A ioly wynd als blowyng into Fraunce  
Where now abidyng is my sovl maystres  
Which is the swete of all my remembraunce  
And hool tresoure of my worldly gladnes.

Now certis y moche am to hir biholdyng  
Forwhi y knowe bi verry trewe report  
That ayenst Daunger, which of yvill willyng  
Full longe on why hath doon me discomfort,  
That she hath tane thee, hert, as in support  
To helpe in all she kan—this out of were  
Y stonde—for which y haue with ioyfull chere  
Sende hir this shippe fullillid of plesaunce,  
For only cawse to stuffe with the fortres  
Wherin thow <dost> kepe <thy> affyaunce  
And hool tresoure of my worldly gladnes.

1039 to carry to the fairest born of those who are are now living  
1042–43 (in safe passage, ... according to his desire), the Sea of Fortune being smooth ... “And” in line 1041 is redundant.  
1051 ... has caused me to be defeated wrongfully  
1052 “That” repeats “that” of 1050.  
1055–56 sent her this ship filled with pleasure, in order to supply the stronghold
FORTUNES STABILNES

Therefore to Deth make carfull departyng,
Bothe thow and y we wol off on acort,
To holde with Trouthe oure poore lijf lestyng
Ageyn Disseyt and all his false assort,
And often this, vnto oure gret comfort,
Remembryng, how be we ferre or nere,
For to athanke, aftir <oure> rewde manere,
Loue which hath sett vs in such aqueyntaunce
Of oon so kynde and feithfull trewe pryncesse,
Which hath bothe me and <thow> in gouernaunce
And hool tresoure of my worldly gladnes.

Now Ihesu saue this shippe, not for oon yere
But many one, ageyne the false conspere
Of suche as haue with Daunger allyaunce,
Which wolde of thefte and ther gret rewdenes
Birobbe me loo of all my goodly chaunce
And hool tresoure of my worldly gladnes.

Ch. 47, B XXVIII

Ot> drede y Daungere nor yet noon of his,
Forwhi y haue agarnesshe þe fortres
Where myn hert hath rescyvid the goodis
Of Recomfort and passyng gret Gladnes,
Of which that Trouthe hath tane þe gouernes
This place to kepe full sewrely out of drede.
Daunger defye y, and his gret rewdenes,
For God of Loue woll helpe me in my nede.

For Resoun noon but in my side ther nys
And as for Hope hath made me a promys
To be my frend (as he hath ben or this)
That often has, bi force of his prowes,
Made fro me flee bothe Sorowe and Distres

1059–60 Wherefore till Death part us, sorrowful, both you and I wish of one accord
1073 who would like, stealthily and cruelly, (to)
1084 there is no reason except on my side [i.e., none on Daunger's side]
Which oft so hath done Daungere sorow lede;
But not ne recche y of his heuynes,
For God of Loue woll helpe me in my nede.

Wherfore y the requere, in all that is
In me, myn hert, to take the <hardinesse>
And renne on Daungere, whiche bat fele grevis
Hath to vs doon; forthenke thou neuyrles
But also sone as thou wolt take redres
A wol hem yelde—this is as trewe as crede—
And y shall do my part without lacches,
For God of Loue woll helpe me in my nede.

If so ye lust vs ayde, goodly princesse,
Sone trust y see the tyme (so god me spede)
To haue of blys a passyng fayre largesse,
For God of Loue woll helpe me in my nede.

Ch. 48, B XXIX

Fayre, y wot ye haue in remembraunce
(Withouten fayle, this trust y in certayne)
Of the most plesaunt allyaunce
That God of Loue hath made bitwene vs twayne.
His secretary, callid Promys Playne,
The self tyme wrote the lettir of trete
And aftir took it Trouthe (as knowith ye),
Which shall accord youre deedis bope in fere
If so that tyme or nede hit lust requere.

Gladsum Desire was present, and Plesaunce,
Which that tyme koude full yvill þer speche refrayne
But gan to make full bisy ordenaunce,
I mene vnto the God of Loue souerayne
As by his lawe to bynde, for wele or payne,

1095... do not change your purpose in the least
1110-11 And afterwards Trouthe took it, ... who will record your [copies of the legal] documents all together
1114 Who could be still only with great difficulty then
Oure weelis twayne to stonde in more surete
As for oon weele; wherfore as semeth me
I ought hit well bithynke (it sett me nere!)
If so that tyme or nede hit lust requere.

Myn hert hath, saue him sif, noon affyaunce
Which he dare trust to kepe his dede from rayne,
And certis y enyoy [t]his happy chaunce:
To thynke his trouthe, for which y thys agayne
Him counsell so to kepe him and refrayne
From all maner frawde and <flatere>,
For who that frawde, is hit he or she,
The God of Loue woll make him bye hit dere
If so that tyme or nede hit lust requere.

What y haue seid, madame, take hit in gree.
For whi myn hert, as for a more sewrete,
Shall say hit yow more playne to yowre plesere
If so that tyme or nede hit lust requere.

Ch. 49, B XXX

Come to me, sum Gladsum Tidyng newe,
My faynty hert to comfort in distres!
Say me how farith the Goodly Fayre and Trewe?
Herdist thou hir speke of me oft—moch or lesse?—
Me callyng “loue” of hir gret gentilesse?
Hath she forgete? O nay, bi God aboue!
I trust as that she made me of promys
When she me gafe this name, as loo, “My loue.”

Though absence holde me fro my service dewe
And dowte of Daunger doth me heuynes,
So moche goodnes knowe y hir doth pursewe

1118–19 (to bind) our two wills to act more securely as one will . . .
1124–25 I enjoy this pleasant (good) fortune: to think on his loyalty . . .
1128 for whichever of two people deceives the other
1141 I trust that which she promised me [I trust that of which she made me (a) promise]
That y kan neuyr this bithynke, dowtles,  
But she will holde (the verry trewe prynces!)  
The promys which was made to my bihoue,  
Knyttyng so oure hondis to witnes  
When she me gafe this name: (as lo) “My loue.”

Me thynkith gret pite were hit, bi Ihesu,  
If that a lady of so gret nobles  
Shulde do hir silf refuse the coloure blew,  
Which hewe in loue is callid “stedfastnes.”  
She may perceyue, bi good avisynes,  
Whi y so rudely out my wordis shoue,  
And als what Loue vs causid swere, y gesse,  
When sche me gaf this name, as lo, “My loue.”

Go belle, for trouthe, ensewre þou my maystres  
That y am hiris in all maner prove  
As she comaundid me, to my gladnes,  
When she me gafe this name: (as lo) “My loue.”

Ch. 50, B XXXI

Ost goodly fayre, as lust hit yow to here  
As in what wise y kepe, in gret cherte,  
Yowre hert which ye bileft me, lady dere,  
As of yowre grace and benygne gret bounte,  
This wot ye well: hit wrappid is, parde,  
Hool in a plesaunt kercher of Plesaunce  
And so is closid for a more sewrete  
As in the Cofir of my remembraunce.

And hit to kepe in more clenly manere,  
Oft wasshe y hit, when ye thynke lite on me,  
As in the teeris of Pitevous Thought and Chere  
In wishyng for the sight of yowre bewte,  
And so without dilay (as well ye see)  
I drye hit by the fyre of Esperaunce  
And eft repot hit when hit folden be  
As in the Cofir of my remembraunce.

1147 But that she will keep ...
FORTUNES STABILNES

So quyntith yow, if hit be yowre plesere,
To my poore hert, which y haue geue yow fre. 1180
In my most humbl wise y yow requere
To kepe in trouthe—how? in an holow tre?
Nay, vndir kay of Faithfull Volunte
As y haue yowris doon, to my puysshaunce,
Thus kepe and shall in absent yow, lade,
Within the Cofir of my remembraunce.

This shewe y yow (how? thenke ye hit foile?)
As of yowre hert, madame, the gouernaunce
Which shett is, in ioy or aduersite,
Within the Cofre of my remembraunce.

Ch. 51, B XXXII

Lover:] Yn hert, if so that y good tidyng here,
To telle hit thee, what woll þou geue me? Say!

Heart:] They mowe be suche þat y wolde bye hem dere;
They mowe ben suche y sett not by an ay.

1194

L:] As for reward, thou shalt but litill pay.
H:] Then say hem me, y pray the hertily,
For hit to wite y haue gret appetite.

L:] Hit is as that thi maystres and lady
That faithfully she doth hir silf aqyte.

H:] What kanst thou say then of my lady dere
That of Comfort myght sette me in þe wey?
L:] I say theþis, so beth of right good chere:
That she hath tane the see as yestirday.

H:] But saist thou trouthe, or dost þou mokke & play?
L:] I say the[e] soth, bi god, what nede y lye?

1179-80 So do your duty ... to my poor heart [i.e., treat my heart as well as I have treated yours] ...
1184–85 as y have [kept], now keep, and shall keep yours, to the best of my ability, in your absence, my lady
1188 the way I keep your heart, madame
1194 they may be such [that] I don't care an egg (a whit) for [them]
1198 “That” repeats “that” of previous line.
1201 that might give me the opportunity [to obtain] Comfort?
And saith hit is but thee forto visite.

[H:]  O Loue, as lo, y thanke the[e] humbly
That faithfully she doth hir sylf aquyte!

[L:]  What myght she more for þee don, wold y lere,
Then put hir sylf in such a Payne and fray?

[H:]  For Trouthe hit is that strengthith my matere,
Which causith hir so doon, this is no nay.

[L:]  Then thenke thou this, to loue hir wel alway?

[H:]  So shall y lo vnto that howre y dy
Withouten chaunge, and that y the[e] biyte.

[L:]  Wel ought the sweete ben praysid hardly
That faithfully she doth hir sylf aquyte.

[H:]  Gramercy, frend, y thanke the[e] verily;
Now take my good and leue me not a myte!

[L:]  I nolde but say, when y kisse swetely,
That faithfully she doth hir sylf aquyte.

Ch. 52, B XXXIII

Ow, how, myn hert! opyn þe gate of Thought
And rescyue into thee a swete present
The which my bestbilouyd hath to thee brought!
Caste now aside thi full greef and turment
And bere the ioyfull. Whi? to myn entent
Thou oughtist well to take a gret gladnes
That fyndist hir withouten chaungement
As euyrmore a faithfull kynde maystres.

Full well to blesse, me thenke, þe tyme þu oft
And Fortune which hath the such vre ysent,
That in hir grace thou thus art sett aloft
Without fayntise in sechyng way or went;

1211–12 It is Loyalty that strengthens my undertaking, which causes her to do this, without a doubt ("For" is redundant.)
1220 I do not want anything [i.e., your goods] but to say, . . .
1230–33 You ought very much to thank . . . the time and Fortune, who have sent you such luck, that you are elevated in her grace without delay in seeking way or path [to your goal, i.e., the lady]
Thou mayst perceyue, all were thyn eyen blent,
For whi to thee she holdith hir promys
(Of which the preef ay shewith dissent)
As euymore a feithfull kynde maystres.

Hir to honoure, so loke thou fayle hir nought,
Withouten chaunge to kepe thi fresshe talent
As longe as that thi liif is to the wrought,
Out ellis where choys or yet departement;
For sest thou not what is, thorous hir, þe lent—
Of euery weele so onyly gret gladnes?
This forto see, inyoy thi seson spent
As euymore a feithfull kynde maystres.

A thousand thankis in myn hert is prent
To thanke yow with, my verrv sovl princesse,
Forwhi y fynde that ye are to me bent
As euymore a feithfull kynde maystres.

Ch. 53, B XXXIV

Within the tresoure haue y of my thought
A myrroure which y bought but late, parde,
Of God of Loue (as when forgete y nought—
This yere apast!) which solde it of bounte
To me, wherin ay se y the bewte
Of hir that ought ben callid wel trewly
The most fayrist bitwene this and Europe.
Gret good, god wott, hit doth me in to prye
In abidyng my gladsom in good hope.
Ther nys likyng sett me so hye aloft
Nor which y ought to take in such cherte
For in the paynfull destene was me wrought
Fuloften tyme hit recomforntid me,
That in myn hert nys ioy in no degre
More then biholde how she is ingoodly,
With gladsom eyen levting no poynt aslope.
This is the bayte y bayte on, wot ye whi,
In abidyng my gladsom in good hope.

Me thenkith eche day syn y my myrrour bought
As in hit to biholde, where so y be,
That every woo therwith is fro me brought,
Wherfore in my good weele this am y he
Bi Trouthis counsell and my fantase
Shall rolle it vp to kepe it more clenly
(To eftsone that me lust as for hit grope)
In tresoure of my thought to kepe it drye
In abidyng my gladsom in good hope.

Moare riche of weele was neuyr noon then y,
(All though my good resemble vnto Iope);
My myrroure hit shall riche me to y dy
In abidyng my gladsom in good hope.

Ch. 54, B XXXV

A Lak! y kan yowthir loue nor <may>,
Madame, so moche as pat y wold trewly,
Forwhi ye wrot to me to putt away
The greef and payne that doth me sore ennoy.
Mi weele, my ioy, myn hertis sovl lady,

1259 There is no image that makes me feel so exalted
1263–65 so that there is not joy in my heart any greater than to contemplate her beauty, with smiling eyes (not at all slanting)
1268–71 Every day since I bought my mirror, it pleases me to look in it, wherever I am, so that every woe is thereby taken from me, for which reason . . . I am thus he [who]
1278 (although my reward resembles Job's)
Tesse ye, ye, ye, swet hert, bi God almyght,  
I mene! So pray y yow, ben glad and light.  
In trust that y shall se yow hastily.

Ye perse myn hert with wordis whiche ye say  
That y ne kan—thei thrillen so swetely—  
Telle yow the comfort that they doth me ay  
(Which yowre message hath shewid me priuyl),  
For this ye say: ye woll seke weyes ny  
To come to me, that this y yow bighht:  
I well no more my fayntid gost to myght  
In trust that y shall se yow hastily.

<Als> where ye say ye wisshe eche othir day  
To ben with me, "O welaway!" y cry.  
O fayrist swete withouten pere, nay, nay!  
For, if to speke y durste ben so hardy,  
That more desire, and oft don, am hit y  
With woundy hert to wisshe aftir yowre sight  
Which is the thyng y most wille day or nyght,  
In trust that y shall se yow hastily.

That ye are woo, allass, hit doth me dy  
But even as sone as y may, ladi bright,  
I shall yow see, haue here my trouthe yplight,  
In trust that y shall se yow hastily.

Ch. 55, B XXXVI

B  
Vt late agoo went y my hert to se  
As of his fare to haue sum knowlechyng;  
I fond him sett with Hope in compane,

1286–87 it is you ... I mean!  
1290–91 so that I can not ... tell you ...  
1292 (which your messenger ...  
1293–94 ... you will seek immediate means to come to me ...  
1295 I do not desire to strengthen my wearied spirit any further  
1301–2 I am the one, with wounded heart, who desires (and so I ought) the sight of you more [than you do the sight of me]
That to him seide these wordis confortyng,
"O hert, be glad, for y good tidyng brynge!
So now, let se, pluk vp thi lustyhed,
Forwhi y make the[e] feithfull trewe promys
That y thee kepe right sewrely out of drede
The hool tresoure of louys gret ricches,

"fOr this as trouthe, to wite, as do y thee,
That the most fayrist borne, or is lyvyng,
She loueth thee of feithfull fantase,
And with good wille woll doon to thi likyng,
In all to doon that is to hir sittyng,
And these wordis sent thee of goodlihed:
That spite of Daungere or his gret rewdenes
She wol departe thee large, maugre ther hed,
The hool tresoure of louys gret ricches."

fOr which my hert (to say the trouthe, parde)
For ioy hath fett a thousand sithe sikyng,
And, thow to weren blak were vsid he,
Yet was it then yputt in forgetyng
And all his woo, his payne and turmentyng,
In trust to fynde it now, or he be ded,
Bothe plesere, comfort, and gladnes
And only in his gouernaunce to lede
The hool tresoure of louys gret ricches.

My sabill hert with hope now blusshith reed
And for comfort of yow, my fayre maystres,
Which haue me promysid of youre womanhed
The hool tresoure of louys gret ricches.

Ch. 56, B XXXVII

1312 who [Hope] said to my heart these comforting words
1316 that I (will) keep for you ... 
1318 For I am letting you know this as the truth
1322 "to doon" repeats "doon" in the previous line.
1329 and, though he customarily dressed in black
1334 and to have in his care alone. "to lede" parallels "to fynde" (1332)
1336-37 My black [mourning] heart blushes with hope from the comfort you
[have sent] ... "And" is redundant.
Swete Thought, y neuyr in no wise
Deserven may the good þou dost me lo
For when Woo wolde my carfull hert agrise
Thorugh Fortune (now my frend and now my fo)
Yet when so be as that it lust thee soo
To doon me thynke vpon my fayre maystres
Anoon Displesere, Woo, and Heuynes
They flee fro me. They dar not onys abide!
But and they fynde me from thi company,
In greef and Payne welnygh they do me dy
To that ye lust me newe comfort provide.

The ioy y haue als kan y not devise
Ageyn when y bithenke, wher so y go,
The goodlynes that in my lady lise—
Hir havour eek (for noo[n] nedteche hir, noo!).
Thus prayse y hir, not sovl but many moo,
For who hir knowith to preyse hir hath gladnes.
Wherfore, Swete Thought, to brynge me from distres
Sum newe remembraunce do in me slide
As sone as that ye se a tyme goodly,
For whi not ellis me lengtith lijf trewly
To that ye lust <me> newe comfort prouyde.

Then woll Loue doon myn hope forto arise
And so thorugh yow lessen shall my woo
For as bi yow Loue sent me his avise
Forto ben glad and light as any roo
And saith at nede ye shall not goo me froo,
Thus only loo y truste on his promys,
Syn y bi yow rekouer the larges

1342 The "when" clauses of 1342 and 1344 (both being necessary components) are resolved by the "then" (unexpressed) clause of 1346-47, where "they" (1347) repeats the names of the three enemies mentioned in 1346.
1355 ... not [I] alone, but many others [as well]
1358 cause some new thought to steal into my mind
1360 because nothing else lengthens my life ...
1366–67 I.e., only when he tells me that you will always be with me do I trust his promise
Of good of Loue, for which y say in pride
That neythir Daunger, Woo, nor Tyranny
Y drede right nought, but hir y them defy
To that ye lust me newe comfort provide.

Goodly yong, O nobill, good princesse,
Syn y ne may as se yow, neuyrtheles
My wriyng shall, so Ihesu ben his gide,
And grauntmercy and euyr gramercy,
When that ye lust me newe comfort prouyde.

Ch. 58, B XXXVIII

Y koude make my wanton wisshis flee
And the sighis that maken me so wan
Shulde y hem sende (but what hit wol not be!)
Ovyr the fomy wawis oxyan
To her hous, y seruaunt am and man,
Which y most loue of any creature
As only this, my worldly lo gladnes
Which that y holde in this poore lijf y dewre
As for my souereyn lady and maystres.

Allas, how is hit? shall y hir neuyr see?
O Swete Thought, so say me if thou kan!
Hope hath bihight—ye! ye! ye! but he
To longe doth me endure the greef y han,
And oft for sight when y come axe him whan
In sluggish slepe y fynde him (be ye sure).
Thus euery day renewith my distres
Without comfort (such is myn aventure)
As for my souereyne lady and maystres.

1371 do I fear at all, but here I defy them
1381-82 I would send them (except that it is not possible!) over the foamy ocean's waves
1384-85 whom I most love of any creature as my sole earthly happiness
1392 and often when I come to ask him when I shall see you
1396 because of my sovereign lady ...
To lyue in pees y kan in no degre,
Fortune on me so pleyeth the tyran,
But for a tyme y soft shall beren me
To that y haue to me more socoure tan
As thorugh my trouthe, for syn y first bigan
Bi trouthe y trust do <hir> discomfite,
For fresshe Plesaunce hath made me a fortresse
That me to loue ne lett shall <hir> rigure
As for my souereyn lady and maystres.

O goo, thou derke, fordullid, rude myture
And say for trouthe—forwhi is no lese—
That y haue chose withouten departure
As for my souereyne lady and maystres.

Ch. 59, B XXXIX

Fortune, dost thou my deth conspyre?
Onys let me pese, y pray thee hertily!
For all to longe y fynde, withouten wyre,
That thou hast had vpon me the maystry.
Whi dost thou straunge when y thi mercy cry?
Hast thou disdayne me, caytijf, forto here
That thus with payne hast brought vnto pe bere—
That how y leve so longe y mervell, how
With greef y haue endewrid many yere?
Alas, alas! and is this not ynough?

Longe in this lijf may y not dewren here
A, a, Fortune! mercy, y cry, mercy!
Of my compleynt harke pe carfull matere
And not arett my rewdishe speche mokkery,
Forwhi to iape not lustith me trewly,
Wherfore y the right humbly requere
To take fro me that thus me sett afyre:

1397 I am not able to live in peace at all
1404 so that her [Fortune's] cruelty shall not keep me from loving
1407 ...—because it is no lie—
1415-17 Do you disdain to listen to me, miserable wretch, who have brought me thus with pain unto the [my] bier—so that I marvell ...?
The greef and smert, O welaway! syn thou
Vnto the deth as hast ybrought me nere.
Allas, allas! and is this not ynough?

I may wel bere eche payne or displesere
Saue only on, which on me causith dy:
That y so longe dwelle fro my lady dere
Whom y haue chose to loue (no wondir why!),
For tyme agoon as in hir company
Lefft y myn hert, my ioy, and my desere,
That neuyr sith list come to do me chere.
Forwerry, there in no thing lo they mowe,
Thus lyue y sovl, without ioy or plesere.
Allas, allas, and is this not ynough?

To balade now y haue a fayre leysere;
All othir sport is me biraught as now
Martir am y for loue and prisonere;
Allas, allas, and is this not ynow?

Ch. 60, B XL

Ope hath me now fresshe, gladsum tidynge brou3t
Which ought to doon me comfort & likyng.
He saith that Fortune hath hir newe bithought
And tath hir silf a bettir avisyng
Forto amende in euery maner thyng
That she hath doon me in displesere falle,
So that hir wheel shall take a newe turnyng—
But Ihesu graunt that hit may sone bifalle.

Although hir greef haue welnygh deth me wrou3t,
I shall hit spare and put in forgetyng

1434-37 for some time ago I left my heart, my joy, and my desire with her, which have never since chosen to come back to cheer me up. Sick at heart [as I am], they can do nothing to help me
1447-49 and makes a better decision [i.e., changes her mind] to make amends in every way for causing me to fall into [a state of] misery
1452 Although her hostility has nearly caused my death
1453-56 “Spare,” “put,” and “graunt” (1456) are parallel; “hit” refers forward to “quarell” (1454), “wrath,” and “yvill willyng” (1455).
All my quarell in which y felt vnsoft,
Mi wrath also, and all myn yvill willyng,
Of eche wrong doon to graunt hir pardonynge,
For y may fynde to serue hir loo and shall
If so hir lust to gyue me comfortynge,
But Ihesu graunt that hit may sone bifalle.

If that of grace she sette me so aloft
And that to me she shewid so gret a thing—
That y myght wrappe within myn armes soft
The fayrist born inliche to my menyng—
No more axe y in lengthe of my lyvyng,
For then had y as my desiris alle,
Even verry hool without more wisshyng—
But Ihesu graunt that hit may sone bifalle.

O Loue, if that thou gaue a commaundyng
Vnto <Fortune> to lyft me of my fall,
Of ioy y trust to haue a rekeueryng—
But Ihesu graunt that hit may sone bifall.

Ch. 61, B XLI

Ot wot y now what wise to bere my chere,
This day of May so full of gret gladnes,
For in oon part y haue withouten were
(Thankid be God) a feithfull trewe maystres
Of eche good thewe which hath more ben larges,
And als y wott in grace of hir mercy
She doth me holde, all be y not worthi.
Oft y not then ben glad?—that wold y lere!—
And me to keppe in ioy and gret plesaunce?
3eys certis loo and Loue to thanken hir
Right humbly with all myn hool puysshaunce.

1457 for I may decide to serve her, and [in fact] I shall
1461 and if she were to show me . . .
1463 . . . in accordance with my desire—
1477–81 and also I know that she holds me in favor by [her] mercy . . . ought I
not then to be glad? . . . and keep myself in joy and great pleasantness? Yes, and
certainly (I ought) to thank Love now . . . [Both “to keppe” and “to thanken” are
parallel to “ben glad.”]
But then ageyne, as caytif and martere
I must endure so moche woo and distres
Thorugh sawt of Fortune which me doth atere
On eueri side, which is of care princesse.
Thus moche tyme of my youthe and lustynes
Doth she me spende in payne and mysere
And doth me dwelle in this aduersite—
Thys to fer forow my good lady dere
Where geder shulde y my riche esperaunce!—
Which y shall drede and loue bothe fer & nere
Right humbly with all myn hool puysshaunce.

Wherefore, May, that y thee thus requere
To pardone me of thi gret gentiles,
That y ne may as serue thee now to yere
So as y ought, for here y make promys:
Mi will is good to thee, but hevynes
So long a tyme hath this infosterid me
That eche ioy is forgote in my parte,
That y withdrawe from euery gladsom feere,
For woofull folke they doon but comberaunce.
In thought a reklewsse thus leue y and prayere
Right humbly with all myn hool puysshaunce.

Wherefore, Remembraunce, biseche y thee
This poore balade to take it my lade
As fro myn hert in eche lowly manere
Which hool is gyue vnto hir gouernaunce
And shall to that y taken haue my bere
Right humbly with all myn hool puysshaunce.

Ch. 62, B XLII
Y poore hert bicomen is hermyte
In hermytage of Thoughtfull Fantase.
For false Fortune, so full of gret dispite,
That many yere hath hatid him and me
Hath newe allied hir (this may y se),
To his gret hurt, with Payne and Heuynes
And hath him banysshid out of all gladnes,
That where to dwelle nath he o bidyng place
Saue in the carfull wode in payne to ly,
Where he contentith bide his lyvis space,
And yet y say him how it is foly.

Moche haue y spent of speche to his profite
But that to harke y trowe he is not he;
Mi wordis alle nar <worth> to him a myte;
His will is sett in suche perplexite
That lightly loo hit kan not chaungid be.
So is he gouernyd al as bi Distres,
Which ganyst his profit doth neuyr cesse
Him to avise (such counsell ist he hasel!),
That nyght and day him holdith company,
That he may not eschewe his wrecchid case,
And yet y say him how it is foly.

This as for me, y cast to leue him quyt,
Mi bestbilouyd, myn hertis sovl lade,
Without so be ye lust to him write
Sum praty word of yowre benygne bounte
Ferto alesse his gret aduersite,
Ellis hath he made a feithfull trewe promys
Ferto renounce the ioy and gret ricches
Of gladsom thought or plesere in him was—

1518 so that he has no place to dwell
1520 where he contents himself to remain for the rest of his life
1523 but he is not one to pay heed ... to what I say
1530-31 who [Distress] keeps him company night and day, so that he can not escape his miserable situation
1540 ... that was in him—
And after that vn to that howre he dye
The Abite of Discomfort on him lace,
And yet y say him how it is foly.

O fayre sance per, lo this without yowre grace
For any thyng that y kan do trewly
Mi dullid hert wol not comfort, alas,
And yet y say him how it is foly.

Ch. 64, B XLIII

A, Daunger, here y cast to thee my gloue
And thee appele, O traytoure, of tresoun
Tofore the hy and myghti God of Loue
That shall of right do me, of thee, resoun,
Forwhi thou hast full many a sesoun
On why doon me endewre gret heuynes,
That dost me dwelle thus from the good princesse
Which hath no pere (such is hir happy chaunce).
But what! alway thou holdist thyn vsaunce
To greven suche as Louys folkis be
For which y, on of them most vnworthe,
For them and me here take y this quarell:
That, carell, to dye thou shalt hit not eschewe
As thorugh myn hond, bi god, so leue me well,
Without so be thou yelde thee to ben trewe!

Whi sittist thou so hye in pride aboue
That vsist this without occasioun,
To turment suche as trewe ben vn to Loue,
That with hool hert and feithfull entencioun
Serue Loue without othir condicioun?
To moche to blame art thou—to blame, ye, certes!
Wherfore bithynke thee thyn amendes dres,

1544-46 ... thus without your grace my dulled heart will not be comforted ... by anything that I can do ...
1553 caused me to endure great woe wrongfully
1558-59 for which reason I, one of the most unworthy of them [Love’s followers], undertake this trial by combat here on their behalf and on my own [“y” (1559) repeats “y” (1558).]
To leue thi wrath and hatfull gouernaunce
And with lowe hert and humbill repentaunce
Go cry mercy to all folke, he or she,
That thou hast cawsid wayle or ben heue,
To suche, y mene, as haue thee founde rebell,
Ellis trust thou this: that thou shalt not renew
But with my gloue, that y thee here appele,
Without so be thou yelde thee to ben trewe!

Aliway thou thynkist yvill! yvill mote þou proue!
So full art thou of false suspecioun,
Well shewist thou bi thi deedis, as thi move,
Thi foster fadir was sum carle feloun!
What grevith thee, though that we haue in won
As forto loue to sett <oure> bisynes,
To occupy <oure> tyme of lustynes
In placis full of ioy and gret plesaunce
Which is vertu and gracious deseraunce?
Wherfore, fals proud cherle, let see!—
Chaunge thi willis, full of crewelte,
Or, traytoure, y shall geue thee such batell
That hit shall do thee thi cursid deedis rewe
Well more than shall thi deth—a thousand dele!
Without so be thou yelde thee to ben trewe!

Now take my gloue or yelde thee, with myschaunce!
Let se, coward, if that thou dar avaunce!
The toon of two thou chesen must to thee:
Knokke on thi brest, hit may noon othir be,
For nought [ . . . ]
Thow shalt not seche no mo wayes newe,
But thou shalt dye! Now speke on thi perell,

1573 whom you have caused to wail or be woeful
1575–76 ... that you will not leave [here] without [taking up] my glove with which I challenge you here
1578 may you suffer ill!
1580 [that] you show clearly by your deeds, as [by] your face, [that]
1582–83 ... though we busy [lit.: are accustomed to busying] ourselves to love
1590–91 that it will cause you to regret your malicious deeds more than would your death ...
Without so be thou yelde thee to ben trewe!

And, god, before the greef and gret ennoy
Shall hastily passe of my aduersite
(Whom say y this saue yow, swet hert, only?)
And me woll falle a gladsum tyme lust[e]
But wote ye loo as when that hit must be?
Hit shall be when the plesaunt lemys shyne
Of youre most fresshe and ynly gret bewte
In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyene.

Then woll the chambir of my thought trewly
Of plesaunce take a light in eche parte.
Such joy woll him aray so fresshe and by
That waken must myn heuy hert slepe
Out of his fowle and sluggissh slogarde.
He shall no more then slepe, bi Seynt Quyntyne,
When that this light hath take on him entre
In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyne.

Allas, when wol this tyme approchen ny
The ilke sonne to se? (y myght be so happe!)
But what, ther nys but ye, myn owen lady,
Must youw bithynke how hit may come to me.
For wot ye well, dere hert, that y am he
In whom ther nys oon ioy forto ben sene
Vnto y may this likyng sonne see
In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyne.

Then shall myn hert haue of felicite
As moche as any hert—what so thay ben—
When this sonne doth shewe his gret clerte
In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyne.

1601 Good [form of address], . . . “And” is redundant.
1604 if a happy [and] cheerful time will befall me
At the short game of tablis forto play
Loue hath me long had in his gouernaunce,
And evyr this he chargid me alway:
Myn entirpoynt to kepe hit in substauence,
And hath me sayd, if so y haue puysshaunce
To kepe [t]his poynt, that then, withouten were,
That at the last y shulde even verry clere
Wynne the game withouten more dowtaunce.

But take am y, and y not entre may
The poynt y wolde—the more is my grevaunce—
But Ihesu graunt me (loo, what may y say?)
That y may onys attayne sum happe chaunce
To my purpos, forwhi ellis of penaunce
Shall y haue more then evir had martere,
Without so be y may to my desere
Wynne the game withouten more dowtaunce.

Fortune doth turne the dise so, welaway!
That weele and woo me <wayith> in balaunce,
But what, Good Hope he saith me thus, mafay,
(In whom y haue a full gret affyaunce)
How that my trouthe shall gete me suffisaunce
Of happy cast vtto myn owen plesere,
But as for that yet am y neuyr the nere
To wynne the game withouten more dowtaunce.

O helpe me, Loue, that sest myn atturbaunce!
I the requere with humbill obeyshaunce
Sum pryty moyan that thou wolt me lere
How that y myght avoyde this iupart here
To wyane the game withouten more dowtaunce.

Ch. 68, B XLVI

Welcome and yt more welcome, bi þis light,
O Fresshe Tidyngis, vnto myn hert are ye!

1657 in order to win the game ...
Say me, hast thou had of my ladi sight?
Come telle me sumwhat of hir, now let see,
As bi thi trouthe how thynkist, is she not she
(Shewas when last we partid compane),
Which plesid hir say (to bryng me out of woo,
Tredyng my foot and that so pratyly),
"Teys yow to whom y loue am and no moo."

 Hir good will ay to me in oon [is] plight,
This fynde y well, for where hir gret bounte
Hath chosen Trouthe to serve hir day and ny3t,
As gentilwoman cheef to her bode,
Then provith well, as thynkist me, parde,
That she of Trouthe woll susteyne be party
When she lust say—for which y thanke hir, lo—
As to enioy me (wrecche most vnworthi),
"Teys yow to whom y loue am and no moo."

Holde my sylf the most happy wight
In all this world when she "loue" callith me,
For in eche where, who so hir knowith right,
She praysid is for fayrist of bewte;
So God me graunt as onys to ben he,
Maugre Daunger, to se hir hastily,
That she eft sone may say vnto me soo,
"Thenkith, my loue, for Trouth that this say y:
Teys yow to whom y loue am and no mo."

Writen haue within myn hert trewly
As for lesyng to kepe it where y go
This refrayt, which y loue right hertily:
"Teys yow to whom y loue am and no mo."

Ch. 69, B XLVII

1662-66 . . . is she not the one . . . who was pleased to say . . . "It is you whose love I am and no one else's"
1670-71 as first lady in waiting, then it proves well . . .
1678-79 . . . [by those] who truly know her, she is praised everywhere as the most beautiful
1682 so that she at a later time may say . . .
1686 to keep from losing it wherever I go
TO longe (for shame!) and all to longe trewly,
Myn hert, y se thee slepe in displesere.
Awake this day, awake! O verry fy!
Lete vs at wode go geder may in fere
To holde of oure oold custome the manere.
Ther shall we here the birdis synge and pley
Right as the wood therwith shulde forshyuere,
This ioly tyme, this fresshe first day of May.

The God of Loue, this worldis god myghti,
Holdith this day his feste to fede and chere
The hertis of vs poore louers heuy,
Which only him to serue sett oure desere,
Wherfore he doth affoyle the trees sere
With grene, and hath the soyle yflowrid gay,
Only to shewe his fest to more plesere,
This ioly tyme, this fresshe first day of May.

Myn hert, thou wost how Daungere hath on whi
Doon thee endure full greuous paynes here,
Which doth the longe thus absent thi lady,
That willist most to ben vnto hir nere,
Wherfore the best avise y kan thee lere
Is that thou drawe thee to disportis ay,
Thi trowbely sorow therwith to aclere
This ioly tyme, this fresshe first day of May.

My first in thought and last, my lady dere,
Hit axith more then this, oon day leysere,
To telle yow loo my greef and gret affray,
That this wolde make myn hert a poore martere
This ioly tyme, this fresshe first day of May.

Ch. 70, B XLVIII

1692 let us go to the forest to gather May blossoms together
1703 for the sole purpose of giving his festive company more pleasure
1705... Daunger has wrongfully
1707-8 who causes you thus to be far away from your lady, [you] who most wish
to be near her
As in writyn g y putt haue my wisshis
And that even in the depist of my thought,
And yet, god wot, when all are made ther nys
But fewe of them that me prevaylen ought,
Notwithstondyng, for me, y selle hem nought
For all the good that man me geven myght,
In dowt therin ther were mysdemyng oft
Thorugh false conspire of sum vnhappy wight.

As neuyr more, god helpe me so as wis,
Kan myn hert cesse the woo which is him wrouȝt,
So richely portrayde ar they lo that this
That alway so to muse yet he ne rought.
Thus baytith he, to he be so forfought
That even for shame he fayntith in his fight
And dredith sore lest that he were mysthought
Thorugh false conspire of sum vnhappy wight.

When y am hushte hit mervayle to me is
To here myn hert how that he talkith soft,
And so with Loue doth fester his woundis
Which newe and newe hath hurtis to him brought.
But what, he saith he set him well aloft
And him depart a thousand iy[y]s] light,
But sore y drede lest they be from him rought
Thorugh false conspire of sum vnhappy wight.

O graunt me, Loue, forwhi full well thou ought,
The iy[y] the which pou hast long to me ought,
For well thou wost thou hast me comfort hight.
Nought kan y say where bat thou haue me sought
Thorugh false conspire of sum vnhappy wight.

Ch. 71, B XLIX

1728–29 [because] they [the wishes] are depicted so vividly in words that he [my heart] does not mind musing on them all the time
1736 . . . his wounds fester on account of Love
1738 . . . the heart says Love makes him happy
1745 ?I can not say where you have been seeking me [but not in the right place]
B I God of Loue commaundid lo am y
And bi the best and sayrist eek of Fraunce
The castell of myn hert to fortify
Which clepid is the Hold of Gret Plesaunce,
Stondyng vpon the Roche of Espeyraunce;
And with Comfort so hauc y him vitaylid
Ayens Daunger and all his rude puysshaunce
Which y shall kepe to Deth me hath assaylid.

In this Castell ther are thre towris hye
Of which the first berith propir name Fyaunce-
To-haue-socoure-and-that-right-hastily;
And the secund is callid Remembraunce;
The thridde is Stedfast Desyraunce.
The wallis als so stronge are enbataylid
That ther nys wight may doon hit gret grevaunce,
Which y shall kepe to Deth me hath assaylid.

Although Daunger seche weyes full slyly
To rayue hit me and oft him doth avaunce,
Yet of his thought he fynde shall the contrary
Spite of his hatrede and his gret vengeaunce,
Sith that Good Right is of myn allyaunce,
For Trouthe and he at nede me neuyr faylid
To brynge reskuse, wherfore without dowtaunce
This shall y kepe to Deth me hath assaylid.

Lete vs make wache withouten deseyvaunce
And goo we assayle with all our ordenaunce
Daunger, myn hert, which oft hath don vs waylid,
And Mars vs graunt to wynne him bi sum chaunce
Which y shall kepe to Deth me hath assaylid.

Ch. 72, B L

1754 "which" refers to the castle in each refrain, except in the last instance, where it refers to the defeat of Daunger.
1772 and let us go to assail with all our artillery
The next tyme, my lady and mastres,
I come to yow to doon myn obeyshaunce,
I wot y shall so ravissh with gladnes
That to yow speke woll want me the pusshaunce.
So lese shall y my before countenaunce,
For when yowre bewte shyneth vpon me bright
Myn eyen woll so basshe, bi God almyght,
That y shall lese the sight out of myn hed;
Myn hert also woll falle aswowne vpright—
This is a thyng that gretly loo y drede!

Wherefore as this, most excellent, fayre princes,
When so ye se me in suche gouernaunce,
As woll it plese yow of yowre gret humbles
To pardone me, though y kan not avaunce
To doon to yow as were myn observaunce;
For aftirson e myn hert woll wexen light
And telle yow hool his lijf, y yow bikhight,
Wher noon may here, forwhi in very dede
He wot how Daunger wacchith day and nyght.
This is a thyng that gretly loo y drede.

Which evesedroppere doth, of his currishnes,
Harke what he kan to doon me with hyndraunce,
But what, yet truste y soo my wittis dresse
That y shall fynde sum maner chevishaunce
To mokke this karle (God geve him a myschaunce!)
And right well <vnaspide> of any wight,
For though this nygard cast vpon vs sight
Ye may not with his lookis blusshen reed
Nor yet for alle the spies he hath pight!
This is a thyng that gretly lo y drede.

---

1779–80 that I shall lack to power to speak to you. So I shall lose my earlier composure
1797 see what he can do to cause me harm
1801 And [I will do it] entirely unseen by anyone
1803 You need not blush on account of his looking [at us]
Go, belle, and say that here my trowthe y plight.
Had y my wishe, y were <out> candill light,
Even with the verry sorse of womanhed.
I trust she wolde not slee her poore knyght—
This is a thyng that gretly loo y drede!

Ch. 73, B LI

Hat menyst þou, Hope? dost þou me skoffe & skorne?
For wordis moche thou hast, and flateryng!
How many tymys hast thou to me sworne
(Thou cast desseyue me, vnto my semyng)
That thou shuldist me vnto my lady bryng,
Which is the fayre, the good, and kynde princes
That hath myn hert and evir shall in oon?
For loue of God, as holde me thi promes,
For whoo that absent is, is woobigoon.

Hit is long tyme apassid heretoforne
Syn y of Comfort had sight or felyng.
Haue y not ay my sely devoure borne,
To dewre my payne withouten gret grucchyng?
Yes, yes, ynough and more! which tyme dewryng,
Me thynke, as now deservith gret gladnes—
So semeth hit me ben dewe, bi God alon!
But if y square y axe thee foryeuenes,
For who that absent is, is woobigoon.

Yet were thi shame to geue me thus an horne!
Make not of me thus light, a noforsyng,
Which trustith thee, and hath doon eve and morne
In what thou dost to me in euery thyng.
If thou may geve to me no more helpyng,
Yet at the lest thou shewe me my maystres
As oonys, alas, so that this grevous mon

1824–25 ... [my] enduring of which time ... now deserves [a reward of] great joy
1834–36 yet at least show me my mistress once, so that this grevous complaint
[I am uttering] may put an end to [mark the end of] my great woe ['"thou" (1834) repeats "thou" (1833).]
Acesyne may of my grete hevynes,
For who that absent is, is woo bigoon!

Ơ certis, Hope, thou makist fayre promessyng
To ordeyne for my carfull hert likyng.
Thou spekist fayre, that may y well witnes,
But helpe me now or leue me, loo, the toon,
That y myght knowe the fyne of my distres;
For who that absent is, is woo bigoon.

Ch. 74, B LII

This Dyane day, the first in moneth of May,
Me thynkith a berith hem verrry well to me,
For right as y nave plesere to my pay
Within myn hert, but grete aduersite,
Right in lijk wise, god wott, is he to see
Fortrobelid als with thondir, wynde, and rayne.
A hath be wont more fressher forto be
In tyme that y, afore this day, haue sayne.

I trowe that he doth put him in assay
To bere me thus a frendly compane,
Of which y well content me bi this day,
For wrecchis whiche that are in thought heve
As doth hit them a grete tranquyllite
To haue a felawe lyue with them in payne.
I wel haue profite this to my degre,
In tyme that y afore this day haue sayne.

Allas, y haue sene May so glad and gay,
So full of plesaunce and felicite
That in a yere y koude not to yow say
The grete pleseris and the fresshe ilyte
That to eche wight, that tyme, was full rede,

1844 This Monday, the first in the month of May [see note]
1856–57 it gives them great comfort [calms their agitation] to have a companion
live in sorrow along with them
For with the God of Loue, the lord souerayne,
Ther was no monthe myght do so moche as <he>
In tyme that y afore this day haue sayne.

The tyme hit goth not (wot y how, parde!)
But God amende hit sone of his povste,
Forwhi Plesaunce to long aslepe hath layne,
That whilom lyvid full glad and full luste
In tyme that y afore this day haue sayne.

Or loue of god, as kepith Remembranunce
Within yowre thought enclosid pratily;
Lete him not goon out of yowre gouernaunce,
Mi most bilouyd, myn hertis fayre lady.
Do this, swete hert, no more in yowre party
But well bithynke what ye vnto me hight,
Eche poynct, and how that ye yowre trouth aplithe,
And what also ye made to me promes
When y me gafe to be yowre poor knyght
And ye to ben my lady and maystres.

Ye wot right well, bi my long deservaunce
And small desert, ye grauntid me mercy,
And seide me this: vnto my most plesaunce
That me to loue ye sett were hertily
As longe as ther were lijf in my body.
Be ye my Iuge! ye wott where y say right!
(Me were full loth to ley, bi God of myght.)
This is no faynyd tale—no, no, dowlles!
For my promes y ioy hit day and nyght,
And ye to ben my lady and maystres.

1865 for according to the God of Love . . .
1877 Do this (i.e., forget) . . . no more . . .
1882 and you [committed yourself] to be . . .
1883–84 . . . because of my long deserving and small reward . . .
1891–92 for I take pleasure night and day in my promise [to be your knight] if you are my lady . . .
But ther is dowe that doth me gret grevaunce
Which y muste nede disclosen yow or dey
Lest that ye haue forgot me in penance;
Forwhi this absent payne in which y dry
Doth me for deth a thousand sith to cry,
That y thus long shulde ben out of yowre sight,
And neuyr sith koude be so happy wight
To haue writyng to sett me in gladnes.
Me thynke herin ye do me gret vnright
And ye to ben my lady and maystres.

To brynge me from this carfull aturbaunce
Withouten yow as nys ther remedy,
Wherfore that y with humbil obeysaunce
Biseche yow to bithynke me, fer or ny,
Which am yowre man, god wott, most vnworthi.
Yet as y kan y do my sely myght
Yow forto plese, and this with Absence fight
I in my thought and were my lustynes;
But as for that, y putt him shall to flight,
And ye to ben my lady and maystres.

What nede y more to say yow of my chaunce?
Whi that y absent am, well wot ye whi.
How may y als of ioy haue suffysaunce
Without hit come, dere hert, from yow only?
How fynde ye me? Allas, am y not y
That yow to serue am evir glad and light?
For if ye fynde myn hert on elliswhere pight,
As mot she which of Loue is gret goddes
Even with the deede don me to deth be dight
And neuyr be my lady and maystres.

If that y sewrely knew, my ladi bright,

1896 For which reason this pain of absence that I endure
1899–1900 And never since [I last saw you] could I be so happy a person as to receive a letter [from you] to bring me joy
1914 ... you know very well why
1920–22 may she who is the great Goddess of Love, with that deed, cause me to be condemned to death, and [may you] never be my lady ...
How that yowre loue were steele vnto me clight,
I wot y shulde forgete myn heynes,
For Fortune koude sett me no more on hight
And ye to ben my lady and maystres.

Ch. 77, B LIV

A

Las! allas! how is hit heth gen entresse
Vnto myn hert this woful tidyngis here?
For told him is to his gret heuynes
That his most fayre and goodly swete hert dere,
Whom he hath long tyme servid faithfully,
(O welaway!) doth now in seeknes ly,
For which dispeyre he doth him silf confound,
Wisshyng that he were depe graue vndir ground,
And saith how that his lijf doth him ennoy.

I

oft haue goon to comfort him, doughtles,
And bad him take no drede nor displesere,
For, what, bi goddis grace, to his gladnes
That hit nys deedly seeknes shall he here,
And that she shall be helid hastily.
But what y say he settith not therby,
Saue wayle and wepe and prayeth in euery stounde
That he were in his wyndyng shete ywounde
And saith how that his lijf doth him ennoy.

When y say him he shulde leue his distres,
For Fortune nys so crewell of manere
To robbe this world of so gret a ricches
Which is yowre verry lod sterre here & stere
Of eche good thyng that hath more pen plenty,
But what, he saith, “To trust is gret foly
On Fortune which doth turne hir whele so round!”
(This is comfort that y haue in him found!),
And saith how that his lijf doth him ennoy.

1928–29 . . . who has given these woeful tidings (here) entrance to my heart?
1934 For despair of which he destroys himself
1942 but whatever I say . . .
1949–50 who [i.e., the lady.] is your true lodestar (here) and steersman
God of thi grace, O thou God most myghti,
Harkith myn hert which prayeth thee humbly
To suffir Deth geue him his fatall wound;
Thus is he greid, woo doth him so abound,
And saith how that his lijf doth him ennoy.
Ch. 79, B LV

Rght as y herde this othir day tofore
How my swete hert, myn owen fayre ladi dere,
Was woxen hool (thankid be God therfore!)
To telle it to myn hert y kan me stire,
But then, alak! he hath so gret desire
To knowe the trouthe that vnethe, welaway!
He koude bithynke [...].
His loue with drede doth he so entirmelle
That he wolde say a thousand sithe a day,
"O sende me tidyng, good Seynt Gabriel!"

I seide him, "Loo, myn hert, me grevith sore
That thou shuldist me mystrute in such manere
Which am thi frend and haue ben euymore,
To thynke that y shulde brynge thee lesyng here
In vayne only to comfort thee and chere.
Nay, leuyr yet had y no word to say
Than don thee wite that were no trouthe, mafay,
For thou shall fynde me trewe, so truste me wele,
Wherfore be glad and thee dispire and play.
O sende me tidyng, good Seynt Gabriel!"

Myn hert answerid and seide, "Right bi þi lore
So will y doon to drawe me to plesere
That am with care and thought so all fortore.
I shall retorne aftir my poore poware
To ioy and well my Payne and displesere,"

1955 to allow Death to give the heart his mortal wound.
1976 Than to inform you of that which is not true . . .
1983-84 I shall turn . . . my pain and misery to joy and weal
And gaf therwith to wepe his eyen tay
That alfordrownyd in salt teeris lay,
And seide, "Now is it tyme, if euyr fel,
To calle forth Hope, that fledde is me away.
O sende me tidyng, good Seynt Gabriell!"

Als seide he me that he wolde, bi his fay,
Doon to be songe in Louys high chapell
The masse which berith the name, as wel hit may,
"O sende me tidyng, good Seynt Gabriel."

Ch. 80, B LVI

A

Allas, Deth, who made thee so hardy
To take away the most nobill princesse,
Which comfort was of my lijf and body
Mi wele, my ioy, my plesere and ricchesse?
But syn thou hast biraft me my maystres,
Take me, poore wrecche, hir cely serviture,
For leuyr had y hastily forto dy
Than langwysshe in pis karfull tragedy
In payne, sorowe, and woofull aventure.

Allas, nad she of eche good thing plente,
Flowryng in youthe and in hir lustynes?
I biseche God, acursid mote thou be,
O false Deth, so full of gret rudenes!
Had thou hir taken in vnweldynes
As had thou not ydoon so gret rigure,
But thou, alak, hast take hir hastily
And, welaway, this left me pitously
In payne, sorow, and woofull aventure.

Allas! alone am y <out> compane.

1985 and thereupon set himself to wiping his (two) eyes
1999 . . . her miserable servant
2007-9 if you had taken her when she was [old and] infirm, you would not have been so cruel [done such a great cruelty], but you . . . have taken her with undue haste [i.e., in her prime]
2012 . . . I am alone without companionship
Fare well, my lady! fare well, my gladnes!
Now is the loue partid twix yow and me,
Yet, what, for then y make yow here promes
That with prayers y shall of gret larges
Here serue yow, ded, while my lijf may endure,
<Out> forgetyng in slouthe or slogardy,
Biwaylyng oft yowre deth with wepyng ey
In payne, sorow, and wofull aventure.

God, that lordist euery creature,
Graunt of thi grace thi right forto mesure
On alle the offens she hath doon wilfully,
So that the good sowle of hir now not ly
In payne, sorow, and wofull aventure.

God, that lordist euery creature,
Graunt of thi grace thi right forto mesure
On alle the offens she hath doon wilfully,
So that the good sowle of hir now not ly
In payne, sorow, and wofull aventure.

Ch. 81, B LVII

N slepe ben leyd all song, daunce, or disport,
Also prays of bewte, bote, or gantilesse
Now Deth, alias, hath, to my discomfor, Enrayfid me my lady and maystres.
A, woofull hert, whos sorow kan not cesse,
Round with hir deth thou shulde haue tan thi bere,
Dwellyng no more with ioy nor yet gladnes,
For without hir of nought now lyue y here.

myghti God, what am y, quyk or deed?
Nay, certis, deed, this am y verry sewre,
For, fele y plesere, ioy, nor lustihed?
Wo worthe the fate of my mysaventure!
Nought lak y now but clothe my sepulture.
O clothe me care sewte of my ladi dere,

2015-18 therefore [on account of our love] I promise you here that I shall... serve you here on earth, [you] being dead, ... without forgetfulness [born of my] idleness or indolence
2022-23 grant of thy grace to moderate thy justice in judging all the offences ... 2028 Now [that] Death has ... 
2034 Or “what, am y quyk or deed?”
2038-40 Now I lack nothing but to prepare my grave. O clothe me in my shroud, as my lady is clothed, [I] who find ...
That fynde my silf an outcast creature,
For without hir of nought now lyue y here.

Me thynkith right as a syphir now y serue,
That nombre makith and is him silf noon.
O cursid Deth, whi nelt thou do me sterue,
Syn my swet hert—syn my good sowl—is goon?
Now may y say alone y goo, alon,
Savyng with Sorow, Payne, and Disuplesere,
With whos deth all welthe bicame my foon,
For without hir of nought now lyue y here.

I kepe no more of lijf then were my right,
Forwhi hit were extorcioun in manere,
Wherfore y wolde my lijf sum nedy wight
Hit had, for now of nought as lyue y here.

No French

A Lone am y and wille to be alone
—Alone, withouten plesere or gladnes
—Alone in care, to sighe and grone
—<Alone>, to wayle the deth of my maystres
—Alone, which sorow will me neuyr cesse.
Alone, y curse the lijf y do endure.
Alone this fayntith me my gret distres,
Alone y lyue, an ofcast creature.

 Alone am y, most wofullest bigoon,
Alone, forlost in paynfull wildirnes,
Alone withouten whom to make my mone,
Alone, my wrecchid case forto redresse,
Alone thus wandir y in heuynes,

2043 that has no value in itself, but enhances another’s value [as zero makes 1 into 10]
2048 with whose [i.e., the lady’s] death all joy became my foe
2050-53 I have no more life in me than I have a right to [which is exceedingly little] because to have more would be a kind of illegal exaction, wherefore I wish that someone who needed it more had my life, for now I live here as a nothing.
2064 Alone without [anyone] to whom to complain
Alone, so wo worth myn aventure!
Alone to rage, this thynkith me swetnes,
Alone y lyue, an ofcast creature.

Alone! Deth, com take me here anoon,
Alone that dost me dure so moche distres!
Alone y lyue, my frendis alle and foon,
Alone to die thus in my lustynes.
Alone, most welcome Deth, do thi rudenes,
Alone, that worst kan pete, lo, mesure.
Alone come on; y bide but thee, dowtles.
Alone y lyue, an ofcast creature.

Alone of woo y haue take such excesse,
Alone, that phisik nys ther me to cure.
Alone y lyue, that willith it were lesse;
Alone y lyue, an ofcast creature.

Or dedy lijf, my lyvy deth y wite;
For ese of payne, in payne of ese y dye;
For lengthe of woo, woo lengith me so lite
That quyk y dye, and yet as ded lyue y.
Thus nygh a fer y fele the fer is ny
Of thing certeyne that y vncerteyne seche,
Which is the deth, sith Deth hath my lady.
O wofull wrecche! O wrecche, lesse onys thi speche!

O gost formatte, yelde vp thi breth attones!
O karkas faynt, take from this lijf thi flight!

2071 who causes me to endure so much suffering alone!
2075 . . . whom pity least can temper
2078–79 I have taken such excess of nothing but woe, all by myself, that there is no medicine that can cure me.
2080 . . . who wish my life were shorter
2082–84 I blame my living death for my death-like life; I die for ease of my pain . . . because of the length of [time I have suffered] woe, woe prolongs my life very little [i.e., shortens my life]
2086 thus closely distant [from Death], I feel that distance [from it] is nearness
O bollid hert, forbrest thou with thi grones!
O mestid eyen, whi fayle ye not yowre sight?
Syn Deth, allas, hath tane my lady bright
And left this world without on to her leche,
To lete me lyue ye do me gret vnright.
O wofull wrecche! O wrecche, lesse onys thi speche!

What is this lijf, a lijf or deth y lede?
Nay, certes, deth-in-lijf is liklynes,
For though y fayne me port of lustihede,
Yet inward lo it sleth me, my distres,
For fro me fledde is ioy and all gladnes,
That y may say in all this world so reche
As y is noon of payne and hevynes.
O woofull wrecche, O wrecche, lesse onys þi speche!

Ther nys no thing sauf Deth to do me day
That may of me the woofull paynes eche,
But wolde y dey, allas, yet y ne may!
[O woofull wrecche! O wrecche, lesse onys thi speche!]

No French

Oforne Loue haue y pleyd at the chesse
To passe the tyme with cursid false Daungere
And kepte eche poynyt bi good avysynes
Withouten losse, to that (as wol ye here)
That Fortune came to strengthyn his matere.
O woo worthe she that my game ouyrthrew!
For tane she hath my lady, welaway!
That y am matt, this may y se and say,
Without so be y make a lady newe.

In my lady lay all my sikirnes,
For ay at nede hir socoure was me nere

2095 . . . without anyone who is her equal
2103-4 so that I may say [that] in all this world [there] is no one so rich in pain and woe as I
2106 Only Death himself can cause me to die
To helpe me in eche trobill or distres,
For all my warde that kepe my lady dere
More then knyght, that is of more powere,
Or Afyn, pown, or rook (this fynde y trewe)
For all my game y lost hit haue and pley
And all my good, god wot, that on hit lay,
Without so be y make a lady newe.

Not kan y skyfte me from the sotilnes
Of seytfull Fortune, with hir dowbil chere,
That doth eche game so torne and ouyrdresse
That where to drawe not wot y, there or here.
She cometh on me in a so sodeyne gere
That y may not myn harms lo eschewe.
Mi game is all forcast in suche aray
That in no wise y hit amenden may,
Without so be y make a lady newe.

Fare wel, princesse! yowre losse sore doth me rewe
And evir shall vnto myn endyng day,
For shulde y thenke rekwre me now? Nay, nay,
Without so be y make a lady newe!

Fare wel, princesse! yowre losse sore doth me rewe
And evir shall vnto myn endyng day,
For shulde y thenke rekwre me now? Nay, nay,
Without so be y make a lady newe!

Ch. 82, B LVIII

Hulde y me make a lady newe? Fy! Fy!
Nay, rathir dey than doon so fowl a dede!
Nas she selfe same y chees to my lady,
Owt secund choys, vnto that y were deed?
Nas she als she that had of goodlihed
More then of worldis an hool thousand payre?
For when she lyuyd she fayrist lyuyd in dede
Right as the fenyx lyveth withouten ayre.

2122 for my queen maintained (i.e., continued to act as) my primary defense
2130 who changes the course of and reverses each game
2143-44 was she not the very same I chose to be my lady, without any second choice . . .
2145-46 was she not also the one who had more beauty/graciousness than [could be found in] a full thousand pair of worlds
But of the asise (as these clerkis seyne)
Of this Fenyx, ther cometh an othir blyue,
But me to thynke, god wot, were but in vayne
To se such on in all my paynyd lyve.
What nedith me, allas, hir to discryue?
Hir prays doth ay vnto eche ere repeyre.
She ded is (what nede y more prays contruyue?),
Right as the Fenyx lyueth withouten ayre.

Then shulde y false, allas, so goodly on?
And shulde y breke the treuthe y to hir hight?
Nay, rathir man as leuyr were y noon,
For whi y thenke most how y am a knyght,
The oth therof, and oth y to hir plight,
Reuoluyng als this lijf, a chere fayre,
To loke how sone she deyde, the fayrist wight,
Right as the Fenyx lyueth withouten ayre.

To loue a fayre this wayffyd y my trouthe;
To chese a fowle y am not of that layre.
Lef of, my penne! she deyde, she deyde, more routhe!
Right as the Fenyx lyvith withouten ayre!

O Fte in my thought full besily haue y sought,
Ayens the bigynnyng of this fresshe newe yere,
What praty thyng that y best yeven ought
To hir that was myn hertis lady dere,
But all that thought bitane is fro me clere
Sith deth, allas, hath closid hir vndir cley
And hath this world fornakid with hir here.
God haue hir sowle, y kan no bettrir say.

2149 But of the ashes ... of this phoenix ...
2151–52 but for me to expect ... to see such a one again in my whole sorrowful
life would be [a] vain [hope]
2159 I would rather that I were not a man (i.e., I would rather die)
2165 To love [another, new] fair [lady], I would thus set aside my oath
But forto kepe in custome lo my thought
And of my sely servise the manere
In shewyng allys that y forget hir nought
Vnto eche wight y shall to my powere,
This dede, hir serue with massis and prayere,
For, A! to fowle a shame were me, mafay,
Hir to forgete this tyme that neigheeth nere.
God haue hir sowle, y kan no bettir say.

To hir profit now nys ther to ben bought
Noon othir thyng, all wol y bay hit dere;
Wherfore, thou lord that lordist all aloft,
Mi deedis take, suche as goodnes stere,
And crowne hir, Lord, within thyn hevenly spere
As for most trewist lady, may y say,
Most good, most fayre, and most benygne of chere.
God haue hir sowle, y kan no bettir say.

When y hir prayse or praysyng of hir here,
All though it whilom were to me plesere,
<Yit> fill ynough hit doth myn hert to day
And doth me wishe y clothid had my bere.
God haue hir sowle, y kan no bettir say.

Ch. 83, B LIX

W

Hen y revolue in my remembraunce
The bewte, shappe, and pe swete eyen tayne
Of hir y callid “myn hert hool plesaunce,
Mi lyvis ioy, my sovl lady souerayne,”
Of eche good thewe that was þe fressh fountayne,
Which newly Deth hath tane (O welaway!)
For which y say, with wepyng eyen tay,
That this world nys but even a thyng in vayne.

In tyme apast ther ran gret renomaunce
Of Dido, Cresseid, Alcest, and Eleyne
And many moo, as fynde we in romaunce,
That were of bewte huge and welbesayne,
But in the ende, allas, to thynke agayne
How Deth hem slew—and sleth moo day bi day—
Hit doth me wel aduert, this may y say,
That this world nys but even a thyng in vayne.

Me thenkith that Deth cast bi his gouernaunce
Forto distroy all worldly plesere playne,
Forwhi he doth thereto his gret puysshaunce
That hath, allas, so moche fayre folkis slayne,
And dayly slethe. What ioy doth he refrayne
Out of this world and bryngith in such dismay,
For without them, y iuge this, mafay,
That this world nys but even a thyng in vayne.

O God of Loue, thou may perseyue, certayne,
To myn entent, that Deth thee warrith ay,
So se y wel but though hit menden may
That this world nys but even a thyng in vayne.

Ch. 84, B LX

The ioly tyme, the first, fresshe day of May,
Mi fortune fill to be in compane
The which pat were, a verry trouthe to say
Repleet of grace and passyng gret bounte,
For which, forto <expelle> all thought heue
That we shulde chese, ordeynyd to vs was,
(Right as that Fortune lust agide the caas)  
The leef, so fresshe and full of gret verdure  
Or ellis the flowre, so fayre and soot to smelle.  
I took the leef to me all yere to dwelle  
As that tyme was myn hap and aventure.

And aftir this bithought me sone, mafay,  
That rightwisly the choyse was falyn me,  
For syn thorugh deth y lost haue (welaway!)  
She which was sorse and flowre of all bewte
Which was my loue, my swet hert and lade  
That only had ytane me to hir grace  
And callid me hir loue (Alas! Alase!),  
Of othir flowre, god wott, y take no quere,  
Forwhi the destene that to [me] felle  
And thought accordith passyng welle  
As that tyme was myn happe and aventure.

Wherfore y schesse the leue, as well y may,  
Forth all this yere or more, so may hit be,  
And strength hit shall y onto my power alway  
Ageyns them which that warrith his parte.  
Thenke not y haue to no flowre enmyte,  
But bere it hoo to bere that good wel hase,  
For in the flowre myn hert had chose his place  
Owt ellis where choys of any creature,  
Which now with deth is fadid euery dele;  
That louyd me hit nedith not to telle,  
As that tyme was myn happe and aventure.

Cher nys leef nor flowre that doth endewre

2239-44 "syn" governs the clause that runs to "loue" (2243).
2242 who had taken me alone into her favor
2244-46 I am not interested ... in [any] other flower, wherefore the lot [i.e., the leaf] that befell me and [my] sorrow accord very well.
2250-51 and I shall always support it to [the extent of] my power against those who war against his [the leaf's] side
2253 but [he] who wishes to [may] bear it
2255 Without choosing any other living being
2257 That [she] loved me need not be said
But a sesoun, as sowne doth in a belle,  
Yet fond y ese with them to entirmelle  
As that tyme was myn happe and adventure.  
*Ch. 85, B LXI*  

He secund day of fayre, fresshe lusty May  
As half in slepe, in slombir half wakyng,  
Me mette this sweuene in spryngyng of þe day,  
How to me came a flowre this resonyng  
Me, and seide, “My frend, y had trustyng  
Whilom, that thou had holde on my parte,  
But now me thynek thou hast forgotten me  
And strengthist lo the leef ageyn me sore.  
I merveyle wherin y haue greuyd thee;  
Me thynek y haue deservid not wherfore.”

Sore basshid y when y this herde hir say,  
Aftir my rewde havoure this answeryng,  
“Moost goodly flowre, God helpe me so alway,  
As y thought neuyr doon ayenst yow thyng  
Yow to displese, but happe of such chesyng  
The leef to serue this heyre hath made me he.  
Ought ye therfore me blame then? nay, parde,  
Syn so to doon is vsid evirmore,  
And ye me blame as for my poore dewte,  
Me thynek y haue deservid not wherfore;

“Alls yow in cheef that do y honoure ay  
What part y am as is me well sittyng  
All for oon flowre that me was tane away  
In tyme apast (God graunt vs sone metyng  
In paradice the howre of my deiyng!);
O floure! wherfore ye not displeased be,
For cause therto, well wote y, noon nave ye,
Though that y levys were a thousand skore!
Whi blame ye me? Whi shewe ye crewelte?
Me thynke y haue deservid not wherfore!

"The trouthe is this, hit light is forto se
—God be my Iuge, y kan no ferthimor:
For where ye seme y axen shulde merce
Me thynke y haue deservid not wherfore."

Ch. 87, B LXII

Haue the obit of my lady dere
Made in the Chirche of Loue full solemnely
And for hir sowle the service and prayere,
In thought waylyng, haue songe hit hevyly,
The torchis sett of Sighis pitously
Which <were> with Sorow sett aflame;
The tovmbe is made als to the same
Of karfull cry depayntid all with teeris,
The which richely is write abowt
That here, lo, lith withouten dowt
The hool tresoure of all worldly blys.

Of gold on <hit> ther lith an ymage clere,
With safyr blew ysett so inrichely
—For hit is write and seide how the safere
Doth token trouthe, and gold to ben happy—
The which that welbisetith hir hardily,
Forwhi hit was an ewrous, trewe madame

2288 . . . for this reason [just given] do not be displeased
2290 Though I wear a thousand score of leaves!
2295 whereas you think [it] fit [that] I should ask for mercy
2300 "hit" refers back to "service and prayere."
2301-3 [I have] set [up] the torches of Sighs piteously, which were set aflame with Sorrow
2304 all stained with tears of sorrowful lamentation
2308 "Hit" refers to the tomb.
2313 For she was a favored, faithful lady
And of goodnes ay flowren may hir name,
For God, the which that made hir, lo, ywys,
To make such oon me thynke a myght ben prowt,
For, lo, she was (as right well be she mowt)
The hool tresoure of all worldly blys.

Θ pese, no more! myn hert astoneth here
To here me prayse <the> vertu lo trewly
Of hir that had no fawt, withouten were,
As all the world hit saith as well as y
The whiche that knew hir deedis inthorowly.
God hath hir tane, y trowe, for hir good fame,
His hevene the more to ioy with sport and game,
The more to plese and comfort his seyntis,
For certis well may she comfort a rowt
(Noon is she saynt), she was here so devowt,
The hool tresoure of all worldly blys.

Not vaylith now, though y complayne this,
Al most we deye therto, so lete vs lowt,
For ay to kepe ther is no wight so stowt
The hool tresoure of all worldly blys.

Ch. 95, B LXIX

 équipé deth hath taken my maystres
Which y most louyd, as satt me well trewly,
I must now take my deth in hevynes,
For lengir lyue y may not here, but dey;
So that even for defawt of ioy only,
Thus ynly seek, y make my testament,
Which y haue write in sorow here, and care,
And humbly as y kan y hit present
To alle that trewly loue, where so they are.

2328 (Though she is not [technically] a saint) …
2331 besides, we all must die, …
As first of all, vnto the hy nobles,
To God of Loue, in deth y here that ly
Bitake my sowle with spirit of humbles,
Bisechyng him convey hit of mercy
Vnto his blis, and saue <hit> as wisly
As that y haue ben trewe in myn entent
Him forto serue (though y vnworthi ware),
As y dare well yet putt in the iugement
To alle that trewly loue, where so they are.

Ferthirmore, y wolde my gret ricchesse
Of loue, the which that y with payne did by,
That hit departid ben to huge largesse
To suche as trewly loue and serue, but y
Wol not hit partid be to frawders, fy!
—For had y leuyr yet to se hit brent!
Hit is no charge to me how ille they fare!
That swere y here in dethis hard turment
To alle that trewly loue, wher so they are.

Without sparyng my gold or yet money,
Trouth, wolde y biried be my lady by,
Which me is glad the tyme is to me lent,
And fare wel now this world of ioy so bare,
And as for my last wille: this bill be sent
To alle that trewly loue, where so they are.

Ch. 96, B LXX

I Was long tyme oon of the company
Of Loue and ware my tyme of lustynes,
And God of Loue (y thanke him hertily!)

2343-45 First of all, I who lie here near death entrust my soul with humble spirit to his majesty, the God of Love
2350 ... submit to the verdict [of]
2354 that it be distributed with great liberality
2359 That I swear here in the throes of death
2363 [for] which [burial] I am pleased [that] the time has come to me
2365 ... [it is that] this document be sent
2369-70 And the God of Love ... gave me an abundance of his goods
Of his goodis departid me larges,
But at the last, allas for gret distres,
Mi welthe bicomme my wo, my ioy my payne;
Thus in amverse eche ese y ouyrdres
That all is broke and newe to make ayene.

Full lite, or lasse, as had y went, trewly,
That ther had ben in loue such dowbilnes,
For eche man saith it is the lijf ioly
In which ther is more swete and gentilnes,
But y, allas, may othirwise witnes,
For whan y was as in my loue most fayne
And went had lyvid in my gret gladnes
<Then> all is broke and newe to make ayen.

But what! yet Loue y trust yet or y dy
As of sumthyng to helpe me, moche or lesse,
For the service y owe his regally
As feithfully as my poore wit koud dresse,
Withouten fraude or yet newfangilnes
Or anythyng that is to him ayen.
This swere y bi my trouthe—but neyrtheles,
Thus all is broke and newe to make ayen.

Loue, ordeyne me of thi gret goodnes,
That y no more cause haue to complayne,
Nor thus biwayle my lijf in hevynes
That all is broke and newe to make ayen.

In the Forest of Noyous Hevynes,
As y went wandryng in the moneth of May
I mette of Loue the myghti gret Goddes,
Which axid me whithir y was away.
I hir answerid, “As Fortune doth convey,
As oon exylid from ioy (al be me loth),
That passyng well all folke me cleyn may
‘The man forlost that wot not where he goth.’”

Half in a smyle ayen of hir humblesse
She seide, “My frend, if so y wist, ma fay,
Wherfore that thou art brought in such distresse,
To shape thyse y wolde my silf assay,
For heretofore y sett thyh hert in way
Of gret plesere. Y not whoo made thee wroth.
Hit grevith me thee see in suche aray,
The man forlost that wot not where he goth.”

“Allas!” y seide, “most souereyne good princesse,
Ye knowe my case, what nedith [me] to yow say?
Hit is thorugh Deth, that shewith to all rudesse,
Hath fro me tane that y most louyd ay,
In whom that all myn hope and comfort lay.
So passyng frendship was bitwene vs both
That y was not—to fals Deth did hir day—
The man forlost that wot not where he goth.

“Thus am y blynd (allas and welaway!)
Al fer myswent, with my staf grapsyng wey,
That no thyng axe but me a graue to cloth,
For pite is that y lyue thus a day,
The man forlost that wot not where he goth.”

Ch. 88, B LXIII

P
Lesaunt Bewte had woundid sore myn hert
In tyme apast so deepe and large, trewly,
That with the strok Loue at the wound in stert

2398 who asked me where I was going
2401 so that very appropriately everyone might call me
2407 ... I set your heart on the path
2414 [he] has taken from me [the one] whom I loved most always
And kept him there right long and privyly;  
But what, now late (y thanke God <hertily>)  
A good surgeoun, the which is callid playne  
No-care-of-that-is-passid-here-bifore,  
Hath heeld me of my grete grefis sore,  
Without so be the wounde renewe agayne.  

When that myn hert him sifl did hool aduert,  
He thankid him his heele right humbly,  
Him axynge where without more greef or smert  
That he endure shulde of suche malady.  
He him answerid (me thought right wittily),  
"Yes, and [thou] kepe thi brest a yere or twayne  
From wynd of loue and blasty sighis sore;  
Thou art now in good hele and kepe this lore,  
Without so be the wounde renewe agayne.  

Beware surfett (if thou wolt lyue in quart)  
Of plesere which will crepe in at an eye,  
Right as Yowthe woll them to thee conuert  
Which rewlid thee (thou wotist as wel as y),  
That sett afyre—and that so sodeynly—  
The poore loggyng as wherin that thou lay,  
With hoot desire that brennyd euyrmore,  
But that fyre is aqueynt and from thee tore  
Without so be the wounde renewe agayne."  

That y am hool hit is me very fayne,  
Bi this surgeoun y told yow heretofore,  
And heraftir y haue all loue forswore—  
Without so be the wounde renewe agayne.  

Ch. 90, B LXV

2434–36 he thanked the doctor humbly for his cure, asking him whether he would live without more injury or pain from such a wound  
2440 ... if you take this advice  
2442–45 Beware [of] surfeit of pleasure (if you want to be healthy) which will creep in through your eyes, just as Youth, who ruled you ... , wants them [the eyes] to convert you [to love]  
2449 But now that fire is quenched ...
Han fresshe Phebus, day of Seynt Valentyne,

Had whirlid vp his golden chare aloft,
The burnyd bemys of it gan to shyne
In at my chambre where y slepid soft,
Of which the light that he had with him brought
He wook me of the slepe of Heuynes,
Wherin forsllepid y all the nyght, dowltes,
Vpon my bed so hard of Newous Thought.

Of which this day, to parten there bottyne,
An oost of fowlis semblid in a croft
<Me> neye biside and pletid ther latyne
To haue with them, as Nature had them wrou3t
Ther makis forto wrappe in wyngis soft,
For which they gan so loude ther cries dresse
That y ne koude not slepe in my distres
Vpon my bed so hard of Newous Thought.

Tho gan y reyne with teeris of myn eyne
Mi pilowe, and to wayle and cursen oft
My destyny, and gan my look enclyne
These birdis to, and seide, "Ye birdis ought
To thanke Nature (where as it sittith me nou3t)
That han youre makis to youre gret gladnes,
Where y sorow the deth of my maystres
Vpon my bed so hard of noyous thought."

Als wele is him this day that hath him kaught
A valentyne that louyth him, as y gesse,
Where as this comfort sole y here me dresse
Vpon my bed so hard of Noyous Thought.
Ch. 91, B LXVI

Here many peple playne
On Loue and on his crewelte,
How he doth hem adewre in payne
Ther loue and in aduersite,
And al for lightly (soth to sayne)
They wold to grace amyttid be
Withouten greef, but wot ye playne:
He first shall fynde (what so he be!)
The amverse of his weele, certeyne.

So thenkith hit [hath] a rath brayne
And more yet to desire, parde,
For to the trewe the trouth must rayne
As at the last to get merce
Though first hit passe a yere or twayne
That they abide in poore degre,
Yet at the laste, forto ben fayne,
Long to endure a must be he
The amverse of his weele certayne.

The louver trewe that doth not fayne
Ay diligent in his degre
Forto deserue a thank agayne,
Ought he not bet it haue, seme ye,
Then he bi force that wolde restrayne
A loue, maugre her volunte?

2481 whereas I provide for myself only this comfort [i.e., the thought that others succeed]
2487 and all because with little effort . . .
2490 a lover shall first find . . .
2492–93 He who thinks so [to gain his lady’s grace easily] is rash, and even more [rash] to desire [to do so]
2494 i.e., loyalty must be proven through time.
2499 he must be he [one who] endures for a long time
2505 than he who would restrain by force
Who wolde a lady so constrayne,
A shall fynde in his pechere
The Amverse of his wele certayne.

But when a lady longe hath seyne
Hir man in suche perplexite,
Though Pite full aslepe haue leyne
She must awake him, of bounte,
In amverse of his wele certayne.

Ch. 97, *B LXXI*

Woofull hert, forcast with heuynes
Forto ben draynt in teeris feele pat rayne,
Allas, rathir then lyue in such dures,
Forbrest and part the lijf bitwene vs twayne
And rewe my lijf, all rewe <thou> not thi payne,
For though that ay to sorow thou not reche
Yet with the deth almes me, pore wrecche.

Karfull Seufan that waylith ay in woo,
Which clepid is the Goddes of Turment,
Nadde neuyr half the greef thou hast, no, no,
Wherfore me thynke as this in myn entent:
Hit sitt thee best that thou vnto hir went
And loke of yow which kan best sorow streccche
And with the deth almes me, poore wrecche.

Who so that lust aqueynt him sif with sorowe
As come to me and seche no fether thir wey;
I haue ynough to lene who woll it borowe,
Nor recche augeyn though they me nevir pay,
And yet, alas, hit kan not doon me day,
But, Antropos, <at> ones thi dewte fecche
And with the deth almes me, poore wrecche.

Thus ay diying y lyue and neuyr deed—
O Lacchesse, to longe thou makist thred!
Als flex to moche doth Cloto to <hir> recche.
O onys with deth almes me, poore wrecche!

No French

Aftir the day, that made is for travayle,
Ensewith nyght, the werre in to rest.
So now but late Slepe gan me so assayle
That to him yelde me thought it for be best,
Which all the day in karfull payne had lest,
So that to doon y made myn apparayle
To gon to bedde, syn daylight did me fayle
And that the sonne was closid in cloudis west.

As y was leyde, in slepe y was lightly,
And in my slepe y met right as y lay
That (as me thought) y sy right well trewly
Before me stonde a man with lokkis gray
Which y not knew—and yet y had him say,
For which that with my thoughtis writhid y
That y so had forgote him folily
And even for shame oon word ne durste him say.

2532–34 nor do I care if the borrowers never pay me back, and yet, alas, my sorrow cannot cause me to die, but, Atropos, get what is due to you at once
2538 also Clotho hands too much flax to her
2540 follows night, in which to rest
2544–46 [I] who had continued all day in miserable pain, so I made preparations to do that, [i.e.,] to go to bed . . .
2547 and the sun was covered by clouds in the west.
2548–50 When I had lain down, I fell asleep quickly, and in my sleep I dreamed just as I lay there that . . . I saw . . .
2552 . . . and yet I had seen him
He stent awhile and aftir resonyd me,  
Saiyng, "My frend, ne takist thou of me cure?  
Hit am y, Age, that wrytyng brought, parde,  
Vnto Childhode as from Dame Nature,  
Discharyng hir of thee the noriture;  
And vnto Youthe to rewle bitook y thee,  
Which hath thee gouernyd longe in nycete  
Nought havyng Resoun hit forto mesure.

"Now Resoun, which that doth eche wrong redresse  
And passith them, hath made a gret compleynt  
Vnto Nature on thee and thi maystres  
Of wrong doon. Y drede thou wolt be taynt.  
Avise thee now, for Yowthe y se hir faynt!  
For Yelde, the modir of vnweldynes,  
That all downe betith in hir crewelnes  
Not for thi good caste with thee to aqueynt!

"And hir to fle thee botith not, no, no!  
Nor trust that Yowthe kan ayde þee, wot þou what,  
Hit were foly. But with honour lo  
Thou mayst depart as now from Loue algate,  
For Loue and Elde are falle at gret debate,  
Werfore, or thou be take with Louys foo,  
Departe from him; thou shalt not greue him so,  
Syn deth as this hath tane thi lady late,

"Forwhi alle suche as is hem wel sittyng,  
That flowre in yowthe and in ther fresshe corage,

2558 It is I, Age, who brought a writ . . .  
2563 not having reason to temper it [Youth's folly]  
2564-66 Now Reason, who rights all wrongs and excells them [all those I have mentioned], has written a serious formal complaint against you and your mistress, Youth  
2568 i.e., your youth is passing.  
2571 intends to make your acquaintance, but not for your good!  
2577-78 . . . before you are captured by Love's foe [Elde], depart from him [Love]; you will not anger him by doing so  
2580-81 for all to whom love is suitable, who flourish in youth . . .
What game also make they and what skoffyng
When they se Elde is falle into dotage
Saiynge, 'O God, what ioy yond drye ymage
May do vnto a fayre lady likyng!
Bothe yong and olde thus goon þei lo mokkyng
When they se Elde right as a colt to rage.

"This mayst thou now leve Loue to thy honewre,
In siithe that no charge in gouernaunce
Is thee bileft. Also noon, be thou sewre,
Kan say thou dost it for fawt of puyshaunce,
But rathir say hit is for displeaunce
That thou full mayne wolst cloth thi sepulture
Syn Deth hath from thee tane the creature
Which is thi first and last in remembraunce;

"Wherfore biseche thou Loue right humbly,
If hit like him, to yelde thee thy homage
That thou him made (most poore and vnworthi!)
Bi levyng him thy hert so in morgage,
And thank him eek the welthe of his servage
That he thee gaf, of his gret curtesy;
This mayst thou hem depart out mawgre
To thi worship, as yet in myddil age.

"Eche louer, als, biseche thou with reuerence
That noon of them with thee displesid be
For anythyng doon in thyng Innocense
As while that thou were in ther company,

2582 "Also" belongs with "skoffing."
2584–85 'Oh God, what joy that shrivelled sight can give for a lovely lady's pleasure [to please a lovely lady]!'
2588–89 'Thus may you leave Love without losing your honor, since no duty in (your) care is left to you....
2591 can say that you are leaving Love...
2596–2601 wherefore, ask Love very humbly, if it pleases him, to return to you your homage which you gave to him ([though it was] most poor and unworthy) by leaving him your heart as a pledge [of your allegiance to him], and thank him also for the joy he gave you by allowing you to serve him of his great beneficence; thus you can depart from him without dishonor to your good name....
2607 i.e., one of their company.
Syn in this case that they must iugen thee.
So axe pardoun if they ought fynde offense,
And graunt thi service to the excellence
Of Loue and alle his folkis, he or she.

"Thus mayst thou part lo from þe ponysshment
Of God of Loue out havyng charge at hert.
This is my reed; now do thywn owen entent.
Als, truste not Fortune, with hir chere covert,
Which woll flatir to brynge thee fresshe in smert,
Saiyng she hath the sokoure to ben lent
And that she dayde not—though þi lady went;
Wherfore, beware, and hir dissayt avert!

"I wot right well this: and thou hir here
Thou wolt hir counsell rathir chese than myn
Which axe wol thee whi thou hast left hir clere.
But ware lest she eft brynge thee not in pyne
That now nast cause, this wost þou wel & fyne,
But in No Care thou leve may suche plesere
And flet thi craft so full of displesere,
The which full long in payne of hit hast lyne.

"And also this to comfort thee agayne
She woll the promes of amendement
Of alle hir wrongis doon to thee and payne
As that hit right is and convenyent;
But at the last be war of hir dissent,
For what he be she makith lo most fayne
At last she makith him woo, this dar y sayne.
Wher this be trewe, y putt in thi iugement."

2615 Also, do not trust Fortune, with her face hidden.
2617–19 saying [that] she has succor to grant to you and that your lady did not
die—even though she did; wherefore, beware, and watch out for her deceit!
2620 . . . if you listen to her
2624 [you] who have no cause [to feel pain] now [since you have no lady current-
ly] . . .
2627 [you] who have lain . . .
2629 she will promise you redress
2633 for whoever he may be [whom] she makes most happy
Even in a brayd therwith y stert and wook,
With hert tremblyng as leef of apsen tre
Saiyng, “Allas! neyvr such dreem me took
That made my poore hert so ynheve,
For if that Nature will no more, parde,
That y shall vpon fayre folkis loke,
I wot that Elde wold take me bi sum croke
That with more sorowe woll aqueynten me.’’

Yet neyvrtheles y thus me well bithought
This man, that in my slepe did calle him Age,
Had seid me trouthe—I knowe he gabbid nought—
That Elde had out a Writt tane of dotage
To tache me with, yn maugre my visage,
And as in Yowthe nas socoure to ben sought,
Thus nyst y lo what best was to ben wrought,
But even format stood like a dombe ymage.

But what, agaynst hir comyng yet, mafay,
Y will purvey my sif, ellis were y nyse,
Wherfore from Loue y shall depart away
And to his hond yelde vp all myn office,
For when Elde seth y <left> haue my service,
Hir only forto folow as y may,
I shall the lesse hir greven, dar y say...
And yet gret Payne to folow hir ther lyse.

This shall y doon as now, what so bifalle,
Withouten chaunge of othr newe purpos:
Even clene renounce here Louys werkis alle.
Hit is tyme rest myn hert, y me suppos,
To shette myn eyen and als myn eeris close
And ordayne so that me nevir shall
Loue haue entre thorugh Plesere at all.
I knowe the craft to wel me to forlose.

Who so that kast him silf to kepe from loue,
When slepy rest he felith his hert hath take,
Prysone his eyen, lest that ellis they him move,
For if thei goon at large they wol him wake,
So here and there woll they him plukke & shake,
And him to loue they wol, out resoun, shoue,
And say how hit is most [to] his bihoue
For his plesaunce sum fayre lady make.

YN myn owen hert all this werk know y pleyne,
Forwhi long tyme hit was me agreable
That in this world me thought nothyng, certeyne,
So good as loue nor yet so honowrable,
For y haue founde in writyng full notable
How that Loue hath, bi his myght souereyne,
A wrecche ymade a lord—this hath ben seyne;
To many folke thus is he profitable.

But y not knew that tyme, how that ther was
Loue forto kepe so gret aduersite
With the poore hert that stant in Louys cas,
But now y knowe, for which that y am he
That haue gret cause forto bithynken me
That feel myn hert forfayntid now—allas!—
Which willith neuyr in his lyvis spas
More melle with Loue for no thyng that may be.

2665–67 and to arrange [it] so that Love never shall have any entry into me at all through [?the gate of] Pleasure. I know the art too well to be beaten.
2670 [must] imprison his eyes . . .
2673 and they will force him to love, reason being absent
2678 so that nothing seemed to me . . .
2682 . . .—this has been seen
2684–86 ?But at that time I did not realize [that] Love would continue in such great adversity against the poor heart caught in his snare
Wherefore that ye, withouten more respite,
Wol make a bill in maner of request,
And how it is bifalle me in it write,
And when that hit is redy at the lest
I shall hit bere, when Loue next holdith fest,
To shewe him (rudely as ye kan endyte)
What paynys feele ther is (and smal profit!)
In pursewyng of Lovis hard conquest.

And thus of Loue and his goode folkis alle
I wol take leue in my most lowly manere,
But to yvill sayers stoppe my mouth y shall
That turne to ylle all that they se or here;
Thus may y lo rekewre bi fayre <rekkwer>
The promys which that made me to him thrall,
The which, god wott, all had y power small,
I gaf it him with myn hool hert entere,

And from his hondis thus to take myn hert
Which y him leyde bi obligacioun
The more sewrete to doon him so aduert
Of my service without condicioun,
Whiche service, with recommendacioun,
I shall delyuer (bothe of ioy and smert)
Vnto yong folke to loue hem to convert
Of lovis werk, bi resignacioun.

Ch. 99–105, "Songe en complainte"

§

Unto the excellent power and nobles
Of god Cupide and Venus pe goddes

2704–5 thus may I recover by fair request the pledge . . .
2707 "it" repeats "the which," which in turn refers to "promys."
2708 "To take" is parallel to "rekewre" (2704).
2709–10 which I advanced as security the more surely to cause him to be heedful
2712–15 which service, both of joy and pain, I shall, in abandoning Love's business, deliver, with greetings, unto young people to convert them [to love]
Bisechith this vnto youre regally
Most humbly
Yowre servaunt, Charlis Duk of Orlyaunce,
Which (saue youre grace) therto most vnworthi
That suget ly
Vnto youre most digne and royall obeyshaunce
That most willith do, to his puysshaunce,
Yowre plesaunce
And hath therin dispendid largely
His tyme of yowthe in the self governaunce
Owt displesaunce
In all he ought, for Payne or greef trewly
That if so lo hit were to youre plesere
To graunt him here
This poore request he doth to yow present,
Withouten refuse, tane of displesere,
Him forto here,
In which ther nys but trowthe vnto yow ment
(So helpe him God, that knowith his entent),
For where ye lent
Of welthe and ioy ynow him forto chere,
The cursid Fortune hath it fro him hent
And geue turment
Hym forto slee and makke a porre martere
Thorough cursid Deth (allas! the tyme, allas!)
That out trespas
In the most flowryng of hir lustynes

2718 The subject of "bisechith" is "Charlis": Charlis (2720) . . . bisechith . . . youre regally [your highnesses] (2718) . . . to graunt him (2731).
2721 "Which" and "that" (2724) are parallel and both refer back to "servaunt" (2720).
2726–29 and has spent his youth lavishly in that function in that same activity [i.e., pleasing you], without discontent, in all he owed, in spite of pain
2733–35 without refusal to hear him on account of your dispeasure, in which [request] . . .
2737 for whereas you granted
2740 and given torment [in place of it]
2743 who without fault [on the lady's part]
Hath from him tan (wo worth the cas!) 2745
The which that was
His verry sovl lady and gladnes,
For which only he hath ymade promes,
In his distres
(As clene dispayrid all his lyvis space) 2750
That neuyr more he chesen shall princes
Nor maystres,
The who his hert consentid to hit has,

Wherefore that he, in tyme tofore or now,
Yow made a vow 2755
Trewly to serue yow vnto his power,
Also he left (wel wot ye how!) 2758
His hert with yow
To ben his plegge of feithfull trewe desire,
The which that now yow humbly doth requere,
Out displesere,
Of yow to pardone him, as well ye mow
Therof, for, to he beddid haue his bere,
As more to lere
Of loue he nevr cast him silt to bow; 2765

Wherefore if so hit lust youre curtesy
And grace frely
To graunt him haue augeyne his sely hert
And als the wothe that he lete with hit ly,
That worshipfully 2770
He myght depart, without more greef or smert,

2746 she who was
2748 for which reason alone . . .
2753 whose heart has consented to it
2760–65 who humbly asks you now, without being displeased, to pardon [release] him from it [that vow], as you well can, because, until he dies, he never intends to submit himself to learn more of love. “Of yow” apparently duplicates “yow” in 2759.
2766–67 Wherefore, if it suit your good will and graciousness . . .
2769–70 and also the oath . . . so that with due honor [accorded to you]
That hath in trust, he hath no more desert,
Gef ye aduert
His service doon vnto yowre regally,
Which sat him nere than euyr sat him shert
Full couert,
Thus shewe yowre grace to hem þat for hit cry

And call to yowre secretary this,
Which namyd is
Good Trouthe, and to comaunde him loo
A lettir forto make, him to dismys
Of all servis,
Doyng to wite vnto all folk also
That, with his hert, at large ye lete him goo
Withouten moo,
As quyt discharge of all bond and promys,
For yowre welwillere ay and not yowre foo
(For neuyr no
Was he yet so—God helpe him now as wis!),

So that yowre seid bisecher may
Fre goon alway,
Out any lett his fredom to restrayne;
As thorugh yowre writyng forto say,
So for him lay
That he is not to blame, certayne,
Though that from yow he him refrayne
Syn Deth hath slayne
The fayre, soote flowre þat was his lady ay,
Which of alle fayre myght bere a name souerayne;
(Alas for payne,
How had he hert to doon hir forto day?)

2772 [with] what he has [i.e., had left] in trust, he has deserved no more (i.e., no less)
2780 “To comaunde” is parallel with “shewe” (2777) and “call” (2778).
2786–87 as entirely released of all feudal obligations, to be seen as your wellwisher.
2792 Without any hindrance . . .
2794 so [in addition] set down on his behalf
2796 though he remove himself from [your court]
If this to doon hit listith yowre nobles
As of almes,
Yowre supplyaunt a stondith in good cas
To ben alightid of his heuynes
And gret distres
[ ... ] his hert in newe solas,
Ay praiyng for yow in his lyvis spas
That good gras
Come to yow bothe, the god and eek goddes,
For the gret welthe he had within yowre plas
While he ther was
In his fortimle of yowthe and lustynes.
Ch. 105–108, “La Requeste”

§

Hen that next approchen gan the fest
Of Loue and semblid was his parlement,
I only did present him my request,
The which he redde bi good avisement
And seide, “My frend, of thi grevous turment
I sory am, so truste me very sewre,
But what may y doon thee recurement,
Syn geyne the strok of deth ther is no cure?

“Putt all suche mynde and sorow from þi brest
And all the rage of suche grevis feruent,
Eek shewe thi silf a man and not a best,
For if lo in this payne thou be forshent
Thorugh thi self wille, hit axith ponysshement,
For resoun ought to rewle eche creature.
Ay forto wayle, what helpith such talent,
Syn gayne the strok of deth ther is no cure?

“Pluk vp thyn hert and make a newe conquest

2803–4 as an act of mercy, your suppliant is in a good position
2820 but what remedy may I give you
2828 ... what good does such passion do
And thou fro me shalt haue suche socoure sent  
That thou shalt wynne sum lady at the lest 
Forto aply vnto thy owen entent 
In all to hir that is conuenyent 
Bothe yong and good and fayre of eche fulture.  
Thou mayst ben glad to haue such happe þe lent, 
Syn geyne the strok of deth ther is no cure.”
Ch. 108, “La Departie d’Amours en Ballades,” I

“Allas sir! allas sir! pardoun me,  
For while y lyue hit may not be!” quod y, 
“I promyse yow bi faith of my bode  
As neuyr eft to chese loue nor lade.  
Plesaunce and y han partid company  
The which that hath all ioy tane fro me clos.  
No more therof, y pray yow hertily,  
Forwhi y am full ferre from that purpos!

“What nede of yow these wordis spoken be? 
Leue ye me not? allas, wene ye y lye?  
Or ellis for yowre disport thus don hit ye  
To skorne at me, forwhi, sir, verily,  
Me semeth now hit were a gret foly,  
When that y may my silf of loue repos,  
To take on me suche thoughtfull charge hevy,  
Forwhi y am full fer from that purpos.

“Aquyt y haue me to my poore degre  
Of my service vnto yowre regally;  
From this tyme forth y wol no more ben he.  
Wherfore, as lustith lo yowre curtesy,  
To graunt my bone y pray yow humbly,  
For me not lust with yow to iape a glose

2833–34 [unto whom] to devote your own heart in all that is fitting to her  
2851 when I can keep myself away from love  
2855–56 of my service due unto your highness; from this time forward I will no longer be he [who serves you]  
2858–59 ... I beg you humbly to grant my request, for I do not wish to jest flatteringly with you
Nor neuyr did, nor shall to that y dy,
Forwhi y am full ferre from that purpos."
Ch. 109, II

When Loue had well parceyvid myn entent
And sigh my purpos wolde not chaungid be,
He seide, "My fren, y had well othir ment
Thou wolde haue doon as at request of me
And not so sone forsaken this my fee;
But what, syn now y see thou wolt it nought,
I here agraunt it lo vnpto the free
As the request thou hast to me bisought.

"Thee to geynsey <ner> me conuenyent,
For trewe service thou hast me doon, parde,
Nor neyvr knew y that thou othir ment
In weele nor thought, but ay in oon degre
Redy to doon in all that satt to thee
For any greef or payne þat were thee wrouȝt;
Wherfore to graunt thee now y woll ben he
As the request thou hast to me bisought.

"And for that alle shall knowe wel how þou went,
With my good will, out hatrede or maugre,
Ye shull haue by my court of parlement
A quytaunce geve, bi which þat alle may se
That y relesid haue thee, he or she,
Of all homage that thou vnto me ought
Wherfore as wel content [thee] lo that we
Graunt thee request thou hast to vs bisought."
Ch. 110, III

2864–66 ... My friend, I had wished otherwise [of you, i.e.,] that you would have done as I asked and not so soon forsaken in this way your service to me
2868 I grant it [your request, 2869] to you freely.
2870 It would not be fitting for me to refuse you
2872–75 nor did I ever know that you desired to do anything else in will or thought, but were always ... ready to do all that befitted you in spite of any mental torment ...
2882 "He or she" refers back to (and is equivalent to) "alle" in 2881.
2885 grant the request you have asked of us
For which that Loue anoon full ryally
Assemblid <had> his court of parlement,
Tofore hem alle my case declarid y
As bi ther licence and comaudement
Where as anoon ther graunt vnto hit went
That y shulde haue a quytaunce ful frely
Of all service and made my bond be rent
To doon withall what that y wolde, trewly.

And so myn hert, that y lete for me ly
In hostage that y trewe and diligent
Shulde ben to Loue, y of ther curtesy
Bisought them fayre to haue delveuement
The which that Loue had longe in gouernement.
This axid y, and alle they with oon cry
Seide, “Ye, ye, ye! We woll therto consent
To doon withall what that a woll trewly!”

On knees downe y fell right humbly
To thankyn Loue the grace he hath me lent,
For where as in an extreme forto dy
Myn hert lay, he deed hit to him hent
And bi Comfort so hath it to me sent
Wrappid in blak, and y full esily
Put it into my bosom, well content
To doon withall what that y lust trewly.

Ch. 111, IV

2889–90 with their permission and at their request, whereupon they gave their consent at once
2892 . . . and caused my deed of obligation to be torn up. “To doon withall” (1293) refers back to “quytaunce” (2891), not to “bond” (2892).
2894–95 And so my heart that I had deposited as a pledge that . . .
2897–98 begged them courteously to release, which [i.e., my heart] Love had in his control for a long time
2900–2901 . . . we will consent to that [i.e., to return his heart], to do therewith that which he truly wishes
2906 and via Comfort thus has sent it to me
When that y had myn hert and my quytaunce,
Mi gost therwith was waxen light trewly,
And nerpeles <yit> for the akeyntaunce
I had of God of Lovis regally
And of the folkis of his company,
When y shuld take my leue of them agayn
The departyng well nygh did me dy,
That of wepyng y koude me not restrayne.

Loue gan perceyue my carfull countenaunce
And seide, "My frend, y pray thee hertily,
If ther ben ought as vndir my puysshaunce
To doon thee ese, ne spare it not hardily."
But then y was so woofull and heuy
That y to him oon word koude speke agayn
—Oon word? no, nor half oon, verily,
That of wepyng y koude me not restrayne,

But thus departid y in displesaunce
From Loue which that made a chere drery,
And as a man forravisshid in a traunce
I took my leue and so departid y,
And Comfort seide that he wolde gon me by
For whidir to goon not wist y, soth to sayne—
Myn eyen so fordreynt in teeris ly
That of wepyng y koude me not restrayne.

Ch. 114, V

Comfort and y thus went in hondis tayne,
And to the gate he gan me to convoy,
Forwhi Loue, the myghti kyng souerayn,
Had chargid him to sett me in the way
To goon where as y wolde my selvyn say,
Which was vnto an auncient, oold manar,
Wherin long y had in childhod lay,
Which callid is the Castell of No Care.

Unto Comfort y gan me thus complaye,
Him praiyng not to leue me all that day,
Lest that y me myswent, forwhi certayne
Bi Displesere y myght the hard cawsay
Ellis take where Elde hath so fele ioyes slay,
But and we not this nyght ours labour spare,
We shall wel come vnto the place, mafay,
Which callid is the Castell of No Care.

So long we roode [that] at the last, to sayn,
We come as where that we the castell say,
So at the yate we light, to telle yow playne,
And the porter, that knew vs well bothe tay,
Anoon the gate gan open with a kay,
Which to vs seide, “Ye bothe, right as ye ar,
Welcome. Y kan not paynt my wordis gay.”
[Which callid is the the Castelle of No Care]
Ch. 114, VI

The rewler of this habitacioun
Hight Tyme Apast, which with glad countenaunce
Seide me, “Wanton, haue ye yet found sesoun
To come and take here this poore soiournacne?”
I seide him, ye, if hit were his plesaunce
Not to eschewe my wrecchid company,
To dwelle with him it was myn affyaunce
And there to bide vnto that howre y day.

2947 but if we push on tonight
2950-52 We rode so long that finally, to be sure, we came to [a place] where we saw the castle, so we dismounted at the gate . . .
2955-56 who said to us, ‘You two, just as you are, welcome!’ . . .
2964 it was my solemn promise to dwell with him
So told y him of all the gret chesoun
That did me parte from Louys gournaunce.
He to me seide, a trouthe y had resoun,
When he had ouyrred all my quytaunce,
And so y prayde him kepe it, in substaunce,
For which that he gan thanke me hertily
Of that it lust me take so poore pitance
And there to bide vnto that howre y dy.

The next morow y wrote or rose the son,
(For Comfort home to Loue wolde nede avaunce)
In which y made recommendacioun
Of his goodnes and wrot him all my chaunce,
Which Comfort took and gan home with hit prauce
Loue to report how Passid-Tyme and y
Were falle into a fresshe newe acqueyntaunce,
And there to bide vnto that howre y dy.

Ch. 115, VII

§

To the high and myghti lord of gret nobles
Cupide, prince of all worldly gladnes,

Ost excellent, most high & nobil prince,
Most myghti kyng in eche rewm or provynce,
As humbly as that servaunt kan or may
Recomaunde his lord and maystir ay,
So recomaunde y me, or more, to yow,
And also y am he, as thenke ye how,

2968–71 He said to me that, in truth, I had reason (to leave Love), when he had read through my whole quittance, and so I asked him to keep [and preserve] it . . ., for which reason
2972 that it pleased me to accept his modest hospitality
2976–77 in which I commended [Comfort] for his goodness and wrote Love concerning all that had happened to me
2979 to report to Love . . .
2981 and [how I was] to stay there [with him] until my death day
2987 recommend himself ever to his lord and master
That most desire to here of yowre nobles
And yowre estat, which God so encres

To as moche honoure as y <you> desire
To haue, or more then y kan write yow here,
Of which y wolde biseche yow me endite
Bi eche comer, if it plesse yow to write,
Forwhi to here of yowre honure and wele
Hit is my verry ioy and hertis hele,
And if it plesse myght to yowre regally
To knowe my fare, of yowre gret curtesy,

I am in hele (thankid be God of all),
Ioyfull at hert, for thought nave y at all,
For Tyme-Apast in his Place of No Care
Resceyvid me in right goodly manere
To soiourne so as long as likid me
Vnto that y with Elde atachid be,
For then y wot y must, withouten more,
Fynysshe [m]y lyue—this thought me grevith sore

And sleth my hert to haue the remembraunce—
But what y yet am fer fro hir puysshaunce,
For small it is that yet y sett hir by
Which stond at large without[en] iewparty;
Als, wot ye well, y haue sent yow Comfort
Which gidid me vnto this poor resort
Callid No Care (for which that hertily
I thanke yow of his good company),

Which he hath doon bi yowre comauendment
With right good hert and ioyfull, glad entent,
To whom as plesith yow to gefe fyance

2994 Of which estate [2991] ... 
3006-7 for then I know I must die immediately ... 
3009-11 except that I am far from her [Elde's] power, on account of which I set little store by her as yet, [I] who remain at liberty [i.e., he is still far from old] ... 
3016 "Which" refers back to "gided" (3013).
3018-27 To whom, if it please you to rely on [the truth of] that which I trust him
Of that y trust him say yow in substaunce
(The which bi mouth kan telle it yow more playne
Then y kan write) and eek such thyng agayne
As towchith me, y pray yow him to here,
And also pardon me y yow requere

That y kan not write to Yowre Excellence
As that y ought yow my dewe reuerence,
Forwhi it is the faut of vnkonnyng
That stoppith me to doon my welwillyng;
Als ferthirmore y axe yow here mercy,
For y knowe well y fawtid fowle trewly
When that y last departid from yow loo,
Forwhi y was so verry full of woo

That oon poore word y koude not to yow make
Nor as y shulde my leue loo from yow take,
But y thanke yow as humbly as y may
Of welthe y had vndir yowre lordship ay.
No more as now y write yow verily
But that God which is most myghti
Sende yow honoure and long lijf to endure
And that ye may alwey the gret rigure

Surmount of Daunger, maugre all his myght,
Which euyrmore doth warre ayens yowre right.
Wrete in No Care, the date yove to remembre
As on the thrittenthe day of Novembre,

Bi the trewe Charlis, Duk of Orlyaunce,
That sumtyme was oon of yowre pore servaunce.

Ch. 116, lines 487–550

---
to tell you in general ... and also [of] things which pertain to me [personally], I pray you to listen to him [Comfort], and I also ask you to forgive me that I cannot express in writing to Your Highness the proper reverence that I owe you, for it is the lack of skill that stops me from expressing my good will.
3022 "him" repeats "to whom" (1318).
3035 for the happiness I had ...
3037 except (to wish) that God ...
3042 Written at [the Castle of] No Care, the date given as a matter of record
O F Passid Tyme the plaster of No Care
Vnlo myn hert so long and soft hath leyne
That y am hool, now am y right wel ware,
Of euery greef (God thanke y him certayne),
So that y trust y nevir shall agayne
Falle in the self disese to that y dey
The which is callid Lovis Malady.

And yet myn eyen doth all that in hem are
To spy abowt if so ther myght be sayn
On plesaunt bewte for him on to stare
Inliche to hir that me forthrow in payne
That of of me did thynne the chekis rayne,
Which brought also vnto my company
The which is callid Louys Malady.

Myn eyen fast they loken here and thare
But so well chaste ar they now bothe tayne
That for Plesaunce vnethe as dar thay square,
And yet y lete them renne vpon the playne,
Forwhi as now (the more lo am y fayne)
I drede but lite, or yet more lesse trewly,
The which is callid Lovis Malady.

When y se folkis now on loue complayn
I laughe as that myn hert shulde brest atayne,
Forwhi hit is so plesaunt a foly

3046–47 The plaster of No Care of [applied by] Time Past has lain against my heart for so long and so softly
3053–56 and yet my eyes do all they can to discover whether there might be in view a beautiful lady for them to gaze on like her . . .
3057 who [my eyes] often drenched my lean cheeks [with tears]
3059 that which is called Love's malady
3061–63 but they are now both so well chastened that at [the appearance of] Plesaunce [i.e., plesaunt bewte] they hardly dare to step out of line, and yet I let them run loose
The which is callid Lovis Malady.

Ch. 120, LVIII

Baladis, songis, and complayntis—
God wot they are forgote in my party,
Forwhi ennoy and thought so forfayntis
Me that y in slouthe aslepe so ly,
But to achase fro me all thought hevy,
How rewedly that y do, y shall assay
Where that y kan, as y was wont to, say,
<Or> at the lest my laboure nyl y spare,
All wot y well my selven this, mafay:
That euyrmore my tonge woll turne away,
Forwhi y fynde him rollid in No Care.

All plesaunt wordis in me disyoentis;
So am y all forsotid in foly
That all such art in me now detayntis,
But where y fayle, y pray yow hertily
That rede my werk and kan doon bet ban y,
Where as y fayle, ye lust amende hit ay,
Forwhi in rage yowthe so full of play
Hit made was, wherfore, howso y square,
Forgef it me, forwhi vnto this day
I wold hit mende but what my tonge ne may,
Forwhi y fynde him rollid in No Care.

The speche of loue so fresshely depaynt is
With Plesere, where loue settis hertily

3073-74 ... makes me so faint that I thus lie slothfully asleep
3076-81 however crudely I do [it], I shall try [see] whether I can make [a poem] as I used to, or at least I will do my best [to do so], although I know this well, certainly: that my tongue will always turn away [from making songs], because I find him wrapped in No Care
3084 that all such art [of composing] is held back in me
3090-91 ... for until the present [from then till now] I would like to amend it, except that my tongue cannot
3093-96 ?The speech of lovers (where love sits sincerely) is brightly adorned with Pleasure, who [that] always again and again makes himself known [i.e., is a friend] to them to speak for what pertains to them.
That ay from fresshe to fresshe them aquayntis
To speke for that as doth vnto them ly,
For when that y was in ther company
I for my silf gan fast seche wordis gay—
And fond them well—that now ly in decay
(So haue y them forspent), y wot not whare,
And, tho that are bileft me oon or tay,
Mi tunge hem wrestith fer out of aray,
Forwhi y fynde him rolld in No Care.

But here y make my Iewbile or y day,
To doon louers for my sowle to pray,
And yet y wott my speche hit wol not fare
But thorugh Good Hope, y thus my labour lay,
And yet for fere my tonge saith "Nay, nay, nay!"
Forwhi y fynde him rolld in No Care.

But for bi cause that deynte lo is leef
Which doth oft tyme the grosse mete sett aside,
That is the cause that motoun, veel, or beef,
Nor pigge, nor goos y cast yow noon provide,
But and ye lust so poore a fare abide,
Instede of mete, y fede yow shall with song,
And for mysve though that my wordis glide
Take them aworth y pray yow alle among,

And for folk say "short song is good in ale"
That is the cause in rundell y hem write.
The swettist mete, als, is of birdis smale,
As quaylilis rounde and eek the larkis lyte.

3097 "Ther" refers to lovers.
3102 my tongue twists them out of their proper order [or perhaps strains the words from their proper usage]
3110–11 But because a delicacy is pleasing, which often causes the plain food to be set aside
3117 accept them kindly, I pray you all together
But what, all this y putt hit in respite,
For fowlis alle reherse here were to long,
But loke wherto ye haue youre appetit
And seke hem in this disshis forthe among 3125

Parde, folk sayne that lovers lyue bi lokis,
And bi wisshis and othir wanton thought,
Wherfore sum thing y trust in this bok is
To fede them on, if hit be well out sought,
And if so that hit him prevaylen ought,
Without they konne me thonk, thei don me wrong,
For with laboure y haue it for hem bought f 60v
As them to plese and fede them with among.

Wherfore as this vnto yow louers all,
Here is my fest, if hit plese yow to fong 3135
(But pardon me that hit is lo so small),
At sum tyme if y mende hit shall among.

No French

His May that Loue not lusten forto slepe f 61r
But doth his folke in nyse conseitis wake,
Ther nys as now suche thoughtis me to take,
For in myn ere may noon suche fleis crepe. 3140

Then mervell it is not (who takith kepe)
Thoug that y me my silf full mery make

3122 . . . I shall abandon all this [my intention of enumerating all the small birds
with which I might feed you]
3124–25 but decide what you would like to eat and look for it [those things that
please you] among these dishes
3130 and if it be of any use to them
3135 . . . if you will agree to accept it
3137 on the understanding that (?) I shall improve it here and there at some later
date
3138–39 This May in which Love does not wish to sleep but causes his people to
lay awake with wanton notions [thoughts]
3141 for no such thoughts may disturb me
This May that *Loue not lusten forto slepe*
*But doth his folke in nyse conseitis wake.*

When that y slepe y nethir wake nor wepe,
For ther nys in me sech thoughtis blake,
And evyr so y cast hem of to shake
In this most ioyous lijf my silf to kepe

This May that *Loue not lusten forto slepe*
*But doth his folke in nyse conseitis wake,*
*Ther nys as now suche thoughtis me to take,*
*For in myn ere may noon suche fleis crepe.*

Ch. 204, Chanson I

Ow holde him silf from loue, let se þat may,
For, as for me, y may kepe me no more;
I nede must loue for any greef or sore,
And yet y not what happe wol to me way,

*Forwhi oft tyme y haue herd folkis say*
That trowbill gret is ther in Lovis lore,
*Now hold him silf from loue, let se þat may,*
*For, as for me, y may kepe me no more.*

*My hert gan him acquaynt the tothir day*
With Bewte, which so cherid him therfore
That hir to serve he hath him silf yswore—
Teys doon; he <hers> is and wol be to he day.

*Now hold him silf from loue, let se þat may,*
*For, as for me, y may kepe me no more;*
*I nede must loue for any greef or sore,*
*And yet y not what happe wol to me way.*

Ch. 204, C II

3146 When I sleep I neither keep waking up nor cry in my sleep
3148-49 and I intend always to shake them off thus in order to keep myself in this most joyous life
3155 and yet I do not know what sort of fortune I will receive
3161 . . . who consequently treated him so hospitably
What so be that y say, parde,
Of Loue or of his gret rigure,
Yet this for trouthe y yow ensure:
A lady haue y chosen me,

Fulfillid of grace and gret bounte
Surmountyng euery creature

What so be that y say, parde,
Of Loue or of his gret rigure.

But nevirtheles yet am y he
That dar not out his hert discure,
Yet alsolong as that y lijf endure
I hiris am and evir so woll be

What for be that y say, parde,
Of Loue or of his gret rigure,
Yet this for trouthe y yow ensure:
A lady haue y chosen me.

Ch. 205, C III

S she not full of all goodly manere,
The which y loue in my most feithful wise?
God helpe me so, as when y hir avise,
In all this world me thynkith not hir pere!

Ye louers, now how say yow? lete vs here—
What is she worth? let se, sett to a prise!

Is she not fulle of alle goodly manere,
The which y loue in my most feithful wise?

In daunce or song, laughtir or sobir chere
Or what she doo, in ought that to hir lise,
Say yowre verdit. Let trowthe be iustice
And flatir not, on trouthe, y yow requere—

3189 or what she does, in anything that pertains to her
Is she not fulle of alle goodly manere,
The whiche y loue in my most faithfull wise?
God helpe me so, as when y hir avise,
In alle this world me thynkith not hir pere!

Ch. 206, C IV

Syn that y haue a nounparall maystres
The which hath hool my service & myn hert,
I shall be glad for any greef or smert
To serve hir in hir goodly lustynes,

For now y trust to haue, douteles,
More ioy then ther be stichis in my shert,
Syn that y haue a nounparall maystres
The whiche hath hool my service & myn hert.

Though to envious hit be hevynes
And sorow gret, to don hem prike and stert,
Yet, bi my trouthe, when that y me aduert
Ther displesere, hit is my gret gladnes,

Syn that y haue a nounparall maystres
The whiche hath hool my service & myn hert,
I shalle be glad for any greef or smert
To serve hir in hir goodly lustynes.

Ch. 206, C V

God, how that she lokith verry fayre,
The goodly swete, my very hertis blis,
That for the grace the which pat in hir is
To eueri wight hir prays doth newe repayre.

Who is it he that kouthe hit loo contrayre?
For hir bewte reneweth ay ywis.

3202 Though it vex and sadden [be vexation and great sorrow to] the envious
3211 her praise is heard again and again by everyone
O God, how that she lokith very fayre,  
The goodly swete, my very hertis blis!  

She hath no peere, she lyvith withouten eyre  
(Of alle the fayre y except noon as this),  
For in hir loo ther nys oon poynt amys.  
Tis a dere hert worth a thousand payre.

O God, how that she lokith very fayre,  
The goodly swete, my very hertis blis,  
That for the grace the which pat in hir is  
To eueri wight hir prays doth newe repaye.

Ch. 207, C VI

B
I God but oon, my verry plesaunt Iay,  
Myn hert even full is of gladnes  
When y biholde the yowthe and lustynes  
Of yowre body with long, streight sidis tay,

Forwhi the lookis of yowre eyen gray  
Thei putt me out of all hevynes.

Bi God but oon my verry plesaunt Iay  
Myn hert even fulle is of gladnes,

Albe that cursid speche—yvill mote they day!—  
Full often tyme han doon me gret dures,  
But care ye not, lady maystres,  
Forwhi the more y loue yow lo alway.

Bi God but oon my verry plesaunt Iay  
Myn hert even fulle is of gladnes  
When y biholde the yowthe and lustynes  
Of yowre body with long, streight sidis tay!

Ch. 207, C VII

3216–17 ... she lives without heir (I include all the beauties in my comparison, with no exceptions)
3222 By the one God, my truly delightful Joy
3230 even though wicked speech [of slanderers]—may they die wretchedly!—
Ow say me lo myn hert, what is þi reed?
Ne is hit best y to my lady goo
And telle hir of my dedly greef and woo
That y endure thorugh hir goodlihed?

Loo, for thi wele and for hir womanhed
Reson wol not <ye> vttir hit, no, no!
Now say me, lo, myn hert, what is þi reed?
Ne is hit best y to my lady goo,

Forwhi y wot she is so good in dede
That harme a were and mercy were hir fro.
How thenkist thou? nyst best þat y do so?
O comfort me, that am so full of drede!

Now say me, lo, myn hert, what is þi reed?
Ne is hit best y to my lady goo
And telle hir of my dedly greef and woo
That y endure thorugh hir goodlihed?

Ch. 208, C VIII

As> oon swete look of yowre eyen tayne—
Which Wikkid Speche doth fro me refrayne—
As wisshith hit me at lest as often loo
As y haue thoughtis on yow, where y goo—
Of yowre fayre body and streight sidis playne.

Wot ye wherfore, my verry ioy souerayn
Whom y most loue? God wot y do not fayne
As for my trouthe—if cause ye fynde, no moo!—

3245 that it would be a pity if mercy were absent from her.
3250-54 I desire a single, sweet look from your eyes—which Slander frequently prevents—at least as often as I think of you, wherever I am—of your beautiful body and your straight, smooth flanks.
3255-57 Do you know why [I desire one sweet look], my true, sovereign joy whom I most love? God knows I am not just pretending to be loyal—if you find it so [reward me] never again!
As oon swete look of yowre eyen tayne
Which Wikkid Speche doth fro me refrayne
As wishe hit me at lest as often loo?

For whi y best may say (this dar y seyne)
That all plesere y take hit of disdayne
For this, madame (ye kan not thenke hit, noo!),
When y departid last ye did me soo
Werthefully yowre look forto refrayne

As oon swete look of yowre eyen tayne
Which Wikkid Speche doth fro me refrayne
As wishe hit me at lest as often loo
As y haue thoughtis on yow, where y goo—
Of yowre fayre body and streight sidis playne.

Ch. 209, C IX

Ho so biholdith wel as with my eye
Mi verry lady and my sul maystres,
In hir he shall se a grete and hvug larges
Of <plesaunce>, spryngyng from grete to more goodly.

Hir speche is such and hir demene, trewly,
That hit wol brynge any hert into gladnes,
Who so biholdith wel as with myn eye
My verry lady and my sul maystres.

For yong and oold that lokith here wisly,
To preysen hir hardily they nevir cesse
But sayne echon that hit is a goddes
Which is descendid downe from heven on hy,

Who so biholdith wel as with myn eye
My verry lady and my sul maystres,

3261-65 Because I may best say (I am sure) that I derive all my pleasure from [your] disdain, for this, madam (no, you can not believe it!), you did to me when I last left you, honorably withholding your eyes from me
3269 Whoever beholds carefully the way I do
3277 For young and old who look at her carefully
3279 but each one says that she is a goddess
In hir he shalle se a gret and houg larges
Of plesaunce, sproynyg from gret to more goodly.
Ch. 209, C X

This monthe of May, withouten pere princesse
The sovl plesere of all myn hope & thou3t,
Ye haue myn hert yn al ye may or ought,
So ordeyne me a lady and maystres,

Wherfore that y biseche yowre gantiles
To take in gree this bill here to yow wrofft,
This monthe of May, withouten pere princesse
The sovl plesere of all myn hope & thought.

And that ye lust to lesse myn hevy,nes,
I yow biseche that ye forslouthe it nought,
But in yowre silf that ye ben ay bithought
Sum recomfort to geue me or gladnes

This monthe of May, withouten pere princesse
The sovl plesere of all myn hope & thought,
Ye haue myn hert yn al ye may or ought,
So ordeyne me a lady and maystres.
Ch. 210, C XI

Omaunde me what ye will in everi wise
To me that am yowre sely, poore servaunt
And evirmore vnto yow obeyshaunt
With myn hool hert, with power and servise.

Redy am in what that in me lise
Out <sparyng> this or that, y dar avaunt;
Omaunde me what ye will in everi wise
To me that am yowre sely, poore servaunt.

3291 If you wish to lessen my woe
3298 "Me" repeats "me" of the previous line.
3302 Without exempting anything ...
Cast all consait away that doth yow grise
Asay me where that y be suffisaunt
To doon for yow as y haue made yow graunt,
And, if y fayle, take nevir of me prise.

Comaunde me what ye will in everi wise
To me that am youre sely, poore servaunt
And evirmore vnto youw obeyshaunt
With myn hool hert, with power and servise.
Ch. 210, C XII

If so were that ye knowe my woo trewly,
Mi verri gladdist remembraunce,
This knowe y well withouten doubtaunce:
That ye wolde shewe vnto me sum mercy.

Allas, madame, banysshe youre refuse (fy!)
That cowardly me holdith in penaunce.
If so were that ye knowe my woo trewly,
My verry gladdist remembraunce.

Ye graunten wolde my bone pat for [hit] cry.
Syn that y hool am youris in substauce,
What vaylith yow to doon me this grevaunce?
Whi lustith yow forto geynsay me, why?

If so were that ye knowe my woo trewly,
My verry gladdist remembraunce,
This knowe y welle withouten dountaunce:
That ye wolde shewe vnto me sum mercy.
Ch. 212, C XV

I verry ioy and most parfit plesere,
Whiche are of me and all y haue maystres,
So willith me to se yow, lo dountles,
That half how moche y kan not say yow here,

3305 cast away all considerations that cause you to fear [testing me] . . .
For wot ye this, myn owyn lady dere:
That without yow nave y good nor gladnes,
My verryn ioy and most parfit plesere,
Whiche are of me and all y haue maystres;

For when y werid am with Displesere,
Whos power oft hath brought me in distres,
Me to requere to comfort more or lesse
Nis ther, saue hope as sone to se yow here,

My verryn ioy and most parfit plesere,
Whiche are of me and all y haue maystres,
So willith me to se yow, lo dowtles,
That half how moche y kan not say yow here,

Ch. 213, C XVI

Orere then the deth nys thyng vnnto me leef,
Syn recomfort vnnto my karfull greef
May noon be found to ioy my woofull hert,
But, as a wrecche, avaunt y may of smert
That wrongfully my payne is to [me] geef.

Fare well, Hope, for noon may me releef!
Thorugh loue, Fortune hath cast me to myschef,
Which shapen had my deth tofore my shert.
More then the deth nys thyng vnnto me
Syn recomfort vnnto my karfull greef
May noon ben found to ioy my woofull hert.

O God of Loue, thou wost y am no theef,
Nor falsyng of my trouthe thou kan not preef.
Whi shall y dey, then, wolde y fayne aduert—

3335–36 there is nothing at all to summon me to comfort [i.e., to comfort me] except [my] hope to see you here soon
3339 Nothing is dearer to me than death
3342–43 ... I may boast that my pain is given to me wrongfully
3343 "Payne repeats "smert" of previous line.
3351–53 nor can you prove [my] violation of my word. Why I must die, then, I wish to discover—although I do not care to escape from Death
Although from Deth y kepe not now astert, 
Though that he stood right even here at my sleve.

More then the *deth nys thyng vnto me leef* 3355
Syn recomfort *vnto my karfull greef*
May noon ben found to ioy my woofull hert,
But, as a wrecche, avaunt y may of smert
That wrongfully my payne is to geef. 

Ch. 213, C XVII

_-package_ Goodly fayre, which y most loue and drede, 3360
In seche hape and grace as have y wonyd
That yowre Daunger hath me enprisonyd
Longe in the bewte of yowre goodlihed,

But (welaway!) that Pite loo is deed,
For, were she quykke, long nar y this bandonyd,
O goodly fayre, _which y most loue and drede_, 3365
_In seche hape and grace as have y wonyd._

But and ye helpe wolde, of yowre womanhed,
That onys y myght ben outraunsonyd,
A shulde ben lo right well gardonyd
If ones at large y myght bere vp myn hed,

O goodly fayre, _which y most loue and drede_, 3370
_In seche hape and grace as have y wonyd_
That yowre daunger hath me enprisonyd
Longe in the bewte of yowre goodlihed.

Ch. 214, C XVIII

---

3361 far from your beauty
3363 for, were she alive, I would not thus have remained a prisoner [lit: subjugated] for [such] a long time
3368–69 he [Daunger] would be handsomely rewarded [by me] if ever I could bear up my head in freedom.
Ost goodly fayre, if hit were yowre plesere
So moche forto enriche yowre servaunt here
Of recomfort, of ioy, and of gladnes,
I wolde biseche yow, lady and maystres,
Not lete me dye as all in displesere,

Syn that in me ther nys wele nor desere
Saue trewly serue yow vnto my powere
Without escheyng payne or hevynes,

And if ye lust so doon, my lady dere,
Ye banysshe must yowre straungely chere
(Which is not sittynge to yowre lustynes)
And fowle Refuse, that doth me such dures—
This is my Payne; this mowe ye hele me clere,

Efresshe the castell of my poore hert
With sum lyvyng of ioy or of plesaunce,
For false Daunger with his allyaunce
Asegith hit with Woo and Grevous Smert!

That it may not longe holde ye may aduert,
Which Woo forbetith so with ordenaunce!

3384–86 you must banish your distant manner (which is not fitting to your beauty) and unseemly Rejection . . .
3391–92 Resupply the castle of my wretched heart with some provisions . . .
3396 which Woe batters so with artillery!
Refresshe the castell of my poore hert
With sum luyng of ioy or of plesaunce.

Not suffir him to lorde, this fals coward,
In conqueryng vnto his obeyshaunce
Which that ye haue vndir yowre gouernaunce!
Avaunce yow now and kepe yow lo couert!

Refresshe the castell of my poore hert
With sum luyng of ioy or of plesaunce,
For false Daunger with his allyaunce
Asegith hit with Woo and Grevous Smert.

Ch. 212, C XIV

Yn Loue hath cast me banysshe euerydell
Out of his hous, for now and euermore,
I must depart, vnto my grevous sore,
With face deluyerid from all ioy and wele.

This se y that y may no lengir dwelle
Nor can aright deserven lo wherfore,
Syn loue hath cast me banysshe euerydell
Out of his hous for now and euermore.

For of Comfort the wey hit fro me fell
Thorugh Mysfortune that hath me so fortore
That my lady hath my deth yswoere.
With dubbl sorow thus y entirmell,

Syn loue hath cast me banysshe euerydell
Out of his hous for now and euermore,
I must depart, vnto my grevous sore,
With face deluyerid from alle ioy and wele.

Ch. 217, C XXIII

3399–3401 do not allow him to rule ... by winning to himself [into his authority] that which should be under your control!
3410 nor serve [you] properly therefore
A

S for the gyft ye haue vnto me geve,
I thanke yow lo in all that in me is,
Forwhi y knowe now that ye loue me this
Which shall be quyt to yow if so y lyue,

For resoun woll hit so, this may y preue,
For "goode doon good," wherfore, myn hertis blis,

As for the gyft ye haue vnto me geve
I thanke yow lo in all that in me is.

Myn hert wol evir thynke him sylf in greve
To that desert hit ben to yow, ywis,
Of which that long y trust ye shall not mys
Parcas sumwhat to raunsom yow or eve

As for the gyft ye haue vnto me geve
I thanke yow, lo, in all that in me is,
Forwhi y knowe now that ye loue me this
Which shalle be quyt to yow if so y lyue.

Ch. 218, C XXIV

R20

M

Adame, as longe as hit doth plese yow ay
To doon me lyue in bis paynfull manere,
Myn hert is redy forto bere it here
Without grucchyng, and shall to that y day;

Only in trust yet of a bettir day
Endewre y shall, syn hit is yowre plesere,

Madame, as longe as hit doth plese yow ay
To doon me lyue in bis paynfull manere;

For onys ye woll haue pite, dar y say,
When ye haue well bithought yow, lady dere,

3420–23 I thank you with all that is in me, because I know by this [gift] now that you love me which I shall repay you if I live so [long], for reason demonstrates ...
3427–28 ... in the wrong till it is repaid to you, certainly
3441 for one day you will take pity ...
That all is for the loue y to yow bere,
That wrongfully doth holde me this away,

Madame, as longe as hit doth plese yow ay
To doon me lyue in pis paynfull manere,
Myn hert is redy forto bere it here
Without grucchyng, and shalle to that y day.

Ch. 215, C XIX

Beware! ye rede yow, loke here not vpon
The goodly fayre that y loue feithfully!
For ye shalle lese yowre hert even sodaynly
If so be that ye cast her lokyng on,

Wherfore, but ye lust gefe yowre hert anoon,
Shette vp yowre eyen and close hem wel surely.

Beware! ye rede yow, loke here not vpon
The goodly fayre that y loue feithfully,

For the bewte she hath, bi god alon,
Hit stelith lo an hert so pratily
That, but ye bet abowt yowre silf aspy,
Or ye be war yowre hert shall be goon.

Beware! ye rede yow, loke here not vpon
The goodly fayre that y loue feithfully,

For ye shalle lese yowre hert even sodaynly
If so be that ye cast her lokyng on!

Ch. 215, C XX

Yn y may not askape me fer nor nere
As from the wrath of Kare and Hevynes,

3443-44 that all [I do] is for the love I bear you, [you] who thus wrongfully hold me at arm's length
3450 ... cast a glance at her
3457-58 ... unless you watch more carefully, before you are aware [of it] your heart will be gone
I nedis must abiden the redres
That they me geve of payne or displesere.

It to amende y haue noon ellis powere,
For Sorowe is bicomen my maystres
Syn y may not askape me fer nor nere
As from the wrath of Kare and Hevynes.

Yet with this thought y shall my silf achere:
To pray myn hert to take it for gladnes
The <enduryng> of so gret distres,
Syn it is had for myn owen lady dere,

Syn y may not askape me fer nor nere
As from the wrath of Kare and Hevynes,
I nedis must abiden the redres
That they me geve of payne or displesere.

Ch. 216, C XXI

It is doon. Ther is no more to say.
Myn hert departid is fro me
To holde with Loue and his parte,
That in bandone y lyue must to y day.

To wretthe my silf hit were me but fole,
Nor yet forto discomfort me, ma fay.

Hit is doon. Ther is no more to say.
Myn hert departid is fro me.

He doth not ellis but mokke with me & play
When y him say, in myn aduersite,
I may not lyue withouten him, parde,
But saith me, “Tewche!” and turneth me away.

3470 “It” refers to “enduryng” in the following line.
3478 so that I must live forsaken until I die
3479-80 I would be folly to become angry or to become discouraged, certainly.
3486 but he [only] says (to me), “Tush!” and turns away from me.
Hit is doon. Ther is no more to say.
Myn hert departid is fro me
To holde with Loue and his parte,
That in bandone y lyue must to y day.

Ch. 217, C XXII

Ad y as moche of worldly goodis
As ther is trouthe of loue in me,
I had therof so gret plente
That ricches shulde y neuyr mys.

Als bettir myght y gete, ywis,
The good will lo of my lady,
Had y as moche of worldly goodis
As ther is trouthe of loue in me,

Forwhi my trust, madame, is this:
That yowre most plesaunt fresse bewte
So der I wolde arent it, shulde ye se,
That Daungere shulde not lette me nor al his,

Had y as moche of worldly goodis
As ther is trouthe of loue in me,
I had therof so gret plente
That riches shulde y neuyr mys.

Ch. 218, C XXV

S for yowre prayes yn fame þat is vp bore
Ay growyng fresse vnto yowre gret honour,
That is the cause y do myn hert soiowr
With yow, to bide for now and evirmore;

3492 I would never be without wealth [i.e., I would never lack anything]
3499–3500 I would pay such a high rent for it . . . that neither Daunger nor all his [cronies] could hinder me
3503 . . . that is borne up by [your] reputation
3505 that is why I cause my heart to lodge
But y pray yow (y shulde haue seid tofore)
In plesaunce forto kepe him and favoure,
   As for youre prayers yn fame that is vphore
   Ay growyng freshe vnto youre gret honoure

And him in gre take as youre servaunt sowe
To gefe yow gift y naue of mor valoure.
Tis my good will—hit is my hool tresowe—
I offre yow with inward sighs sore

   As for youre prayers yn fame that is vphore
   Ay growyng freshe vnto youre gret honoure,
That is the cause y do myn hert soiowr
With yow, to bide for now and evirmore.

Ch. 219, C XXVI

In thought, in wisshis, and in dremes soft,
God wot how that y se yow nyght & day,
Albe that fer am y from yow away
Whom that y loue, as feithfully y ought.

This say y me, not yow, that ye are wrought
The most plesaunt that evir yet y say
   In thought, in wisshis, and in dremes soft,
   God wot how that y se yow nyght & day.

My loue is youre, for noon except y nought
Beseid—so thenke ye trouthe y to yow say,
But my sovl lady are ye to y day
Withouten choyse as of newfangiell thought,

   In thought, in wisshis, and in dremes soft,
   God wott how that y se yow nyght & day,

3512 I have no gift of greater value to give you
3521-22 this [is what] I say to myself, not to you [since you are far away] that you are the most delightfully made of anyone I ever saw
3525-26 My love is yours, for I reserve none of it for anyone else—believe that I am telling you the truth
3528 without [my] choice [born] of a new fancy [for another lady]
Albe that fer am y from yow away
Whom that y loue, as faithfully y ought.

Ch. 220, C XXVII

W

Ith my trewe hert, content of ioy & wele,
Mi fayre maystres, myn hertis sovl desere,
Thenke how y serue yow, be y fer or nere,
What so me happes, in seeknes or in hele,

As redy ay to yow, in every dele
Forto fulfille youre will, my lady dere,
With my trewe hert, content of ioy & wele,
My fayre maystres, myn hertis sovl desere.

Yowre presence were to me an hertis melle
With yowre honoure and to my gret plesere
Whiche shulde ben lo right sone (so trust me here)
Yf hyt wer as y weche hyt sydys felle

With my trewe hert, content of ioy & wele,
My fayre maystres, myn hertis sovl desere,
Thenke how y serue yow, be y fer or nere,
What so me happes, in seeknes or in hele.

Ch. 220, C XXVIII

A

Nd so be now that y my purpos lesse,
Certis, y haue desert hit wil wherfore:
For well y wott y haue my silf mysbore
As toward hir that y ought most to plese;

But what, as loo, this doth myn hert an ese:
That y haue knownen hir mercy heretofore
And so be now that y my purpos lesse,
Certis, y haue desert hit wil wherfore;

3539 a meal [i.e., inspiration] to my heart
3542 if it were as I wish it [would] befall afterwards [i.e., in the future]
3545 If I fail to reach my goal, I have certainly deserved it well for this reason:
But what, y shall endure and holde my pese,
Syn that y haue my steffen thus forswore.
The feere y haue me grevith now so sore
That by my lijf y sett not here a pese.

And so be now that y my purpos lesse,
Certis, y haue desert hit wil wherfore,
For welle y wott y haue myself mysbore
As toward hir that y ought most to plese.

Ch. 221, C XXIX

As by the purchas of myn eyen tayne
In servyng yow, myn hertis fayre mastres,
I seid haue what is ioy and hevynes,
In which y founde haue moche of thought & payne;

But ioyes whiche y faynyst wolde attayne
I kan not gete but passyng small larges,
As bi the purchas of myn eyen tayne
In servyng yow, myn hertis fayre mastres;

Forwhy as for oon ioyfull day, certayne,
I leue an hundrid wekys in distres,
But what Good Hope doth me moche gladnes
To haue a grace as onys to be more fayne,

As bi the purchas of myn eyen tayne
In servyng yow, myn hertis fayre mastres,
I seid haue what is ioy and hevynes,
In which y founde haue moche of thought & payne.

Ch. 221, C XXX

3554 since I have renounced my right to speak
3559 Through the contrivance of my eyes
3561 I have assayed both joy and sorrow
3563–64 but of the joys that I would most like to have, I can get only an ex-
3569–70 except that Good Hope pleases me very much [by giving me the hope]
te to have the grace to be more contented once again
To shewe that y haue not forgotten yow
But redy am to serue yow, lady dere,
This poore song y sende it to yow here,
So takith hit in gre, y pray yow now,

Forwhi to dryue forth tyme, this wot ye how,
I made it when y wisshid yow to me nere
To shewe that y haue not forgotten yow
But redy am to serue yow, lady dere.

Myn hert hath yow, albe that y ne mowe,
But God me graunt as onys to my plesere
(What that y mene y nede not say yow here)
To yelde me yow; y kan not make it tow

To shewe that y haue not forgotten yow
But redy am to serue yow, lady dere,
This poore song y sende it to yow here,
So takith hit in gre, y pray yow now.

Ch. 222, C XXXI

Orseek in woo and fer from ioyous hele
Wherin all welthe doth most to on habounde,
Myn hert, allass, y fele in sorow wounde
Without rekeuer of comfort lo or wele,

Thorugh which that y most fele, bis wot y wele,
Of paynys grete me, caytijf, to confounde,

Forseek in woo and fer from ioyous hele
Wherin alle welthe doth most to me habounde.

Thus am y falle in woo and karis fele
Of all the greef that goth here on þe ground,

3584 [God grant me the opportunity] to submit myself to you; I will not make it difficult [i.e., I will do it readily]
3587 Deathly ill on account of woe . . .
3591 on account of which I inevitably feel . . .
But syn ther can noon hele to me be found,
As maugre me, y gre must eche a dele,

Forseck in woo and fer from ioyous hele
Wherin alle welthe doth most to me habounde,
Myn hert, allas, y fele in sorow wounde
Without rekeuer of comfort lo or wele.

Ch. 223, C XXXII

Rght ny myn hert with[in] my bosom lo
I haue yputt a cosse of gret plesere
Which y haue stolne maugre false Daungere,
So that he dieth welnygh for verry woo;

But wherfore shulde y care as for my foo,
Though that for payne he maddid all a yere?
Rght ny myn hert with my bosom lo
I haue yputt a cosse of gret plesere.

But and of grace hit lust my lady so
To suffre me, withouten displesere,
To stele anothir, wold y go right nere
To riche me with, to y koude gedir moo.

Rght ny myn hert with my bosom lo
I haue yputt a cosse of gret plesere
Which y haue stolne maugre false Daungere,
So that he dieth welnygh for verry woo.

Ch. 223, C XXXIII

Orto biholde the bewte and manere
Of yow, myn hertis lady and maystres,
Hit is to me more verry gret gladnes
Then y kan thynke as now to say yow here

3611–12 to steal another [kiss] to make myself rich with, I would go very near
until I could gather [even] more
God wolde hit were [with] me a thousand yere,
Forwhi therwith y lesse all heynes
Forto benholde the bewte and manere
Of yow, myn hertis lady and maystres;

But for ille speche, allas, my lady dere,
Vnnethis dar y speke of yowre goodnes,
But oft forbere hit to my grete distres,
But alway lo to hard to me it were.

Forto benholde the bewte and manere
Of yow, myn hertis lady and maystres,
Hit is to me more verryy grete gladnes
Then y kan thynke as now to say yow here.

Ch. 224, C XXXIV

Ake, take this cosse atonyes! atonyes! my hert,
That thee presentid is of thi maystres,
—The goodly fayre, so full of lustynes—
Only of grace to lessen with thi smert;

But to myn honoure loke thou well avert
That Daunger not parseyue my sotilnes—
Take, take this cosse atonyes! atonyes! my hert,
That thee presentid is of thi maystres.

Daunger wacchith al nyght in his shert
To spye me, in a gery currisshenes,
So to haue doon attones let se thee dresse
While in a slepe his eyen ben covert—

Take, take this cosse atonyes! atonyes! my hert,
That thee presentid is of thi maystres,

3619 “Hit” (as in 3617) refers back to the opening line.
3621 in beholding the beauty and bearing
3623–26 but because of evil speech (of others), ... I hardly dare speak of your goodness, but often refrain from it [speaking well of you], to my great distress, even though it is always very hard for me [to do so]
Hi loue y yow so moche? how may þis be? 
(And hate so moche myn hert)—þis wolde y lere—
Which recchith not to doon me displesere
Nor of my dewryng long aduersite.

His harme me grevid hit small, parde,
If that my service were to yowre plesere.

But what, allas! allas! wel may y se
That ye cherisshe to moche with you Daungere,
But nevertheles, myn hertis sovl desere,
To serue yow to my last y shall ben he.

Prayse no thing these cossis Dowche
Which geue are for a countenaunce
And forto take with aqueyntaunce,
Though many folkis loue to towche,

A man may bie, out crosse or crowche,
Ynowe of them, gret habundaunce.

3645–46 [you] who do not care if you make me miserable or of making [if you make] me endure adversity for a long time
3647–48 His pain (it) would not disturb me greatly . . . if my service were pleasing to you
3657 I do not prize these German[ic] kisses at all
I prayse no thing these cossis Dowche
Which geue are for a countenaunce.

But wot ye whiche y cherisshe moche?
The prive cossis of plesaunce.
Alle othir, whiche þat come askaunce,
Ben goode to feste with straungeris soche—

But wot ye whiche y cherisshe moche?
The prive cossis of plesaunce.
Alle othir, whiche þat come askaunce,
Ben goode to feste with straungeris soche—

| My loue only, my ioy and my maystres,   |
| Syn y may not ben longe with yow present, |
| With Discomfort y must ben resident      |
| Saue oon poore hope which doth to me gladnes |

that moche alightith me myn hevynes
In abidyng the werre þat is me sent,
| My loue only, my ioy and my maystres,   |
| Syn y may not ben longe with yow present, |

That my faynt hert, forchargid with distres,
Went forth with yow anoon right as ye went
And trust of metyng nar but tyme yspent
To eft y see yowre yowthe and goodlynes

| My loue only, my ioy and my maystres,   |
| Syn y may not ben longe with yow present, |
| With Discomfort y must ben resident      |
| Saue oon poore hope which doth to me gladnes |

3667 all others, which come insincerely [i.e., without genuine affection]
3681 and [my] expectation of meeting [you again] is only [a matter of] the passing of time
Ar that y drede displesen yow only,
  I passyng fayne wold stele here, verily,
A pryvy Cosse of yow, myn hertis swete
(Which y shall kepe full clos to eft we mete
In tresoure of my joy right privyly),

So hit were there as Daunger shuld not spy
Withouten prese of mo saue yow and y
O fayre, which y most loue, y yow bihete,
  Nar that y drede displesen yow only,
  I passyng fayne wold stele here verily
  A prive cosse of yow, myn hertis swete.

Confesse me nolde y therof to y dey,
Forwhi y take it for no felony,
But almes gret of yow, if so ye lete
Me forto doon, and <als> this mow ye wete:
The poore to fede ye do a gret mercy.

Ch. 227, C XXXIX

He gret disese of seekfull anoyaunce
Which causith oft the penaunt sore to playne
Here sendith yow, my lady and soueraye,
A seekliew seek of my long grevaunce,

Bi which ye may well knowe the gouernaunce

3689-90 in the treasury of my joy . . . ), if it were there where Daunger would not be able to see us
3698 but as great alms from you, if you allow
3700 if you feed the poor, you show great mercy.
3706 “Penaunt” (rather than “disese”) is the subject of “sendith.”
3707 a sickly sigh of my long misery
Of Displesere that rewlith me certayne,

The gret diseuse of seekfull anoyaunce
Which causith of the penaunt sore to playne;

For syn yowre bewte of so gret plesaunce
May not ben with my derkid eyen sayne,
I lese therwith all worldly plesere playne;
This doth me seeke, this is myn aturbaunce.

The gret diseuse of seekfull anoyaunce
Which causith of the penaunt sore to playne
Here sendith yow, my lady and souerayne,
A seeklew seek of my long grevaunce.

Ch. 227, C XL

If hit plese yow yowre cossis forto selle
I redy am here forto bie hem welle
Which geue yow shall myn hert as in morgage,
Hit to dispende as yowre owen heritage,
Mi loue, and of plesaunce a thousand elle.

Beth not as hard with [me] to entirmelle
As with a straunger which bat bi yow dwelle,
That holde no lyve but of yow in homage.

This bargeyne make and fy on all perell,
Though Daunger with forsorow him forswell,
And worche weisly, though ye be yong of age,
That y may haue a plesaunt, hool <partage>.
Thus serue me sone or say me that ye nell:

3715 this causes me to sigh, this is my distress
3720 "Which" refers to the speaker.
3725 "That" refers to the speaker.
3729–30 Strike this bargain and disdain (say fie on) all risk, though Daunger be extremely vexed
3732 that I may have a pleasant, full share [i.e., my share]
If hit plese yow yowre cossis forto selle
I redy am here forto bie hem welle
Which geve yow shalle myn hert as in morgage,
Hit to dispende as yowre owen heritage,
Mi loue, and of plesaunce a thousand elle.

Ch. 228, C XLI

My loue and lady whom y most desere,
Mi recomfort, my hertis eleccioun,
Most goodly fayre without comparisoun,
I sory am thus forto write yow here

Forwhi to say hit were me more plesere
Bi mouth then make this ocupacioun,
My loue and lady, whom y most desere,
My recomfort, my hertis eleccioun.

Alas! alas! that y nare to yow nere!
But what, with Hope endewre y the sesoun
Which holt me lo in this opynyoun:
That to gladnes retorne woll my martere,

My loue and lady, whom y most desere,
My recomfort, my hertis eleccioun,
Most goodly fayre without comparisoun,
I sory am thus forto write yow here.

Ch. 229, C XLII

Ogge me, dere hert, in yowre armys tayne
And geve me so a swete cosse two or thre,
If it plese yow so moche to festen me
With lovis wele, my ladi and souerayne,

3741–42 for it would give me more pleasure to speak to you in person than to labor over this letter
3746 . . . I endure this period of time [of your absence] with Hope
3748 who will turn all my suffering to happiness
3751 The lover is seen as guest; the lady’s body, as a place of lodging and entertainment.
But tary that to Daunger lo be layne
To slepe and that in slumbir ye him se.

Logge me, dere hert, in yowre armys tayne
And geve me so a swete cosse two or thre,

But wake him not, bewar yow þat agayne!
Lete him slepe—and that with yvill the!
Hit hard him is of slepe awakid be,
But spekith soft and do hit playne:

Logge me, dere hert, in yowre armys tayne
And geve me so a swete cosse two or thre,
If it plese yow so moche to festen me
With lovis wele, my ladi and souerayne.

Ch. 229, C XLIII

Rough Daunger haue the speche biraft me here
Of yow, most fayre withouten any pere,
Thorugh the purchas of cursid false Envy,
Yet, for no thyng thei kan do verily,
They shall not lette me loue yow, fer and nere;

For as myn hert a hath forleft me clere
To geue him silf to yow, my lady dere,
Alwhere to serue yow to that howre he dey,

Though Daungere haue the speche biraft me here
Of yow, most fayre, withouten any pere,
Thorugh the purchas of cursid false Envy.

To lette him lo y kan in no manere
But that [ther]in he tath his most plesere:

3759–60 but do not wake him, [I say] once again, avoid that! Let him sleep—and that with ill luck!
3761–62 he is not easily awakened, but speak softly [anyway] and do it at once:
3765–66 Though Daunger has robbed me of speech [i.e., the opportunity to speak] with you . . .
3769 they [the envious] shall not hinder me from loving you, [whether I am] far [from you] or near
3770 for my heart (he) has left me completely
To thenke what vertu is in yowre body,
For though so be y se yow not with ey,
I loue yow most, for payne or displesere,

Though Daunger haue the speche biraft me here
Of yow, most fayre withouten any pore,
Thorou the purchas of cursid false Envy,
Yet, for no thyng thei kan do verily,
They shalle not lette me loue yow, fer and nere.

Ch. 230, C XLIV

O forth thi way, my feithfull <Deseraunce>,
On that thow owist me thyn obeysaunce,
Streight vnto the ioyous, fresshe manere;
To shorte thi way also and thee to lere,
Take to thi gide Swete Remembrance.

To serue me well y trust thi gouernaunce,
And spede thou first thi message in substaunce
As that knowist the well of my desere.

Go forth thi way, my feithfulle Deseraunce,
On that thow owist me thyn obeysaunce
Streight vnto the ioyous, fresshe Manere.

And recomaunde me to Plesaunce,
And sone to come if thou want puysshaunce,
Do so that y may tidying of thee here,
And sende hem me bi Hope, my messangere,
And fayle me not for laboure nor penaunce.

Go forth thi way, my feithfulle Deseraunce,
On that thow owist me thyn obeysaunce

3780 . . . in spite of any pain or misery
3785 since you owe my your obedience
3790–91 and send with haste your message . . . as one who knows the source of my desire
3796–98 and if you cannot return soon, make sure that I hear news of you and send it to me via Hope . . .
3799 . . . no matter how much labor and suffering [it causes you]
Put my self vnto yowre mercy lo,
Moost goodly fayre, most replete of bounte.
Hit seid me is that ye are wroth with me;
Not wot y whi, nor where hit be or no,

But all the nyght not slepen y for woo,
Saue thenke and muse wherfore hit shuld be.

Alas! beth not so moche to me my foo,
But yowre entent wherfore as let me se,
For this y vaunt my self: that y am he
That kepe his trouthe and shall wherso y go.

E are to moche as in my dette, madame,
Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere,
Which wold full fayne, if hit were yowr plesere,
Ye payde hem me in savyng of yowre name,

So that of dette y ought yow not to blame

3805–6 it has been said to me . . . ; I don’t know why, nor whether it be true or not
3812 but let me see your reason [for it]
3814 who keeps his word . . .
3819 “Which” refers to the speaker.
Which dar not don, me thenke, hit for daungere.

Ye are to *moche as in my dette, madame,*

Ye owe me, *swete, to many cossis dere.*

Wite ye, y haue a writ out for pe same
To tache yow with! y rede yow pay hem here,
Lest ye be restid with an officere
Of Loue! Fy! fy! hit were to gret a shame!

*Ye are to moche as in my dette, madame,*

*Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere,*

*Which wold fulle fayne, if hit were yowr plesere,*

*Ye payde hem me in sawyng of youre name.*

Ch. 232, C XLVII

Owre mouth hit saith me, “Bas me, bas [me], swet!”

When that yow bihold, this semeth me,
But Daunger stant so nygh hit may not be,
Which doth me sorow gret, yow bihet,

But bi yowre trouth, gefe me hit, now we mete,
A pryve swet, swete cosse two or thre.

*Owre mouth hit saith me, “Bas me, bas me, swet!”*

*When that y yow bihold, this semeth me.*

Daunger me hatith (whi y kan not wet)
And labourith ay my gret aduersite.
God graunt me onys forbrent y may him se
That y myght stampe his asshis with my feet!

*Owre mouth hit saith me, “Bas me, bas me, swet!”*

*When that y yow bihold, this semeth me.*

*But Daunger stant so nygh hit may not be,*

*Which doth me sorow gret, y yow bihet.*

Ch. 232, C XLVIII

---

3835 “hit” refers to “cosse” in following line.
Not oft y praise, but blame, as in substance,
All the welthe of lovis paynful blis,
For euery joie with woo emmeintid is
Of gret foysoun of frawde and false semblaunce.

The wele and woo of hit doth rolle & daunce
As shippe in see for tempest that veris.

This is the cause y make such semblaunce:
For as the shippe forpossid is this and this,
Right so of loue the hertis arne, ywis,
As now in wele and now in gret penaunce.

But holpe me loo and that so moche, parde,
That hit contentith all myn own desere.

But welaway! departen now must we!
But though it greve yow, bere a gladsom chere,
For leyser more y want to write yow here,
Saue: Ihesu graunt agayne vs sone to se.
At neke the frendis preven what pei be
In ech a werk as stondith mater.
This say y lo by yow, my lady dere,
For at my neke ye haue not faylid me.

Ch. 233, C L

If
Leth the shott of Swete Regard,
Myn hert, without thou willist forto day,
Which nakid art of wepene and aray,
For witty flight is signe of no coward!

Abide and thou art tan, maugre thi berd,
Without thou cast thee vnto Loue abay!
Fleeth the shott of Swete Regard,
Myn hert, without thou willist forto day!

Wherfore withdrawith the standard
As of no forse as sone as that thou may;
And Plesaunce do thee yelde, pis is to say,
Thou art but deed, alas, y am aferd!

Fleeth the shott of Swete Regard,
Myn hert, without thou willist forto day,
Which nakid art of wepene and aray,
For witty flight is signe of no coward!

Ch. 234, C LI

M
Y wele, my io, my loue, and my lady,
Which y most loue and shall wher pat y go,
I pray yow to be glad, not sory, lo,
In trust that y shall se yow hastily,

For y not bidde but seche a tyme trewly

3877-78 Stay and you will be taken prisoner, in spite of all you can do, unless you intend to obey Love’s commands!
3883 if Pleasure causes you to surrender . . .
3891 for I do not [just] pray [i.e., wish] for it, but [actively] seek . . .
To come to yow, so wis God helpe me so,
Mwy wele, my ioy, my loue, and my lady,
Which y most loue and shall wher pat y go.

For and so were bi wisshis swete pat y
Might ben with yow a day or two or mo,
Of all ricches that in this world is lo
As had y alle my wisshis, verily,

Mwy wele, my ioy, my loue, and my lady,
Which y most loue and shall wher pat y go,
J pray yow to be glad, not sory, lo,
In trust that y shalle se yow hastily.
Ch. 235, LII

A Pak, a pak—madame, my lode alight,
Forwhi, alas! y bere to hevy, lo,
And without yow I may no ferthir go,
So helpe me sett my crokid burthen right,

Or ellis ye are to blame, bi God almyght,
For me my silf wolde helpe yow, bare ye so.
A pak, a pak—madame, my lode alight,
Forwhi, alas! y bere to hevy, lo.

Ther is no mo to calle now here in sight,
So helpe—or ellis attonys bcome my foo!
Now mercy, swete! but will ye, lo, or noo
Haue pite now vpon me, poore wight?

A pak, a pak—madame, my lode alight,
Forwhi, alas! y bere to hevy, lo,
And without yow I may no ferthir go,
So helpe me sett my crokid burthen right.

No French for remaining roundels

3897 of all the good things in this world
3902 for . . . I bear too heavy [? a load] . . . [see note]
3906 . . . if you bore such a load
The mede is flowe, the grace is goon,
The hert is chaungid from his place.
Where y had wende hem be, he nas.
Thus Myrthe and y are comen foon.

But fy, allas! that a wise oon
Shulde "Hay!" or that se what to chas.
The mede is flowe, the grace is goon,
The hert is chaungid from his place.

Yet trust y lo to fynde aloon
An hert, if that y haue the grace,
And if y onys may that purchace,
Then "hay" on hardly euerichoon!

The meede is flowe, the grace is goon,
The hert is chaungid from his place.
Where y had wende hem be, he nas.
Thus Myrthe and y are comen foon.

Ladies hert forto want pite,
Hit is to fowle [a sin] ageyne nature,
That in so benygne a figure,
So bewtevous fayre in eche feture,
Which lakkith ellis vertu nor bounte.

For what entent shuld she formyd be
Without hit were to mordre suche as me
That loven <her> aboue eche creature?

A ladies hert forto want pite,
Hit is to fowle a sin ageyne nature,
That in so benygne a figure,
A ladies hert forto want pite.

3919-20 but fie, allas, that a man of sound judgment should [urge on his hunting dogs with] Hay! before they spot the quarry.
3929-33 It is too foul [a sin] against nature that the heart of a lady so gracious, so very fair in every way, who otherwise lacks neither virtue nor generosity should lack pity.
J kan no more; but what, y must agre
Mi silven with my fatall aventure,
Syn that it is my destyne and vre
That all my lijf in payne y must endure
And to biwayne the tyme y evir se.

A ladies hert forto want pite,
Hit is to fowle a sin ageyne nature,
That in so benygne a figure,
A ladies hert forto want pite.

O Fayre madame, Crist wold ye knew my payne,
With all my thought and busy remembraunce
Which my poore hert hath in governaunce
For loue of yow, and thorugh youre hard suffraunce
No reward founde, for ought pat y complayne.

I kan not say but well ye mowe disdayne
Mi loue, that am so poore a wrecche, certayne,
But so it were to yow no displesaunce,
O fayre madame, Crist wold ye knew my payne,
With all my thought and busy remembraunce
Which my poore hert hath in governaunce.

Yowre mercy, swete, me lever were attayne
Then all this worldis goodis habundaunce,
And also, wisly Ihesu me avaunce,
—Or that y deye—to sum part of plesaunce
And as he wot that y did nevir fayne.

O fayre madame, Crist wold ye knew my payne,
With all my thought and busy remembraunce
Which my poore hert hath in governaunce

3954 “founde” is parallel to “hath” in 3952.
3955 I can not say anything except that you may well disdain
3957 but if it were to [i.e., caused] you no annoyance
3962 than all this world’s abundance of goods
3965 “And” is redundant.
FORTUNES STABILNES

For loue of yow, and thorough youre hard suffraunce
No reward founde, for ought hat y complaye.

Y gostly fadir, y me confesse
First to God and then to yow
That at a wyndow, wot ye how,
I stale a cosse of gret swetnes,

Which don was out avisynes,
But hit is doon not vndoon now.
My gostly fadir, y me confesse,
First to God and then to yow.

But y restore it shall, dowtles
Ageyn, if so be that y mow
And that [to] God y make a vow,
And ellis y axe foryefnes.

My gostly fadir, y me confesse,
First to God and then to yow,
That at a wyndow, wot ye how,
I stale a cosse of gret swetnes.

Adame, y wold, bi God alone,
How that myn hert were in youre sleue,
For in good trouth ye wol not leue
How fayne he wolde fro me bigoon.

So, good, take it now anoon,
For frely him y to yow geue.
Madame, y wold, bi God alone,
How that myn hert were in yowre sleue.

3973 which was done without premeditation
3979 and that I vow to god
3983–84 Madam, I wish ... by whatever means my heart were in your sleeve
3987 The heart is "it" in this line but "him" throughout the rest of the poem.
For he and y are comen soon.
A doth to me so gret a greef
That, but ye lust me to myschef,
So take him or sle me, the toon.

Madame, y wold, bi God alone,
How that myn hert were in youre sleue,
For in good trouth ye wol not leue
How fayne he wolde fro me bigoon.

God, so as hit enioyeth me
Forto bithynke my ladies goodlihed,
Hir high parage and sewrid womanhed,
Vertu, iantiles, honure, & bounte

Hir lusty yowthe, hir fasson and bewte,
And plesaunt lookis so avisily spred,
God, so as hit enioyeth me
Forto bethynke my ladies goodlihed.

But hir to loue it is gret drede
So voyd, alas! hir hert is of pite
That, or on to grace amyttid be,
Antropos wol breke hir thred.

God, so as hit enioyeth me
Forto bethynke my ladies goodlihed,
Hir high parage and sewrid womanhed,
Vertu, iantiles, honure, & bounte.

Are wel, fare wel, my lady and maystres!
Fare wel, pat y most loue and evir shall!
Fare wel, alas, hit shulde me thus bifall!
Fare wel, the hope of my ioy and gladnes!

3994 . . . one or the other
4007–8 that, before (any)one is admitted into her favor, Antropos will break their
[i.e., his] thread
4013 . . . alas, that it should befall me thus
Not may y speke for Payne and hevynes
And yowre departynge is þe cause of all.
 Fare wel, fare wel, my lady and maystres;
 Fare wel, þat y most loue and evir shall!

For vnto Waylyng, Wepyng, and Distres,
From this tyme forth bicomen must y thral,
Syn that y may not stroke þe sidis smal
Of yowre swete body, ful of lustynes.
 Fare wel, fare wel, my lady and maystres;
 Fare wel, þat y most loue and evir shall!
 Fare wel, allas, hit shulde me thus bifall!
 Fare wel, the hope of my ioy and gladnes!

No French, see note

Fayre madame, no more vnto me write,
For such writynge hit causith but dilayes
That drivith tyme in dryffte from day to dayes,
But do the effecte, then ar ye not to wyte,

For othr thing hit vaylith not a myte
Vnto myn hert, in sorow which þat dayes
 Fayre madame, no more vnto me write,
For suche writyng hit causith but dilayes.

Ye shewe therbi vnkyndenes a lite,
If so were that y durste say [ ... ]
Fy! ferful hert þat sechis alle ther wayes
In vayne, only yowre servaunt to respite.

Fayre madame, no more vnto me write,
For suche writyng hit causith but dilayes
That drivith tyme in dryffte from day to dayes,
But do the effecte, then ar ye not to wyte.

4027–29 that causes time to pass in its course from day to day, but [if you]
perform the purport [of the letter], then you are not to blame, for the other thing
[i.e., writing letters] avails not a bit
His tyme when louers alpermost defie
Eche heuy thought as ferforth as bei may
And rise or Phebus in þe morow gray,
Leiyng aside all slouthe and slogardy

To here the birdis synge so lustily
Ouyr þe spryngynge bodies on þe spray,

Thyn waylyng on my pilow thus y ly
For þat as was and now is goon for ay,
Wisshyng no more but deth eche howre of day,
Saiyng, “Myn hert, allas! whi nelt þou day?”

More speche, madame, is of youre goodlynes
Then of Aleyne or yet Penolope,
For all þe world hit preysith youre bewte—
Not that alone, but eek youre Iantilesse,

That, on my trouthe, hit is my grete gladnes
To thynke how fele þat lust vpon hit se,—

Me saiyn, “Whens cometh she?” “As y gesse,
From hevene,” say y, “hit kan noon othir be.”

4041 and rise before the sun in the grey dawn
4044 above the bursting buds on the twigs
4047–48 Then I lie thus on my pillow wailing for that which was . . .
4057–58 so that . . . it is my great happiness to think how many [there are] who wish to look on it [your beauty]
4061 saying to me, “Where does she come from?” . . .
“Certis,” thei seye, “so semen we,  
For wel she semeth a goddesse.”

More speche, madame, is of your goodlynes  
Then of Aleyne or yet Penolope,  
For alle þe world hit preyseth yowre bewte—  
Not that alone, but eek yowre iantilesse.

All desolat from ioy or hertis hele,  
I yow biseche, or þat y to yow write,  
That what y say ye take in no dispite,  
Syn nede me nedith euery dele;

So vnportable are my paynes fele  
That, but y speke, y am my deth to wite,  
All desolat from ioy or hertis hele,  
I yow <biseche>, or þat y to yow write.

Thus lengir, swete, y may not from yow hele—  
I loue yow lo and þat is not a lite,  
For it is more þen y dare yow endite,  
So haue mercy in Payne with which y dele,

All desolat from ioy or hertis hele,  
I yow biseche, or þat y to yow write,  
That what y say ye take in no dispite,  
Syn nede me nedith euery dele.

Od, of thi grace, the good sowle now pardon  
Of hir that was my maystres & norice,  
Forwhi at lest she wolde me lappe and kis  
Where noon are now þat lust so forto doon.

4070 since need harasses me in every part  
4072 that, unless I speak, I must die  
4078 so have mercy on the pain . . .  
4084 whereas now there are none who wish to do so
Me thynk y ledde a lijf lijk to þe mone:  
Now full, now wane, now round, now chaungid þis—  
God, of thi grace, the good sowle now pardon  
Of hir þat was my maystres & norice—

Now wel, now woo, in liche wise þus y wone.  
Wo for hir deth and hope my wele it is  
Sone forto mete with hir in heven blis;  
So, myghti Lord, þou here my karful bone:

God of þi grace, the good sowle now pardon  
Of hir þat was my maystres & norice,  
Forwhi at lest she wolde me laupe and kis  
Where noon are now þat lust so forto doon.

Herfore, wherfore make ye þre nayes? whi?  
Me thynke þei nede not spoken ben so oft  
If in yowre silf þat ye were wele bithought.  
What cause se ye to say nay? fy! fy! fy!

Remembre yow also, am y not y  
That dare not doon but as ye han me taught?  
Wherfore, wherfore make ye þre nayes whi?  
Me thynke þei nede not spoken ben so oft,

For and so be þat y do vngoodly  
As aftirmore then loke ye loue me nouȝt  
And levir nad y ben to lijf ywrouȝt  
But rathir lo þis selven houre to die!

Wherfore, wherfore make ye þre nayes whi?  
Me thynke þey nede not spoken ben so oft  
If in yowre silf þat ye were wele bithought.  
What cause se ye to say nay? fy! fy! fy!

4086 now full, now waning, now new, now waxing  
4089 now in weal, now in woe, I live thus like [the moon]  
4097 if you thought about it seriously  
4099-100 ... am I not the one who dare not behave ...
When me bithought is of my ladi dere,
The bewte, shappe, and goodli gouernaunce,
Hit doth for ioy myn hert to synge and daunce
That even a blisse me thynke is him to here.

So wonder nyse þouȝ þat the self plesere
Me bynden hool vnþo hir ordenaunce,
   When me bithought is of my ladi dere
The bewte, shappe, and goodli gouernaunce;

But forto thynke y am not to hir nere,
Hit doth myn hert to die in displesaunce
That vnþo me þer nys so gret penaunce—
Thus wel, now woo, myn hert doth me achere
   When me bithought is of my ladi dere
The bewte, shappe, and goodli gouernaunce,
   Hit doth for ioy myn hert to synge and daunce
That even a blisse me thynke is him to here.

Wel! myn hert, but wol ye not ben wise?
Bi verrý God, y drede ye will aby
If þat ye purswe moche my rakil ey
To don vs boþe to smert yowre towchis nyse.

What shulde ye chepe a þing of suche a prise,
That are not worth þe thousand part, to by?
   Wel, myn hert, but wol ye not ben wise?
By verrý God, y drede ye wille aby.

Remembre yow þe charge þat on hit lise,
For, were it oure, yet are we not worthi

4112–13 so that it is a joy ... to hear him. So is it no wonder that the same pleasure
4120 thus my heart brings me to feel now weal, now woe
4126 to cause us both to suffer from your foolish behavior
4127–28 Why should you, who are not worth the thousandth part [of her],
bargain in order to [try to] buy a thing [the lady's favor] of such value?
Hit to possede. Be ware ye now foly!
I kan no more; y haue yow warnyd twise.

A wel, myn hert, but wol ye not ben wise?
By verry God, y drede ye wille aby
If that ye purswe moche my rakil ey
To don vs bothe to smert yowre touchis nyse.

The smylyng mouth and laughyng eyen gray,
The brestis rounde, and long, smal armys twayne,
The hondis smoþe, þe sidis strejþt & playne,
Yowre fetis lite, what shulde y ferþer say?

Hit is my craft, when ye are fer away,
To muse þeron, in styntyng of my payne—
The smylyng mouth and laughyng eyen gray,
The brestis rounde and long, smal armys twayne.

So wolde y pray yow, gef y durste or may,
The sight to se as y haue seyne,
Forwhi þat craft me is most fayne
And wol ben to þe howre in which y day:

The smylyng mouth and laughyng eyen gray
The brestis rounde and long smal armys twayne,
The hondis smoþe, þe sidis strejþt & playne,
Yowre fetis lite, what shulde y ferþer say?

Fy, Loue, fy! amende yowre gouvraunce!
Ye are to townyshe, bi this book
(Who so þat good hede on yow took),
To doon on haue of hit plesaunce.

4132–33 for, were it ours, yet we are not worthy to possess it....
4146 to see the sight such as I have seen [i.e., to see you as I have seen you before]
4154 to give one [i.e., me] any pleasure at your behavior
What wise ye suche lewde knakkis askaunce 4155
On on al day to gase and loke?
   O fy, Loue, fy! amende youre gouernaunce!
   Ye are to townysshe, bi this book.

When seson is so lete hem glaunce 4160
And ellis not onys in all a woke;
Bimase, y felt myn hert aquok
Of þi foltisshe acqueyntaunce.

   O fy, Loue, fy! amende youre gouernaunce!
   Ye are to townysshe, bi this book.
   Who so pat good hede on yow took
   To doon on haue of hit plesaunce.

A, Lo, myn hert, what tolde y the?  R71
   —And thou seide, "Twissh, let me alone!"—
   That if she louyd anothir one
   For all þi craft hit wolde not be.

What, wolde thou thynke suche on as she 4170
That thei wolde be wonne anoon?
   A, lo, myn hert, what tolde y the?
   And þou seide, "Twissh, let me alone!"

To holde þi foly, now let se,
Syn all good Hope is fro þe goon,
And make in thee a priuy moon
That pite lakkith in Bewte.

   A, lo, myn hert, what tolde y the?—
   And thou seide, "Twissh, let me alone!"—
   That if she louyd anothir one
   For alle þi craft hit wolde not be.

---

4155-56 What leads you [to play] such uncourtey tricks [as] to peer and pry at someone all day?
4160-62 and otherwise not once in a whole week; stunned, I felt my heart tremble because of your ill-advised companionship.
4168-70 ... you could not succeed. What, would you think such a one as she would be won immediately?
Hou shalt no more rewle me, my hert.
I wol no more be to thee thral,
To folow thee, thi bostis al,
That feele therin so gret a smert;

Thou makist me to nyse and pert
So oft for thi mercy to cal.

Thou shalt *no more rewle me, my hert.*
I wol *no more be to thee thral.*

For reson may pis wel avert:
That, were thi servise worth at al,
Sum grace or this had to the fal,
If any Payne hit myght desert!

Thou shalt *no more rewle me, my hert.*
I wol *no more be to thee thral,*
To folow thee, thi bostis al,
That feele therin so gret a smert.

E nyse, myn hert, as purse is of an ay,
And ye shal loke pat no man come þe while.
Ye must be betyne, bi Seynt Gyle,
To titill fitill thus alday!

Thenke ye hit is a fayre aray,
As now to wepe and eft to smyle?

Be nyse,* myn hert, as purse is of an ay,*
And ye shal loke pat no man come þe while.

May not suffise yow lo <a nay>?
Be ware or Hope do yow bigyle.

4182 "That" refers to the speaker.
4193-94 Be as smooth ... as the shell of an egg [i.e., compose yourself], and I will watch [out] that no one comes by while you do it
4202 beware lest Hope beguile you
Suche raggid thoughtis from yow fil,
Or ye are lost—this dare y say—

Be nyse, myn hert, as purse is of an ay,
And y shal loke pat no man come be while.
Ye must be betyne, bi Seynt Gyle,
To titill titill thus aldai!

Fayre madame, allbough þat þer be noon
That for him silf kan speke so yvil as y,
Yet neuyrtheles but ye had cause of whi
Make me not lest of euery othir on,

And, al be þat y make a rewdishe mon,
Bithynk my trouthe; lete me not dy,

Fayre madame, allbough þat þer be noon
That for him silf kan speke so yvil as y!

For voyde stonde y of hope saue yow alon,
Of whiche me seme ye sett but litil by.
Alas! þe deth gef þat y ben worthi,
Then do me so þat y were goon

Fayre madame, allbough þat þer be noon
That for him silf kan speke so yvil as y,
Yet neuyrtheles but ye had cause of whi
Make me not lest of euery othir on.

Lmes yowre mercy me, my swete,
And make me yowre bedeman,
For, were yowre grace me gyven, þan
I were to riche a man to wete.

4208–10 who can speak for himself so unskillfully, yet ... unless you had a reason for it, do not rank me lowest [in your estimation]
4216–18 by which fact ... you set little store... if I am worthy of death, then kill me.
4221 Give your mercy as almes to me, my sweet
4224–26 then I would be too rich a man indeed. It is hard for him ... to beg in your presence who never did [it] before.
It is him hard, y yow bihete,
To begge tofore that nevir gan.

Almesse yowre mercy me, my swete
And make me yowre bedeman,

For when now <as> with Hope y met,
I am so poore, he, seek and wan,
That for noon helpe that y hem kan
I may not kepe him on his feet.

Almesse yowre mercy me, my swete
And make me yowre bedeman,
For, were yowre grace me gyven, þan
I were to riche aman to wete.

Wel, wanton ey, but must ye nedis pley?
Yowre lookis nyse, ye let hem renne to wide.
I drede me sore if þat ye ben aspide,
And þen we must hit bothe right dere abey!

Take sum and leue sum to anothir day,
And, for oure ese, swift from yowre theftis glide.

Wel, wanton ey, but must ye nedis pley?
Yowre lookis nyse, ye let hem renne to wide.

For myght onys Sklaundir gete yow vndir key,
Ye shulde ben then from alle suche þeftis tide;
So fy, for shame! lete Reson be yowre gide
(And stele—spare not—when ye se tyme and may!)

Wel, wanton ey, but must ye nedis pley?
Yowre lookis nyse, ye let hem renne to wide.
I drede me sore if þat ye ben aspide,
And þen we must hit bothe right dere abey!

4230–32 I am so wretched, he [is] so sick and pale, that for no help I can give him can I...
A  
S he that no thing may profite,
What do y now but wayle and crie
As for myn howre in which to die,
Not settyng bi my lijf a myte?

And of all pis, who is to wite?
Not dare y sey, no, no, trewly.
As he þat no thing may profite,
What do y now but wayle and crie?

So nys hit wondir but a lite
Though that y go ful drepyngly
And drawe me sol from company
Til dethis dart lust on me smyte.

As he þat no thing may profite,
What do y now but wayle and crie
As for myn howre in which to die,
Not settyng bi my lijf a myte?

M  
Yn hert, thou fondis[t] bi this light,
To fle from Lovis company.
It kan not be, O fool, fy! fy!
Thou hast therto, parde, no myght.

Hath not Fortune þe bighight
To ben his servaunt to thou dey?
Myn hert, thou fondist bi this light
To fle from Lovis company!

Stryue not with him, y rede, nor fight,
Lest þou þe sorer hit aby,
But meekly þou his mercy cry
Of þat þou wolde haue tane a flight.

4252 not caring for my life a jot?
4257 So it is no wonder
FORTUNES STABILNES

Myn hert, thou fondist bi this light
To fle from Louis company!
It kan not be, O fool, fy! fy!
Thou hast therto, parde, no myght.

S

Vm tyme y was a poore serviture
In Louys court and had a gouernaunce,
To crewel Fortune, ful of disseyvaunce,
Dischargid me of my good aventure,

And þe ricches þat y had vndir cure
Bitook it hoole to Dethis ordinaunce,—
Vm tyme y was a poore serviture
In Loueys court and had a gouernaunce.—

And bad me walke, an ofcast creature,
On the wilde desert of Desperaunce,
Where now y dwelle in turment and penaunce
And must vnto y dey, this am y sewre.

S

Vm tyme y was a poore serviture
In Loueys court and had a gouernaunce,
To crewel Fortune, ful of disseyvaunce,
Dischargid me of my good aventure.
seven blank pages follow

O

Blesse, oblesse—que porrar obler
All heuy thought þat bryngith in distres,
For, so forcast am y in hevynes,
That, though y wolde, y may in no manere,
300 FORTUNES STABILNES

Syn that—allas, myn hertis lady dere!—
The Deth hath slayne hir of his cursidnes.
\[ Oblesse oblesse que porrar obler \]
\[ All heuy thou3t pat bryngith in distres. \]

For though pat ybeddid had my bere,
Full litill hurt it were to yow, y gesse,
But what, y pray yow pat yowre gentiles
Lust to agre yow with my poore chere.

\[ Oblesse oblesse que porrar obler \]
\[ All heuy thou3t pat bryngith in distres, \]
\[ For, so forcast am y in hevynes, \]
\[ That, though y wolde, y may in no manere. \]

Or> Ipocras nor yet Galien
Ne may of me the woofull woundis cure,
But Ihesu graunt yow bettir aventure!
Now take yowre Cup and saith of yowre wyn.

I wold, a trouthe, that hit were for yow fyn,
But troby thought hath made it all vnpure,
\[ For Ipocras nor yet Galien \]
\[ Ne may of me the woofulle woundis cure. \]

But what, the lesse [hit] doth me lo forpyn
That hit lust yow do me this honure,
So haue ye wonne me for yowre serviture
Vnto the deth hath closid vp myn eyne,

\[ For Ipocras nor yet Galien \]
\[ Ne may of me the woofulle woundis cure, \]
\[ But Ihesu graunt yow bettir aventure! \]
\[ Now take yowre Cup and saith of yowre wyn. \]

4302 be pleased to approve of my frame of mind
4308 now take up your cup(s) and taste your wine
4313-14 ... it torments me less [i.e., relieves my pain] that it pleases you to honor me [by being my guests]
Ere a clerk, then wold y say yow grace,
But certis then, ageyward, am y noon,
For what y haue the God of Loue he hase
Isend it me and ellis no master noon.
I gesse y lerid it well, but yt ys gon;
But nevirtheles as y kan for yow say,
The God of Loue (the myghtty god!) I pray

To vre yow so in trouthe to lede yowre lijf,
Withouten fraude or dowbill countenaunce
But <feode> yow ay, owt ielowsy or strijf
In lust and wele vnto yowre gret plesaunce,
And that yowre ladies, whiche han suffisaunce
Of all bewte, vnto yowre avise,
Beth not to hard in swete of yowre enpresse,

For, trouthe, in loue who secreet is and wise,
Owt shewith not in word nor countenaunce
On wanton look, nor yet no tacchis nise,
As thorugh the which vnbridelid governaunce
That folke shuld thenke: ther goth such on askaunce
Bi his devise or yet bi browderure
To make an ennysen a coverture,

As in oon thing not O name, two or thre
Thorugh which bat any wight shulde þynk or grope:
"Lo, yondir toy hit is for me—or she!"

4121-23 for what I have [i.e., what I know] the God of Love, and no other master, has sent (it) to me [i.e., taught me]. I think I learned it [what he taught me] well, but it is gone [now I have forgotten it]

4330-32 and [I pray] that your ladies, which have an abundance of beauty, in your judgments, be not too hard [to obtain, i.e., resistant] in [your] pursuit of your difficult enterprise

4335-39 one amorous glance, nor bad qualities such as through uncontrolled behavior, would make people think: there goes someone [who acts] deceptively, [as if] by his coat of arms [i.e., his high status] or by an embroidery [on it he could] use his emblem [i.e., his nobility] as a disguise [for his truly base nature].

4340-42 as if for one thing [there were] not one name, [but] two or three, through which [fact] anyone might think "Lo, that lady is for me—or that one!"
And all in vayne to doon hem so to hope  
(Which is þe craft to make a keverkope  
To holde a two or thre so on his sleue),
—But God of Loue yow blesse from þat myschefe!

That eche in oon ye take yowre suffisaunce,  
Yowre ioy, yowre wele, and all yowre hool comfort  
To ben as here yowre worldly <lo> plesaunce,  
For vnto loue suffisith oon resort;  
If hit not doo to yow, y me report,  
A fawt ther is in oon of hem tayne,—
But most it happith man (y am but playne!),

But then agayne, the trouthe of <loue is> soche  
That how it falle him, payne orhevynes,  
Yet wol it doon hem (all right wel avoche)  
Forto contynew forth in stedfastnes  
Rathir then ben taynt in dowbilnes,  
For ner not Trouth, Loue hath no champioun  
To holden vp his prays of gret renowne.

As in the centre of his hertis chest  
He weyeth alle his deedis to mesure  
How God of Loue may be servid best  
And onaspide of any creature.  
This is of Trouthe the verry werkis pure,  
The which that bi ensewerid governaunce  
Hath all his werk in forcast ordenaunce,

So that him, thorugh no foltisshe, foly myshappe,  
Ther ben a cause ygen to any wight,  
Bi which they shulde any dishonure clappe;

4343 “Hem” refers to the ladies; “to doon” is parallel with “to make” (4339).
4347 So that each of you take your satisfaction in [only] one [lady]
4351–53 if it does not suffice, I assert, there is a fault in one of the two lovers, but most often it befalls [i.e., is the fault of] the man . . .
4360 to uphold his praise or great renown.
4364 and [how to do it and remain] unseen
4368–70 so that there be no cause given to anyone, through ill-advised, foolish bad luck, by which they could speak lightly of any dishonor to [i.e., of] him
To ianglyn this or that is not aight.
He berith in him so sotill an insight,
That passyng hard hit is such on aspien
Though hit were Argus with his hundrid eyene.

But though this craft wol not be lernyd sone
And be full hard to suche as wanten brayne,
Yet fervent loue kan cause it to be doon
When onys are ioynd hertis tayne,
But then the false that doon but fayne—
They bred are in so rewde a leyre
They rekke not who speke fowl or fayre.

So from all this he yow defende
Thorough whom all grace is geue to loue,
And alle that mys han doon, amende,
And, as that y haue seid aboue,
So graunt yow grace to yowre bihoue,
As wel forto acheven yowre emprise
And at yowre ende, the blisse of paradise.

No French

§

Now will ye lordis wesshe or shall y wesshe,
If so to doon hit be to yowre plesere?
And yet, a trouthe, ther nys her no, no disshe
That, as me thynkith, ought fowle yowre hondis here
Wherfore that this insted of watir clere,
Bicause y haue of wisshis habundaunce,
This shall y wisshe, if hit be yowre plesaunce:

Ne were hit no that y in wisshis nysse
Delite my silf, not koude y lyvyn this.
So gret it is, the payne that on me lise

4373 that it is extremely hard to see [that] such a one [is a lover at all]
4391-92 ... there is no dish here [that you have eaten] that ... would sully your hands [i.e., it is not necessary to wash]
4396-97 were it not that I take delight in foolish (amorous) wishes ...
That in this world no karfull wrecche þer nys
Which lyvith lo so fer from hertis blis
And not for that, a trouth, to say yow soth,
As now y knowe my silf no noder worthe;

For syn that crewell Deth hath fro me raught
Mi worldis ioy, my lady and maystres,
Of whom that all my welthe y to me kaught,
What shuld y do but mase in heynes?
Yet, neuyrtheles, to doon yow with gladnes
I shall assay where y kan for yow loo
Wisshe the wisshe þat y was wont to do:

The first wisshe is, that y wisshen shall,
So that my lady take noon yvill entent
(Therin God helpe me, so y wold in all!):
[1] As poore y were as Fortune hath her sent
Of good, hir peere in all mendement;
[2] And to serue God myn hert stood entierly
As her swet gost hit is ysett holy.

[3] To loue honure, als, and dreden shame
   I wolde that y were <hir> liche, lich hir grace
[4] To kepe my silf as well from hurt & blame,
[5] And wolde y were eek in all goodly place
   Of hardynes, my poore lyvis space,
   <Renomyd> were as werly folk repayre,
   As she is callid, among the ladies, fayre;

[6] And were as full of all corage hardy

4401–2 and nevertheless, in truth . . . ?I know myself to be worth no more
4411–12 if my lady assume no ill will [in me] (God help me therein, I would thus in all [my wishes]!)
4413–14 [the first wish is that] I were as poor as she is rich in Fortune's gifts [see note]
4417–19 also, I wish that I loved honor and feared shame as much as she did, and
[I wish I could] match her in grace, which would keep me entirely from injury and blame
4420–22 and I also wish I were . . . as renowned for courage in opportune [i.e., appropriate] situations where valiant men are assembled [i.e., among valiant men]
As that hir praty hert is full of drede,
[7] Nor that no travayle shuld me more wery
Then doth my slepe when y bere hevy hed
Or long to muse vpon hir goodlyhed;
[8] And my body as strong were and puysshaunt
As hiris is full febill and sufferaunt;

[9] And in all iustys praysid forto be
As that she is in placis of dauncyng,
To seche worshipe also delitid me
As fer from where hir lust to be dwellyng;
[10] And that to man y had my demenyng
Bothe of speche and look as wel ensewrid
As that she is of womanhed enewrid;

[11] And that y louyd as longith to a knyght
As that she willith pees and rest;
[12] And alway wolde als pat y were pe wight
Of thought and word and hert with[in] my brest
Gracious lijk hir which is of goode pe best;
[13] As curteys eek as she is daungerous
(Where y myssayallas forgeue me thus!)

[14] As goodly man, as plesaunt of langage
As well bilouyd of all good, more & lesse,
[15] And that we liche were borne as of parage
And in myn hert ther were as gret nobles
As nature hath ysett in hir larges,
[16] And what y do as very were to man
As hiris are asittyng to woman

4427-28 than does sleep itself when I become drowsy or [than does] musing for a long time on her beauty
4438-39 and that I loved what belongs [pertains] to a knight as much as she desires . . .
4445-46 as excellent a man, as pleasant of language as she is loved by all good people, greater and lesser
4450-51 and [I wish that] the things I do were as proper to a man as her deeds are appropriate to a woman
[17] Als wise wolde y y were to hir plesaunce,
As goodly good, as she is good and fayre,
[18] And of all this when y had suffisaunce
That all vertu in me thus did repayre.
[19] I wolde that my Fooes fowr contrayre
Iturnyd were vnto my frendis alle
(That thus for payne doth my coloure palle—

I mene Refuse, Daunger, Drede, and Payne
That with the deth me dayly doth manace),
When y were suffisaunt to plese hir playne:
Refuse to Mercy, Daunger vnto Grace—
(That they myght be transformyd so, alace!)
Drede to Sewrete and Payne vnto Gladnes
That all in ioy were sett myn hevynes

To plant me welthe within my woful pou3t.
And this in ende of my dool wisshyng,
Syn y of loue haue felt the gret vnsoft:
[20] I wolde it were my lady dere lkyng
Me forto chese. As how? (take my menyng)
As for loue? nay, but for hir serviture;
Noon othir sechith my sympill creature.

J wisshid have ynough, as semeth me
(Now wishe more if so that ye haue nede),
For only saue to plese yow with, parde,
All is in vayne y wishe, so god me spede,
For in this noyous lijf that now y lede
Hit sat me best, as wijsly god me saue,
To wishe my bere and so to clothe my grave.

4452–53 I wish I were as capable of judging what would please her, and as graciously good, as she is good and fair
4454 and when I had enough of all this [goodness]
4456 I wish that my four hostile foes
4458 (Who thus cause me to go pale with pain—
4471–72 For her lover? no, only for her servant; my humble self seeks no more
And if ye lust to daunce or that ye go,
I pray yow to asay this sympil on
To aftir this that y may make yow mo
—I mene while spise and wyne is for yow go—
And thenne fare wele when bat ye list echon,
Forwhi my Iewbile then is to yow doon,
And so my newe fortune wol folow soon:

Swet hert  ||  And ye  ||  Trewly,
Mercy!    ||  (Alas)    ||  Madame,
For smert  ||  Pite,     ||  That y
—Avert    ||  Parde,    ||  —On whi!—
On sert!—  ||  On me     ||  Shulde dy
I die.     ||  Non has.   ||  Were shame.

Then that ye goo
Then am y woo,
But ye, swete foo,
(For ought y playne)
Ye sett not, no,
To sle me so,
—Alas and lo!
But whi, souerayne,
Doon ye thus payne
Vpon me rayne?
Shall y be slayne
Owt wordis mo?
Wolde ye ben fayne
To se me dayne?
Now then, certayne,
Yet do me slo!

4480–82 And if you wish to dance before you go, I ask you to try this little one [till] . . .
4485 for then my banquet/fest for you is over
4489–92 for pain—think on my service to you!—I die
4515–22 Shall I be slain without further words? Would you be pleased to see me die? Now then, certainly, you slay me! For I am he who contents himself . . .
Or y am he
Contentith me
What so that ye
Wil to me geve.
But yet, parde,
To haue pite
Ye ought ben she
On my myscheve.
O me foryeue
And let me lyue
To y be shreve—
A day or thre.
Ye kan not lyve
How hit doth cleve
Myn hert, thus greve,
But ye hit se.

Owre departyng
Is, me felyng,
The deth, <straynyng>
Myn hert to die.
For, so beyng
Yow not seyng
Ful sore musyng
With wepyng eye.
For deth y crie;
This lijf y drie
To turne and lye
Mi woo waylyng,
That lo trewly
I wolde ye sie

4525-28 But yet ... you ought to be the one to have pity on my misfortune
4531 till I [can] be shriven
4533-36 You cannot believe how it cleaves my heart, this torment, unless you see it
4538-39 is, in my opinion, [my] death, constraining
4546 this life I endure
4549-50 so that truly I want you to see
How so that y
Shal ly pynyng.

*No French*

Hus in a pece of tyre y most delite,
For all therin y sett myn appetit.

It is so swete and plesaunt to the ey
That, though a man were in poyn to die,
It wolde him helpe, and cheif in feure white.

Ther is no draught so inly good, trewly,
For though a wrecche formasid in it ly
Yet, parde, lo, it is no vileny.

*For who that lust to seche him company,*
*Than lete him dawe vnto pe most worthi*  
*And there ought noon to blame him,*  
*wot ye whi?*

*For though so be he be not worth a myte*  
*Worship to sewe he is no thing to wite,*  
*For that is sittyng vnto lowe and hy,*  
*So chese ye alle, for pis haue chosen y—*  
*Ner cast noon othir chese, I yow bihite.*

*No French*

Las, Fortune, alas! myn hevynes,
As cast <ye> hit shall holde me euyrmore,
Thorpue whiche y greves haue a thousand score
Withouten thought that sowneth to gladnes?

Unto my deth, pis dewre y day bi day
Most ferrist ay from ioy or recomfort,
Syn ther [n]is welthe pat me rekevir may
The mortall crampe this felly me resort.

4565–66 he is not at all to blame for pursuing honor, for that [pursuit] is proper to everyone  
4568 nor [do I] plan to choose another . . .  
4569–70 . . . do you intend that my heaviness shall control me forever . . . ?  
4575–76 since there is no joy that may restore me, the death agony approaches so cruelly
Alas, Fortune! as shape me sum redres
To hele me of pis karfull, grevous sore
That y may ben as y haue ben tofore
Or doo me sone to sterve in my distres.
Alas, Fortune, alas!

Hope to me saith that y am past the worst
And praieth me to ben of right good chere,
But evirmore y fynde to me acurst
The false and crewellfull Daunger,

Which doth me haue, alas, so gret dewresse—
But helpe, Fortune, pat y be not forlore
And set me of my grevous som a schore
Or y am ded, God take y to witnes!
Alas, Fortune, alas!

Ch. 287, Carole I

A
Vaunce thee, Hope, as myn affyaunce.
Comfort my hert now in his grevous woo,
For ellis (alias!) he may not bere it, no,
This outrageous Payne and gret penaunce.

Svmtyme y had me thoughtis many oon
To iape me with, but now, trewly,
They are me fled and fro me goon
To purchase me an howre in which to dey,

Wherfore, gef so thou nave puysshaunce
Of alle my grevis forto ese me so,
Then spedith the hit forto light me lo
As sumwhat at the lest of my grevaunce.
Avaunce thee, Hope!

Parde thou hast him made promys
That at his nede thou shuldist him sokore

4584 ... I find ... Daunger malicious toward me
4588 and set to my burdensome sum [of suffering] a limit
4601 then hurry it [ease] to me ...
And forto take him from all hevynes,  
But all to longe thou dost him to langore.

O haue him yet sumwhat in remembraunce  
And helpe him onys at large to skape & goo
The prison of Daunger, his cursid foo,  
Or he must die inpayne and displesaunce!
Avaunce thee, Hope!

Ch. 288, Carole II

Ow is hit? how? haue ye forgoten me?  
Ye, certis, ye, y trowe it verily,
Myn only ioy, myn hertis sovl lady!  
But what, y me submytt to yowre mercy
As for all that, in what place where y be.

For Hope saith me how bat my poore Trouth,  
All list it oft to doon yow on me thynke,  
Without so be that of a wantoun slouthe
Gen thorugh disdayne, ye lust to let it synke.

But what, y pray yow thenke yet y am he  
That serve yow ay vnto my poore degre,  
For, promys made, to chaunge it am not y.  
No, sothly, no! y levir had to dy,
I promys yow, in myn aduersite!  
How is it? how?

Loue doth to gret a wrong, to myn entent,  
That he doth not the ladies forto felle
The greves whiche are to ther servaunt[s] sent
As for ther trouthe that thei loue hem so welle.

4606 and take from him all woe. "Forto take" is parallel to "sokore" (4605).  
4609 and help him once again ...  
4617 In spite of all that ...  
4618-21 ?For Hope tells me that my poor Loyalty wishes to cause you to think often wholly on me, unless of willful inactivity bestowed [on me] on account of [your] disdain you wish to let it [my loyalty] sink [into oblivion]. [see note]  
4629-31 that he does not cause the ladies to feel the griefs which are sent to their servants in return for their [servants'] loyalty, i.e., that they love them [the ladies] so well
Madame, by yow y say all this, parde,  
For, and ye knew my Payne, y wot þat ye  
(The which that Loue doth me in to drie)  
Yowre selven say hit wold hardly  
That to reward my loue ye ought ben she.  
How is it? how?  
Ch. 289, Carole III

Ow felle me when þis Iubile þus was made  
Not kowde y ellis but wandir vp & downe  
Musyng in my wakyng dremys sad.  
Myn ydill thought so besy gan me rowne  
That alle the hertis dwellyng in a towne  
Ne nad (no, no) so small to doon as y,  
For in No Care thus lyvid y, wot ye whi.

Seyng y nadde as lady nor maystres,  
As laboure noon me left nas, soth to say  
(Without it were to here evensong and masse  
And for the sowle of my swet hert to pray),  
Which esy lijf y ledde this many day  
Without it were that sum oon, he or she,  
Wolde me complayne of ther aduersite

And pray me that y wolde suche labour take  
Of ther complayntis as they to me tolde,  
In a Roundell or balade them to make.  
This, for y was so moche to Loue biholde  
In my fer afore past dayes olde,  
Ther nas to Loue so sympill servyng wight  
But that y fayne wolde plese hem if y might.

As now but lat that on me ded requere  
Forto biwayne fortunes stabilnes

4632–36 ... I say all this concerning you ... for, if you knew [how severe] my pain [is] (which loue causes me to endure), I know that you yourself would certainly say that you ought to be the one to reward my love  
4655 Thus, because I was so obligated to Love  
4657 there was not such a lowly serving man in Love's service  
4659 Recently one [such servant of love] asked me
And tolde me all the case of his matere
And y, that fayne wolde doon hem all gladnes,
Had tane on me right so the bisynes
And took me so myn enke and papir to,
And, forbicaus me thought it best to do,

Forth bi my silf thus went y me alone
Toward the see, where nygh my bidyng was
To y come to an high huge Rokke of stone
That to biholde hit glemsiht bright as glas,
Where as y fonde a benche of mosse & gras
So smothe ygrowe and eek so verrry soft
That it was lijk a Carpet, as me thought,

Where as anoon that downe my silf y sat
And gan me muse to maken pis complaynt,
Syn it must ned be doon, as wot yow what,
And that y kan not make it ouyr quaynt,
But neuyrtheles these were my wordis faynt
I for him seide, and gan my papir sprede
And wrote right thus, if so ye list to rede:

No French

§

Thou Fortune, that causist pepill playne
Vpon thi chaunge and mutabilite,
Did y thee so, y blamyd wrong, certaynne,
For stabill yet herto as fynde y the
Withouten chaunge forto prevaylen me,
But whereas first thou fond me in symplesse,
Thou holdist me in myn aduersite
So that y may biwayne thi stabilnes.

And yet full many holde opnyoun

4667–68 ... near where my dwelling was till I came to a ... cliff of stone
4682 if I [made a complaint] against you ...
4685–86 but whereas you first found me in a state of innocence [and did not aid me], [now] you [continue to] hold me in my misfortune
As that thou shulde now hurt, and now amende,
And gladly, als, of thi condicioun 4690
A sympill wight in honore to ascende,
And most in weele as don him downe descende,
But y may well contrary lo witnes,
For of my wrecchid lijf y fynde noon ende,
So that y may biwayne thi stabilnes. 4695

For well y se how Ricches ascendith
And all folke bisy him to plese and yeue,
Whereas the sympill wight descendith
Of alle lothid, and noon him lust releue,
Among whiche on am y in suche myschef
Ordaynyd Loue, but to moche bisynes
Thou hast me geve my ladi to acheue,
So that y may biwayne thi stabilnes,

Thorugh which y wynne more maugre oft þen loue
Bi my to bisy demenynge, 4700 f 112v
And yet, God wot that sitt aboue,
I most desire of any erthely thing
To doon all that as were to hir plesyng,
But of rewdenes thou gevist me such larges
That thank to pike me wantith the konnyng,
So that y may biwayne thi stabilnes.

Alas! Fortune, now were me wondir wise,
Sett me in wey my lady forto plese,
And if that y haue tane to high emprise
I pardoun axe and that thou not displese,
But turne thi whele my langour to apese
And of my smert to shape me sum redresse,

4690–92 and customarily, also, by your nature [cause] a lowly person to ascend in honor, and the happiest one . . .
4700–1 among which I am one in such misfortune ordained by Love . . .
4709–10 but you give me such an abundance of uncouthness that I cannot gain [her] favor
4712 . . . maintain me [my cause] very wisely [i.e., by helping me]
4715 . . . that you not be displeased
4717 “To shape” is probably parallel to “turne” (4714) rather than “to apese.”
For yet thou baysist me in noyous <lese>,
So that y may biwayle thi stabilnes.

For my dull rewdenes hath no gouernaunce
Thorugh my demenyng hir to doon plesere
And yet, god wot, as that y haue pusshauce,
I sett myn hert, my will, and my desere
Hir forto serue, but all to gret <an hire>
I willid haue thorugh fonnyd wilfulnes,
But me preuaylith werryng nor prayere,
So that y may biwayle thi stabilnes.

Now fare well, Fortune, with pi stedfast face,
For, as y fynde, right so y write of thee
And yn my refrait, though y thee manace,
Thou oughtist not, me thenke, displeased be
Though y say trouthe as that pou dost to me,
But evir truse and rewe on my distres
That y endure in suche aduersite
So that y may biwayle thi stedfastnes.

No French

§

And when that y had made pis poor bill,
So hevy gan myn eye liddis way
That even therwith into a slepe y fill,
And all be hit that sum folkis say
To truste on dremys nys but trifill play,
Yet oon may mete the dreme wel yn his sevyn
As aftirward that shall bifalle him evyn.

Unto record y take myn autour this
Of him that wrote the straunge aviisoun

4718 for you continue to harass me with painful deceits
4724 ... but I have desired an all too great reward ...
4726 but neither fighting [against you] nor prayer helps me
4732 though I tell the truth about what you do to me
4735 so much that I ought to bewail your constancy
(Which callid was the prewdent Macrobius)  
How it bifill vtto Kyng Sipioun.  
So nys hit no to myn opynyoun  
Fully noon to take onto thym hid,  
Forwhi y thinke it thus, so god me spede:

That hit doth to the body signyfy  
What afterward as shulde vtto him falle  
(All othir trust y holde it fantesy),  
If so that oon koude well remembre all;  
But to my tale as this retourne y shall:  
That as y lay and slepte þus on the Rokke  
That on the cleef vpon þe banke outstokke

Øvir the see, where that the roryng wawes  
Did ouyrcast the gravell here and there,  
As that y slepe in sweven y saw this:  
A lady nakid all thing saue hir here,  
And on hir hed lijk as a crowne she were  
Of dowfis white, and many a thousand payre  
Hie ouyr hir gan fletter in the ayre.

Abowt hir wast a kercher of plesaunce,  
And on hir hond an Owle y sigh sittyng.  
Vpon the wawes, owt more suffisaunce,  
Me thought afer she came to me fletyng,  
And verily it semyd me wakyng,  
And went me downe vnto the bank apace  
To vndirstonde of hir what that she was.

When she came nere, þan gan y to hir say,  
"Good thrift, Madame, to youre streight sidis tayne,  
But whidir wandre ye this wersom way?  
Hauve y no service myght be to yow fayne?

4747–48 so it is not in accord with my opinion to take absolutely no heed of them  
4753 if a person could remember the whole dream  
4755 "That" is redundant.  
4766–68 it seemed to me that she came floating toward me on the waves from afar without any means of support, and truly it seemed that I was awake
Me thynke this watir is vnto yow Payne,
Ne nys hit?" "No, no, noon nys hit, ywis,"
Coth she, and as y shope me hir to kis

She wayfid me and lokid passyng straunge.
"What, nys," quod she, "as purse is of an ay!"
And even forbasshid hir coloure gan to chaunge.
"Knowe ye not me?" "No—yes! ... Nay, certes, nay!"
"No? ye wil not se poore folk nowaday
Who is hit who pat oft hath bete yowre hound."
For which y stood so masid in that stound

That y not koude oon sely word abreide,
For sene y had hir [t]how y nyste not where,
To that eft sone she this vnto me seide,
"Charlis," quod she, "y thanke yowre deyuure
That ye shal make, suche as my folkis are,
And but so were that ye shulde ben aquyt
Iwis y myght wel say y were to wite."

When that y herde hir calle me bi my name
And that y wel had lokid on hir face,
Myn hert in me hit quoke for verry shame,
For wel y wiste pat Venus then hit was
And seide, "Madame, y putt me to yowre gras.
And pardone me as of yowre gret nobles
That y forgat yow of my <symplenesse>."

"Yow pardone what? what nedith bis?" quod she,
"Yowre mendis is as passyng light to make.
But how lede ye yowre lijf? Good, lete vs se."
"As an ancre, Madame, in clotthis Blake."
"So thynkith me ye haue professioun take
Or ellis ye cast to fonde sum ordir newe,
For strike ye are from Rosett out and blewe."
"A trouthe, ye say me soth, so sett me wel,
For, as for blew, y clothe therin myn hert,
And all tha rosett is yentirmelle.
I kepe therin my pouer thought covert
—Alle suche as esy arne, not suche as smert,
For in tawny ye leie alle them aside—
And to my deth in blak my silf y bide."

"Whi so?" quod she, "dwelle ye not in No Care?"
"Soth, dwelle y so lijk as a masid man
That hath a bidyng and wot not where,
For though y whilom fer from Sorow ran
Yet wol he lo for ought þat evyr y kan,
Be with me, to and to, wil y or no,
And as my frend thus cherisshe y my fo!"

"But how is hit—how cometh he to yow so?
Ye dwelle asondir fer." "Nay! sothely, nere,
For when me happith here or there to go
And thenke that yondir lo my lady dere
Gaf me this word, or made me suche a chere
And aundir herde y hir so swetely syng
And in this chambre led y hir daunsyng . . .

"In yondir bayne so se y hir all nakid
And this and that y sawe hir yondir worche.
Here y fond hir slepe, and yondir wakid
And in this wyndow pleide we at the lorche
And from this stayre y lad hir to þe chirche
And bi the way this tale y to hir tolde
And here she gaf me lo þis ryng of gold

"And there at Post and Piler did she play
And so y first my loue vtnto hir tolde

4810–11—all those that are pleasant, [that is,] not those that cause me pain, for those I lay aside [wrapped] in tawny—
4824–25 spoke to me [bade me] thus or gave me a certain look, and yonder I heard her . . .
4830 and in this window seat we played at tables
And there, aferd, she start fro me away
And with this word she made myn hert to bold
And with this word, alas, she made me cold
And yondir sigh y hir this resoun write
And here y baste hir fayre, round pappis white;

"In suche a towre also y sigh hir last—
And yet wel more a thousand thoughtis mo:
How in that bed the lijf eek from hir past.
Thus ay newly aquaynt y me with Woo
To that to chirche he doth me forto goo,
And for hir sowle vpon my knees pray,
Lo thus my lyvis tyme y dryve away,

"Forcharge nave y of thing to me bileft
Of good nor harme more then y telle yow pis,
And as for yet y care no thing of theft,
For thorugh the deth my thoughtis riche[s] y mys
That stede of hit the wallis bare y kis
Or ellis a glove or smokke y from hir stale
Which was þe <shift> of hir y louyd and shall.

"Unto this paynfull, ded professioun
Mi hert and y are swore vnto my last
Withouten chaunge or newe opynyoun,
But this service to kepe me to stedfast:
Ay to remembre on my ioyes past,
And y that so must doon that wold y lere
Where that y dwelle from Woo then fer or nere.

"Thus haue y told yow my poore ancre lijf

4848–52 for I take no interest any more in anything that is left to me [since her death], either good or evil, except those things I am telling you about, and still I do not worry at all about theft, because, through death, I have [already] lost my thought's treasure [i.e., my lady] so that instead of it [her] I kiss the bare walls [of a place I shared with her]
4858 to keep me, steadfast, to this service
4860–61 ... want to learn [from you, i.e., your opinion] whether I dwell far from Woe, then, or near
And what professioun that ye am to bounde.
How thenke ye lo nys hit contemplatiij?
"No, certis." "Whi?" "Ye do yowre silf confound!"
"Whi, wherof serue y now but bete þe ground
As that y goo? ellis helpe y vnto nought."
"Ye, fy!" quod she, "Nay, chaunge ye muste þat thought.

"Kemembre must ye that ye ar a man
And haue of nature als yowre lymys goode,
So ought ye kyndely, thenk me, spend it than,
Or ellis ye were to moche to blame, bi the roode,
Though that yowre hert so trewly stonde or stode
Yowre ladi to. O, what! now she is goo,
What vaylith here to stroy yowre silf in woo?

"Ye may as wel chese yow a lady newe
And for hir sowle as dayly forto pray
And ben in hert to hir as verry trewe
As wilfully to doon yowre silf to day
And forto spende in vayne yowre tyme away,
For, though ye take a lady in yowre arme,
God wot, as now hit doth hir litill harme!"

"Alas, Madame," seide y, "that ye shulde say!
Durst y yet speke so fowl a word as this?
For, ben she ded, myn hert must serve hir ay
As y haue swore, and so shall doon, ywis,
For, in good trouthe, ellis did y fer amys!
Alas, Madame, speke me therof no more—
The more ye speke, the more me grevith sore!

4863 and to what vow I am bound
4866–67 Why, what purpose do I serve now except to beat the ground as I walk?
otherwise I am useless.
4871 so you ought to employ it then according to nature, it seems to me
4873–74 though your heart remains so faithful or obeyed your lady so faith-
fully. . .
4877 and pray for her soul [that of the new lady] . . .
4883 . . . that you should say [such a thing]!
4885 . . . even though she is dead . . .
4887 . . . else I erred greatly!
"And where ye say that y shulde ben a man,
A wrecche am y, an ofcast creature,
For who is she that joy of me wolde han
That am forfadid so in my figure?
Certis, to wrappe me in a sepulture
Me sittith bet, as wisly god me saue,
Then in myn armes a newe ladi haue!"

"Now, bi my soth, that were a worthi toy!
So preue ye well ye are not worth at all!
(What nede y lo to paynt or make it koy?)
And in this case yowre silf so shame ye shall,
And me, and alle my folke in generall,
For alle may say my service is to badde
That ye naue lust to serue me as ye had;

"And, more, therin ye do yowre lady shame,
For all the world wol thynke hit, verily,
And sche had ben as folk hath gen hir name,
Ye wolde haue tane anothir hastily,
But they wil say ye doon it for a sy
And clakke of hir a full vngoodly clawse—
Thus shall ye doon hir shame without a cause!"

"Allas, Madame, as wisly fynde y blis
As me were loth to shame it yow or yowris
And most of alle my lady dere, ywis,
But y se Deth so crewelly devowris
Suche folkis fayre, and in cheef of ther flowris,

4898-99 In this way you show clearly that you are not worth anything at all!
(What need I color my words or keep still?)
4901-2 and me, and all my followers without exception, for [then] all [my followers] can say that my service is very distasteful [because]
4905 "Hit" anticipates next two lines.
4906 [that] if she had been [the sort of person] people say she was
4908-9 but people will say you do it [refrain from taking a new lady] to dishonor [your dead lady] and [they will] tell very unflattering stories about her [see note]
4912 I would be loath to shame you or your followers
4915 ... and especially the best (of them)
That, as me thynk, hit is a choys in vayne 
To chesen that on shall not long attayne,

"F or, chase y me a lady lo this day 
(As well y wot that shal me not bitide), 
Yet shulde y drede the deth of hir alway, 
To thynke how yong and fayre my lady dide. 
Thus gif y shulde my service newe prouide 
Then brought y me in sorow dubbil fold: 
As first to thynke vpon my dayes old

"A nd then agayne vpon my service dewe, 
How were me best to sett my gouernaunce 
To get the favour of my lady newe, 
So hard it is in takyng acqueyntaunce, 
For that which is vnto sum oon plesaunce 
Anothir will, parcas, ben with hit wroth 
—The craft of loue is straunge who to hit goth!—

"F or some they ioy hem in a port al straunge 
And othir some in gladsom demenyng 
And some wil thynke he vsith fillith of chaunge 
And some wil deme this word is flateryng. 
Thus newe to lere were y in my gidyng, 
For, all knew y my lady verry wel, 
Anothir newe, y knowe hir neuyr a del."

"O what!" quod she, "ye make a gret perail 
To loue! me thynke ye nede not don hit so, 
For if ye cast in loue preuayle 
Spare not to speke, spede ye so or no.

4917 to choose that [which] one may not keep for long
4921-25 because I would forever be thinking about how young and beautiful my lady [was when she] died. So if I should offer my services again [to another lady], (then) I would bring myself into double sorrow by thinking, first, about my past [my first love] and then about my service due [to my new lady]
4929 for that which is pleasing to one person
4932 for some women take pleasure ... 
4934-35 ... some [ladies] will think he uses the vile speech of fickleness, and some will think this [same] speech is flattering
Parde, noon wol become yowre foo
For yowre good will, this ben ye sewre;
Hit were tomoche ageyne nature;

"And where ye care for yowre havour
(Where ye shulde ben mery or sad),
Loke wher ye cast stonde in favour
And who that most in prays is had
With hir, where he loke glom or glad.
Folow the same, if that ye kan,
And hard is but ye plese hir than.

"And where ye wolde as haue mor dred of deth
(Had ye a lady) for hir then yowre silf,
Parde, deth in yowthe not alle asleth!
Some may ye se þat lyve iiij score and twelfe
(And bi that howre were tyme for þe to delve!)
So, fy, for shame! ye ought to trust þe best
Of euyery dowt to sett yowre hert at rest.

"And where ye cast alway from loue withdrawe,
A feith, y trowe yowre labour vaylith not,
For when ye se that that ye nevir saw
It may wel happe yow thynke ye neuyr thought."
And as y threw myn eye therwith aloft,
Me thought y saw, descendying in þe ayre,
A chare of gold, so veryr riche and fayre

That forto se hit nas no wondir lite
—The ricches of the stones thervpon!—
Whiche drawen was with two large stedis white,
And, as me thought, on whelis foure it ran;
Abowt it als y sigh full many on

4946 And in the place in your argument where you [express] worry about how you should act
4948 determine where you contrive to stand in her favor
4951-52 ... and, if you do this, it is unlikely that you will fail to please her.
4958-59 ... you ought to expect the best [outcome] of every uncertain situation
4971-72 around it I also saw (very) many a one that exerted themselves to push and shove it
That did hir Payne to put it forth and shove,  
And in this Chayre ther sat a quene, aboue,

That forto say yow how she ware hir gere  
Hit was ydoon hardly at poynt devise,  
And if that y shall say yow what sche were—  
But, verry god, me bou3t it passyng nyse
(All though it riche were of a wondir prise!)
For euyrmore the coloure gan to chaunge,  
So semyd me hir surcot verry straunge,

For the body was kowchid thorugh & thorugh  
As euyrmore a Saphir and a balayse,  
That to biholde it, as y tolde yow now,  
So as the playtis vp and downe arayse,
So did dyuerse the hewe in sondry wise,  
For, though on wey the Safir shewid blew,
This way the balise geveth a purpil hew,

And as the surcot <forgeth> in substaunce  
Of ermyn and is powdrid round abowt,  
So was it wrought with fyn lynche & plesaunce,  
And in the stede of powdryng all without,
As y biheld, right wel persayue y mught  
How it was sett ful thikke with laughyng eyene
—But many moo that wepte y myght aspien!

Upon the whiche she ware a mantell large  
That many fold was festid with a lace,  
Bicause only hit bare so gret a charge

4976–77 ... what she wore—well, by God, it seemed to me absolutely extraordinary
4981–87 because the body [of the dress] was studded at regular intervals [with jewels], and every place [there was] a sapphire [there was also] a balas ruby [i.e., they were set in pairs], so that when one looked at it, ... as the folds [of the lower part of the surcoat] rose and fell, so the color changed in various ways, for though one way the sapphire looked blue, the other way the ruby gives a purple hue
4988–90 and just as the surcoat counterfeits ermine and is powdered all over [like it], so it [Fortune's surcoat] was made of fine pleated lawn
4996–97 that was tied many times with a cord, because by itself it bore so great a weight [was so heavy]
Of which the colour blak nor grene it nas
But most lijk to a raynbow hewe it was,
Forwhi the silkis were so very straunge
That ay from blew to reed or grene þei chaunge,

Of which the tissew ran in clowde werk
And, as thei brak now there and here,
Some with rayne and tempest lokid dérk,
And out of othir smote sonne bemys clere
And othir some were worst in a manere
Of moonys, weche that <wroft> wer yn a rang[e],
Some at a wane, some cresyng aftir chaunge.

A bordir had this mantell eek theron
That praty was and riche in verry dede,
For made it was a brere of gold that ron
Now here and there, with rosis whit & reede,
Vpon the which, and levis as þei spred—
Some loose, some fast—þei sett were ful of ston,
And that of perlis passyng many oon.

The lynyng of hit was with nedill wrought
So playn, so thikke, so smothe, so pratily
With litill, litill flowris soft,
The seven and the daisy,
But most of pancy myght y spy.
Abowt hir nek also she ware
A serpe, the fasson to declare:

Hit wrought was full of broken balis
Of dise, and as they fillen out,
Bi lynkis and so downe avalis,
To se them how they werle abowt
Hit wondir was, withouten dowt,
Whi they turnyd so many chaunsis
And that so ful of veryaunces!

Hir crowne was made with wawis nyse
And sett ful of karbonkil <ston>,
The reysyng vp with flowre-delise;
Hir heer also so bright it shon
That it was hard to loke it on,
Which spredde hir shuldris all abrod
And all the chayre in which she rood.

Hir visage was eek wel ymade,
But then sumwhile she lowrid sore,
And even as soune she lokid glad,
And in hir hond a wheel she bore
And gan to turne it euyrmore
That berel was, me thought, or glas,
And this was wretten in compas:

"J shal rayne" "Y rayne" "Y haue raynyd"
And "Y owt rayne" was wretten last of al,
On which that many folkis hem constraynyd
To gete aloft that sone downe from hit fall
And [some] wolde clyme ūat myght no thing at all,
And othir some they sat vp passyng hy,
Among the which ūat on y myght aspy

So inly fayre, so full of goodlynes,
So wel ensewrid bothe of port and chere,
That this bithought me lo dowtles,
How that it was myn owen self lady dere,

5030–32 Her crown was scalloped and set with carbuncles, the point of each wave [was decorated] with fleur-de-lis
5039 and just as quickly she looked happy
5045–48 and I [am] without reign was written last, on which [wheel] many people struggled to get on top who quickly fell off [it], and some wanted to climb [on it] who were completely unable to
And ay the more, the more she came me nere!
"Allas!" quod y, "But lyvith my lady yet?
Nys she not she that y se yondir sitt?"

So that y stood so masid and formad
That y not kowd but, stele, to gase hir on,
To Venus saw how sore y was bistad
And to me seide, "Where loke ye, doty fon?"
But my heryng so fer was fro me gon
That y not herde nor wiste what pat <she> seide
To she me shook so that y with abrayde,

And with a sigh y seide hir thus, "Allas,
O fayre madame, now be myn helpe or neuir!
For Ihesu wot y stond now in the cas
That, certis, swete the deth were to me—leuyr
Then that y shulde from hir as now disseuer
Which is my lady hie on yondir whel!"
"Ye, wo is me," quod she, "for yowre seek heel!
"I trove that ye haue spide a mase,
Or ye haue tane sum sodeyne sweuene,
For wheron ist, good, that ye gase?"
"A quene." quod y, "I kan not neiuene
Hir name that cometh downe from hevene,
And in hir hond she hath a whyll
Wheron y see my lady well!

"I pray yow turne abowt—not hastily,
But as it were who <sekith> for othir thing—
And loke where so that ye kan ought aspy
What that she is or gesse to yowre semyng."
"No more." quod she, and lete downe fall a ryng
To pyke a countenaunce, so wot ye what,
And turnyd as it had ben [a]bowt for that

5059 that I could do nothing but, motionless/dumb, stare at her
5064 till she shook me so that I recovered therewith [from my astonishment]
5080–82 but as if you were looking for something else—and see whether you can see (at all) who she is or figure out [who she is], in your opinion
5085 and turned around as if it had been for that
And so bigan to cast hir eye aside
Of which look for shame therwith she blosht
"A Seynt Antone, but turne yow! hide, hide, hide!
Allas, that ther nar ny of hir sum boch!"
"But wherof, la, this fer, madame? O towch!
Bi verry God, ye are to ferfull oon!"
"Ye, ye, my sone, y wolde some were agoon,

"For trowe ye that they wol not thynke amys
That fynde as this—no more but ye and y?"
"Whi, gef thei doo what kan thei thynk on bis
Owttsepte—? my lady, clene y them defy!"
"Ye? Baw! My sheele straw in yowre ey,
For though ye men in such case litill care
It sittith well we wymmen to ben ware!

"Yond same is Fortune. How, knowe ye hir not?"
"O no, Madame—whi yes! bi god, now . . . now . . .
Y am . . . y am right wel on hir bithought.
She stale with deth my lady, wot ye how,
Which yondir sitt! Bi god, y make a vow:
Might y hir reche, anoon y shulde hir slee!"
"Yee, nar ye holde, ye are to perlous bee!

"Now, good, graunt vs a lettir of yowre pese,
But is hit and yowre lady that ther sit?"
"O yee—O nay, no, nyst—O yes, dowtles!"
"O trouthe, me thynke ye ought wel borow wit!
For, out of drede, wot ye hit is not hit,
All be she fayre and wel vnto hir lik.
A, ye, my frend, kan ye suche motis pijk?

"I haue aspide ye, marchaunt, at the fayre,
(Ye lust not on a sympl market see!)

5092 . . . I wish that some [i.e., all] of these people were not here
5106 Yea, if you are not restrained, you are capable of doing harm!
5107 . . . grant us assurance of your peaceful behavior [S&D]
5110 In truth, it seems to me you ought to go borrow some brains!
5113 Ah, indeed, my friend, can you see those tiny differences [—or not]?
That cast yow to engros vp such a payre
As that yowre ladi was, this semeth me,
And now this same, which lakkith no bewte.
Ye wold ben ditid sothely, were pis knowe,
As for a regrater of the fayre, y trowe.

"I wend that ye wold neuyr bie nor selle
Suche litill ware, but ye it had forswore,
But now ye have not so, me thynnkith well,
Of which Fortune thank y, not yow, therfore.
And if yowre hert be set on hir so sore
Spede if ye kan; y cast yow not prevayle,
Forwhi ye haue eschewid my counsayle.

"And neyrtheles y seide it for the best,
As haue y ioy, more for yowre ese ben myn,
For as me thought hit more were for yowre rest
A lady chese then thus yowre silf forpyne
As that y tolde yow now right wel afyn:
When ye had sene, parcas, ye neuyr saw
It myght wel happe yow fynde a bon to gnaw.

"And how is now? what, cast yow loue or no?
It is not she, y put yow out of drede.
So whethir wil ye, loue or lete hir go?"
"Allas, lady, what is me best do rede!
I am so smyten with hir goodlihede

5119-20 You would be indicted truly, were this known, as a monopolist of the fair . . .
5121-24 I thought that you would never buy or sell [i.e., weren't interested in] such small stuff [as love of ladies], but [that] you had forsworn it [such trafficking], but now it seems to me you have not [forsworn it], for which I thank Fortune [she motivated you by showing you the lady], not you yourself
5126 . . . I do not intend to help you
5130-31 . . . it would be more for your peace of mind to choose a lady than thus to torment yourself
5133 . . . that which you never saw before
5136-37 It is not she [your dead lady], I [say to] remove any trace of doubt, so which will you [do], love her or let her go?
5138 . . . advise me what is best [for me] to do!
That, next my lady, but y loue hir best,
I am not lijk to sett myn hert at rest.

"And ner it no[t] that she is hir so lijk
Not shulde y loue hir—nor noon lyving—
The which sight doth my dedly hert aqueke,
That syn that Deth made karfull departyng
Bitwene me and my lady, saw y thyng
Thorugh which y felt on only ioy at al,
Nor yet, owt this, y wot y neuyr shal,

"For leuyr were me serue hir lo for nouȝt
Then to ben kyng of al þis world so round;
If so were onys that she myght knowe my þouȝt,
Y nelde no more desire vpon the ground;
And without yow þat may it not be found—
Thus redles in my wery gost y stond;
Save lijf and deth, y put it in yowre hond.

"Haue y doon messe, þen ax y yow pardoun.
Haue y my deth desert, then let me dy!
Beth not my foo (O welaway!) so sone!
If y offendid haue, y mercy cry,
And, as ye lust, me now this mater gy;
I me content in all thing moche or lesse.
What may y more then axe yow foryefnesse?"

"Then all forgewe—I am not so crewell
To yow as ye to serue me were all straunge!—
So that hensforth yowre hert in euery dell
Ye geve it hir and never forto chaunge.
And for <yon> wheel renyth so gret a raunge
That it is hard for yow to come hir to,
Then shall y telle yow how that ye shal do:

"Hange hir vpon my kercher of plesaunce,
And y shal brynge thee vp to hir aloft."
"Madame, y shall obey yowre ordinaunce."
"Nay, yet abide, my frend. Y am bithou3t . . .
As for Fortune, y will ye sle hir nou3t.
That shal ye promys me yet or ye go."
"Madame, all this it nedith not, no, no,

"For all the world y graunt vnto hem pese—
Sauc only Deth, that slew my lady dere.
Therof ye must me pardone lo dowltele,
For him to loue y kan in no manere,
Though that y lyvid here a thousand yere!"
"Nay, sothely lo ye resoun haue in that.
But honge now on my kercher, wot ye what."

And so dredles hir kercher thus y took,
And as me thought she bare vp me so hie
That even for fere to falle therwith y quok
And gan, "O lady Venus! Mercy!" cry
So lowde that it awook me verily,
And fond my silf wher as y was downe layd
And in myn hond, as y from slepe abreid,

Yet se y wel a gret pese of plesaunce,
The which y took and in my bosum put,
So forto kepe it in remembraunce.
And forbicause pat y nedis mut
Muse on my dreem, y sett me vp afoot
And so gan wandre in my thoughtis sade,
To that y come, vndir a grene wood shade,

5167 and because yon wheel . . .
5170 Hang here upon my kerchief . . .
5194–95 and because I had to ponder on my dream, I got to my feet
Upon a launde, the gras soft, smothe, & fayre
That likyng gret hit was me to bihold,
And homward þus as y gan me repayre 5200
I fond a company, some yong, some olde,
That gan eche othir fast in armys hold,
For at the Post and Piler did þei play;
And all were gentil folkis, dar y say, 122r

As ladies and ther wymmen many oon 5205
With many a squyer and many a knyght,
Among the whiche myn eyen spide anoon
The selfe lady (bi verry God of myght!)
That y se Fortune bere so high on hight!
But how me than? had y more ioy or woo?
Now, certis, wel, y kan not telle yow, noo!

For joyful was y on hir to biholde
Bicause she was so likj my lady swete,
But me to queynt not durst y be so bold
Nad be the dreem that y did of hir mete 5215
That Venus had hir helpe to me bighight
(As y haue to yow told what þat she said),
For which that I tho þe lesse me dismayd.

Now was ther on had knownen me tofore
That me aspide and, y not how [ . . . ],
And in his corse he fel and had fortore
His hose, at which full many of hem lough.
“Now laughe,” seide he, “for some han pleid ynough,”
Which to me spake, “Y thank yow, frend, my fal,
For, nad ye be, y had hit not at al.” 5220

“But neyurtheles ye ar welcome, parde,

5209–10 that I saw Fortune bear so high aloft! But what of me, then? . . .
5214–15 but I would not have dared be so bold as to introduce myself had it not
been for the dream I dreamt of her
5220 . . . I don’t know how [line incomplete]
5224–25 who then said to me, “I thank you, friend, for my fall, for, if it had not
been for you, I would not have had it [an opportunity to take a rest from the
game] at all”
So now gef rome, take here a pleyer in,
For he shal pley his pagaunt now for me,
(Though þat his chekis be but passyng thyn!)
Set forth! let se how fayre ye kan bigynne!"
"Nay, good Cosyne," seide y, "therof no more!"
"Seynt Yve, ye shall! see þat myn hose is tore?"

Bi hond he hent me so, and to the place
He drew me in. "Is ther noon othir bote?"
Seide y. "Noo, no, ye get no bettir grace!"
Quod y, "Then must y, to, that nedis mote."
And so to renne y gan to make a foot,
And wel y wot y ran not long abowt
Or that y on had towchid of the rowt,

And as the corse thus droue me here & there,
Vnto my lady newe so streight y went.
With gastful hert that quoke for verry fere
—How me were best to vttir myn entent?
Yet at the last, on this pooreposse y bent,
When that ther stood no mo but she and y—
"A questioun wold y axe of yow, lady."

"Of me?" quod she, "now, good, what þing is þat?"
"It is not small, madame, y yow ensewre.
I put a case: if so myn hert it sat
To yow in loue aboue eche creature,
Told y it yow, wold ye it so diskeuer
And make of it a skoffe, or yet a play,
In which parcas my lijf so myght it way?"

5228 for he shall play the role in my place [take my place in the game]
5232 . . . you must! [don't you] see that my stocking is torn?
5242–43 With timid heart that quaked with true fear—how could I best express my meaning?
5253 . . . my life might be laid in the balance [i.e., I might not be able to endure it]
Chantilly, Musée Conde MS. 76, fol. 46v.
“God helpe me, nay! Why, wat ethely wight
That louyd me vnto myn honour evyr,
Sothely me thynek y did him gret vnright
Without the more he were vnto me lever.
Eek who wil skorne, skoffe on! for y wil neuir,
For bett y wot in suche case how me <sit>
To doon, and ellis y had but litill witt.”

“Mercy, madame, for y stond in the case
That bothe my lijf and deth doth on yow hong,
For certis, swete, but ye haue on me grace,
As for my deth, y must it nedis fong.
I kan not say þat y haue louyd yow long
But well y wott y loue yow so, my dere,
That bothe ye are my ioy and payne in fere.

“My Payne are ye only for fere and drede
The which y haue to playne yow of my greef,
And then my ioy, that is yowre goodlihede
Forto bihold and shall while þat y lyue.
Ther nys no more, but from þis tyme do preve
In any thing where that y be yowre man,
And if ye othir fynde—so sle me than!

“This is hit all that y of yow desere,
That as yowre gostly child ye wold me take,
And ye to ben my fayre shrift fadir dere
To here the poore confessioun that y make,
And that <ye> not my simpilnes forsake,
For half so moche y dar not to yow say
As that y wolde, and þese folk were away.

5256 “Him” refers to “wight” (5254).
5257–58 unless he were dearer to me [for it]. Moreover who wishes to scorn [him] . . .
5259 for I know very well what it is proper for me to do in such a case
5268–69 You are my pain only because of the fears and doubts I have about expressing my grief to you
5272–74 . . . but from this moment determine whether I am you man [i.e., whether I serve you faithfully] in all matters, and if you find otherwise . . .
5275 This is all I want from you
5277 “To ben” is parallel with “take” (5276).
5281 . . . if we were alone
FORTUNES STABILNES

“Eek not y eft from this tyme how aquaynt
Without the helpe of yow, myn owne swet hert
—Allas, be war! yowre coloure gynnys faynt!
Pynne vp yowre kercher! Kepe yowre face covert!
Ye mow say how the sonne hit doth yow smert.”
“Bi my good soth, y holde yow nyse!” quod she,
And did right so, and syns seide to me,

“I trowe wel ye haue my rewde haver sene,
The which ye prayse so cleyn out [of] mesure.
Gramercy yow therof, and not yowre eyene,
For which ny me thei fynde no such figure
To <cawse> yow of so gret apayne endure,
But many suche as ye in wordis dy
That passyng hard ther graffis ar to spy.

“Also, to lett yow speke, that may y not,
And when ye lust so say me what ye wol,
But forto loue it cometh not in my thought,
Saue only on which plesith me at full,
Nor y cast not to me noon othir pull,
But in all that ye loue in good entent
I thank yow—but wist y ye othir ment

“God helpe me so, y shulde yow þen eschew;
But then y gesse ye wolde myn honour more.”
“Now dredles lo, madame, pat is yet trew,
For leuer nad y ben to lijf ybore
Then that y shulde, for any gref or soore,
Wil you more fer þen ye may goodly graunt
Vnto me, wrecche (durste y say—yowre servaunt?).

5282 Also I do not know how to get to know you . . .
5287-89 “. . . you are clever!” she said, and pinned it up and afterwards said to
me, “I believe you have seen my untutored behavior”
5291-92 I thank you for that and not your eyes, because they find no such person
in my vicinity
5302-4 . . . but if I knew that you intended something else [i.e., something less
honorable] . . . I would then have nothing to do with you; but on the other hand
I suppose you desire my honor more
5308 wish from you more than you may grant willingly.
"But wold god ye knew myn hert eche deel!" 5310
Kan ye not rede?" "Yes, so so." quod she.
"O what, dere hert, though fer from yow y dwel
Yet wil ye graunt me writ to yow, parde
And not disdayne yow on hit forto see?
And send me so of hit sum word agayne,
If that y shulde desire yow such a payne?"

"The raket cometh! Y graunt hit yow. Writ on!"
And so anothir came and afore hir stood,
For which þat y must nedis ben agoon,
Yet neuyrtheles I thought it did me good
That she so moche knew of myn hert, bi þe rood,
And so we ran a corse or two, no more,
Or that we must depart, vnto my sore,

Für Crepusculus, that revith day his light,
Gan in the west his clowdy mantel shake,
And forbicause y fastid lo that nyght,
From oon to oon of them my leve y take,
But, lord! so that myn hert bigan to quake
When þat y take shulde of my lady leue,
And for no thing it wold me not bileue.

She blusshid reed to see how that y ferde,
For, as y kist, y seide, "Now welcome, Sorow."
"Ye made me gast!" quod she, "y shrympe yowre berd,
But may ye not abide here to tomorow?"
"A, madame, no! fare wel, Seynt Iohne to borow!"
"Bi holy God, y trowe bet that ye may
Ellis come and se vs lo sum othir day."

"Madame, a trouthe, y thanke yowre ladiship.
It may me happe to se yow here this weke."

5316 if I should desire you to take such pains?
5322 and so we took a couple more turns, not more
5330 and not for anything would my heart remain with me, [i.e., my heart insisted on staying with the lady]
5336-37 ... I hope very much that in that case you can come and see us ...
Thus did ye so depart the feleship,
And gan me forth to my poor loggyng peke,
But all that nyght myn hert did rore & seke,
For nought me nyst as what was best to do—
To speke or writ when next y came hir to.

But neyrtheles to this purpos y fell:
That when y myght (for fere of forgetyng),
Bi mouth y wolde my mater to hir tell,
And, lak of space, to take it bi writyng;
Forwhiche that thus bigan my new servyng,
When þat y fond my tymys of laysere,
As sewith next, if it lust yow to here.

No French

F fayre most fayre, as verrry sore & welle
From yow me cometh, as brefly to expres,
Such loue þat y ne may it from yow helle
All shulde y die—God take y to witnes!
Desire me takith with such a ferventnes
That y must nedis put me at yowre will
Wherso ye lust, of rigoure or kyndenes,
Me forto saue or do me payne or spill.

I wot my gilt it hath deservid deth
That y was bold to sett so high myn hert,
But, in good feith, while þat me lastith breth,
For payne or woo y may it not astert;
As forto take yow nere me then my shert,

5341–42 and slunk to my humble lodging, but all that night my heart roared and sighed
5346–49 that when I could, I would tell her my situation by mouth (for fear she would forget me), and, [because (or when) there was] lack of opportunity [to talk to her], to take the opportunity to write to her. “Forwhich” (therefore) indicates a general relation of cause and effect; it refers to the events of the previous two stanzas and not simply to the previous line.
5352 Most fair of the fair, ...
To bridill loue y kan no bett[ir] skile
But bynde me hool to yow for Payne or smert
Me forto saue or do me Payne or spill.

What ye me geve y may it not denye
But hit agre as for myn aventure,
But, by my trouth, vnto the howre y dye,
I shall be to yow trewe, y yow ensewre,
As hert kan thynke and not forto discure
What ye me say and will y kepe it still.
So am y youre tofore eche creature,
Me forto saue or do me Payne or spill.

O mercy, swet, ala! y kan no more!
But what you list my lust hit must fulfill;
But for my loue sumwhat y wold therfore
Me forto saue or do me Payne or spill.

No French

Ore then body, hert, good, and servise
As <naue> y ellis to yeue yow, fayre princes,
The which that y in my most feithful wise
Yeue vnto yow, what Payne or hevynes
That me bifalle, but and yowre gantiles
For myn hool hert of yowre the quantite
As of a pynnys hed me yaue—or lasse—
As for a while it shulde suffisen me.

And for my servise, with a ferfull gost,
As y dar say, y axe yow loue agayne;
Of my desere lo it is the most,

5372 . . . and will not reveal
5378–79 but in return for my love I would like to have [something] that would save me . . .
5380–84 I have no more to give you than my body, heart, goods, and service . . ., which I give you most faithfully, whatever pain or woe should befall me, but if, [out of] your kindness
5388–90 and for my service . . . I ask you for your love in return; it is my greatest desire
For of this yeft if y were in certayne  
As had y more comfort, soth to sayne—  
Not sool comfort but more felicite  
Then in this world may be writene playne,  
Withouten more, the which suffisid me.

In ouyrplus take ye my body and good.  
Parde, this bargeyne is but resonable!  
If ye refuse ye ar to blame, bi the rood,  
For in good feith y shall be to yow stable,  
As sikir trewe, and eek as servisable  
As euyr was man of high or low degre  
Yow forto loue (though þat y be not able),  
Mi fore request so wold suffisen me.

Ω good, dere hert, though y kan bettir playne  
Bi writyng þen bi mouth, yet ye  
As takith not the lesse regard of my payne,  
But graunt my yeft and hit suffisith me.  
No French

R ight yongly fayre, replet with goodlihed,  
Alak for lak nede shulde enneden me  
To sewe for pite to yowre womanhed,  
When, as me thynkith, ye move wel knowe, parde,  
Mi servise shewith a preef in eche degre:  
Mi dede accordith with my fore promys—  
And syn tyme ylost may not rekeuerid be,  
Allas! how long wil ye straunge in þis wise?

Nought ellis desire y yow, in verry dede,  
But that ye list so moche vnto me see

5393–95 Not only comfort, but, more [than that], happiness ... which would suffice me  
5407 but accept my gift and it is enough  
5412 that my service presents evidence in every way  
5417–18 ?but that you choose to be so attentive to my situation that this painful life ...
Bi which þis paynful lijf here that y lede
Might be retornyd vnto felicite,
And if y euyr yow offende, then ye
(As wilfully, y mene, in my servise)
So as it plesith yow, punysshe my foly.
Allas! how long wil ye straunge in þis wise?

Now, good swet hert, what thing is it þat ye drede
To helpe yowre man in his aduersite?
God helpe me so, y wold not for my hed
Will ye more fer then ye with honeste
May wel fulfill; and syn that y am he
Which my will hool with yowr will doth suffise
And nought desire but o drope of pite,
Allas! how long wil ye straunge in þis wise?

What may y say? now fayre swet hert, pite
Haue on my greef and sumwhat bet avise
Then for my loue to shewe me crueltie.
Allas! how long wil ye straunge in þis wise?

*No French*

Aftir wyntir, the veer with foylis grene,
Aftir the sterry nyght, the morow gray,
Lucyna chaungyng in her hornys shene,
The enpese made of many gret affray—
The sondry chaunge of thingis se y may,
But ye, swet hert, so voyde are of pite
That, for no thyng y kan yow write or say,
The chaunge of yowre mystrust kan y not se.
Bothe fowle and best with word entamyd bene.
The spirit (also with speche enforsid) say
The trouthe of thing 'pat man wol litill wene:
With speche the heven to perse—this is no nay;
But what promys or oth y make, ma fay,
As in no wise kan y entristid be,
So to vntrewe ye thynke me, welaway!
The chaunge of yowre mystrust kan y not see.

But though that ye me throwe þus in ruyne,
It in me shall be founde to that y day:
Mi trouthe, as fresshely newe forto be sene
As y it had bigonne yestirday;
But, and it myght like yow to putt away
Yowre daunger and mystrust þat grewth me,
I shulde be bound to yow for onys and ay,
That cause me to mystrust ye shal not se.

Though that my wordis be not ovir gay
They ben yseid with as trew fantase
As thei say whiche make more fresshe aray,
The chaunge of yowre mystrust if y myght se.

No French

Good swet hert, my joy and sovl plesaunce,
Which y most drede and loue as y best kan
And lothist were to doon yow displesaunce,
Ne were it so lo that y stond the man
The which that hath, fro tyme syn y began,
Endewrid more then y kan say of Payne

5444–47 Both foul and beast are tamed by words. The spirit [of man] (also compelled by words) proves the truth of a thing that men can hardly imagine: speech pierces [reaches into] heaven—there is no denying it
5449–50 I can be trusted in no way, so too-untrue you think me . . .
5450 so that you will not see any cause to distrust me
5462 as they [those suitors] say who present more vigorous displays [i.e., better poems/letters]
5467–68 were it not so that I stand [here as] the man who has, from the time I began [to love]
(As shewth bi my colour, pale and wan)
That giltles sleth me yowre disdayne,

And savyng ye that noon may shape myn ese
Nought wolde y say yow how it grevith me,
But nedis must y vtir my disese
Or ellis forswelt and in suche paynes be,
Wherfor, if so ye list not on me se,
Or yow ennoy with my servise playne,
Vpon yowre promys yet remembre ye
Which giltles sle me thus with yowre disdayne.

How seme ye? als, is hit reasonable
Me forto hate, that y yow loue and serve?
Me thinkith it were to yow more honourable
Me to rewarde in liche as y deserue
Then wilfully to do yowre servaunt sterue.
Yowre crewel daunger, good dere hert, restrayne,
And lete pite yowre marbil hert enkerue
Or that giltles sle me with yowre disdayne.

Fayre Valentyne, remembre on yowre hest
Lete me not fynde yowre word & thou3t as twayne.
If y myssay me, pardone, at the lest,
For evyn giltles me sleth yowre disdayne.

No French

Onstraynt of payne, pou3t, & hevynes
Ay to pursewe the sewt of my servise
Me doth enforce to sett my bisynes
To write to yow (bi which y in sum wise
Myght knowe the fyn only of myn emprise),
Which with myn eyen seme that y loue on
As flesshely soft as man nede to devise,
That in my resoun fynde yow hard as stoon.

As hard, ye, and yet more hard, parde!
For man may se the tendir drope of rayne
Perse the stoon in fallyng quantite,
But for no thing that y kan write or sayne,
In lengthe of tyme thus dewryng, or complayne
Kan y not ioyne yowre hert and myn in on,
Wherfore y may reherse yow here agayne
That yow y fynde more hard than eny ston.

The grete kerver, the prince Pigmalioun,
Karfe in stoon so quykly a figure
The bewte of which so raught him his resoun
That he hir lovid so hoot out of mesure
To that she turnd a flesshely creature,
So oft he praye to God and hir aloon;
But ye—the whiche seme flesshely of nature—
For ought y pray, y fynde yow but a stoon!

Marbile hert—more hard, if harder be!—
If so that ye be made of fleshe and boon,
As with yowre word sumwhat comfortith me
That ye may fynde yow softer then a stoon.

No French

A Llas! how euyr kouthe pe God of Kynde
A body shape so fayre and so goodly
And in it sett so hard an hert vnkynde?
He synnyd gret, in myn entent, treuly,
Without he amende yow in yowre party;
And, parde, though ye sle me in this wise,
As bi my deth, ye wynne right nought therby,
Where bi my lijf ye wynne may my servise.

5502 pierce the stone in falling quantity [of drops, i.e., when they fall repeatedly]
5525-27 ... though you slay me this way, you gain absolutely nothing by my death, whereas by letting me live you may gain my service
To sle yowre man ye wayfe als womanhed,
Which of the hert and al are hool lady.
To ben a morderesse, fy on that dede!
For this report wold fle: that pitously
Yowre servaunt deth ye contryve crewelly!
Lo thus the shame of yow shal vprise.
This, by my deth, is all ye get hardily,
Where, bi my lijf, ye wynne may my servise.

What may y more, with tery eyen twayne?
I yow requere that ye of gentiles
As meke yowre silf and ley aside disdayne
And shewe to me yowre pite and kyndenes,
The which that hool am yowris more & les.
Bi God and bi my trouthe this oth is twise,
For, bi my deth, ye wynne not as y gesse,
Where, bi my lijf, ye wynne may my servise.

Go, litill bill, Crist sende thee bettir grace
Then wolde some whiche haue of me no price,
Yet, bi my deth, thei wynne not in no case,
Where, bi my lijf, ye wynne may my servise.

No French

He plesaunt lemys of yowre eyen clere
Mi hert it hath so persid in euery vayne
O furlong way that y in no manere
When y am sovl as kan me not restrayne
As to complayne ageyne, and who so playne
And kan not sett his cause and reson whi
Hit may ben rettid foly gret, certayne,
But causeles to complayne, it am not y.

Cause is this (so hit yow not displese):
<As> when y come to yow in eny where
To purchase somewhat to myn hertis ese,
Anoon ye yow withdrawe for verri fere
Right even as that a Gobelyne as y were,
But, as for that, ne dowte yow not hardly,
For y am noon, nor crewell worme, nor bere!
Thus causeles lo compleyntoure am not y.

An othir cause which y fynde lo as this:
Is that y stonde more fether from yowre grace
And lesse sett bi then he that straunger is
That hath to yow no servise in suche case
As that haue y, but loue forto purchase
Bihoueth not ayen if oon therbi
Shall lese the chere the which be straunger hase,
Thus causeles lo compleyntoure am not y.

I wolde as now y had not tolden yow
Mi loue; then had y ben in company
With yow, so right as ben othir now—
Lo, thus complayntoure causeles am not y.

No French

This long dilay, this hope without comfort
That for yowre loue ye do me pis endure
Myn hert forplungith so in discomfort
That here onlyue as nys ther creature
Which outward shewith so smal discomforture
As that y do, and fele so gret a payne,
The which in me as holdith no mesure,
But for eche weele a thousand woo agayne.

My weele is this: when y to yow resort
And do biholde yowre bewte and figure,

5568–70 . . . but to gain love does not benefit [the lover] in return if one [i.e., the lover] thereby loses the welcome that [even] the stranger gets
5574 . . . just as others are now—
5577 that you cause me thus to endure for your love
Me thynkith how ye and y then, in a sort,
Without moo myght suffise, y yow ensewre;
But woo is me at departurē
When y remembre yowre disdayne—
This is my fatall fate and my mysvre.
As now in wele and now in woo agaynē.

Agaynē, when y bithynke yowre goodly port,
Yowre witty yowthe, yowre demene and norture,
Of whiche y wele here many may report,
I then enioy the crese of yowre honure;
But me is woo to thynke how that vnseure
I stonde where that y shall yowre grace attayne.
Twene hope and drede thus stonde y in aventure,
As now in wele and eft in woo agaynē.

Now, good swet hert, biholdith þis scripture
And fynde a bettir moyan for vs twayne,
Bi whiche that y may chaungen this meture
As now in wele and now in woo agaynē.

Goodly fayre, sith y haue doon & shall
Bandonyd my silf, myn hert, & my seruice
To yow, to don in any poynt at all
With hit right so as ye list best devise,
I yow biseche in my most humbill wise
As for my loue sumwhat of yowre agaynē,
And syn yowre bewte causith this emprise,
O good swete hert, haue me not in disdayne.

Sure Lord comaundith how eche creature
Shulde doon to othir in the self manere

5586-87 It seems to me that you and I together, then, could meet [each other's] desires if we were alone . . .
5597 . . . whether I will be able to obtain your favor
5603 which is now . . .
5608-9 I beg you . . . for the love I have given you some of yours in return
As he wolde he did him. Lo this scripture
I yow rehearse that ye shulde my desere
Fulfille liche as ye wolde that yowre plesere
Shulde folowid ben where as ye wolde most fayne;
This, for my loue, yowre loue y yow requere.
O good swet hert, haue me not in disdayne.

Thus forto lengthe yowre grace forth day bi day
Ye nor yet y therwith prevaylid be
And savyng yowre displesere als, ma fay,
Ye are vnkynde als, as semeth me,
To shewe me favoure lesse then ye
Do vnto hem which ye knowe, soth to sayne,
Is not yowre servaunt; lo all this y see.
O good swet hert, haue me not in disdayne.

If y myssay, pardone myn vnkonnyng,
For y here song—all syenge y not nor fayne—
How loue for loue is skilful gardonyng.
O good swet hert, haue me not in disdayne!

No French

Pressid with thought, langoure, & hevynes,
Forcast in woo and all forwrappid in payne
As half dispeyrid that ye, my fayre maystres,
As willith nought y shall yowre grace attayne,
And if þat ye so done, then mowe ye saine
Me wherto yshal trusten at þe lest;
As weele or woo the toon me to ordeyne.
To knowe the fyne—lo þis is my request.

praty on, now thynkith what distresse

5620 Thus to keep withholding [putting off the granting of] your favor . . .
5622 and also with due consideration of your displeasure [at what I am about to say] . . .
5629 for I hear it said—though I do not say so nor [did I] make it up—[that]
5636–38 and if you would be so kind [as to show mercy to me], then you ought to tell me what I should hope for in the end; arrange (for me) weal or woe, one or the other.
It is to loue and not be louyd agayne,
And synnes ye mowe the greef in me alesse,
For loue of Loue, ne takith no disdayne
Of oon hert paynyd to shape a joyfull twayne
Then suche greef to eniape, is this honest?
The cause it is y write yow here so playne:
To knowe the fyne—lo this is my request.

What may me ese it nedith not expresse,
Ye wot also whereso y fraude or fayne.
What nedith me thenne as forto make excess?
Hit oft here to reherse were but in vayne.
Of myn entent syn ye knowe the certayne
(Though y vnworthi be to suche a fest
Only, without yowre grace, myn owen souerayne),
To knowe the fyne—lo this is my request.

Hit is a nyce drede yow doth refrayne
To kepe yowre pite thus vndir arest.
O mercy, swete! lete me no more complayne!
To knowe the fyne, lo, this is my request.

No French

Yn hit is so we nedis must depart
And when to mete be tyme <is> nouncertayne,
Even to myn hert hit is as Dethis dart
The which, alsa! me sleth for verry payne;
But syn so is Infortune lust ordayne
Suche fatall fate (Wo worth the destene!)
I yow biseche, to that we mete agayne,
As take myn hert and lete yowris bide with me.

For most ynly myn hert as doth desire
To serven yow, ay beyng in yowre sight,
Withouten part of othir wage or hire,
And y as moche agayne wille, if y myght,
Yowre hert tofore the hert of any wight,

5661 and when [we shall] meet [again] is uncertain
To haue with me—all be ye not worthe—
To eft we mete. Now, good, this steyvynyn plight:
As take myn hert and lete yowre bide with me.

Myn hert of right must cause yow on me ſinke
And to revolue the trouthe of my servise
And, as for yowre, all wake y, slepe, or wynke,
Yet must me doo to like myn entirprise
And more to take in gree myn owen Iewise
To do me thynke yowre goodnes and bewte,
And, syn it is to yow no preiudice,
As take myn hert and lete yowre bide with me;

Thus mowe ye lo enese me gretly
(And in no wise yowre honoure lessid be),
Wherfore y yow biseche even hertily,
As take myn hert and lete yowre bide with me.

Epistle

Yn only ioy, my lady and maystres,
Whiche are the hope of all my worldis wele,
Withouten whom ſat plesere nor gladnes
As may me helpe, god wot, right neuyr a dele,
So that it lust yow witen of myn hele,
A noyous lijf y lede in gret turment
And so endewre it to my caris felle
Only bicause y am from yow absent.

But what, alsa! yet haue y remembraince
As where and how y last did on yow se,
Vnto my ioy and parfit gret plesaunce,
That trewly lo yet this bithought y me:
That neuyr turment nor aduersite
As from that tyme myght proche vnto myn hert,

5674 . . . swear to [be bound by] this agreement
5678–81 and, as for your heart, whether I wake, sleep, or doze, yet [it] will cause me to be pleased with my undertaking and what is more to take in good part my sentence by causing me to think on your goodness and beauty
5692 if it please you to know the state of my general welfare
5694 . . . to my intensely painful sorrow
But othir wise y fond it wel, parde,
When y departid yow, vnto my smert.

For when y came to take of yow my leue,
How were me best y koude it not aspien,
On which on first to wayte or to benleue:
Vnto myn hert or ellis vnto myn eyen,
As in extreme thus fond y hem to deyen.
So gan myn hert in sorow sikis rore
That neuyr him tofore þat had y seien
From recomfort <so fer> my lijf <tofore>.

The tothir side, myn eyen als þei ware
In so fervent a welle sett of wepyng
That vnethe, allas, they koude hit spare,
Nor durst for drede benholde oo sely þing,
Lest thorugh only a lokis mysgidyng
That they were tane of insuspecioun
Which servith oft to doon a sclaudir sprynge
In a ielous, cursid opynyoun.

And thus (what!) for the fere y had and drede
Lest thorugh them my sorow were biwried,
Not wist y which vntend, yn verri ded,
For so dismayd in all þis world so wide
Was y, nor so in woo forcast aside,
For, parde lo hit nedith not ben sore
That rathir then y shulde haue ben aspide
Me leyvr nad as ben to lijf ybore.

For if y hadde bi fonnyd look or chere
Outshewid how y loue yow lo and shal
As bi defaut in my rewde manere,
Thorugh which þer myght onto yow so benfall

5705–6 how I could best [go about it] I could not figure out, which one to wait on [care for] first or [which one] to leave alone
5710–11 that I had never before seen him so far from comfort in my life. “To-fore” (5711) is redundant.
5716 . . . the straying of a glance
5719 in an envious, malicious rumor
On only poynt (all were it not but small)
In which ye had dishonoure so or blame,
Nad y me nede of sorow more to call,
For all my lijf y waylen shulde þe same.  5735

This stode it me, and werte, myn aventure
At tyme when þat y partid yow away
Vnhauyn spase vnþo yow to <diskewre>
What Payne departynge did vnþo me lay.
But what, dere hert, may y vnþo yow say,
Saue (thynkith, swet, and beth no þing agast)
That y yow loue and serve shall to y day
Without departynge while lijf doth me last.  5740

And when þat ferful Deth as doth me sterve,
Whom ay to flee me botith in no wise,
Yet with my sowle, parde, y shal yow serue
To pray for yow an high in paradice,
If that hit grace me as y do devise;
And for my good, myn hert, and pore chest,
I leue hem yow all hool in yowre fraunchise
To don with hit right as yow semeth best.  5750

Ffor, sayng ye, <nenysther> noon, dowtles,
Whom that y calle (nor oft to do yet, noo)
Myn “only lady” ne “sowl mastres,”
For if y did, god wot, y gabbid so.
So bicame y yowris in wele or woo
The silf first tyme y lokid yowre bewte
Which so hath fosterid me þat, where y goo,
To serve yow trewly nede y must ben he.  5755

So lustith yow of mercy to bithynke
What woo y hadde the selfe tyme, alleas!
That loue yow most, all wake y, slepe, or wynke,
And eek þe more agre my wrecchid cas

5738 not having the opportunity to make known to you
5749 and as for my goods . . .
5752 . . . there is no one . . .
Syn so to go agayne my wille it was  
(Which doth me greue more then y kan endyte)  
That now to se me wante[p] þus þe grace  
Yowre swete visage and fayre, round pappis white,

Yowre sidis straighe and armys to, þe same  
Whiche fayne y se wolde, to my gret pleseris,  
That are my good and my most fayre madame,  
Eche feture als accordyng so and cheris  
Whiche are to me so swyft messangeris  
That fro me fecche they, be y fer or nere,  
All hool my will to serue yow and deseris,  
As spede me god in this and eche matere,

Bisechyng yow right thus, most goodly fayre,  
Forto bithynke me though y ben away,  
For where so Fortune do me to repayre,  
I am yowre man and shal be to y day,  
And that y promyse yow, bi my good fay,  
So am y yowris all for euyrmore.  
I trust to God to doon so, and y may,  
That y shall ben rewardid wel therfore.

Ch. 265–68, Complaine III

Sely Ankir, that in thi selle  
Iclosid art with stoon and gost not out,  
Thou maist ben gladder so forto dwelle  
Then y with wanton wandryng þus abowt  
That haue me pikid amongis þe rowt  
An endles woo withouten recomfort,  
That of my poore lijf y stonde in dowt.  
Go, dul complaynt, my lady þis report.

The anker hath no more him forto greue  
Then sool alone vpon the wallis stare,

5766 that now I lack the good fortune of seeing  
5768 [I] also [lack sight of] your straight sides and arms  
5771 each feature, too, so harmonious, and gestures
But, welaway, y stonde in more myscheef,
For he hath helthe and y of helthe am bare,
And more and more when y come where þer are
Of fayre folkis to se a goodly sort—
A thousand fold that doth encresse my care.
Go, dull complaynt, my lady þis report.

It doth me thynke, "Yondir is fayre of face,
But, what, more fayre yet is my ladi dere.
Yond on is small, and yonde streight sidis has;
Her foot is lite, and she hath eyen clere,
But all ther staynyd my lady, were she here."
Thus thynke y, lo, which doth me discomfort,
Not for the sight but for y nare hir nere.
Go, dull complaynt, my lady þis report.

Wo worthe them which þat raft me hir presence!
Wo worth the tyme to y to hir resort!
Wo worthis me to be thus in absence!
Go, dull complaynt, my lady þis report!

Welcome, my ioy! Welcome, myn hertis ese!
Welcome, my lady! Welcome, my plesaunce!
Welcome, my sovl comfort in all disese!
Welcome, enlesser of my gret grevaunce!
Welcome, of richesse myn hool suffisaunce!
Welcome, the heuene y most desire to haue!
Welcome, whiche haue my lijf in gouernaunce!
Welcome, my leche, me forto sle or saue!

Right as yowre absence was to me an hele,
Right so yowre presence is to me a blis.
Even as þe sight of yow me gevith wele,
Even so y payne when sight of yow y mys.
A thousand sithe y wisshid haue or pis
(A thousands sythe on rowl) that ye wer arave,
But welcome, now, to mende pat is amys,
And welcome now, my leche, to sle or saue!

Now, good swet hert, as this remembre yow:
How longe apart we were borugh infortune.
Now, good swet hert, wherfore bithynke as how
How longe we mowe as in pis ioy contune,
For all in yow hit lith as my fortune.
Welcome! what ye me geve y not disprave,
For all my myrthe ye mate may or entewne.
Welcome no more, but now me sle or saue!

What may y more yow write at wordis fewe?
The ioy of yow welnygh me doth [to] raue!
Welcome as oft as tongue kan say on rewe!
Welcome no more—but now me sle or saue!

No French

With excessive shake, forsekid, & forfaynt,
The poore karkes so enfeblisshid is,
The hert in woo forswelt and so attaynt
That even a deth it is to lyue as pis;
The gost dispeyrid lo so in me per nys
The body, hert, or gost in any ese,
But all my wele, so helpe me god as wis,
In his avmferse me turnyth in disese.

For all my ioy is turnyd to hevynes,
Myn ese in harme, my wele in woo,
Mi hope in drede, in dowt my sikirnes,
And my delite in sorow loo,

5825 ... that you had arrived
5833–35 ... what you give me I do not despise, for you may destroy all my joy or bring it into tune. Now enough [of these welcomes], ...!
5840 Shaken with lovesickness, made deathly ill, and (absolutely) exhausted
5844–45 The spirit in me [is] in such despair that there is no ease at all [in my] body, heart, or spirit
My hele seeknes, and ovirmoo,
As euery thing that shulde me plese
Iturnyd is (god helpe me soo!)
In his amverse, to my disese.

For who with Sorowe list aigueyntid be,
As come to me and spille no fethir wey,
For Sorow is y and y am he
For euery ioy in me is goon away.
Allas! what wight as may ther write or say
That hath of sorowe more þen y to lese,
Syn euery wele in me so (welaway!)
In his amverse [is] tornyd to disese.

Now, good dere hert, me nedith not say yow how
That ye þe langoure mowe in me appese;
If ye good list, ye konne do well ynow
In the amverse to turne all my disese.

No French

Her nys in me comfort of gladnes
Nor in myn hert ioye or parfit wele,
So is my swete retournyd in bittirnes
Mi good, in harme; my blisse is woxen helle—
The greet and cause of þis y shall yow telle
(Wo worth the doer!): loo, my greef it is
That ye with me nor y with yow may dele
But wikkid folke therof muste say amys!

Who is the cause herof then? is hit ye?
Ye? nay, it is my freel hert!
Hert? nay, my fonnyd loue, parde!
Loue? nay, my rakill lookis stert!
Lokis? nay, for this y may aduert:

5852 my health [into] sickness, and in addition
5857 . . . and do not bother to search for other means
5861 that [he] has more sorrow . . .
5879 . . . the rash impetuousness of my glances!
That ther nys noon kan do so wel, ywis,  
But false tongis in sugre terme covert  
Of wikkid folke therof wol say amys!

But maugre them—lo this yow ensure:  
Not maugre, but in spite—y shal yow serue.  
—Not only serue, but loue while y endewe.  
—Not only loue, but drede to that y sterue.  
—Not only drede, but alle thre to deserue  
Yowre thank. Deserue? my lijf may not in þis,  
But for this dome to yow y hit reserue  
In spite of alle þat lust to say amys!

But this is best, to myn entent, trewly:  
That we fulfille right as þei deme it is,  
Then shal we gete oure plesure yet therby,  
In spite of alle þat lust to say amys!  
No French

Fayre madame, if so ye dare not loo  
On lovyng basse as forto geven me  
For drede that ye shulde wrethyn Daunger so,  
(That alway is so full of crewelte),  
I shall right well lo stele a, two, or thre,  
If ye therwith as take no displesere,  
And lust so moche to pley to my desire,  
In spite of Daunger and his affynyte.

Forto venquysshe this karle, my crewel foo,  
God wot how desirous y to hit be,  
—So that ther wiste but ye and y, no moo—  
That demeth ay so yvill (yvill mot he thee!)  
And doth me langoure in aduersite

5881–82 there is surely no one who can convey glances so well but that false tongues . . .
5888–89 . . . but [do] all three [serve, love, revere] to deserve your thanks. Deserve? my lifetime is not enough in this respect
5893 that we do what they suspect us of doing
5902 and [you] wish in this to fulfill my desire
When þat y ellis shulde be in gret plesere,  
But ye myght well amende al þis matere  
In spite of Daunger and his affynyte.

When he thynkith he may most sewrist go,  
A secret hert that trewe is and happy  
Wolde gete to him as swyft as any roo  
Of lovis folke a frendly company,  
Disgisid vndir shame to that thei see  
Where þei aslepe myght take þis false Daungere,  
That then Plesaunce may do his hool plesere  
In spite of Daungere and his affynyte.

Wel ought thei haue rewardis grete, parde,  
That so frendly kan deserue her hyre  
And fynde therto a space of suche leysere  
In spite of Daungere and his affynyte.  
Ch. 93, B LXVIII

J  
Yelde my silf to yow! Saue me my lijf!  
And, stede of good, fynaunce my poor hert,  
Whiche am discomfit þorugh þese paynys rive  
That me assawt of rage and grefis smert.  
Alas, madame, me thynke if ye aduert  
The long service þat y haue to yow ought,  
Me semeth lo hit hath my lijf desert,  
If euyr well ye were on loue bithought.

What trobill ist y haue in yowre servise!  
As first, þorugh loue, in willyng yowre mercy  
And then agayne, what daunger on hit lise  
Of Cursid Speche, of Scaldur and Envy  
That nyght and day me warith crewelly

5918 so that then Plesaunce . . .  
5925 and, instead of goods, [take] my unworthy heart [and] hold [it] for ransom [i.e., accept it as hostage]  
5930 it seems to me that it has merited [the saving of] my life  
5934–35 . . . what risk of Cursed Speech . . . lies in it [your service]
And han me lo fro ioy to sorow brought,
And yet y gesse ye wot ther nys not whi
If evir well ye were on loue bithought.

The long dilay, the hope without comfort
Ye don me dewre, allas! pe harde stounde!
Nysther pite that to yow lust resort?
Growith ther so small in yow? kan noon be founde?
Me thynke ye nolde not for a thousand pounde
For trouthe him slee þat hit <disservith> nought,
Whiche knowe my hele and how forto confound,
If evir well ye were on loue bithought.

Not half þis speche nor sclaudir shulde þer go
Had y youre grace, all þing shulde so be wrouȝt,
Wherfore to sone ye kan not don hit, no,
If evir wel ye were on loue bithought.

No French

Hert, more hard then roche of any stoon,
How nys it ye haue on my poore herte pite?
Is <Piti> from you goon? and whidir herte pite?
Or is she ded? allas! how may it be
That for my loue ye shewe me crewelte?
Who hath ther sene, out rowthe, so goodly wight?
Allas the while, to say y shulde ben he
That trouthe may not rewarde me in my right!

Nys my service redi to yow in oon
In what ye lust forto comaunden me?
Seme ye hit right to don me lyue aloon,
Owt any welthe in suche aduersite?
Me thynke y haue vnto my poor degre

5946 [You] who know how to cure me and how to destroy [me]
5948–50 If I had your grace [to dispense], everything would be arranged so that
not half this amount of speech [on my part] or suspicion would be necessary, so
[given this], you cannot act too quickly, no
5957 Who has seen such a beautiful creature [who was] without pity?
5963 without any joy ...
Yowre thank deserue[d], if y deserue it myght.
Allas the while, to say y shulde ben he
That trouthe may not rewarde me in my right!

My bolnyd hert, wel may he sighe and grone
And wayle his cursid fate and destyne,
That ye, allas, vnto my karfull mone
Not dayneth ones a regard on to see!
O fy, madame! ye seyne to moche, parde,
To lette disdayne of bounte stoppe the light!
Allas the while, to say y shulde ben he
That trouthe may not rewarde me in my right!

Ther nys no more but—and y be worthye—
To haue my deth, so doon hit me be dight!
Allas þe while, to say y shulde ben he
That trouthe may not rewarde me in my riȝt!

No French

Owre goodlihed, myn hertis lady dere,
So thrillith me in my remembraunce,
Yowre fresshe bewte and maydenly manere,
Yowre swete fassoun with all þe circumstaunce,
That y yow kan not putt in oblyaunce,
Nor, though y wolde, withdrawe from yowre servise
But wilfully agree with my penaunce
To hit like yow enyoy me in sum wise.

But as the moth doth, bi þe candil fyre
Kan not eschewe þe flawmys encombraunce
But fleth abowt ay brennyng nere and nere,
In liche fare y. Such is my fatall chaunce,
That ay þe more y fele of my grevaunce,
The more desire y in myn entirprise,

5971–73 do not deign once to cast a glance at me... you attempt too much [i.e., go too far]... in letting [your] disdain stop the light of bounty
5977 to die, so cause it [my death] to be readied for me!
5983... in all its details
Twene hope and drede þus lyvyng in a traunce
To hit like yow enjoi me in sum wise.

Ther are but foolish twayne, as wil ye here:
The first is he which felith ennoyaunce
And hem forto withrawe ne list not lere;
The tothir is he which lyvith in plesaunce
And wilfully withrawith in substaunce.
The first am y of alle—and kan not rise—
Inayne loþ bi fonnyd gouernaunce
To hit like yow enjoi me in sum wise.

But to yowre grace if ye me lust avaunce,
All shul ye see, y shall me bet avise
Then forto fonne in þe secunde daunce
If it like yow enjoi me in sum wise.

*No French*

₁, Wrecche, fullilid of þouȝt and hevynes,
Though þat y wolde—allas! how myȝt it be?—
To speke or write which sowneþ to gladnes,
Syn that ther nys as will nor ioy in me,
But clene biraught me thorow yowre cruelte;
Nevirtheles y truste ye do it borow,
For plegge ye left me in ther company:
Woo for eche wille and for eche ioy a sorow.

But though ye lust it kepe for yowre plesere
As for a tyme, y this bisechen yow:
That as sone as ye see good leysere,
To sende it me, for (in good feith) as now
I may hit yvill forbere and, wite ye how,
As for yowre plegge, not rekke y þouȝ tomorow

6001 . . . —and can not rise up [out of my foolishness]—
6009–14 though I would like to speak or write that which tends toward happiness, alas! how can I, since there is neither weal nor joy in me, but you have bereft me [of it] through your cruelty; nevertheless I trust you have only borrowed [joy and weal from me], for in their place you left me as a pledge
Ye sende for hit, so that agayne y mowe
As haue my weele for woo and ioy for sorow.

And for yowre plegge, hit may gretly prevayle
Vnto yowre fooes as, in myn entent,
I wolde, if ye lust do bi my counsayle,
That bi a dede of yeft hit be <hem> sent
And—go they to the devill or forth to Kent—
Kare not for them, nor for þer tungis horrow,
For bett it is on them then on me spent,
As woo for weele and for ioy sorowe.

And if þat ye wol holde me fro my wille
I yow appele to God, which all arowe
Wot how it is bitwene vs euery dele—
Of all my wille, my woo, ioy, and sorowe.

No French

M Y paynyd gost enforsith me complayne
On Loue and, swete foo, on yowre crewelte,
The which giltles me sleeth for verry payne,
But, what, myn hert is most to blame, parde,
To do me loue þe which þat willith me
Mi deth, and þis Loue cast to reue my lijf,
Vnto þe whiche myn hert as doth agree.
Thus pitously my deth ye <do contryve>!

Gretly offendith als myn eyen tweyne,
For ther nys hert which kan eschewe or flec
To loue þat seth þe bewte in yow souereyne,
The goodlihed, þe gentiles and bounte,
But when þe hert causith the eyen <see>
And there biholde, þe hert to loue as ryve,
The offence of bothe dissent on my parte.
Thus pitously my deth ye do contryve!

As for my service spent þus all in vayne,
Rebuke and skorne is payment of my fee!
But pite is, alas! trouth may not rayne,
For where ye ought of right my frendis be
Ye moost are cause of myn aduersite
For this in yow ne holt þat now as blyve
I were but deed as thorough youre crewelte.
Thus pitously my deth ye do contryve!

Lo, thus in Payne me wrappith Loue & ye
That half my woo y kan it not discryve—
Myn hert also, with castis of myn eye.
Thus pitously my deth ye do contryve

Ch. 92, B LXVII

I woful hert þat slepis lo in care,
Awake! arise! <awake> þe lustily!
Forwhi as this y do thee to beware
That, as me thynke, shulde plesen þee gretly,
Forwhi, for trouthe, þis wot thou verily:
How þat a lady of right gret astate
And wel renomyd also, wote þou what,
As only this to bie the dooth desere,
Whiche bargeyne glad y gre, as haue y grace,
For this, for þe, hir hert she gevith me clere
Without departynge all hir lyvis space!

6049–50 ... the heart being eager to love, the offence of both falls on me
6050 for whereas you [heart and eyes] surely ought to be my friends
6055 Lo, thus you and Love wrap me in pain
6060 my heart also [makes me suffer], together with the glances of my eyes
6065 because I [want to] inform you of something that ... should please you greatly
6070 just this: desires to buy you
6073 for thus, in exchange for you ...
Refuse this chaunge and refuse my welfare!
Forwhi therto y gre me right gladly,
Wherfore y charge the this, wher so þou are,
As straytly as y kan, þat to þou dy
to doon thi servise to hir humbly
<Out> Ielowsy in stryvyng or debat
And that alway, be it eryl or late,
Holde company with my good lady dere
With all þe power þat good will in þe hase,
For as heron y gefe thee to hir here
Without departyng all my lyvis space.

Go thou þi way, logge in þe fresshe manar
Of the body of hir so ingoodly,
Alway to dwelle, þough y be here or whare,
And honoure hir well—more then hit were y!—
Which hath comaundid of hir curtesy
That thou shalt be (so blisfull is þi fate!)
As of hir hert hir leef tenaunt therat,
Where þou shalt lyue in more ioy and plesere
On day with hir then here a thousand brase,
So loke deserue it vnto thi poore powere,
Without departyng all thy lyvis space.

Now fare wel, hert, attonys y wolde þou were
With hir, alak! so drede y hir manase!
And say þat y am heris fer and nere
Without departyng all my lyvis space.

No French

Alf in dispeyre—not half, but clene dispeyrid,
I take my leue of Loue for onys and ay,
And of his seitfull, sotill hestis fayrid
The whiche þat spoken are as playn as þay
Wherin þe hert right as þe tongue say,

6089 ...—more than if it were II!—
6094–95 one day with her than twice a thousand days here [with me], so endevor to deserve ...
But y haue founde hem alle an opir wise,
The whiche y may biwayne, so welaway
That euyr y knew Loue or his servise!

I wot not whi nor kan well vndirstonde
Wherfore such promys are ymade and sworne,
Without it be to holden folk on honde
And pratyly then to gyve hem so an horne.
But what, y say as y haue seid toforne,
Syn that y fayliad haue of myn emprise:
As, welaway! þat syn þat y was borne
That evyr y knew Loue or his servise!

I kast not eft my sewrete put in drede.
Lete othir say, for y haue doon for me,
Notwithstondyng y sory am in dede
That for so small a cause hit shulde so be,
But “at a litill hole day mowe we see.”
“He louith lite,” als may y wel avise,
“That hatith for nought.” Allas! þat y am he
That evir knew Loue or his servise!

But what, as this, almyghti God y pray
That no trewe man be vexid in such wise
As y haue bene, for whiche “allas!” y say,
“That evir y knew Loue or his servise!”

No French

Epistle

Ith hert repentaunt of my gret offence,
I me recomaunde in eche humbil wise
Vnto yow lo þe whiche as recompense
Hit makith noon, þat kan y wel avise,
Vnto my gilt, but, what, I seinys twise

6107 for which reason I may complain . . .
6117 I do not intend to put my pledge [i.e., my heart] in jeopardy again
6131–34 . . . which [repentance] does not make recompense . . . for my guilt, but . . . [anyway] I have already repented twice . . .
Repentid haue of þat y haue mysbore
And sory ben—alak! what may y more?

But what, in haste ye did vnto me write
And so in wikkid hast y wrot agayne,
But this, as lo, me mevid so endite
That in my silf þis thought y, in certayne,
Ye so were causid write, þis dare y sayne,
And ellis ye nolde haue doon so fowle a dede
Without offence vnto yowre womanhede.

Offence? Nay, þe offence hit is in me!
For what, as loo, y ought me well content
In what ye say, so hit yowre plesere be,
The which þe amverse took in myn entent,
I, crewell, lo, and ye, to pacient
Me to rebewke as of my gret outrage
And squaryng of my ruggid, fowle langage.

But vnto whom shal y for mercy cry?
Vnto yow? nay, my gilt is so, ywis,
And if y othir moyan make, þen y
Shall fynde ynowe to kepe it as it is,
And passyng fewe to mende þat is amys.
Thus wot y not as how my silf amende,
But stonde as redles at my wittis ende.

And though so be ye lust me haue in hate,
Right as y wot y haue descruyd so,
Vnto my laste y shall yow loue algate
In any wise, do ye me wele or woo,
But neyrtheles if þat my fortune lo
Might gete yowre grace, hit were me such [a] store
That y shulde neuyr aftir lese it more.

6146 [I] who adopted the opposite [of patience, i.e., cruelty] . . .
6152-54 and if I ask for help from someone else, I shall find many who would wish to keep things as they are and precious few who would [attempt to] patch up that which has gone wrong
6160 no matter how you act, whether you cause me pleasure or pain
And for my gilt, if y no grace deserue,
Nor that ye lust no more take on me hede,
Yet in reward of þat y wil yow serue.
Say not of me but as ye knowe in dede,
And yshal yow þe same, so god me spede,
And wille yow wele wher ye me wil or no,
And fare yow well! thus ende y now as loo.

No French

Adde y hertis a thousand, þou3and score,
Alle shulde þei thanke yow, myn Owen ladi dere,
For yowre promys (ye wot what ye han swore,
As eft agayne hit nedith not say it here)!
Ye haue me wonne in all y haue powere,
While that y lyue, to serue yow as y kan,
But where þat fortune gyde me fer or nere,
Hit besse, swet hert, to me, yowre pouer man.

O fayre, dere hert, now take me to yowre lore
And lerne me how to do yow most plesere.
Not drede yow, swete, nor set o poynt ashore,
And ye shall se how sone y shall hem lere.
Fy on þe payne y had thorugh fals Daungere,
Syn that ye haue me to yowre mercy tan!
But where þat fortune gyde me fer or nere,
Hit besse, swet hert, to me, yowre pouer man.

So wel begoon as y was neuyr bore
Of erthely wight, nor half so glad of chere,
For this, god wot, me thynkith evirmore:
That eche howre hit is a thousand yere
Vnto the tyme þat we in armys were,
Then shulde ye knowe—ye know not hit than—
But where þat fortune gyde me fer or nere
Hit besse, swet hert, to me, yowre pouer man.

6181 ... nor leave a single thing out
6187–88 No one as happy as I or half as joyful in spirit was ever born of earthly person
Ye wot how longe y bide may with yow here, 6195
And vncertayne my comyng is hit whan,
But wher so fortune gide me fer or nere
Hit besse, swet hert, to me, yowre pouer man.
No French

Fayrist flowre, O flowre of flowris alle,
Whos fresheli colore meynt twene whit & red
The whiche þat y oft tymys see apalle
Thorugh shamfastnes þat ye of womanhed
Taken yowre silf and als abasid dred
In dowt of suche as deme, of lesse or more,
The werst alway lo of this lijf ye lede.
What may y more? y sory am þefore;

But as for þat, hit doth yow wel enwarme
As wot y wel. Wel? Ye, wel, parde!
But bi my trouthe, y loth were yow enharme
As any wight alyue, what so he be,
And if, alas! y shulde withdrawen me,
Even as the deth hit wolde me greue sore,
And, wonder! lo, amende y kan not see.
What may y more? y sory am therfore.

But what, we muste as lete them forth dyvyne,
And when þei haue all seid, þen han þei doon,
For this—A wondir last but dayes nyne—
An oold proverbe is seid, and lo as sone
As stoppid is ther false suspecioun.
I yow requere, as y haue don tofore,
Yowre loue for loue and, fayle y this gardoun,
What may y more? y sory am therfore.

6196 and [how] uncertain it [the time] of my coming is 6195
6204-5 for fear of those who always suspect, in all things, the worst . . .
6207 but as for that [being judged], it makes you red [with anger]
6209 . . . I would be [as] loath to injure you
6215 “Them” refers to the detractors.
Where pat myn haver is right rewde, al dol,
As pardone me, madame, my boystous lore,
For if y kan amende it lo y wol;
If y not may, y sory am therfore.

No French

Onure, ioy, helthe, and plesaunce
Vertu, ricches habundaunt with good vre
The Lord graunt yow (which hath most puysshaunce),
And many a gladsom yere forto endure,
With loue and prays of euery creature,
And for my loue (all prevayle it small)
I gyve hit yow, as be ye verry sewre,
With hert, body, my litill good, and all.

And so yow not displese with my desire,
This wolde yow biseche: that of yowre grace
Hit like yow lo to graunt me all pis yere
As in yowre hert to haue a dwellyng place,
Al be hit neuyr of so lite a space,
For which as this the rente rescuye ye shall:
Mi loue and seruice as in euery case,
With hert, body, my litill good, and all.

And syn hit is to yow no preiudice
Sum litill, prati corner sekis me
Within yowre hert for, parde, lo, iustice
If y offende, hit must yowre selven be
To punysshe liche as ye pe offenis se,
For y as name nor haue no thing at all
But it is sovl yowre owen in eche degre,
With hert, body, my litill good, and all.
What so ye will, y wil hit to obey,  
For payne or smert, how so þat me bifold,  
So am y yowre and shal to that y dey  
With hert, body, my litill good, and all.

Ch. 140, B LXXXVIII, Orleans to Burgundy

Lo, myn hert, syn ye wol gone yowre way  
(And leue me soole) vnto my lady dere,  
Yet, for my sake, y yow requere and pray  
That when so be ye se tyme and laysere,  
Remembre here þe playnt of my matere.  
Syn that ye knowe alle my grete grefis sore.  
Me nedith not it to rehersen here.  
Ye wote my wele. What shulde y wordis more?

As first of alle, þis wolde y þat ye say:  
<Me> recomaundyng in eche lowe manere  
My lady to (as ye best thynke and may)  
And aftir that say hir, y yow requere,  
The woo turment y lede in displesere.  
For her departyng—set no poynt ashore!—  
Syn hir aspectis berayvith me my plesere.  
Ye wot my weele. What shulde y wordis more?

Now do yowre devoure, say me now not nay,  
For gyf ye do then batith all my chere,  
And sende me word bi Thought eche howre of day  
When next that ye suppose to brynge vs nere  
Vnto that swete þat lyvith withouten pere  
(Nor nevyr had—y gefe this world toefore)  
Of bewte, bounte, nor swet eyen clere.  
Ye wot my weele. What shulde y wordis more?

Wot ye not wel that lijk a prisoner  
I must abide the oth þat y have swore?

6255–56 ... since you want to leave me alone and go [and stay] with my dear lady  
6274–76 when you next intend to bring us [my heart and I] to that sweet [one] who has no peer (nor ever had [one]—I stake the [whole] world on it)
Myn hert, y nede no more vnto yow lere.
Ye wote my wele. What shulde y wordis more?

No French

Ith hert, body, and my hool puysshaunce,
I thanke yow, swete—or more, if more may be—
Of yowre goodly remembraunce
The which ye oft han shewid me.
So doon with me in eche degre
What yow good lust in any thing at all,
For in no poynct excepte y nought
Nor to my deth y neuyr shall,
Whatsoeuyr be seid or thought.

Forhte ye not now, in substaunce:
Ye wot what pat y myght se
Vnto my blisse and most plesaunce,
For thynke ye hit that y am he
Not all out of aduersite,
Nor shall to that yowre myddil smal
Be onys within myn armys brou3t,
Nor to my deth y nevir shal,
Whatsoeuer be seid or thought.

So shape me of hit delyueraunce
When ther are noon but y and ye
In lessyng of þe gret penaunce
I haue had thorugh þe crewelte
Of Daungere and of Ielowsy
That yvil thrift on þer chekis falle,
For nygh my deth as han þei wrought,
But now y truste they nevir shal,
Whatsoevir be seid or thought.

6289 for in every detail I exempt nothing
6293-94 you know what I could [would like to] see [which would give] me
happiness and greatest pleasure
6299 . . . I never shall [be free from adversity]
6307 for they have nearly caused my death
Sett tyme or that þe wynd apalle
And clowdid be þe mone aloft
No more but yowre y [am] and shall,
Whatsoeuyr be seid or thought.

Ch. 142, B LXXXVIIa, Burgundy to Orleans

Yn that y am yowre, haue ben, & shall
Withouten part of elliswhere servise,
Albe Absence me holt sogett and thrall,
I yow biseche in my most humble wise
That of yowre fare ye lust me to avise,
For wot ye this, myn hert is lade der.
I gesse ye wolde haue sende me more þen twise,
If þat it were as y koude wishe it were.

For ther nys howre in day nor yet in nyzt
But that y pray to God right humbly
To sende me sone from yow þat myght
Aquyk myn hert, where now for fright y die,
Which shulde ben lo, god wot, ful hastily,
Or y at lest parcas to ben yow nere,
Ne were þe cause—ye wot as wel as y—
But al is not as y koude wishe it were.

If ther be ought þat y may do,
Spare not to put my lijf in Iuparty,
Nor what y haue to take vnto,
For levir were it to me, verily
(As in yowre right), þis howre to die,
Then lyue (ye, hert, a thousand yere!)

6310 Use your time before the wind slackens
6312 yours alone I am and shall be
6319 ... my heart is heavily laden
6326–28 which should be [sent] ... very soon, or [I pray God] at least to be near you, were it not for—you know [what it is] as well as I—"To ben" is parallel to "to sende" (6324).
6332–37 nor [spare] to take what I have in addition, for I would rather die right now, as is your right [to decree], than [continue to] live—else vengeance be upon me if I lie! To do it [die at your behest] would be the death I would wish for
—Ellis vengeaunce on me and y lie!
To don hit were as y koude wisshe it were.

If trust that it shall frame oure brest,
If y lyue to anothir yere,
To sett oure hertis more at rest
And shall ben even as y koude wisshe it were.

No French

A
Llas, Madame, what maner strijf
Is ther bitwene yowre mouth and y?
Not se y but the poore lijf
Which pat y lede must hit aby,
Without ye hem accorde trewly,
For when yowre mouth me swerith deth,
Me thynkith yowre eyen "mercy" seith.

Thus but ye <them> appese trewly,
I drede ther warre wil me devowre,
For if so be they do me die,
The cause it is for y am yowre,
Which stonde as voyde of all socoure
As in extreme vpyeldyng breth
To that yowre eyen "mercy" seith.

So stonde y in ayde of pat on
And not what is my best reed
To Plesure from yowre eyen goon
Vnro myn hert, that lieth ded,
Me seyiyngh how yowre <goodlihed>
Hath for my lijf ymade aseth
And "all forgyue" and "mercy" seith.

6338 I hope that it will do our hearts good
6341 and shall become exactly as I wish it would be.
6344–45 I see nothing [i.e., no possibility] but that the wretched life I lead (i.e., I) must suffer because of it
6353 "Which" refers to the speaker.
6356–57 Therefore I stand [firm] in support of them [the eyes] and know not what advice is best till...
This lo the oth that ye haue sworne
More sharpe þen poynct of swerd or thorne,
Me thynkith it thrillith me and sleth,
Saue that yowre eyen "mercy" seith!

_No French_

[Amant:]  
_Ende me yowre praty mouth, Madame._

Se how y knele here at yowre feet?

[Lady:]  
_Whie wolde ye occupy the same?
Now whereabowt first mot me wite._

[A:]  
_Iwis, dere hert, to basse it, swete,
A twyse or thrise or that y die._

[L:]  
_So may ye haue when next we mete
Toforne or ye it ocupie._

[A:]  
_Or y it ocuppy? wel, wel!
Is my reward but suche a skorne?_

[L:]  
_Ye, woo is me for yowre seek hele,
But it may heele right wel tomorne._

[A:]  
_Then se y wel: though y were lorne
For oon poore cosse, ye sett not by!_

[L:]  
_Seide y yow not ynough toforne:
Ye may haue or ye ocuppy?_

[A:]  
_Ye, for that cosse y thanke yow that,
Forwhi yet am y nevir þe nere._

[L:]  
_Then come agayne, this wot ye what,
Anothir tyme—and not to yere._

[A:]  
_A, fy! wel, wel! A, swet hert dere.
Bi verry god, ye mot aby!_

[L:]  
_Nay, bete me not, first take it here
Toforne or ye it occupy._

[A:]  
_Ye, so, so, swete! ye, so, swete hert!_

6363 "The oth" refers back to 6347.
6370 First I must know how [i.e., for what purpose you will occupy it].
6373 You may have [died] when next we meet [at your funeral].
6382 ?You _might_ have died before you got your kiss.
Good thrift vnto þat praty eye!
Nay, erst lo must ye this avert—
How ye seide "or ye it occupy."

No French

Presence of yow hit causith my comfort
And so my payne when sight of yow y mysse,
And, syn so is y may not yow resort,
This write y yow, myn owen dere hertis blisse,
Forte bithynke me, which þat sende yow þis,
As for youre owen (and shall ben evir),
Owt secund choys or on vnto me levir.

So am y youre, wol be, haue, and shall!
To oren a wrecche therto saue þat youre grace
Mi deth to lette, so lust me to yow calle,
For which gif y not shulde my lyvis space
Mi karkas payne in eche a tymé or case
Yowre plesere to (noon othir nevir),
Owt secund choys or on vnto me levir,

The self howre as mot y therwith dey
And nevir come vnto þe blisse of heven.
Not say y this but wel parcas þat y
In pevishe synne myght happe me in a seven
Which is þe viij synne to synnes vij
But that y truste hit shall as not dissever
Owt secunde choys or on vnto me lever.

6399–6400 [to cause you] to consider me, who send you this [letter], as your own
(and [I] shall be [yours] always)
6401 without a second choice . . .
6402 So I am yours, will be, have been, and shall [be]!
6407 to do your pleasure ([and] never [that of] any other)
6409–15 ?[if I do not do my best to please you] may I die that very hour and
never go to heaven—I say this only on the off chance that I might sin in my
sleep, which is the eighth sin, but I hope, more than any other thing, it will not be
a cause for our separation.
So pray yow, if ye me thynke amys,
Remembre yow how that y say in this—
I am yowre owen and wol ben evyr
Owt secund choys or on vnto me levir.
No French

Fy, Fortune, fy! þi dißayt and skorne,
For all þi fraude, retorne yet wilfully,
That woldist ay eche wele were sone forlorne.
Iwis, [s]coffer, yet art þou no thing ny
Me to disseyve, for clene y the defy!
To wel therto parseyue y lo þi thouȝt,
Nor yet þou get me not, for all þi spie,
Nor yet, y trust, heraftir shalt þou not!

To wel knowen haue y þee tofore
To be bigilid with thi mokkery.
I am to ware of þee to were an horne,
Wherfore þat this y pray þee hertily—
Thi mokkis selle to þem þat lust it by!
Full yvil ware of þee oft haue y bouȝt,
So yet þou get me not, for all þi spie,
Nor yet, y trust, heraftir shalt þou not.

Now wolde y say þou haddist þee wel borne
Me to deseyve bi sleight or trechery,
Which do revolue at eve or morne
The dowbill turnys of thi iuparty.
So were y foole to trusten þee trewly,
Wherfore, as y haue scid vnto thee oft,
That yet þou get me not, for all þi spy,
Nor yet, y trust, heraftir shalt þou not.

So fy on Fortune! fy on Ielowsy!
And all þe awayte ye haue vnto me wrouȝt,
For yet ye get me not, for all yowre spy,
Nor yet, y trust, heraftir shalt þou not.
No French

Etorne, for shame, retorne, retorne, ageyne!
Hye not to fast, parde, ye gon amys!
Leue wayes twart and take þe pathis playne.
I wis ye mowe not ouyrgone <as> this.
Such long abode, god wot, in vayne it is,
Saue to forfaynten and forwery me.
I put yowre silf to be my Iuge, ywis,
When ye are—where?—now where as ye shulde be,

For how ye go, as that y goo, y go not wel,
But all forgo and clene mysgo out of my wey,
Owt hope of wey vnþo myn hertis hele,
But ye of grace me lust there to convoy,
So be my gide to as moche ioy, y pray,
As ye han brought me in aduersite.
Nys hit resoun? ne say ye no “nay, nay!”
<I> wol welcome yow where as ye shulde be.

The wey that ye now take, þenke ye hit good?
Who ledde yow so, ye wolde not seme it sayre.
Ye seche to many stilis straunge, bi þe rood,
For, trust ye wel, onys must ye nede repayre
To Louys court to tasten of þat leyre,
And then lo wol ye curse—þis shal ye se!—
Bothe Slouthe him silf, his fadir, sone & heyre,
And all his blood—were ye where ye shulde be.

Soune ye or y y wolde y vndirstood
Ne wotith not eche wight as wel as ye
That ye are made as men of flesshe & blood?
Whi make ye towgh to com where ye shulde be?

*No French*

S

O fresshe bewte, so moche goodlynes,
So skace of grace, so large of crewelte,
So moche vertew and so moche gantilnes,
So long this straunge, so bareyne of pite,
So lusty yowthe, so replete of bounte,
So litil mercy and so gret disdayne—
So fervent loue, then, as hit cawsith me,
How may it be owt sleyng me inayne?

So many othis as y haue yow swore,
So koward drede whi take ye, or mystrust?
So fayre bihest and y a skorne therfore;
So moche to loue where ye ageyne dislust.
So for what cawse y wolde fayne pat y wist,
—So it not greve nor yow offende ageyne.
So ovirtwart as pis is knyt and twyst,
How may it be owt sleyng me inayne?

So sle ye me, dere hert, bi god alon!
So when ye charge me speke no more of pis,
So but y shulde my wery lijf forgon,
So may y not, but syn yowre plesere is
So for my trouthe to doon me deye, ywis,
So hit may ese yow eek to se me slayne,
So as ye do and lo it kan not mys—
How may it be owt sleyng me inayne?

Goo, poore bille, good fortune be pi gide,
Forblot with teeris of myn eyen twayne;

6476 Such youthful beauty . . .
6489–90 if it does not anger nor offend (against) you. This matter is so perversely intertwined
6494–96 . . . even if I wished to die, I cannot, but since [it] is your pleasure to cause me to die in exchange for my faithfulness thus . . .
6501–2 all bespattered with tears of my two eyes; for me to be joyful and hide my sorrows
For me to ioy my sorowis and to hide—
How may it be owt sleyng me in payne?

No French

A

S for farewell! farewell! farewell! farewell!
And of farewell more þen a þousand skore
Haue ye fare wel! —or more, had y to dele,
For forto say þis partyng doth me sore—
Hit doth, hit doth! hit nede no more ben sore,
For though þat y wolde kepe it close mafay,
Mi bollid hert doth so his sikis rore
That, mawgre me, hit doth my wele biwray.

What may y doon now, levyng youre presence,
But drawe me sool my silven to complayne,
In waylyng so þe tyme of youre absence
Which is to me, god wot, most grevous payne,
And wol be to that y se yow agayne,
Which let ben, swete, as sone as þat ye may,
For þe sighis þat doth ellis on me rayne,
As maugre me, þei wol myn hert biwray.

Bithynk yow eek þat it is passyng hard
Vnto an hert ful of aduersite
To hide his payne, þat is so sore bistad,
—So blynd is Loue and wenyth othir be.
This say y lo my selven wel bi me:
That sore y drede, syn y am yeven a way,
Lest þat my bollyng sighis on [me] preve,
As maugre me þat hit my loue biwray.

But in good trouthe þe deth hit were me levr
Then hit were wist wherfor þat y yow pray
Albe y fer forget me nevyr
To eft sone þat y may yow more biwray.

6511 ... it betrays my will
6524 I say this about myself
Appendices

I. English Poems Not Found in Harley 682

For the sake of completeness, I include here the other English poems attributed to Charles of Orleans. Because they have been transcribed inaccurately in the past (by a series of scholars), I present them diplomatically, with full transcription of the variants. Apart from doubting that the poems in the autograph manuscript were ever intended (as Steele suggested, xxxi n) to "complete" the roundel sequence of Fortunes Stabilnes, I have little to say about them. Each must be studied on its own merits and in its own context. When all the vagaries of transmission history, spelling, time lapses (both in composition and in transmission), scribal idiosyncrasies, and possible adaptation are taken into account, it is not difficult to see that these are not likely to resemble the other poems in this book very closely. They are, however, written in more or less the same fixed forms. It is perhaps worth noting that a few English poems occur in three different MSS of Charles's French poems, a juxtaposition which would be very unlikely if the duke were not known to have tried his hand at composition in English.

One or more of the poems are extant in five manuscripts: (1) B.N. MS. f. fr. 25458 (the duke's autograph manuscript): 1–9; (2) B.L. MS. Royal 16 F. ii (a late MS, c. 1500, which contains a collection of the duke's French poems, as well as a series of splendid miniatures, including one illustrating the opening allegory of the God of Love and the famous one illustrating Charles's arrival at and incarceration in the Tower of London): 2, 10–11; and (3) Bodley MS. Fairfax 16 (a miscellaneous collection of late medieval courtly lyric and narrative verse): 7.1 Two other manuscripts (Carpentras 375 and B.N. f. fr. 1104) are of no value in establishing the texts of these poems. I have not recorded their variants.2

Inasmuch as I do not intend here to edit the entire corpus of Charles's English poems, I have not included descriptions of these manuscripts. Cham-

---

1 For which see Fox, Lyric Poetry, or Spence, French Chansons, frontis.
2 Bibl. Carpentras 375 is a copy of the autograph manuscript, made for the duchess, Marie of Cleves, probably between 1455 and 1458, (according to Champion); B.N. MS. f. fr. 1104 is also a copy of 25458, executed during Charles's lifetime, but of no textual authority; it once belonged to Catherine de Medici (see Champion, xvi–viii, xx).
pion discusses all of them (Poésies, ix–xxi) except the Fairfax, which is described in Norton-Smith’s edition of the facsimile edition. All of the poems are printed in the editions of Champion3 and of Steele and Day.4

B.N. f. fr. 25458 (O) has been used as the base text for those poems which occur in the autograph manuscript (nos. 1–9). The spaces left for two-line capitals in the French MS were never filled; only the guide letters remain. The initial letter of each line, as in so many French MSS, is separated by a double vertical line from what follows, making decisions about word division slightly more difficult than usual. I have regularized the capitalization of the first word of every line. The refrain lines are not indented in the Royal MS (R).

Champion has said of the question of the authorship of two English poems in Charles’s autograph MS (LXXXVIII and LXXXIX, in his hand) that “La présomption me paraît en faveur du duc.”5 John Norton-Smith has suggested, in the introduction to the facsimile edition, that Charles might be the author of a number of lyrics in Booklet 5 of the Fairfax MS.6 The entire matter of the authorship of these poems requires further study.

1.

[A]3ens the comynge of may
That is fule of lustynes
Let vs leue ale heuynes
As fer as we can or may

Now is tym of myrth and play
Wynter weth hys ydylnes
Is dyscomfet as y ges
And Redy to fie away
A3ens &c.

Wherfore ladys I 3ow pray
That 3e take in 3ow gladnes
And do al 3our besynes
To be mery nyght and day
A3ens &c.

A rondeau. B.N. f. fr. 25458, 310, poem 117; ed. Champion, 569.

---

3 256–57 [those in Charles’s hand], 569–72.
4 220–25. It is perhaps worth mentioning that Grenoble MS. 873, a MS of the duke’s French poems together with a Latin translation of them by his Italian secretary, Antonio Astesan, contains no English poems, according to the librarian, M. Michel Merland.
5 Poésies, 569. Alice Planche has argued that they are the duke’s work, and in fact few have argued with any fervor that they are not. She points to a number of parallels between these English poems and the duke’s French poems (Recherche d’un langage, 108–13).
6 Fairfax 16, viii, xxix. For a refutation of this argument, see Jansen, ‘Suffolk’ Poems, 21–28.
[G]o forth myn hert wyth my lady  
Loke that ye spar no besynes  
To serue hyr wyth seche lowlynes  
That 3e get hyr grace and mercy

Pray hyr of tymes pryuely  
That sche quippe trewly hyr promes  
Go forth &c.

I most as a hertles body  
Abyde alone in heuynes  
And 3e schal dowel wyth your maistres  
In plesans glad and mery  
Go forth &c.

A roundel. B.N. f. fr. 25458, 310, poem 118; ed. Champion, 570; London, Royal 16 F.ii, fol. 69r-v (headed Chancon.; blank line after 7, rather than 4; 9 begins on verso; dot at end of every line except 2; refrain lines not indented).

Roundels number 2–6, 8–9, and 11 have the same number of lines per section as the majority of the roundels of H, though one rather than two abbreviated refrain lines appear. In this poem, as in the last two poems, below, the Royal scribe, apparently a Frenchman, has made some errors attributable only to a non-English speaker, e.g., in lines 8–9. The form quippe in line 5 S&D ascribe to “a French author writing English phonetically,” that is, Charles himself (cf. the form quere for cure in line 2244).

1. myn] my R; wyth] wt R
2. besynes] bysynes R
3. hyr wyth seche lowlynes] her wt such lolynes R
4–5. That ye gette her ofyme pryuely [eye-skip] R
6. sche quippe trewly hyr promes] she kepe truly her promes R
8. I most] I Nuist R; hertles] helis R
10. 3e schal] ye shal R; dowel] o marked for erasure O, dwell R; your maistres] your mastres R
11. plesans] plaisauns R

3.  
[F]or the reward of half a 3ere  
Tow trewelouys upon the brest  
Hyt ys y now to brynge yn Rest  
A hert that loue hold yn dangere

Whenne he hath be sume wat strangere  
To hym ys holyday and fest  
For the &c
Thousche hyt be a Iuel ful dere
And a charme for the tempest
Yet y conseille hym to be prest
And fore a3ens the warderere
For the &c

Richard Firth Green, in an unpublished lecture, has discussed this lyric as
a roundel obscure on account of its occasional nature, composed and used
perhaps as a response to the gift of a piece of jewelry in the shape of two
flowers called true-loves from a lady. A similar approach to a number of the
poems in Fortunes Stabilnes might reveal meanings in what is now obscure.

4.

[A]las mercy wher shal myn hert yow fynd
Neuer had he wyth yow ful aqwaintans
Now com to hym and put of hys greuans
Ellys ye be vnto yowr frend vnkynd

Mercy he hath euer yow in hys mynd
Ons let hym haue sum conforth of plesans
Alas mercy &c
Let hym not dey but mak at ons a nende
In al hys woo an Right heuy penans
Noght is the help that whyl not hym avans
Slauth hys to me and euer com be hynde
Alas mercy &c

This lyric, about which much has been written, contains an acrostic on the
name Anne Molins (see Hammond, “Anne Molyneux,” and Seaton, Studies
in Villon, “Two English Ladies”).

8. a nende] error for an ende

5.

[Y]e shal be payd after your whylfulnes
And blame nothyng but your mys gouernans
For whenn good loue wold fayn had yow auans
Then went ye bak wyth wyly frauhyednes

I knew anon your sotyl wylenes
And your danger that was mad for a scans
Ye schal be &c
Ye might haue been my lady and maistres
For euer mor with outhyn varians
But now my hert yn yngland or in france  
Ys go to seke other nyw besynes
Ye schal be &c

A roundel. B.N. f. fr. 25458, 312, poem 121; ed. Champion, 571.

6.
[S]o fayre so freshe so goodely on to se
So welle dymeynet in al your gouernans
That to my hert it is a grete plesans
Of your godenes when y remembre me

And trustyth fully wher that euer y be
I wylle abyde vndyr your obeyssance
So fayre &c.
For in my thought ther is no mo but ye
Whom y haue seruid wythout repentance
Wher fore y pray yow sethe to my greuance
And put osyde all myn aduersite
So fayre &c.


7.
[O] thou fortune which hast the gouernnance
Of alle thynge kyndely meuyng to se fro
Thaym to demene after thynd ordonnance
Right as thou lyst to grante hem wele or wo
Syth that thou lyst / that I be on of tho
That must be rewlyd be thynd auisines
Why wylt thou not wythstand myn heuynes

Me thyng thou art vnkynde as in thys case
To suffre me so long a whylle endure
So grete a peyne. wehout mercy and grase
Which greuyth me right sore I the ensure
And syth thou knawst / I am that creature
That wolde be fauourd be thy gentilles
Why wylt thou not wythstand myn heuynes

What causyth the to be myn aduersarie
I haue not done which that schuld the displese
And yit thou art to myn entent contrarie
Which maketh alwey my sorous to encresse
And syth thou wost my hert ys not in ese
But euer in trouble wythout sykyruenes
Why wylt thou not wythstand myn heuynes

To the allonly thys compleynt I make
For thou art cause of myn aduersite
And yit I wote welle thou mayst vndertake
For myn welfare if that thou lyst agre
I haue no cause to blame no wyght but the
For thys thou dost of verray wythfulnes
Why wylt thou not wythstand myn heuynes


1. fortune] Fortune F; which] whyche F; gouernnance] gouernnaunce F
2. alle thynge kyndely meuyng] alle thynge kyndly meuyng F; se] and F (mis-reading of & or &c by French scribe, see Jansen, ‘Suffolk Poems, 10, “Fairfax Poems,” 218)
3. after] after F; ordonnaunce] ordynaunce F
4. grante] graunt F
6. be rewlyd] bereulyd F; auisines] avysinesse F
7. wylt thou] wyltow F; heuynes] heuynesse F
8. thynk] thynk F; vnkynde as] vnkynd os F; thys] this F
9. whylle] whyle F
10. grete] gret F; peyne. [dot centered] wohout mercy (The e of wohout perhaps a misreading of t)] payn wyth out mersy F; and] or F
11. greuyth] greuyd F; right] ryght F
12. knawst] knowst V
13. wolde] wold F; faouord] faouored F; gentilles] gentyllesse F
14. wylyt thou] wylytow F; wythstand] wythstonde F; heuynes] heuynesse F
15. aduersarie] aduersarie F
16. schuld the displesse] shulde dysplese F
17. thou art over erasure F; contrarie] contrarye F
19. thou wost] you wost F
20. euer] euer F; wythout sykyruenes] wyth out sykernesse F
21. wylt thou] wyiltow F; wythstand] wythestande F; heuynes] heuynesse F
22. thys] this F
23. [321b] aduersite] aduersyte F
24. wote welle] wot wele F; vndertake] vndirtake F
25. welfare if] wel fare yf F
27. dost] doost F; verrrey wyfulnes] very wyfulnesse F
28. wylt thou] wyltow F; heuynes] heuynesse F

8.

[M]yn hert hath send glad hope in hys message
Vn to comfort plesans Ioye and sped
I pray to god that grace may hym leed
Wythout lettynge or daunger of passage

[I]n tryst to fynd profit and auauntage
Wyth yn short tym to the help of hys ned
[M]yn hert &c
[V]nto comfort &c

[T]ille bat he come myn hert yn ermytage
Of thoght shalle dwele a lone god gyve hym med
And of wysshynge of tymys shal hym fed
Glad hope folowe & sped wele thys viage
[M]yn hert &c

A roundel. B.N. f. fr. 25458, 346, poem 182, ed. Champion, Poésies, Chanson LXXXVIII, 256

This poem and the one following (nos. 8–9) are in Charles's own hand (for examples of Charles's hand, see Champion, Manuscrit Autograph, Histoire Poétique, Joueur d'échecs). No guide letters are visible for the refrain lines. Charles uses the thorn in both of these poems (no. 8, line 9; no. 9, line 1), betraying a confirmed habit of writing English. Note that only in these two poems (8–9) and the two following (10–11), written (according to Champion) by a Flemish scribe, do the -aun (rather than -an) spellings appear. Champion suggests that both this poem and the next contain an echo (not "une traduction, mais d'une interprétation assez libre") of Chanson LXI (569; poem, 240); in addition, lines 9–10 echo Ballade XLIII: "Mon cuer est devenu hermite / En l'ermitage de Pensee" (64), which in turn brings to mind its English counterpart (B 43).

9.

Whan shal thow come glad hope fro þi vyage
Thow hast taryd to long many a day
For alle conford is put fro my away
Tyll that. I. her tythynge of þy message

---

7 Also in B.N. f. fr. 1104, fol. 73, Chanson 123; and Bibl. Carpentras 375, 73 (headed Chanson en Anglois).
[W]hat that had be lettyng of thy passage
Or tariynge alas I can not say

[T]how knows fulwel þat I have gret damage
In abdyngne of the that is no nay
And thof y syngþ & dauns or lagh and play
In blake mournynge clothyd my corage
[W]han shal &c

A roundel. B.N. f. fr. 25458, 346, poem 183 (in the hand of Charles himself. No guide letters are visible for the refrain lines, two of which have been written together on line 7, or for line 5.); ed. Champion, Chanson LXXXIX, 256–57.

In addition to Chanson LXI (see also note to lyric 9, above), this poem echoes Ballade XVII (cf. “Je suis cellphone au cueur vestu de noir” and line 12), according to Champion. He does not note that the phrase “this is no nay” occurs in B 33 (1212) and B 88 (5447).

1. þi] i written above þ.

10.

Chancon.
My hertly loue is in your gouernans
And euer shal þat I. lyue may
I pray to god I may see that day
That we be knyt with trouthfull alyans
Ye shal not fynd feynyng or variauns

As in my part that wyl I. trewly say
My hertly. &c.

A roundel. London, B.L. Royal 16 F.ii, fol. 118r–v (lines 6–7 on 118v)

The three-line initial letter is illuminated, as is the one-line initial letter of each line; the second letter of each line (except in 2–3) is a capital. The (apparently francophone) scribe, who distinguishes u from n by the height of the ligature, has made two errors (lines 1, 5).

1. your] yo, followed by r superscript above dot; gouernans] gouernus, superscript a.
2. whille] whill, with crossed double l; þat] t written above þ

8 Also in B.N. f. fr. 1104, fol. 73v. Rondel 46; and Bibl. Carpentras 375, 73 (headed A good song in English).
5. variauns] varianns

11.

Chancon.
Ne were my trewe innocent hert.
How ye hold with her aliauns
That somtym with word of plesauns
Desceyued you vnder couert.
Thynke how the stroke of loue comsment 5
Without warnyng or deffiauns.
Ne were my.&c.

And ye shall pryuely or appert.
See her by me in loues dauns.
Wyth her faire femenyn contenauns.
Ye shalle neuer fro her astert.
   Ne were my.&c.

A roundel. London, B.L. Royal 16 F.ii, fol. 131r.
Both this lyric and the previous one contain the word aliauns, a word which appears eight times in the English poems. Cf. line 5 with lines 2426 ("that with the strok loue at the wound in stert"). The foreign scribe, who distinguishes u from m and n by the height of the ligature, has made two errors (lines 2, 6).

1. Ne were] error for Bewere (emended by Croft, 153)
2. aliauns] aliaims
3. with] t written above w; plesauns] superscript a
5. comsment] error for con smert
6. deffiauns] deffianns

§

II. Distribution of Ballade Forms

121 ballades: 83 with French counterparts [+]
   38 without French counterparts [-]

I. 1–83 [+]:
   a. all have envoys (added in 20 cases)
   b. stanza lengths vary from 8 to 15 lines
   c. rhymes per stanza vary from 2 to 7
d. all use the same rhymes in every stanza

(exceptions: 58, 60, 62, 74 [-] follow pattern as in II)

*75–81 [+] form a special subgroup:
  *a. they form a narrative group and lack envoys
  *b. all have 8–line stanzas
  *c. rhymes per stanza vary from 2 to 3
  *d. all use the same rhymes in every stanza

II. 84–121 [-]:
  a. all have envoys
  b. all have 8–line stanzas (except two with 7 lines)
  c. all have 3 rhymes per stanza
  d. 10 use the same rhymes in every stanza
    28 use a new rhyme set in each stanza

(exceptions: 101, 107, 111, 113 [+] follow pattern as in I)


The ballades all have envoys (Ia + IIa). Of the ballades which have French counterparts, fewer than 1/4 of the envoys are added to French poems that lack them. The poems with French counterparts vary in stanza length (Ib) and in the numbers of rhymes per stanza (Ic), but all use a single rhyme set from stanza to stanza (Id). The poems without French counterparts nearly always have eight-line stanzas (IIb) and three rhymes per stanza (IIc), but in the majority of cases (2:1) begin each stanza with a new rhyme set (IIId) (i.e., eight rhymes per poem instead of three; the refrain rhyme must obviously remain the same).  

---

9 H. Cohen says, “My own impression of these [English] envoys is that they harmonize perfectly, in every case, with the ballade to which they are attached and that they are on the same poetic level with the other stanzas of the poem” (The Ballade, 272).

10 The fact that sixty-three of the eighty-three ballades already have envoys in the French is a fact not made clear by some of the poems’ critics. Although Charles’s French poems sometimes lack envoys, this should not be taken as a characteristic of French ballades, especially those not intended for musical accompaniment; the majority of ballades by Christine de Pisan, for instance, end with envoys.

11 The only exception to these generalizations is Ballade 111, which has a French counterpart but contains new rhymes in each stanza. This ballade is unusual, too, in that it occurs much later in the autograph French manuscript than the other poems that Charles reworked in English, and the English version may have been written in the course of his composition of a number of the surrounding English poems in the looser form, an
It is also difficult to see why Charles constructed all his roundels in the same basic form, both those with French counterparts and those without, yet employed a form for his English ballades that was in most cases different from the forms of his original compositions. On the other hand, it makes great sense that, once the duke had tried his hand at the looser English ballade form, given all the other difficulties that writing in a second language presented, he would have continued to experiment with the increased flexibility the form offered him (even if he retained some reservations as to whether it was cricket to eliminate some of the technical difficulties of composition).

§

III. Corrections to Steele and Day Edition

Since Steele expanded crossed -ll to -lle, I have included errors concerning crossed -ll here, even though I have not treated the bar as an abbreviation. This list does not include errors of capitalization but does include word division errors (though I have normalized word division in the text). Expansions in my text, spelled in accordance with the scribe’s preferences, sometimes differ from Steele’s. Textual notes must of course be consulted for scribal revisions. Steele’s text precedes my correction.

Steele

22 to
tele

410 geve

geve [followed by carat]

70 If

Of

491 too

to

114 atamyd

a tamyd

540 away

a way

132 ressayeue.

ressayeue

560 aslake

a slake

198 he,

he [followed by carat, followed by]

576 aslake

a slake

by]

581 aslake

a slake

235 a plight

aplight

583 mow

mowe

393 of

or

ywis

yw is

exercise which may have suggested itself in reworking this poem. Ballades 101 and 107 (of the “exceptions” I have listed) are displaced from the earlier series (if the autograph manuscript order provides any evidence) and were therefore written employing the earlier, stricter structure. Charles was clearly slow to become convinced of the superiority of using a new set of rhymes in each stanza. In a number of the poems that he composed only in English he used the stricter French form; the number in the looser form is less than a quarter of the total number of ballades. Once again, it is more difficult to understand this phenomenon if we are speaking of an English translator than if we are speaking of the poet himself.
APPENDICES

665 aslake  a slake  3667 askaunce  a skaunce
698 unto  vnto  3699alles  alles
699 aturbaunce  a turbaunce  3945 to biwayne  tobiwayne
859 remembraunce  remembraunce  4029 a myte  amyte
868 Forwhi  For whi  4033 a lite  alite
876 him,  him [followed  4076 a lite  alite
by carat]  4224 a man  aman
y tryst  4298 hevy  heuy
then  4337 askaunce  a skaunce
trouthe  4349 lo  so
Fulle welle  4457 Iturynyd  I turnyd
Shalle  4725 through  thorough
owen  4790 aquyt  a quynt
woofulle  5033 Her  Hir
alle  5075 nemene  neiuene
accordith  5086 aside  a side
lo  5096 Owit  Owtt [note]
Noon  5105 sle  slee
rath  5107 vs  vs a
wolde  5169 shall  shalle
toude  5290 cleyne  cleyne
For whi  5321 by  bi
fulle  5354 that  vat
fulle  5407 gaunt  graunt
[corrected in corregenda]
For whi  5508 prince  prince
fro  5544 the  thee
alle  5740 unto  vnto
which  5954 piti  putt
ar  6095 loke  lo ke
hit  6100 alle  alle
a slepe  6154 amys  a mys
depayntis  6231 every  euery
shalle  6325 Aquyk  A quyk
conseitis  6335 lyve  lyue
a  6356 in ayde  inayde
alle  6360 goodlihed  goodlihot
yowre  6381 ynough  y nough
now  6498 Do  So

3421 not
3401 yowre.
3428 all
3459 aqueyntaunce  a queyntaunce
3659 aqueyntaunce  a queyntaunce
3662 Ynowe  y nowe
For ȝ with ū written above it Steele prints ȝu at 1192, 1230, 1578, ȝou at 1811, 2573, 2878, 6097.

Other English poems (Steele, 220–25):

1.1 A3ens [A]3ens
1.10 I .I
2.1 Go [G]o
2.7 &c. &c
3.1 For [F]or
3.7 &c. &c
3.12 &c. &c
3.3 ynow y now
3.5 sumewat sume wat
4.1 Alas [A]las
4.7 &c. &c
4.8 a-Mende a nende
4.9 all al
4.12 &c. &c
5.1 Ye [Y]e
5.7 &c. &c
5.9 euermor euer mor
5.9 withouthyn with outhyn
5.12 &c. &c
6.1 So [S]o
6.10 Wherfore Wher fore
7.1 O [O]
7.2 all alle
7.8 Methyng Me thyng
7.20 sykyrmenes sykyruenes
8.1 Myn [M]yn
8.5 In [I]n
8.7 Myn hert &c. [M]yn hert &c
8.8 Vnto comfort &c. [V]nto comfort &c
8.10 alone a lone
8.13 Myn hert &c. [M]yn hert &c
9.5 What [W]hat
9.7–8 When shal &c. [W]hen shal &c
/ Thow hast &c. [T]how hast &c.
[written on one line in O]
9.9 Thow [T]how
9.9 that [h]at
9.13 What shal &c. [W] shal &c
10.1 your governans your governans
10.2 I I
10.5 varians varianns
10.6 I I
10.7 My hertly &C. My hertly.&c.
11.4 couer couert.
11.5 com smert comsmert
11.7 my &c. my.&c.
11.8 appert appert.
11.9 dauns dauns.
11.11 shall shalle
11.11 astert astert.
11.12 my &c. my.&c.

§

IV. Manuscript Abbreviation System

I offer an overview of the scribe’s abbreviation system, even though I have expanded abbreviations in the text, because Steele omits such an overview from his edition. Only confirmed habits of the scribe, such as crossed -ll (if indeed it is intended as an abbreviation) and the tittle, are employed with some regularity; all other abbreviations are used only when it is necessary for the scribe to save space.
Raised \( i \) (above \( p \)) signals the omission of \( r \) (58);

although the 2–shaped abbreviation of ModE "your" was expanded by Steele to \( your\), I have expanded as \( youre \) (205), because this is the only spelling the scribe uses;

raised heart, diamond, or dot with a tail curving to the right (Hector's "bold pendant comma"), or occasionally an \( S \) curve through such a dot (198) may stand for \( irlyr \) (147, 180), \( er \) (294), \( re \) (201), as well as for \( uo \) in \( quod \) (2839);

raised \( u \) indicates the omission of \( o \), as in thou (1192);

\( p \) with a crossed descender or with a dot on each side of the descender indicates \( per \) (98, 1234) or \( par \) (1250); with a recurred stroke from the bowl of the letter which crosses the descender from left to right, it indicates \( pro \) (6218);

the superior \( t \) after \( w \) indicates \( with \) (38); after \( j, pat \) (1007);

an \( h \) is crossed on two occasions, one to indicate \( her \) (hertily, 616), the other apparently to indicate \( ch \) or \( che \) (biseche, 4074);

the tittle (abbreviation bar, suspension mark) is used to indicate \( m \) (295), \( n \) (10) (rarely \( en \), as in 786), or \( e \) (geyne, 300); it is also used in \( ihu \) (Jhesu, 84);

in only two instances (5593 and 5600) an abbreviation that resembles a stylized supralinear one-lobed \( a \) stands for \( ur \);

in only one case a different stylized supralinear \( a \) (a serrated line) stands for \( ra \) (grace, 5565)

a long \( s \) with a recurred stroke springing to the right from the height of an \( m \) and crossing below from right to left indicates \( ser \) (5605);

otiose flourishes on final \( s \) (1405) and \( t \) (3041) have been ignored.

§

V. Documents

Versified examples of actual documents were not unusual in fourteenth- and fifteenth-century French poetry, but Charles is remarkable among writers of English poetry for the number and formality of his pseudo-documents. For a
discussion of all the documents in the work, see Camargo, 98–106. Excellent sources for similar documents in English, French, and Latin are available in print: Stevenson, *Letters and Papers*, Champollion-Figeac, Rymer, etc. The following documents and references are provided in order to facilitate comparison of Charles’s fictionalized documents with actual documents of the period.

**Lines**

3–8 Royal letters patent changed very slowly indeed; though late, this patent issued by Henry VIII is entirely typical:

Henricus Octavus, Dei gratia Angliæ, Franciæ et Hiberniæ Rex, Fidei Defensor et in terra Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ et Hibernicæ Supremum Caput, omnibus ad quos presentes Littere pervenerint, Salutem

Sciatis quod nos, de gratia nostra speciali, ac ex certa scientia et mero motu nostris, dedimus et concessimus, ac per presentes damus et concedimus, dilecto et fidei servienti nostro Anthonio Denny militi, uni Generosorum Private Cameræ nostre quandam annuitatem [etc.]


The following (royal) letter, addressed to the bishop of Rochester, gives some taste of the kind of rhetoric Charles is imitating:

Reverend fader in God, right trusty and welbeloved, forasmoche as we, of our special grace, in consideracion of the trew and faithful service whiche our welbeloved servant Robert Barker hath doon unto us, have yeven and graunted unto him the place of a felawe within our College called the Kinges Halle in our university of Cambrige whiche ther shall next happen to be voyd by dethe resignacion, or any other wise; to have and enjoy the same place to the said Robert with all rights and dewtees therto apperteynyng, for terme of his lif.


Champion suggests that Love’s parliament is similar to those Charles’s father Louis once presided over (*Vie*, 256; on Hoccleve’s use of epistolary formulas, see Bentley, and Fenster and Erler, 168).

53 Royal English documents (including letters patent) and even ordinary letters written in Latin often close with such formulas; the Fr equivalent is *Donné*. Cf. the closing of a letter issued by Charles himself in 1413 concerning payment of an apothecary and a physician:

Donné à Blois, le Ve jour d’aoust, l’an de grace mil CCCC et treize, par MS le duc en son conseil, où MS l’archvesque de Sens, le sire de Saint Chartrer et autres estoient. (De Laborde, no. 6227, 261)
See also Hall, pt. 1, nos. 92, 100, 101, and passim.

1548 In another fictionalized letter of challenge, Oton de Grandson’s narrator challenges one of the most valiant fighters in the English host, John of Cornwall, to single combat in order to fulfill his wish for death yet maintain his honor (“Lectres closes,” Piaget, 424–28).

2716–2813 This document differs from the letter patent with which the (extant) work opens, in that the superscription (which identifies the sender) and the address (i.e., salutation, which identifies the recipient) are in the reverse order. In addition, the patent closes with an attestation that the petition lacks; the patent is written in an older, royal form. The petition also differs from the letter that follows (298ff.) in that the subscription (i.e., valediction) is transposed to the beginning of the letter (becoming a superscription). The arrangement of the petition is the more formal of the two (see Hall, 138–39; for petitions, see also Legge Anglo-Norman Letters). By way of contrast, Gower’s “supplicacioun” to the same god is entirely lacking in the proper formulas (CA 8.2210ff.).

2766–72 Hall includes a much less flowery petition in his Formula Book (pt. 1, no. 126 [1462]).

2984 The letter begins in the standard way:
Most excellent Christen Kyng and my moost redoubted soveraine liege lord;
in as humble and obeysaunt maner as eny subject can or may doo to his soveraine, I recommaund me to your moost noble and benyng grace. . . . (Hall, pt. 1, no. 162: Letter to Henry VII, 1489–93; see Camargo, 103–4).

3038 The formula itself is unremarkable:
Mon tressovereign et tresgraciouse seignour, luy Tout-Puissant Dieu vous governe toutdys en vostres tresjoyeuses honours et bone prosperite, longe a durer.
(Hall, pt. 1, no. 160: Letter to the King, 1403)

3042 Cf. the following closing of an actual letter addressed to Richard II:
Escripte a vostre ville de B, le xxj jour d’aprylle, ou nous sumes attendantz graciosous novelles de vostre honurable aryvaille [etc.]
De par P la Vache et R Waldene a Roy Richarde.
(Legge, Letters, 72, 1395).
Works Cited


—. Lyric Forms from France: Their History and Their Use. New York, 1922.


---. *Poets and Princepleasers: Literature and the English Court in the Late Middle Ages.* Toronto, 1980.


Halle, Edward. The Union of the Two Noble and Illustre Famelies of Lancaster & Yorke. . . . London. 1548.


Laidlaw, see Chartier.


Lesueur, Frédéric. *Le Chateau de Blois: Tel qu'il fut, tel qu'il est, tel qu'il aurait pu être*. Paris, 1970.


———. Reson & Sensualyte. Edited by Ernst Sieper. EETS, c.s. 84, 89. 1901, 1903; repr., London, 1965.
Works Cited


———. Recherches sur le commerce, la fabrication et l'usage des étoffes de soie, d'or et d'argent ... en France pendant le moyen age. Vol. 2. Paris, 1854.


Mulder, Etty Martha. “Guillaume de Machaut, een grensbewoner” (G de M


Poirion, Daniel. "Charles d’Orléans et l’Angleterre: Un secret désir." In Mé-
langes de philologie et de littératures romanes offerts a Jeanne Wathelet-Willem. Special issue of Marche Romane (1978): 505–27


References:


———. *One Hundred Ballades, Rondeaux and Virelais from the Late Middle Ages*. Cambridge, 1969.


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B44</td>
<td>A, Daunger, here y cast to thee my gloue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B88</td>
<td>Aftir wyntir, the veer with foylis grene</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R55</td>
<td>A ladies hert forto want pite,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hit is to fowle ageyne nature,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>That in so benygne a figure,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B36</td>
<td>Alak! y kan yow nethir loue nor may</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B55</td>
<td>Allas! allas! how is hit heth gen entresse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B57</td>
<td>Allas, Deth, who made thee so hardy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B91</td>
<td>Allas! how euyr kouthe þe God of Kynde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B115</td>
<td>Allas, Madame, what maner strijf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B76</td>
<td>Allas sir! allas sir! pardoun me,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B13</td>
<td>Alle be hit so y selde haue of yow sight,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B22</td>
<td>Alle be that of my fare or sely case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R64</td>
<td>Alle desolat from ioy or hertis hele,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I yow biseche, or þat y to yow write,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R90</td>
<td>Almes yowre mercy me, my swete,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>And make me yowre bedeman,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R71</td>
<td>A, lo, myn hert, what tolde y the?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>—And thou seide, “Twissh, let me alone!”—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B59</td>
<td>Alone am y and wille to be alone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B45</td>
<td>And, god, before the greef and gret ennoy good</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R29</td>
<td>And so be now that y my purpos lesse,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Certis, y haue desert hit wil wherfore,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R53</td>
<td>A Pak, a pak, madame, my lode alight,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forwhi, allas! y bere to hevy lo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R30</td>
<td>As by the purchas of myn eyen tayne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>In servyng yow, myn hertis fayre mastres,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B121</td>
<td>As for farewell! farewell! farewell! farewell!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R20</td>
<td>As for the gyft ye haue vnsto me geve,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I thanke yow lo in alle that in me is,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R26</td>
<td>As for yowre prayes yn fame þat is vpbose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ay growyng fresshe vnsto yowre gret honour,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R92</td>
<td>As he that no thing may profite,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>What do y now but wayle and crie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B49</td>
<td>As in writyng y putt haue my wisshis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B2</td>
<td>As plesith yowre eyen to pressen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R50</td>
<td>At nede the frendis preven what þei be</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
In eche a werk as stondith matere.

At the short game of tablis forto play

A Wel! myn hert, but wol ye not ben wise?

Bi verry God, y drede ye wille aby

Baladis, songis, and complayntis—

Be nyse, myn hert, as purse is of an ay,

And y shal loke bat no man come þe while.

Beware! y rede yow, loke here not vpon

The goodly fayre that y loue feithfully,

Bi God but oon my verry plesaunt Iay,

Myn hert even fulle is of gladnes

Bi God of Loue comaundid lo am y

Brennyng-Desire-to-see-my-fayre-maystres

But for bi cause that deynte lo is leef

Bvt late agoo went y my hert to se

Comaunde me what ye wille in everi wise

To me that am yowre sely, poore servaunt

Comfort and y thus went in hondis tayne

Constraynt of payne, pou3t, & hevynes

Displesere, Thought, Wrath, Woo, ne Hevynes,

Fare wel, fare wel, my lady and maystres!

Fare wel, þat y most loue and evir shalle!

Fleth the shott of Swete Regard,

Myn hert, without thou willist forto day,

For dedy lijf, my lyvy deth y wite

For loue of god, as kepith Remembraunce

For Ipocras nor yet Galien

Ne may of me the woofulle woundis cure,

Foro biholde the bewte and manere

Of yow, myn hertis lady and maystres,

Forseek in woo and fer from ioyous hele

Wherin alle welt be doth most to me habounde,

For which that Loue anoon fulle ryally

Fresshe Bewte, riche of yowthe & lustynes,

God, of thi grace, the good sowele now pardon

Of hir that was my maystres & norice

Go forth thi way, my faithfulle Deservaunce,

On that thow owist me thyn obeysaunce

Streight vnto the ioyous, fresshe manere

Gret perille is in hasty biholdyng
Had y as moche of worldly goodis
As ther is trouthe of loue in me

Half in dispeyre—not half, but clene dispeyrid

Hit is doon. Ther is no more to say.

Half in dispeyre—not half, but clene dispeyrid

Hit is doon. Ther is no more to say.

B105 I, wrecche, fulfillid of ßou3t and hevynes
B102 I yelde my siff to yowl! Saue me my lijf!

R21 Madame, as longe as hit doth plese yow ay
To doon me lyue in his paynfulle manere

B10 Madame, a trouthe not wot y what to say
Madame, ye ought welle know, to my semyng
Madame, y wold, bi God alone,
How that myn hert were in yowre sleue
My gostly fadir, y me confesse,
First to God and then to yow
My loue and lady whom y most desere,
Mi recomfort, my hertis eleccioun
My loue only, my ioy and my maystres,
Syn y may not ben longe with yow present
Myn hert hath sent abowt, ye, fer and nere
Myn hert, if so that y good tidyng here
Myn hert, thou fondis, bi this light,
To fle from Lovis company.
My paynyd gost enforsith me complayne
My poore hert bicomen is hermyte
Mi verry ioy and most parfit plesere,
Whiche are of me and alle y haue maystres
My wele, my ioy, my loue, and my lady,
Which y most loue and shalle wher þat y go
My wille, my loue, my verry sorse of blis
Mi woful hert þat slepis lo in care
More speche, Madame, is of yowre goodlynes
Then of Aleyne or yet Penolope
More then body, hert, good, and servise
More then the deth nys thynge vnto me leef,
Syn recomfort vnto my karfulle greef
May noon be found to ioy my woofulle hert
Most goodly fayre aboue alle þo lyuyng
Most goodly fayre, as lust hit yow to here
Most goodly fayre, if hit were yowre plesere
So moche forto enriche yowre servaunt here
Of recomfort, of ioy, and of gladnes
Most goodly yong, O plesaunt debonayre
Nar that y drede displesen yow only,
I passyng fayre wold stele here, verily,
A pryvy Cosse of yow, myn hertis swete
Neuyr more to loue, oft haue y thought
Not oft y prayne, but blame, as in substauence,
Alle the welthe of lovis paynful blis
Not long agoo y hyed me apace
Now drede y Daungere nor yet noon of his
Now holde him silf from loue, let se þat may,
For, as for me, y may kepe me no more
Now say me lo myn hert, what is þi reed?
Ne is hit best y to my lady goo
B14  Now what tidyng, my lady & mastres?
B42  Not wot y now what wise to bere my chere

R102  O blesse, o blesse que porrar obler
Alle heuy thought þat bryngith in distres
B31  O Come to me, sum Gladsum Tidyng newe
B30  O fayre, y wot ye haue in remembraunce
R89  O Fayre madame, allebough þat þer be noon
That for him sylf kan speke so yvil as y
R56  O Fayre madame, Crist wold ye knew my payne,
With alle my thought and bisy remembraunce
Which my poore hert hath in governaunce
B101 O fayre madame, if so ye dare not loo
R61  O Fayre madame, no more vnto me write,
For such wrytyng hit causith but dilayes
B5   O fayre Madame, yowre goodli lookis spare
B85  Of fayre most fayre, as verr y sorse & welle
B110 O Fayrist flowre, O flowre of flowris alle
B118 O Fy, Fortune, fy! þi dissayt and skorne
R70  O fy, Loue, fy! amende yowre gouernaunce!
Ye are to townysshe, bi this book.
B40  O Fortune, dost thou my deth conspyre?
B82  Of Passid Tyme the plaster of No Care
B63  Ofte in my thought fulle besily haue y sought
R6   O God, how that she lokith verr y fayre,
The goodly swete, my very herts blis
R59  O God, so as hit enioyeth me
Forto bithynke my ladies goodlihed
B94  O Goodly fayre, sith y haue doon & shalle
R16  O Goodly fayre, which y most loue and drede,
Such is myn happe, such grace is me ordeynyd
 [yn seche hape and grace as have y monydy]
B89  O good swet hert, my joy and sov1 plesaunce
B103 O hert, more hard then roche of any stoon
B112 O lo, myn hert, syn ye wol gone yowre way
B95  Oppressid with thought, langoure, & hevynes
B23  O royalle Hope, to long y se the slepe!
B97  O sely Ankir, that in thi selle
B25  O stedfast Trouthe, displaye thi baner!
B38  O Swete Thought, y neuyr in no wise
B74  O Woofulle hert, forcast with heuynes

B71  Plesaunt Bewte had woundid sore myn hert
B117 Presence of yow hit causith my comfort

R18  Refresshe the castelle of my poore hert
With sum lyvyng of ioy or of plesaunce

B119 Retorne, for shame, retorne, retorne, ageyne!
B56 Right as y herde this othir day tofore
R33 Right ny myn hert with my bosom lo
I haue yputt a cosse of gret plesere
B87 Right yongly fayre, replet with goodlihed

B62 Shulde y me make a lady newe? Fy! Fy!
B68 Syn cursid deth hath taken my maystres
B96 Syn hit is so we nedis must depart
R23 Syn y may not askape me fer nor nere
As from the wrath of Kare and Hevynes
R19 Syn Loue hath cast me banysshe euerydelle
Out of his hous, for now and euymore
B12 Syn that y absent am thus from yow fare
B114 Syn that y am yowre, haue ben, & shalle
R5 Syn that y have a nounparllel maystres
The which hath hool my service & myn hert
B120 So fresshe bewte, so moche goodlynes
R94 Svm tyme y was a poore servitute
In Louys court and had a gouernauence.

R35 Take, take this cosse atonys! atonys! my hert,
That thee presentid is of thi maystres
R40 The gret disese of seekfulle anoyaunce
Which causith oft the penaunt sore to playne
R54 The mede is flowe, the grace is goon,
The hert is chaungid from his place.
B51 The next tyme, my lady and mastres
R69 The smylyng mouth and laughyng eyen gray,
The brestis rounde and long, smal armys twayne
B53 This Dyane day, the first in moneth of May
B11 This fer from yow am y, lady mastres
B17 This ioyous tyme, this fresshe cesoun of May
B65 The ioly tyme, the first, fresshe day of May
B92 The plesaunt lemys of yowre eyen clere
B81 The rewler of this habitacioun
B100 Ther nys in me comfort of gladnes or
B66 The secund day of fayre, fresshe lusty May
B93 This long dilay, this hope without comfort
R1 This May that Loue not lusten forto slepe
But doth his folke in nyse conseitis wake
R11 This monthe of May, withouten pere princesse
The sovl plesere of alle myn hope & thou3t
R62 This tyme when louers albermost defie
Eche heuy thought as ferforth as bei may
Though Daunger haue the speche biraft me here
Of yow, most fayre, withouten any pere,
Thorugh the purchas of cursid false Envy

Thou shalt no more rewle me, my hert.
I wol no more be to thee thral

Toforne Loue haue y playd at the chesse
To longe (for shame!) and alle to longe trewly
To shewe that y haue not forgoten yow
But redy am to serue yow, lady dere

Welcome and yit more welcome, bi þis light
Welcome, my ioy! Welcome, myn hertis ese!
Yowre, wanton ey, but must ye nedis pley?
Yowre lokis nyse, ye let hem renne to wide.
Whan fresshe Phebus, day of Seynt Valentyne
WHat menyst þou, Hope? dost þou me skoffe & skorne?
What so be that y say, parde,
Of Loue or of his gret rigure
When me bithought is of my ladi dere,
The bewte, shappe, and goodli gouernaunce
When y am leyd to slepe as for a stound
When y last partid fro myn hertis swete
WHen y revolue in my remembraunce
When Loue had welle parceyvid myn entent
When that y had myn hert and my quytaunce
WHen that next approchen gan the fest
Wherfore, wherfore make ye preuayes? whi?
Me thynke þei nede not spoken ben so oft
Whi loue y yow so moche (how may þis be?)
And hate so moche myn hert? (þis wold y lere)
Who so biholdith wel as with my eye
Mi verry lady and my sul maystres
With axcesse shake, forsekid, & forfaynt
WIth hert, body, and my hool puysshaunce
Within the tresoure haue y of my thought
With my trewe hert, content of ioy & wele,
Mi fayre maystres, myn hertis sovl desere

Ye are to moche as in my dette, madame,
Ye owe me, swete, to many cossis dere
Yowre goodlihed, myn hertis lady dere
Yowre mouth hit saith me, "Bas me, bas, swet!"
When that y yow bihold, this semeth me.
§

Index of Ballade Refrains

Roundel refrains can be found in the Index of first lines.
For a Table of Refrains of the French ballades,
see Poirion, Le Lexique, 151–53.

Ballades

B40  Alas, alas! and is this not ynough?
B87  Alas! how long wil ye straunge in pis wise?
B9   Alle thewis goode this hath my lady dere.
B59  Alone y lyue, an ofcast creature.
B28  And hool tresoure of my worldly gladnes.
B54  And ye to ben my lady and maystres.
B55  And saith how that his lijf doth him ennoy.
B81  And there to bide vnnto that howre y day.
B43  And yet y say him how it is foly.
B19  As bi the mowth y lever had yow told.
B34  As euyrmore a faithfull kynde maystres.
B86  As for a while it shulde suffisen me.
B39  As for my souereyn lady and maystres.
B32  As in the Cofir of my remembraunce.
B27  As in the Prison of Grevous Displesaunce.
B6   As me reportid hath myn eyen twayne.
B11  As moche of weele as y haue displesaunce.
B96  As take myn hert and lete yowris bide with me.
B65  As that tyme was myn hap and aventure.
B77  As the request thou hast to me bisought.
B3   As well to foolis as vnnto folkis wise.

B92  But causeles to complayne, it am not y.
B93  But for eche weele a thousand woo agayne.
B41  But Ihesu graunt that hit may sone bifalle.
B14  But in liche wise, let se, aquythyow.
B109 But where þat fortune gyde me fer or nere,
     Hit besse, swet hert, to me yowre pouer man.
B100 But wikkid folke therof muste say amys!

B29  For God of Loue woll helpe me in my nede.
B4   For ther nys wight may stond geyne þer pusshaunce.
B12  Forto aslake my gret aduersite.
B76  Forwhi y am fulle ferre from that purpos!
Forwhi y fynde him rol lid in No Care.
For whoo that absent is, is woobigoon.
For without hir of nought now lyue y here.
God haue hir sowle, y kan no bettir say.
Go, dul complaynt, my lady bis report.
God wot in what aforecursid parte.
Hit nys but even of Loue myracle noo
How may it be owt sleynge me in payne?
I biseche God acursid mote they dey
If euyr well ye were on loue bithought.
If so that tyme or nede hit lust requere.
If pat it were as y koude wisshe it were.
In abidynge my gladsom in good hope.
In at the wyndowes of my derkid eyene.
In his avmferse me turnyth in disese.
In payne, sorowe, and woofull aventure.
In spite of Daunger and his affynyte.
In tyme that y, afore this day, haue sayne.
In trust that y shall se yow hastily.
In yow, if so y durst it to yow sayne.
Me forto saue or do me payne or spille.
Me thynke y haue deservid not wherfore."
Me thynkith yowre eyen "mercy" seith.
Myn hert, the whiche that maystir is of me.
Myn only ioye and souereyne hertis blis
Nor yet, y trust, heraftir shalt þou not!
O good swete hert, haue me not in disdayne.
Only for loue and faithfull trewe servyng.
Only to spel me this in heuynes.
O sende me tidyng, good Seynt Gabriel!
O wofull wrecche! O wrecche, lesse onys thi speche!
Owt secund choys or on vnto me levir.
Right as the fenyx lyveth withouten ayre.
Right humbly with all myn hool puysshauence.
Saue only this, the verry deth aloon.
Syn geyne the strok of deth ther is no cure?
Syn hit is so that y am from yow fare
So ben ye sowl my lady and maystres
B84  Take them aworth y pray yow alle among
B47  Teys yow to whom y loue am and no moo.
B69  That all is broke and newe to make ayen.
B108 That euyr y knew Loue or his servise.
B33  That faithfully she doth hir silf acquyte.
B89  That giltles sleth me yowre disdayne.
B90  That in my resoun fynde yow hard as stoon.
B121 That euyr y knew Loue or his servise.
B79  That of wepyng y koude me not restrayne.
B106 Thus pitously my deth ye do me contryve!
B64  That this world nys but even a thyng in vayne.
B103 That trouthe may not rewarde me in my right!
B73  The amverse of his weele, certeyne.
B88  The chaunge of yowre mystrust kan y not se.
B17  The contrary of all my wrecchid wille.
B18  The grettist good that may to me bifalle.
B67  The hool tresoure of all worldly blys.
B37  The hool tresoure of louys gret ricches.
B70  The man forlost that wot not where he goth.
B16  The small plesere that y haue to me kaught.
B82  The which is callid Lovis Malady.
B51  This is a thyng that gretly loo y drede!
B8  This is my slepe yfalle into decay.
B48  This ioly tyme, this fresshe first day of May.
B49  Thorugh false conspire of sum vnhappy wight.
B26  Thus calle y for yowre socoure pitously.
B68  To alle that trewly loue, where so they are.
B78  To doon withall what that y wolde, trewly.
B116 Toforne or ye it ocupie.
B104 To hit like yow enyoy me in sum wise.
B95  To knowe the fyn lo bis is my request.
B38  To that ye lust me newe comfort provide.

B72  Vpon my bed so hard of Newous Thought.

B98  Welcome, my leche, me forto sle or saue!
B110 What may y more? y sory am þerfore.
B113 Whatsoeuyr be seid or thought.
B31  When she me gafe this nàme, as loo, "My loue.
B119 When ye are where? now where as ye shulde be.
B91  Where bi my lijf ye wynne may my servise.
B23  Wherfore—alak!—now faylith him not at nede.
B80  Which calliid is the Castell of No Care.
B50  Which y shall kepe to Deth me hath assaylidy.
B5  Which y haue for yowre plesaunt acqueyntaunce.
B46  Wynne the game withouten more dowtaunce.
B111 With hert, body, my litill good, and all!
B107 Without departying all hir lyvis space!
B44 Without so be thou yelde thee to ben trewe
B61 Without so be y make a lady newe.
B71 Without so be the wounde renewe agayn.
B105 Woo for eche wille and for eche ioy a sorow.

B74 Yet with the deth almes me, pore wreche.
B112 Ye wote my wele. What shulde y wordis more?

§

Index of French Counterparts of English Poems

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ENGLISH</th>
<th>FRENCH</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poem</td>
<td>Poem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patent</td>
<td>Lettre de Retenue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B8</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B11</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B12</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B13</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B14</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B15</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B16</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B17</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B18</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B19</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B20</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B21</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B22</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B23</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B24</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B26</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B27</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B28</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B29</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B30</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B31</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B32</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B33</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B34</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B35</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B36</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B37</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B38</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B39</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B40</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B41</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B42</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B43</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B44</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B45</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B46</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B47</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B48</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B49</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B50</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B51</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B52</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B53</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B54</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B55</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B56</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B57</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B61</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B63</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B64</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B65</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B66</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B67</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B68</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B69</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B70</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B71</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B72</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B73</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vision of Age</td>
<td>Songe en Complainte</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petition</td>
<td>La Requeste</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B75</td>
<td>La Departie I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B76</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B77</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B78</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B79</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B80</td>
<td>VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B81</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epistle</td>
<td>[489–550]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B82</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B83</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**[Roundel:]**

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R8</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R11</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R12</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R13</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R14</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R15</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R16</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R17</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R18</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R19</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R20</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R21</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R22</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R23</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R24</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R26</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R27</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R28</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R29</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R30</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R31</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R32</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R33</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R34</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R35</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R36</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R37</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R38</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R39</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R40</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R41</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R42</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R43</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R44</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R45</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R46</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R47</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R48</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R49</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R50</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R51</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R52</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

[Carol:]
1. I 287
2. II 288
3. III 289

[Epistle:]
688–5783 III 265

[Ballade:]
B101 68 93
B107 67 92
B111 88 140
B113 88a 142
Textual Notes

Readings from Steele’s text are identified by an S. Emendations surrounded by <> change an extant reading; those surrounded by [] supply something missing. Where an entire word has been supplied, the addition is explained in the explanatory notes but not recorded here. Word divisions are noted only when they are uncommon (see S&D and my corrections of their edition for MS word division). Scribal revisions are identified, where possible, as the work of the main scribe, [Revisor] A, or [Revisor] B.

22 to] te
26 Desdayn] daunger crossed out, desdayn in inner margin
47 we] we interlined above caret B
61 hyt ys] interlined above caret B
62 athanke] a interlined above caret B
71 worthy] worth
77 Sterve] Deserue
83 deserue] deseue
82–83 In reverse order, marked for inversion
98 oon] noon
102 gyven] gyve in
106 sche dethe] they do crossed out, sche dethe interlined B
107 so] so interlined above caret B
116 hyt] hyt interlined above caret, followed by he crossed out B
125 ther] written over erasure [thine S]
132 ressayue] ?resfayue
133 kanst] caret followed by cast crossed out, kanst in inner margin followed by caret B
137 scol] sool
139 al] interlined above caret B
152–53 In reverse order, marked for inversion
198 y] he crossed out, followed by y interlined above caret B
243 sheweth] showe
267 straunge] yd written over e, separated from following b by hairstroke
277 straunged] d added above line
287 straunged] d added above line
321 wot] out
404 of] interlined above caret B
410 not] interlined above caret B
417 welle] caret followed by lowe crossed out; welle in inner margin above caret B
424 withouten] without
447–48 In reverse order, marked for inversion
508 hathe] caret followed by lith crossed out; hathe in inner margin B
513 myssyn] tittle over n
585 ay] interlined over caret before lo, crossed out B
593 me] my
598 yt] yt interlined above caret following lo, crossed out B
604 as] interlined above caret B
615 lady mastres] lady & mastres; & unfinished, crossed out
656 yowre] yow
756 benwaylyd] ben followed by caret; wayd crossed out; caret followed by waylyd in outer margin B
756 will they] haue y
780 caret followed by frowarde and contrary in outer margin, erased B
781 For when y payne then she for laughtir grent erased, that he ys
glad to se m[e] thys for schente in outer margin. k crossed out after ys; e of me trimmed off B
782 rehearse] resesse
791 glad] glade, e erased
793 faith[ful] faith
799 loo] noo written over lo(o)
809 ditto
819 ditto
823 ditto
812 y] interlined above caret B
821 soo] written over erasure by same hand that corrected to noo above; original word not visible
875 my] me
876 y trvst] caret after him; caret followed by y trvst in outer margin B
885 Ageyne daunger which hath me in maneuance erased; n with daunger falyn at distance in outer margin; first letters trimmed off B
888 arise] arises; final s added in later hand, also to all the rhymes except those already ending in s, throughout the poem
895 plesere daungere which hath him onycrepe erased [Of remaining]; plesser daunger hath the hym pot to wepe in outer margin; first word may have been trimmed off B
904 krost off peyes] line left incomplete, phrase added by A
905 of] off, second f added in later hand
937 ayde] aye
940 so] interlined over caret before happe B
973 see] interlined over caret before my B
997 evene] hevene
997 al onewhi] alone whi
1016 promysses] sse apparently added in another hand
1037 fta howe, for in he shappe of fresshen glad tidyng erased (HO left to stand), myn hert the schepe off glad freche teydnyng above cross in outer margin; glad crossed out; beginning of marginal line trimmed off B
1052 thee] written over erasure (?)thy
1057 thow written over erasure; original contained y and ended in t [my hert S] A
1057 dost kepe thy] doth kepe his
1060 line written over erasure
1065 oure] yowre
1068 thow] hert
1076 NOt] Now
1093 hard[i]nesse] hardnesse
1097 A] followed by y, erased
1124 this] his
1127 flaterere] flaterere
1158 sche] When followed by caret; sche in outer margin above caret B
1236 out] at
1265 levting] tittle and perhaps more of the word written over erasure
1270 brought] bought, r interlined above caret B
1281 may] my
1297 Als] Also
1343 fo] erased
1354 noon] noo
1356 knowith] know followed by superscript t and hairstroke
1361 me] me sum
1371 them] then altered to them
1402 hir] him
1404 hir] him
1417 leve] caret followed by ben, crossed out; leve in outer margin followed by caret B
1431 on] lon written over (probably 3 letter) erasure
1435 lefft] fff written over erasure A
1469 Fortune] Fortyme
1480 keppe] k and final e apparently altered in black ink
1481 3eys] caret followed by As, A erased, 3eys in inner margin B
1490 Thys] ffer may, ffer crossed out, thys in inner margin B
1503 a reklewse] and rekkeles; nd rekkeles erased; reklewse in top margin; As a reklewse sso leve y in pensir, in outer margin, erased
1519 wode] caret followed by end, crossed out, wode in outer margin above caret B
1524 worthi
1527 al] interlined above caret B
1540 was] as written over longer (?4 letter) erasure
1542 lace] ce written over erasure by main scribe
1553 Onwhy] On whych, ch erased
1580 as] a, s interlined above caret B
1583 oure] yowre
1584 oure] yowre
1597 line unfinished
1604 luste] lust
1626 thay ben] written over erasure A
1634 this] his
1646 wayth] wayfith
1701 the] written over erasure
1739 ioyis] ioy
1771 wache] wache interlined above caret followed by wassayle [left to stand] B
1801 vnaspide] vnspide
1807 out] without, wit crossed out, hout left to stand
1866 he] she
1958 woo] first o altered from h by erasure of ascender and descender
1966 line unfinished
1967 with] caret followed by and underlined; with in margin, followed by caret B
1984 welle] welle and, and erased
1985 tay] tayne, ne erased
1990 Als] s and top of l written over erasure
2007 Had] haddist, dist erased
2007 taken] followed by yet, erased
2009 take] taken, n erased
2010 this] written over erasure [has S]
2012 out] without, wit erased, hout left to stand
2018 Out] without, wit erased, hout left to stand
2018 in] interlined above caret B
2023 offens] offenis, is erased
2039 care] caret followed by care, crossed out; cave (or cane) in margin, followed by caret B
2057 Alone] Aone
2072 and] are, re overwritten with d, tittle added over a, main scribe
2109 Refrain omitted
2141 Fy! Fyl] ffr ffr added [over plummet marking S] A
2145 als] written over erasure [alas S]
2165 wayffyd] wayyd underlined, wayffyd in inner margin B
2195 Yit] Hit
2230 expelle] excelle
2245 that] interlined above caret B
2248 schesse] caret followed by here, crossed out; schesse in outer margin followed by caret B
2250 y onto] vnto, v given a descender to make y, n erased; on followed by caret added above erasure
2302 were] was
2308 hit] hir
2320 the] hir
2347 hit] him
2382 Then] That
2386 As feithfully] As feithfully as feithfully
2400 exylid] ylid written over erasure
2428 hertily] herty
2435 Him axyng where without] written over erasure by main scribe
2463 bottyne] added in a different hand
2465 Me neye] Myn eye, tittle interlined over first e above caret
2492 rath] r smudged, but clear, v written over it and tittle over a, later, in plummet
2508 pechere] left to stand; pevechere in inner margin B
2519 thou] y
2534 at] as
2538 hir] hit
2566 thi] on thi
2593 cloth] th written over erasure [re S]
2594 the] e written over erasure [thi S]; hairstroke added to separate e from following c
2656 left] lost
2704 rekewre] by fayre rekkwere
    rekewre by fayne speche; speche erased; rekewre crossed out; rekkwer in outer margin; signe de renvoi in inner margin
2734 here] h written over erasure in different hand
2741 hym] fortsoe slee and makke a porre] hym and ke a porre written over erasures in a different hand
2747 gladnes] written over erasure by main scribe
2767 wotethe] the written over rkeh in different hand
2780 nor] nor
2887 had] hath
2912 nerpeles hit] nerpeles hit; peles written over erasure, second e written above unique form of h
2938 selvyn] tittle over n
2939 manar] ar written over erasure
2957 Refrain line erased
2992 you] me
3007 my] y
3011 withouten] without
3054 espy] es written over s, erased
3062 thay square] written over erasure A
3078 Or] For
3082 disyonentis] top of (first) s and yuentis written over erasure by A; antys in inner margin B
3084 now detayntis] written over erasure A
3125 forthe] caret followed by for, crossed out lightly, forthe in outer margin B
3146 nor] tittle added before or with caret
3147 sech] written over (3-letter) erasure A
3163 he] written over erasure ending in -s A
3163 hers] here
3190 twothe be] written over erasure A
3210 ye] she
3250 <AS>] Is
3269 wel as] interlined above caret B
3270 my] interlined above caret B
3271 a] interlined above caret B
3271 and hvug] and interlined above caret; hvug written after larges for lack of space B
3272 plesaunce] plesaunt
3277 lokith] lok written over erasure
3285 al] interlined above caret B
3288 wrofft] added by A
3302 sparyng] spayng, payn written over erasure in different hand
3359 Such is myn happe suche grace is me ordeynyd erased; yn seche hope and grace as have y wonyd in outer margin B
3365 MS: Suche is myn
3371 MS: Suche is myn
3427 greve] ve written over erasure
3432 fol. 71r, though ruled, is blank
3471 enduryng] endumg, tittle and g written over erasure [e S]
3499 Line written over erasure by A
3503 prayes ygn] written over erasure A
3512 mor valowre] written over erasure A
3531 hert content] hert con written over erasure by main scribe
3542 If hit myght be as y koude wisse he
hit felle left to stand; signe de renvoi in outer margin; yf hyt wer as y weche hyt sydys felle in lower margin preceded by signe de renvoi B
3545 lesse] ss written over u in different hand
3553 pese] se added by A
3554 steffen thus] written over erasure A
3567 why as] interlined above caret B
3568 wekys] interlined above caret B
3588 to on] interlined above caret
3601 within] with
3625 forbere] followed by y, erased
3652 moche with] written over erasure [final letter c or e] A; you interlined above caret
3699 alls] all is; is erased; s added to all (crossed double l)
3731 weisly] e added above line, with caret B
3732 partage] portage
3738 Dane (Daue) or Cane (Caue)
written in outer margin by B
3745 nare] written over erasure A
3746 what] written over erasure A
3777 therin] in
3784 Deseraunce] Deseraunce
3814 kepe] followed by word erased, probably ye
3826 here] written over erasure A
3859 thy] the
3864 own] written over erasure A
3936 her] hem
4007 on to] written over erasure A
4027 dryffe] written over erasure A
4028 Line written over erasure A
4074 biseche] biseh with line through ascender of h
4199–4200 Refrain cues run together on a single line: Be nyse and y
4201 a nay] an ay
4229 now as] nowis
4263 fondist] fondis
4290 fols. 100r–102r: Roundels 95–99 numbered but never copied; space (blank leaves) left for Roundels 100–101
4305 NOr] FOr
4322 Isend] I send, I written over erasure
4323 but yt ys gon] t yt ys g written over erasure A
4325 the myghtty god I pray] part of e and myghtty god I pray written by A [no erasure visible]
4328 feode] fedde
4340 O name two] O name t written over erasure [of S] A
4344 make a keverkope] e a keverkope written over erasure A
4349 lo] so
4353 but] written over erasure [lo S] A
4354 loue is] lovis
4366 ensewrid] i interlined above caret B
4391 her no] written over erasure by A; partial virgule left after nys and another after first no
4402 noder worth] written over erasure A
4418 hir] hirid
4422 Renomyd] Renomyd
4426 iustys] ys written over erasure
4435 man] followed by y erased
4441 within] with
4477 that] ha written over erasure
4516 Owt] Owt owt
4539 straynyng] strayng
4570 ye] yow
4571 greves haue] haue greves, marked for inversion
4575 nis] is
4588 schore] written over erasure A
4630 servaunts] servaunt
4671 So smothe ygrowe] So moche y
growe left to stand, so smothe y in
outer margin A
4704 oft pen loue] oft pen written
beyond bounding line, loue written
beneath pen for lack of space
4718 noyous lese] noyouslesse
4724 an hire] am hir
4745 prewdent] written over erasure
A
4786 thow] how
4798 sympliesse] sympliese
4851 riches] riche
4854 shift] shith
4906 sche] suche, su erased, s written
over erasure A
4976 sche] what followed by caret;
sche in inner margin after caret B
4988 forgeth] forgoth
5007 some at ful right vary straunge
erased, weche that wrost wer yn a
rang in outer margin; final e
probably trimmed off B
5031 son] ston
5063 ye] she
5077 bill erased, whyll written
after erasure B
5080 seith] seith
5085 abowe] bowt
5088 hide hide] last two words added, probably by main scribe
5089 of] oft, t added in later hand
5096 Owttsepte] corrected from Owll
septe (tops of crossed ll erased)
5108 and] and altered to aynd; long
stroke of y written over second
stroke of n, tittle added, in a
different hand
5124 y] interlined above caret B
5142 not] no
5167 any] yon
5192 bosum] written over erasure by
main scribe
5211 noo] ?added later
5218 I tho be lesse me] I tho be lesse
and the first two strokes of m
written over erasure [e written
above h, lesse squeezed between h
and me] A
5232 yve] yae, t added in later hand
5234 is ther] written over longer era-
sure (which ended perhaps in is
or as) A
5236 Quod y] y written over erasure,
perhaps no, picked up from previ-
ous line [mo S] A
5259 sit] set
5279 ye] ie
5290 so cleyen] c of cleyme written
over o of (a second) so erased;
tittle erased
5293 sawse] sawse
5307 soore] written over erasure
5308 you] caret followed by ye,
crossed out; you below bottom
line
5365 betti] bett
5381 naue] haue
5436–88 Large letters beginning
stanzas on fols. 126v and 127r as
well as 5520, 5528, and perhaps
5488 (where two fs are inserted
over the guide letter) added in
later hand. In 5480 the initial H
is followed by (redundant) o in
the same hand.
5499 stoon] oon written over erasure
[S]
5557 As] Is
5636 saine] ine written over erasure
5661 is] in
5711 so fer] suffir; tofore] toforne
5718 to] followed by a dot at the
height of the o, probably because
the quill touched the parchment
by mistake
5722 vntend, yn] vntendyn
5727 nad] n written over h, erased
5738 diskewre] disseure
5752 nenysther] nenyscher
5766 wante] wante
5825 line omitted; written in outer margin by B, with horizontal line to indicate proper position as well as hand in left margin pointing to appropriate position
5945 disservith] disseyvith
5954 Piti] putt
5965 deserued] deserue
5988 fyre] y written over erasure in different hand, f and r touched up
6027 hem] home
6043 do contrype] do me contrype
6048 see] flee
6065 awake] awake
6080 Out] Without
6085 my] hir altered to my A
6096 thy] written over erasure A
6100 my] hir altered to my A
6167 me] written over erasure
6224 boystous] second o written over two minims
6264 Me] Mi
6293 wot] ye followed by caret; wot
6338 frame] e added above line with caret by A, o altered to a
6348 mercy seith] written over (longer) erasure
6349 them] then
6360 goodlihed] goodlihod
6396 of yow y mysse] written in different ink by main scribe
6423 scoffer] coffer
6451 as] vs
6463 If ye
6475 to] interlined above caret B
6486 Large G (or S) in left margin?
6492 alon] as lo, s erased, n added in darker ink by main scribe
6494 forgon] forgo, with n added in darker ink
6519 [ei] written over erasure by main scribe
6530 Below the last line, a later writer has copied To eft sone that twice
Explanatory Notes

B Ballade
R Roundel
E English
Fr French, etc.
st. stanza
S&D Steele and Day; St = Steele (i.e., vol. 1: text)
OED Oxford English Dictionary
MED Middle English Dictionary

Chaucer:
Anel Anelida and Arcite
BD Book of the Duchess
Bo Boece
CT Canterbury Tales
CYT Canon’s Yeoman’s Tale
FkT Franklin’s Tale
FriT Friar’s Tale
GP General Prologue to CT
HF House of Fame
KnT Knight’s Tale
LGW Legend of Good Women
Mars Complaint of Mars
MchT Merchant’s Tale
MilT Miller’s Tale
NPT Nun’s Priest’s Tale
PardT Pardoner’s Tale
ParsT Parson’s Tale
PF Parliament of Fowls
Pity Complaint unto Pity
Rom Romaunt of the Rose
SqT Squire’s Tale
SumT Summoner’s Tale
T&C Troilus and Criseyde
WBT Wife of Bath’s Tale
Wom Unc Against Women

Unconstant

Gower:
CA Confessio Amantis
CB Cinkante Ballades

Lydgate [Lyd]
TB Troy Book
BlkKn Complaint of the Black Knight
TG Temple of Glas
ST Siege of Thebes
Pilg Pilgrimage of the Life of Man
R&S Reson & Sensualyte
F&L The Floure and the Leafe
AL The Assembly of Ladies
KQ Kingis Quair

Machaut:
FA La Fonteinne Amoureuse
Remede Remede de Fortune
VD Voir-Dit
LBD La Belle Dame Sans Mercy
RR Roman de la rose

References to Steele and Day (S&D) are to their “Notes” (to the lines under discussion) unless otherwise specified.

Citations from the OED and other reference works in the notes direct the reader to supplementary information (likewise, I have included a few references to Alford’s Glossary of Legal Diction to emphasize Charles’s often technical use of words); for definitions, however, see the glossary.

The relevant words or lines in the French counterpart of an English poem (quoted from Champion, Poésies) are usually placed at the end of the note, preceded by Fr. Quotations are limited to words or phrases relevant for comparison; no attempt has been made to quote syntactically complete passages.
1–55 The patent is composed in sections: After the two-line identification of the authors of the document, they greet their followers and notify them of the decision to admit the young duke into their service and provide for him appropriately (3–16). They therefore command their followers to aid and support him in all ways (17–31), since he has vowed to serve Cupid above all and to take whatever pains necessary (32–36) and has left his heart as a pledge of his loyalty (37–39)—for which the god and goddess are beholden to him (40–41)—which will make him a good example to all aspiring lovers (32–46), wherefore he will be rewarded (47–48). The rulers confirm the agreement (49–52), and the document is dated (54–56). See Alford, s.v. lettre, patente.

3–8 Steele and Day quote the opening of an episcopal letter that parallels the Fr version and note the wordiness of the E version. The terminology used both here and during the process of the lover’s withdrawal from Love’s service is generally feudal and secular rather than religious. For parallels to the E, see Appendix V. For a list of the duke’s legal and feudal terms, see Goodrich, Themes, 142 n. 16, and S&D, xxxviii–xxxix.

Fr: Salus de cueur, par nostre grant humblesse,
A tous amans.
Savoir faisons que le duc d’Orlians,
Nommé Charles, a present jeune d’ans,
Nous retenons pour l’un de noz servans
Par ces presentez.

10 pencioun: see Alford, s.v. pensioun.
12 S&D suggest that he is probably a scribal error for we on the basis of the Fr (“tant que vouldrons”), but either reading is possible in the context.
14 dislust: apparently a coinage, it is simply the opposite of lust.
15–16 If S&D’s paraphrase is correct (“we trust thus to your attention” rather than, say, “we trust [that] this [is] as you wish”), both entent and trust are used in senses not found elsewhere in these poems. This passage diverges from the Fr. S&D note the pair devanciers (Fr)/avaunce (E).
18 parlement: see Alford, s.v. parlement.
24 The line has an extra (fifth) syllable. (Fr: “En corps et biens”). The (heterometric) verse form of the letter, with periodic short lines, is not unusual in Fr poetry.
33 Note that Venus seems to be forgotten in 33 (Fr: “De nous servir”).
37–39 refuse: in the sense ne pas consentir or éviter (Greimas, s.v. refuser).
41 On the use of thousand (as well as score, 4571) as an indefinite number, see Mustanoja, 307–8.
42–45 myssold: MED gives “?to sell badly.”
good will: cf. OED, s.v. goodwill 3b quot. Maundev. xxi.96: Fischez þat hase all þe see at will to swymme in schall with þaire awen gude will come þider.
45–48 abone: the word bon seems to have been used primarily in set phrases such as bon hostel (HF 1022).

Even in this presumably early and fairly literal version of a Fr poem,
it is interesting to analyze Charles's alternative strategies in constructing this pseudo-document in E. The short lines in this poem generally conclude the thought of the previous four lines (32, 40, and 48 are the exceptions in both versions). In 44, however, the Fr version begins a new clause:

Mais pour moustrer
A toutes gens bon exemple d'amer,
Nous le voulons richement guerdonner,
Et de noz biens a largesse donner,

whereas in the E version the line rounds out the previous one, even though the poet has not rendered the line which precedes it ("Ne ses travaulx pour neant despendus"). He uses the space thus created simply to introduce strong condemnations of possible infidelity ("Crist forbede that he shuld! Hit were fowl doone!"). This results in less space in which to express the following clause (45–47). As a result, he omits the line beginning "Et de noz biens." Some of this reorganization may well have to do with the exigencies of rhyme.

49 as: see Mustanoja (334) on as in exhortations and asseverations. Chaucer commonly uses as in imperative constructions such as this one (e.g., MilT 3777, T&C 5.145). Charles's usage suggests that he may have sensed that as could be used as an emphatic or pointer in many kinds of constructions.

50 feodaries or counsellor: see Alford, s.v. counsel.
Fr: "Gens de conseil et serviteurs loyaux."

53 An alexandrine to indicate that the body of this letter patent is complete. Gyve: translation of the Latin formula (e.g., Data Londonie, "given at London") followed by place and date (see OED, s.v. date sb2). For a parallel issued by Charles himself, see Appendix V. On this document, see Camargo, 99–100. Christine de Pisan's Dit de la rose is likewise "escript le jour Saint Valentin" (line 639, Fenster and Erler, 122).

54–55 As . . . As: two instances of as used in constructions which have not survived, one a temporal expression and the other in the sense "having regard to the particular . . . circumstance mentioned" (Mustanoja, 332–33). The remaining five lines of this folio are left blank.

The Fr version closes:

Donné le jour saint Valentin martir,
En la cité de Gracieux Desir,
Ou avons fait nostre conseil tenir.
Par Cupido et Venus souverains,
A ce presens plusieurs Plaisirs Mondains. (53–57)

56–111 This first long speech of the narrator is divided into two parts: in the first he thanks (67) the God of Love (56–90); in the second he requests (91) a heart to replace the one he has given to Love (91–111). S&D's statement, at the beginning of their notes, that this section of narrative verse constitutes a "new introduction" to the work that Charles may have written to replace the (now lost) opening allegory has little to recommend it (see Introduction, "Argument of the Poem," and "The Manuscripts").
70 Though S&D print If, the guide letter is clearly an O. If the MS is correct, “of” must mean “because,” and “for which that” (72), “in exchange for [your generosity]” or “for that reason.” If the scribe miscopied “if,” “for which that” means “for that reason.”

71 worthy: the scribe has omitted -y (-i) or -e (it rhymes with trewly/verily; cf. 1524).

77 The new stanza should have echoed the last word of the previous line (“I sterve”), for the poet goes on to explain that, much as he would like to, he cannot die. There is always the possibility that the scribe simply picked up the wrong rhyme word (from 75). It is not unusual for the poet to omit a syllable (usually unstressed) after a question or exclamation (cf. 5876–80), but it is difficult to say what the meter of the intended line would have been.

s quamith: MED, following S&D, glosses “digress” (of speech), but he is not digressing; he is misspeaking.

79 suffisith: cf. KQ, st. 140.

80 The God of Love “revid” the lover of death in the opening allegory of the missing first quire. There the God of Love promised that Espoir, his physician, would keep the lover from dying until he had obtained a heart for himself (Fr 395–400).

90 worldis wide: the more usual expression is worldis longe.

91–94 as this: in this case, as is used with this as a vaguely emphatic or deictic particle (see MED, s.v. also 3b [b]). For other examples, see Glossary, s.v. this adv. This should not be confused with the pronomial construction in, e.g., 47 or 102. The rhetoric of these lines is excessively, but legalistically, humble: “y biseche you licence . . . forto graunt . . . to sewe . . . to purchase . . . ”

On the subject of hearts in this context, see Leyerle.

101 hoker moker: See MED, s.v. mokeren, “to heap up (money), hoard” from moker, “worldly wealth, possessions” (see also mukken v: a. to spread manure; b. to get rich) and T&C 3.1375; Bo 2pr.5.17.

107–9 “Since they has probably been substituted in error for ‘she’ in 106, it is possible that there has been a similar (uncorrected) mistake here, and that the line should run, ‘Hit not preuayleth though y’, my sufferings are of no avail. For the metre, cf. ‘felith,’ 2669” (S&D). The two errors (106 and 109) suggest that the poet was thinking of the lover’s rivals at this point. Cf. LBD 515–16, where Love has “many hertes gotten by conquest.”

113 hyt: the dictionaries do not support S&D’s gloss, “attack.”

120 As forto kepe: Mustanoja (334) comments on the ME use of as before infinitives, perhaps under Fr influence.

126–27 Charles seems here to employ one of his favorite devices: he makes the God of Love revise his rhetoric as he speaks. (S&D translate purchase “contrive,” but the intrusive phrase “now let see” performs no function if the grammar is seamless.) The God of Love’s tone here is one of impatience; he is tired of dealing with this unruly, childish beginner and speaks like an irritated parent.
132 The MS appears to read resfayue, but the bar of the f begins higher than usual and slants downward toward the a (perhaps simply a false start); MED gives ressaife as a possible spelling.

137 In the opening (Fr) allegory Beauté commands the narrator to be a “diligent escolier” and learn the skills appropriate to a lover (see Introduction, “Argument of the Poem”). The “schools of love” were known to many of Charles’s contemporaries; see, e.g., Epistle of Othea: “And pan spak Venus . . . and seide: I am sche pat kepith scolis of loue . . .” (Bühler, 90, glose 73) and Machaut, FA, 1406.

140–53 Cf. MilT 3380–82; for critical commentary, see Ross, Miller’s Tale, 174–75: “The expanded marginal gloss in the Chaucer MS, B.L. Egerton 2864, runs: ‘Vnde Ouidius Ictibus agrestem cuiilem munere Vincent Colloqui nobilem comoditate loci [Whence Ovid: Win the rustic with strokes, the city-dweller with gifts, and the noble of high rank with discourse—Hoffman trans.],’ but this passage is not to be found in Ovid.”

144 payse in balaunce: cf. CA 8.2380–81: “[Venus] leith no peis in the balance, / Bot as hir lyketh forto weie.” The association of the balance with love is traditional in this kind of poetry; for an example from the twelfth-century trouvadour Folquet de Marseille and a thirteenth-century illustration of it, see Huot, “Visualization,” 9. Ultimately, of course, the image derives from the Last Judgment.

145–46 Such curteys speche, or luf-talkyng, is both the evidence of and the prerequisite for the courtly lover (see Benson, “Courtly Love”).

147 The God of Love begins with the term marchaunt to define the middle way (class), but thinks immediately of a more restricted term which will make the point stronger: burgeys. Women of the merchant class would have to be won with gifts; daughters ofburgesses would have to be won with even greater gifts (see Alford, s.v. burgeis).

150–51 On the use of what as an interjection, see Mustanoja, 184. not tippe nor tapp: cited in OED, s.v. tip sb2.

152 loke who that; for this construction, cf. WBT 1113, FktT 771.

153 rewdisshe child: repeats cherlis doughtir, probably because of the intrusive clause of 151–52. On the summary treatment of peasant women in such circumstances, see Andreas Capellanus 1.11 (222–23). The blunt antifeminism of these lines is anomalous in this work.

161–74 These stanzas are reminiscent of Chaucer’s Pity.

164 wer: OED lists no form without -s. According to Daunt, it is a Northern word (ON verri, 151).

170–72 We take for granted that the removal of the heart is a purely metaphorical procedure, but it is clear from late medieval descriptions and depictions that it was seen as a truly anatomical and extremely painful operation. The common depictions of the offer of a heart dripping with blood are one evidence of this; the detail that the heart must “grow” back into the body of the lover is another.

173–74 This repeats the situation sketched in 129–32.

177–78 The introduction of (only) the second of two parallel verbs with to (or
forto) is common in these poems.

182 more ferre: cf. 5308, 5427.

withouten or without a in 183 would improve the meter.

189–90 Cf. LBD: “Out of the prees I me withdrew ...” (183).

191 The narrator is referring at once to the limits of his imagination, his skills as a poet, and his sophistication as a man.

193 Cf. 4641.

196 Perhaps a Lydgate line, or perhaps to should be forto.

197 The narrator presents each of the three lyric sequences as having a real function in his world. The ballade sequences are essentially love-letters, each sequence addressed to a different lady (he writes the double ballade on Fortune for someone else’s use). The roundel series is presented as a banquet for his readers/hearers/guests. This sort of highly self-conscious situating of a lyric or lyrics within a narrative had been common in Fr poetry since the time of Machaut and before. On the subject of intercalated lyrics in relation to pseudo-autobiographies, see Gybson-Monypenny, as well as the work of Calin, Poet at the Fountain, Huot, From Song to Book, and Boulton.

203 Fourteen blank lines at the top of the first leaf of ballades may have been left for decoration.

204 Fr: Je vous suppli, vueilliez me pardonner.

207–8 Fr: Plus longuement je ne le puis celer
Qu’il ne faille que sachiez ma destresse.
Comme celle qui me peut conforter;
Car je vous tiens pour ma seule maistresse.

209 That are it ye: a strange construction. We might say (in a literary mood) — “All my comfort, that is you.” Charles complicates the construction (if I have identified it correctly) by inserting the pronoun to stand for comfort and using the plural verb (?perhaps a Northernism) to agree with the subject, ye.

222–24 Fr: Mais s’il vous plaist que, de cy en avant,
En vous servant, puisse ma vie user,
Je vous supply que, sans me refuser,
Vueillez souffrir qu’y mette ma jeunesse....

227 The awakening of the lady’s pity is the first order of business (cf. 174).


In the MS, the scribe has not left room for an initial two-line capital (and therefore the second letter is not capitalized) either here or in B 7 (381). As the first seven stanzas are also run together without spaces, this is perhaps a symptom of the scribe’s not yet having hit his stride. He also seems to experiment in this ballade with a caesural virgule, e.g., in lines 240–45, which he then abandons.

234–35 vpright: sle vpright is apparently an unusual collocation (usu. lie vpright, i.e., at full length, supine). “Which” refers to the lady’s glance.

249 fawkoun: the scribe was apparently confused by the text he received, perhaps because of an unusual spelling. It is probable that the poet
intended *body and facioun, “figure and face.”*

255 wierieth: some of the entries under *war* in the glossary may be reflexes of “weary” rather than “war” *v.* in a number of these contexts “to harrass” and “to exhaust” make equally good sense, and in fact Charles may at times be playing on the two meanings.

259–93 Rhymes in -*yng*, of which the poet is fond, generally cause him to alter his usual syntax; note the number of gerunds in rhyme position in this lyric. The practice of stressing this ending is common in ME.

261–62 Cf. *PF* 140.

262 *wrong or right* would make a decasyllabic line and a parallel phrase to the one following, but the scribe inserts a virgule here, indicating that he recognized that the poet had omitted of (or perhaps Charles provided the virgule, though this is unlikely in view of his practice in his autograph manuscript).

263 Plesaunce: Poirion says of Charles’s use of the word in his Fr poetry, “Charles d’Orléans, par l’emploi allégorique, semble avoir fait un sort privilégié à ce nom parfois synonyme de ‘volupté’” (Le Lexique, s.v. plaisance).

267 Another hand has added a *d* to *straunge* in the penultimate line of each of the first three stanzas of this poem. In addition, in this line *y* is written over the final *e* and a hairstroke is inserted between the *d* and the following word.

269–86 Which eyen: he implies that the eyes have already been introduced in the first stanza, whereas he has only referred to “sight” and “biholdyng” (but in the Fr version “yeulx”), unless, perhaps, we are to understand something like “from which sight.”

This stanza provides a good example of the poet’s linear syntactic structures, especially evident in the earlier poems: “... which gyvith ... which doth [causes] ... which byndith ... which causith ... which slepith ... which greef is ...” —a string of effects, from the initial glance of the lady to his lifetime bondage. Lines 273–74 are not close to the Fr. He here introduces the return look (sending them to spy) which completes the enslavement begun by the lady’s glances.

The eyes and the heart play an important role in the work; see, e.g., Ballades 4, 6, 71, 82, 106, 115, and Roundels 22, 68, 91.

281 Cf. 5940. Both may recall the opening lines of *PF*.

281 as: this use of *as* preceding a prepositional phrase is common in Charles’s E poems (see Mustanoja, 332–33). (His frequent use of *as* is nicely demonstrated in this envoy, where he employs it four times in three different constructions.) In many cases it is not necessary to translate it. Iuyse: see Alford, s.v. jewise.

311 pight: MED cites this line, giving: 4a “to throw, hurl, cast” (with *upon*). This cannot be correct; it must be *pight unto, “thrust” (with in or into*).

315–18 The envoy does not follow the usual rule of repeating the rhyme scheme of the concluding lines of the previous stanza; another exception is B 11.
321 out: MED cites this line, giving “allas! woe is me!” It is probably a scribal error for wot (Fr “Dieu scet”). Cf. 5067.

322 but what: Charles uses this phrase frequently. MED does not record it under but. Charles’s uses of the phrase do not fit well into the OED’s definition (“what A.I.5b [a Gallicism = mais quoi?] but, after all”) [first instance 1586]. The two-word phrase is most often used as an exclamation, just as he uses What! alone (see 150). It is sometimes difficult (as in line 571) to distinguish between the one- and two-word exclamations. See Hammond, English Verse, 402, line 38; cf. CA Prol. 487; 2.2216.

327 “Which” refers back rather loosely to the temptation of the lady’s glances and words.

333 S&D note the characteristic quality of this line in Charles’s verse and cite T&C 3.131, 133, and 923.

339 square: MED glosses “deviate” (from normal behavior).

340-43 Line 342 seems to shift the syntax from the accusation of 340–41 to that of a request. This either/or proposition echoes the first stanza and is repeated again in the envoy. The construction is more complex (to fill out the decasyllabic lines) than the Fr, which simply says “Plaise vous en paix le laisser, / Ou lui accordez son désir.”

344 It is striking that the thought of the corresponding line in the Fr version (“D’un loyal cuer ainsi meurdir”) finds no place in the E version. Charles saves such a charge (morderesse) for the second lady, who is much less kind (B 91).

353 thought: on the variety of uses of pensée in the Fr poems, see Poirion, Le Lexique, s.v. pensee, pensement, penser.

354 sett there a nayle: Whiting & Whiting cite this exclamation uniquely. Tilley quotes a related phrase (s.v. straw) from Heywood: “here will I stoppe, and laie a strawe (Prov ii, ch. 4 s G4)” ; cf. Cotgrave: “mettre la paille au devant de. To interrupt; to hinder, stop, or stay the speech of” (s.v. Paille).

371 cast me lo a kayle: S&D’s gloss (“throw me down a skittle”) is not helpful. Burrow suggests “knock down one of my skittles,” which he interprets as “that’s right, abuse me!” (English Verse, 291), probably based on the MED suggestion “hurl abuse at, reprove.” It is difficult to see what “abuse” the lover is referring to, however. The only other instance of the expression cited by MED (Utley, “Lament,” cited as Vncomly in) is not altogether clear and should not, I should think, be used as a gloss without careful attention to tone and context (cf. “Lament,” l. 35).

The lover may rather be inviting a turn in the argument (see Halliwell-Phillipps, Joseph Wright, s.v. cale, and Brockett, s.v. kail). Purcell suggests “go on then, just try; have a go and see how close you get to the mark” (26–27). A related possibility is that kayle may come from Fr caille; cailles are “round beads, wherewith Frenchmen play at Trou-madame; and whereof the Trou-madame is teared Passe-caille” (Cotgrave, s.v. Trou Madame; English “Trunks,” for which see OED, s.v. trunk 16). In this case, the meaning would again be “take a turn” or “see how well you do!”
Whatever the precise meaning of the phrase (whether the reference is to a “bowling pin,” a playing piece, or simply a turn), the lover is provoked by the heart’s obstinacy and attempts to provoke the heart in turn. MED takes “O pese!” and the following line as part of this same speech, as does Burrow, but it belongs rather to the heart, who attempts to cool the rising heat of the argument with, “O pese! [Fr: “Taisiez vous”] … y lust not rayle!” (a word which S&D mistakenly take as “jest”) and “leve this aray!” (these expressions do not appear in the Fr). The colloquial quality of this exchange has been prepared for by 354.

379 such a way, i.e., ?graciously.
381 See 231n.
393 S&D print of for or, and MED cites the line, s.v. of, in error, but see 2661, 4360, 5868.
396 quantite: the MED gloss (“if there is sufficient time”) cannot be correct. The lover is talking about the desirability of instantaneous restraint.
404 plesaunce: see 4764n.
412 The first seven ballades are run together without spacing; at this point the scribe begins to leave two blank lines between ballades and one between stanzas.
415 the Romaunce of Plesaunt Pancer: presumably an imaginary romance (misread by some early commentators as the Romance of Plesaunt Chaucer).
420 bound: a line filler. We might translate “written and fixed [i.e., set down permanently],” but it is perhaps just as likely that the poet’s attention shifted from the deeds of the lady to the mechanics of book production.
428–31 Here the conflict of the lover with both eyes and heart is introduced for the first time. The (unusual) use of “my” gives away the game that the desire is not only that of the eyes, in spite of the lover’s protestations to the contrary.
confounde: the reflexive pronoun is omitted.
440–90 This is one of the few saluts d’amour in the work; the narrator more often complains than celebrates his lady. The poet’s use of the chant royal form here may serve to sum up the first section of ballades, which has been devoted to the effects of the lady’s eyes and the narrator’s problems with his heart. Perhaps these first nine lyrics were originally intended as an ensemble that was only later incorporated into a longer work. In the following five ballades, the lady and lover are separated.
442 wittynes: earliest OED citation is Heywood (1533).
458 Bounte, Honour, Astat, and Gentiles: this is one of the very few poems in which the narrator seems to praise the lady for inner graces, but even in this poem he dwells at length on her outward beauty and bearing.
471 Although phoenix references are not uncommon, Charles does not use one in his Fr poems. S&D cite BD 980–82, comparing 460 with BD 998–1006 and 461–64 with BD 907–12.
474 suffisyngly: Charles attaches an adverbial ending to the adjective to create a rhyme. Fr: “souffisant.”
476-79 Fr: S’il est aucun qui soit prins de tristesse
   Voise veoir son doux maintenement,
   Je me fais fort que le mal qui le blesse
   Le laissera pour lors soudainnement....

482 anoy: pronounced [-wi] here and elsewhere.

491 In Ballades 10 to 15 the lady is apparently absent. S&D provide a note at this point outlining the ‘plot’ of the early stages of the first ballade sequence, including the separation of the lovers and their need for secrecy, which according to their interpretation “negatives any possibility of these poems being addressed to [Charles’s] wife.” Though it is entirely possible that some of the ballades of the first sequence do concern Isabelle or Bonne, some may have been written on various occasions for different purposes and only later assembled into this work.

494 MED lists a number of proverbs using “shirt,” but none which emphasize the closeness of the shirt to the body (cf. KnT 1566, LGW 2629). OED records a proverb similar to Charles’s (s.v. shirt, 2e): “near is my shirt but nearer is my skin” (see 1596 Lodge, 1625 Godwin). Whiting & Whiting cite Charles alone; Tilley records the same proverbs as does the OED (S356). Bohn records the Fr proverb: “la peau est plus proche que la chemise” (30), and S&D record a similar proverb from Godefroy. None of the various shirt images in this work exist in the Fr.

Fr: Qu’Amour me fait chascun jour endurer.

500 forpayne: the scribe has perhaps taken this as “torture,” but the following line (and the rhyme) suggests that the word is forpyne (from pynden with intensive for-, OED, s.v. pin vI.11). The basic meaning is to impound, but here it is “restrain, confine,” i.e., force (myself) (cf. the sense of 4333-35 and Daunt, 142, where she cites a parallel from Lydgate). Charles may, of course, have had the reflex of “(for)pain” in mind (cf. 402).

508 harte the pesid: MED, following S&D, glosses lith pesid, “is alleviated” (the reading I have adopted), citing this line as the only witness. It records no use of harte with pesid.


Fr: Vous suppliant que ne vueilliez changier
   Car en vous sont tous mes plaisirs mondains,
   Desquels me fault a present deporter
   Puis qu’aainsi est que de vous sus loingtains.

516 In this and the following ballade it is difficult to decide when nouns (comfort, absence, etc.) constitute personifications. They operate as metaphors so fleetingly that the reader should feel free to read them as common nouns.

519 “fer” echoes “fare” in the last line of the previous ballade and anticipates the same word in the opening of the following poem (558).

528 displasaunce: MED gives meanings such as “displeasure, dissatisfaction, discontent, cause for resentment, annoyance.” Charles seems to use the word (as well as the related displiesere) with a much stronger denotation—
something like “misery, unhappiness, grief.” Cf. Poirion, Le Lexique, s.v. desplaisance, desplaisir.

537–38 S&D say that the refrain is “left unconnected with the stanza,” because it can “hardly be the object of *atayne*.” Perhaps “As moche” refers back to “an vnhappy day”; then “may they attain as unhappy a day—so much of weal—as I have grief?” (or, in other words, may they be as unhappy as I am).

543 The lover delays his return for some pressing reason known to the lady but not to the reader (540).

545–46 Charles uses *fayne* three times in this stanza and once in the envoy (the Fr differs significantly); its use in 551 suggests that it must here mean “refrain” rather than “feign.” His use of the finite “[I] shall” with the infinitive “to serve” may be related to his construction, e.g., in 2708 (see note).

546 in substaunce: Charles uses this phrase repeatedly, but it is difficult to assign precise meanings to its various occurrences. It may be translated many ways: in reality, in general, in essentials, etc. S&D suggest that it is used as an expletive, and gloss “substantially.”

551 A lack, i.e., of tears.

558 mollyng: “tender”; Poirion glosses *amolir*, which Charles uses in B LXXX, “rendre plus tendre (en parlant d’un fruit)” (Le Lexique, s.v. amolir).

561–65 For the symptoms of lovesickness and its relation to melancholy, see Wack, 56, 62–70, 100–101.


569 manar: the spelling is made to match the rhymes. Charles’s usual spelling is *manere*.

574 daungerous Crewelte: Fr: “Dangier, le crueux.”

594 The poet’s use of *with* for *by* is not so rare as S&D imply (see OED, s.v. with, 37b and 40a).

plegge: cf. Alford, s.v. plegge.

606 longe agoon: the MED does not give the definition “for a long time.” Cf. Chaucer *Pity 1*: “Pite, that I have sought so yore agoo [for so long],” which MED glosses “long ago.”

615 The scribe started to write *lady* &; probably because collocations such as *lady and mastres* are so common, and crossed out the half-finished &. *Lady mastres* is uncommon; the line must be headless.

627 turnys: Poirion glosses the Fr word *manoeuvres*, *ruses* and quotes Chartier, Ballade IV: “esbahy de ses estranges tours” (Le Lexique, s.v. tour).

629 but Pite slepith fast: this phrase is not found in the Fr version, additional reason to think it was borrowed from Chaucer’s poem.

638–39 The E version contains an element of time (“yet ... now”) that is lacking in the Fr version, an addition which seems only to obscure the sense. The E version seems to state rather elliptically that in the past the lover could trust only in Hope, but now he also has the lady, whom in fact he trusts most of all. The Fr version contains no parallel to the image in 640, either; the two envoyos differ entirely.
Fr: car mon recours
J'ay en Espoir, en qui me fie,
Et en vous, Belle, seulement.


642 The Fr and E run parallel, but the envoys differ radically. The line may be
corrupt and the paraphrase is therefore tentative.

644 lord: unlikely to be direct address, since the narrator never refers to the
lady as his lord. I have taken “That” as referring to the speaker and
“knowist” as “acknowledge” or “recognize.”

654–56 The syntax is unclear (the Fr version is much simpler).

663–6 In yow: the phrase has no real function in this instance.

683 content: OED lists no usage that is intransitive but not reflexive.

699 aturbaunce: OED gives only turbation “perturbation, agitation of mind.”
In line 1903 it translates Fr doulour. The parentheses around 701 allow the
previous line to link up with the refrain; otherwise it is difficult to see how
that refrain functions grammatically.

706 Fr: Et que l’en doit laisser Ennuy,
Pour prandre joyeuse Plaisance.

708 Fr: Loingtain de Joye conquerester.

715 caytijf: Fr: dolent.

725 hir: probably an error for his, if we expect consistency in these poems (cf.
780), though Disdayne is apparently female (728). Both abstractions, of
course, are aspects of the lady.

727 stille: the scribe has matched the spelling with 731 (note the two mean-
ings), but see 5059.

734 displesere: Like the word displesaunce, Charles seems to use displesere to
mean something like “misery,” i.e., as a much stronger negative than do
other writers of the period (but see OED, s.v. displeasure 2).
737-39 Fr: Ja ne sera en tout vostre povoir
    De me changier le tresloyal vouloir
    Qu'ay eu tousjours de la belle servir. . . .

743 This is the proper response of a lover to discouragement. This attitude contrasts starkly with the petulance of the second ballade sequence.

747 Fr: J'ay tout les maux que nul pourroit souffrir.

756-57 The line has been revised, but in the E the referent is still unclear and the verb forms seem incorrect; in the Fr the speaker addresses the personifications, who will be vexed: "Bien auzent ducil, se me voyez avoir / Le plus grant bien qui me puiest avien." I have therefore emended haue y to will they.


769 As: ?For

The debate between the virtues of speaking and writing was commonplace. He alludes to this struggle in 3740-42 and again in 5343-48.

770 goodlyhed: Charles nearly always uses this word to refer to external beauty rather than to any inner beauty or virtue (see 5270-71).

779 Daunger is substituted for the lady in this stanza, but in (the original) line 781 ("For when ye pynne then she for laughtir grent") either the poet had not noticed the inconsistencies or he was creating a very weak personification (a technique more common in the second ballade sequence). It is difficult to see why Daunger is introduced in this ballade (in both versions), since the lady has graciously requested of the lover that he send her a ballade and absence seems to be the primary cause of his grief. For a variety of definitions of Daunger in various contexts, see Poirion, Le Lexique, s.v. dangier.

780 Apparently the poet decided to change the line to: "In euery deed so frowarde and contrayre" (cf. Lyd ST 3178 and Rom 5411: "frowarde Fortune et contraire" ["perverse et contraire," Poirion, Rose, line 4845]; Reviser B apparently copied contrary in error for contrayre). At any rate, someone (perhaps Charles) decided to cancel the correction.

    Fr: En tous mes fai je le treue contraire.

788 Likewise in 5346 the lover is afraid that the (new) lady might forget him.

789 The remaining fifteen lines on 15v are left blank, for which the text provides no clear reason.

792 Daunt suggests that wete reflects a Northern pronunciation (149). See also 3699, 3839, 6370.

793 faithfulle: the extra syllable improves both meter and sense.

795 blynke: literally, a flash, an extremely brief gleam of light.

799 A later hand has erased lo or loo and replaced it with noo in each of the refrain lines. As the alteration does not improve the sense, I have not recorded it in the text. It is an odd position for lo, and this is perhaps what bothered the reader who altered it.

810 Daunt glosses bandoun, "despair" (141); S&D make it into a passive. In fact it parallels the Fr:

    Quant Pitié vit que franchement
    Voulu mon cueur abandonner
Envers ma dame....

Mercy does not appear in the Fr; it is Pity who negotiates with the lady (traïtte).

814 chargyng: see Alford, s.v. chargen II.

815 where y wake or wynke: cf. HF 482. He expands the expression in 5678 and 5762.

816-17 though tornys sesse or synke: it is at least clear that Dauenger does the lover bad turns whenever he can, but I can make no real sense of the last three words in the line. The poet was apparently reaching for rhymes in this stanza.

Fr: Maugré Dangier, qui recevoir
M’a fait chacun jour de telz tours.

821 assayde: perhaps with overtones of tasting, echoing line 808.

824 as is frequently used with the imperative to express a wish in ME (Ham mond, English Verse, 470 n. 1).

826 The writing of love poems as a way of soothing the pain love inflicts is an old idea. The narrator of La Vraie Medecine d’amours calls the ink with which he writes his love poems “ointment” because it relieves love’s pains (Huot, From Song to Book, 149–50).

852 It is possible that forget is is an error for forgets and that what he forgets (his pain) has been omitted.

Fr: II oublie l’ennuy qu’il sent.

868 The poem contains allusions to a game, probably of chess, such as find fuller expression in B 61.

875 my: MS me is perhaps a reflexive dative (Mustanoja, 100), but as rekeuyr has no recorded reflexive form with object, it is more likely an error for my.

882 ordenaunce: the word may in fact have three meanings: (1) make preparations (for war or anything), (2) put troops in battle order, (3) chess term used with previous meaning. Charles may have had all three in mind, though of course the third carries out his chess imagery.

883 fyaunce: see 1122n. It might most smoothly be translated “hope.”

885 manaunce [erased]: “a Northern and Scottish form... Charles may have picked it up and later found that it was not ‘polite’ Southern” (Daunt, 151) and so revised the line. S&D suggest that the word that was trimmed off might have been Agyne. Which han might make better sense of the revised line. Elsewhere the scribe erases only as much as needs to be replaced (e.g., 1503, 5007).

Fr: De ce faulx Dangier qui m’avance.

888 The addition of final s to the rhyme words (see textual note) may have been merely a very successful attempt to imitate the letter, or possibly they were added by a putative French reader who did not see an s at the ends of these words.

891 as loos now gevith prise: a version of the phrase los and pris: “fame and renoun” (cf. Ballade IX, 8: pris et los “renoun and praise”): As Fame now announces (sends abroad) your reputation.
895 This line illustrates the authority of Revisor B. The original line is apparently fairly close to the Fr: "Car Dangier l'a desrobé de Plaisir." Perhaps the poet was dissatisfied with the difficult word ?onycrepe, which "ought" to mean "deprived [him] of." (MED, following S&D's reading ouycrepe, derives cepe from ?chepe, and glosses "at too small a price, too cheaply?" citing this line uniquely.) In any case, Charles replaced the line with a completely different one, written in the MS by Revisor B. That the new line presents its own difficulties is another matter.

904 Or: "but what for? krost off peyes!" Daunt suggests Revisor A may have thought the word peyes [peis] capable of the same sound alternation as dy/deg (143).

907 S&D gloss, "let not our simplicity be counted against us."

911 Though the poem is addressed to Hope at the outset, the envoy is addressed to the lady.

912 entryse: S&D suggest this word may be an error for encryse, "increase" (glossary) or interesse, "share, part" (notes). It is probably a form of entresse (see 1928), "entry, entrance" n, or "entering" ger, i.e., residence, presence. paradise: echoes the word from 914, as does Daungere in 923 (cf. 895).

916 The scribe may have read "grevous sorrow" rather than "great griefs." The latter is preferable because of the plural pronoun in the following line.

Fr: Car il a de maux doloreux.

920 bras: the poet's way of intensifying his large, abstract number by doubling it.

937 sufferant: the context and the corresponding word in Ballade XXIV ("soufretieux") indicate that the word means "(one) who suffers" rather than "(one) who is patient," i.e., who is willing to suffer.

944 displaye thi baner: that is, announce the onset of battle (for more information, see Keen, 101-18). The opening parallels that of B 23 (887).

946 C.F. LBD 175-76: "A garnison she was of al goodnesse / To make a fronter for a lovers hert."

947 on why: S&D are right in their guess that on why means something like "unjustly, wrongfully," on the basis of the fact that it is used to translate Fr a tort in three instances (947, 1051, 1553; though not in two others: 997 and 1705). The scribe apparently did not recognize the word as on wry "awry" (see 997). The OED first records the figurative sense in 1494, but MED gives "not straightforward" (of speech), citing Gower's CA 2.442.

Fr: Et assailliez la frontiere
Ou Deuil et Merencolcie,
A tort et par felonnie.

954 seith: this spelling could be a form of either "say" or "seek" (see 5080). Opting for the former, I would suggest that "who seith a manere" might loosely be translated "what they call a 'manner' (or false show)" of happiness.

955 outshewe: it is possible that Charles meant to write out shoue (cf. 1156). Laughtir dry is laughter without feeling.

973 This fine ballade contains an interesting pairing of military and religious
imagery. Cf. the fire imagery of Chartier’s Rondeau 14: “Au feu! Au feu! Au feu, qui mon coeur art / Par un brandon tiré d’un doux regart” (Fire! Fire! Fire!—which burns my heart with a torch lighted by a soft glance), which in turn echoes Machaut’s “Hareu! hareu! le feu, le feu, le feu!” (Johnson, 107 and 294–95).

978 queynt: rhyme sent. The word is sometimes spelled quent.

979 Charles’s conversion of “si vous pry, Dieu d’Amours, / Sauvez mon cueur” to “‘O God of Loue,’ y cry, ‘Helpe now myn hert’” contains, in pry/cry, a kind of bilingual word play typical of this work (see Introduction, “Authorship”).

987 It is difficult to imagine how one might “rend” a fire from someone, but cf. 2449.

997 hevène: a scribal error for evene, probably caused by the reference to “Paradice,” “seynt,” etc. in the previous lines (S&D), or perhaps simply by dittography, as the previous two words begin with h.

1007 lyes: S&D point out that “the Northern plural is required by the rhyme.”

1014 patise: Fr: “En desert ont mis son plaisir, / Et joye tenue en pastis” (Champion glosses: “pâturage de qualité inférieure”). S&D find patise (“tribute, treaty” OED, c. 1500) unsatisfactory because “joy is not [the lover’s] on terms, it is a stranger to him altogether, see 1019,” preferring Champion’s image to the E one. MED perhaps bases their definition on that of Poirion’s gloss on the corresponding Fr word (Le Lexique, s.v. pastis, where he uses S&D’s discarded E gloss to sort out the Fr!); they gloss in patise, “according to the terms of a bargain or covenant” and cite this unique occurrence of the word (related to ModE “pact”). We are not told what the terms of the bargain are.

1016–17 The repetition of maner implies that, though it raises hopes in him, the promise of Comfort is worthless.

1031 tiise: “ties”; a clever inversion of the usual meaning of the verb (“to join”) which nevertheless retains the sense of constraint or fixedness that the word connotes.

1034 A number of ballades contain the unmistakable rhetoric of epistolary prose in their closing lines, even when the poems are not structured formally as letters. Of the Fr “Poème de la prison” that corresponds to this part of the E work, Charles Kany says that it “is the first long poem made up of a large number of missives written by one person (not including the epistles in the framework)” (35).

1037-75 This ballade has clearly been revised (not entirely consistently) by both revisors. A fine, dark cross in the outer margin seems to mark the place for a correction. The first line has been replaced by another in the hand of Revisor B that fits the grammar of the first stanza better. The retention of Hoffa howe is the result of an editorial decision based on the loss of part of the revised line.

Revisor A has corrected the third person references of the second
stanza to second person, to accord with the opening lines (though he missed one his in 1057). He has also replaced line 1060; though we cannot read the original, the revised version is close to the version Charles wrote in the Fr counterpart of this poem: "J'ay mis; mon cuer en est d'accort." It is possible to surmise from this that Revisor A is making authorized corrections. *Glad* may have been picked up from the original line (which is too long) and is probably crossed out of the marginal version of the line to correct the meter.

S&D find the Fr version superior to the E because it is the lady's place (not the lover's) to send comfort to the heart. If recomfort is taken as "encouragement," however, the problem largely disappears.

1038 *hath* is the (only) main verb in the stanza. Lines 1041–47 constitute a long sub-clause.

1044 There has been some critical ink spilled over the question of the wind direction here (in the Fr counterpart, the wind blows from France to England, "Un plaisant vent venant de France"). S&D discuss various differences between the two ballades (1037n). Douglas Kelly sees the E as a correction of the Fr (207).

1051 discomfort: often confused with discomfit, it is here used, along with other battle imagery, to indicate defeat rather than simply discouragement.

on why: see 947n.

1052 S&D note that the revisor here and in 1057 and 1060 alters the third person (found in the Fr version) to direct address. Line 1057 is only partially revised, however.

1057 See 1036n.

affyaunce: though the meaning "trusted [one]," i.e., "friend," "reliable companion" (referring to the lover's heart), is unattested, it seems from the context to be what Charles thought it meant—or could mean (he uses fyaunce in the same way in line 883). The Fr parallels for all three passages use the more usual, abstract sense of the word (see 1122, 4591).

1065 The scribe has mistakenly written youre for oure (the only MS spelling).

1068–69 *Hert* escaped correction to *thow*. "Bothe" governs "me," "thow" [hert], and "tresoure."

1076 The scribe has written Now for *Not* (or possibly *Nor*). Of his (company).

1081 place: cf. Alford, s.v. place.

full severely out of drede: a piling up of emphatics, common in Charles's E verse.

1085 as for: more commonly for *as*.

1093 hardinesse: the scribe has omitted the second syllable, the addition of which would improve the meter and accord with the Fr hardiesse.

1095 Apparently Charles was thinking of the component parts of the word "nevertheless."

Fr.: sans craindre riens.

1106 allyaunce: the word has possible connotations of sex and marriage or may simply refer to a bond of friendship. Poirion glosses the word in the Fr counterpart as mariage (*Le Lexique*, s.v. aliance).
EXPLANATORY NOTES

1108 See 2778n.
1109 letter of trete: Poirion glosses the Fr equivalent ("lectre du traictié") as "'contrat' (de mariage)," citing "le traictié du mariage" between the duke and Bonne d'Armagnac (Le Lexique, s.v. traictié), but the idea of marriage is not necessarily implied (cf. 1873n).
1111 accord: in the Fr version Loyauté "witnesses" the letter ("tesmoignera").
1115 ordenaunce: the word can connote preparations for marriage.
1116 I mene: it is also possible to read this as one word, as S&D do (i.e., Gladsum Desire and Plesaunce "together").
1118 in more surete: given the legalistic language in this ballade, the reader may be justified in seeing in the word surete the common meaning of a bond or pledge, even though the intrusion of more would seem to reduce its force to simply "in more certainty, more surely." A careful study of these poems (especially those with legalistic or feudal imagery) often reveals a more or less systematic use of the formal connotations of many common words.
1122 affyaunce: see 1057n.
1123 to kepe bis dede [i.e., document] from rayne: not mentioned in Fr (see Alford, s.v. dede).
1127 flaterere: S&D suggest dittography; perhaps the scribe misunderstood the rhyme scheme (which would usually alternate rhymes in the final four lines of the stanza) and so "corrected" flaterere to flaterere.
1128 S&D suggest, "who that frawde-is, [be] it he or she." The verb may be plural, however, and is the copulative.
1132 If "more sewrete" should be glossed the same as it is in 1118 ("more surete"), this is the only instance I have found in the work of repetition of a rhyme identical in both sound and meaning.
1150 I have punctuated the refrain lines differently in some cases, not always to indicate that the meaning changes, but to illustrate different ways in which they might be read.
1153 Blue as the color of constancy (e.g., in T&C 3.885 and Wom Unc) was a commonplace in Charles’s time.
1156 out . . . shoue: cf. MED, s.v. outshouven (also used of words). The lover does not really explain "whi y so rudely out my wordis shoue" or "what Loue vs causid swere."
1165 This is the only instance in which the narrator says that he actually has the lady’s heart. B 30 through B 38 are all very positive about the lover’s relationship with the lady (they differ in this from any in the second ballade sequence except B 107 and perhaps B 98).
1166 kercher of plesaunce: (Fr: "cueuvrechief de Plaisance") this is Charles’s first use of an image he makes much better use of in the second dream vision (see 4764n), but it does illustrate the use of a kercher to wrap things in. Richard Green suggests that the heart may in this case be a love token ("Hearts, Minds," 147).
1179 quytith: see Alford, s.v. quiten II.
1182 how? in an holow tre?: not in the Fr.
1191 In O the scribe has written identifications of the speakers (L’amant and Le cueur), but the E scribe has not. tidyng: the word may be used in either the singular or plural form, which may account for the switch in number from 1192 to 1193. 1195 Note that (as in the Fr) the fifth line of each stanza is a one-line (rather than a two-line) reply. 1209–10 An indication that taking ship and crossing the Channel in the fifteenth century was no woman’s work. 1216 hardly: here and in 3278 the poet may have intended hertily, “warmly, fervently.” 1226 ioyfull: MED describes the word as an adjective, but it seems to accompany no noun. It is much more likely to be an adverb. “The” (instead of “thee”) has perhaps misled the editor. 1230 Fr: Bien devez prisier la journee Que fustes sien premierement. 1236 out dissent: not recorded in this sense of “undoubtedly.” The scribe, perhaps influenced by ay in the same line, wrote at for out (cf. 1241 for a similar construction). 1240 wrought to the[e]: this collocation, of which the poet is apparently fond, seems to be unusual (see 1727 and 2875, also 1452). 1241 departement: the poet has taken over the word from the corresponding line in the Fr version; Poirion glosses “départ, séparation” (Le Lexique, s.v. departement). 1245 The refrain is not attached to the end of the stanza very carefully. The sense would seem to be that the heart is urged to realize what a great gift the faithfulness and favorable disposition of the lady he has chosen toward him is, but the line would seem to require some word such as with to open it. “Spent” does not sit well in the line and may have been selected simply for its rhyme. 1251 Mirror imagery has, of course, a long tradition in medieval courtly literature, much of it springing from the Mirror of Narcissus found in the RR. Cf. T&C 1.365ff., in which Troilus makes “a mirour of his mynde” in which he sees “al holly” the figure of Criseyde. These mirrors may in turn owe something to the passage in 1 Cor. 13. 1256 Charles commonly uses double superlatives, just as he multiplies great numbers (see also 1319). Europe: OED first cites in 1603; MED does not include the word. 1266 bayte: cf. T&C 1.193. This is another example of Charles’s love of bilingual word play; the poet has maintained the general meaning of the Fr and created an aural pun on the word esbat: Ne mon cueur n’a jamais sante, Fors quant il y veut regarder Des yeuix de Joyeuse Plaisance; Il s’y esbat pour temps passer, En attendant Bonne Esperance. (Ballade XXXV) Cf. 1725n. 1279–80 The touch of irony here is surely intended to be evident and contrib-
utes to the view of the self-deceived lover which receives so much broader treatment in the central narrative section.

1281–1308 This ballade is a point-by-point response to a letter received from the lady. Though it lacks marked epistolary formulas, the refrain certainly acts as the closing of the letter.

1285–88 In the Fr version of this ballade, these lines repeat word for word the opening stanza of Chanson LII (if indeed the borrowing is not in the other direction), a lyric which Champion refers to as a “lettre” and prints in italics as if it were not written by Charles (see my 3887–90n). The E ballade repeats the first and fourth lines of the E roundel (or vice versa) and echoes the third; only the fourth line (1288/3890) is identical in the two E poems (note that the rhyme schemes differ).

1292 Charles uses the same distribution of words and meanings in his Fr poems: *message* is used for both “message” and “messenger” (as well as *messagier* for the latter; see Poirion, *Le Lexique*, s.v. message, messagier).

1293 Cf. *OED*, s.v. near *adj* 5.


Als: also disrupts the cadence of the line and spoils the meter.

1299 nay, nay!: an outburst which seems to mean “do not say that (it causes me such pain to read of it)!” (cf. 1286, 1390).

1329 were: on this use of the subjunctive, see Mustanoja, 467–68.

1332 it: either anticipates “pleser, comfort, and gladness” in the following line or is perhaps an error for *yit*. Here and elsewhere *bothe* is used of more than two items.

1333 Octosyllabic.

1340 Nathan draws parallels between this poem and *Rom/RR* and relates the imagery to that of R 69. More importantly, he discusses this ballade in relation to Wyatt’s “They fle from me” (see 3915n). There are other individual ballades that echo certain roundels (or vice versa), suggesting that the first ballade sequence was being composed during the same time period the roundels were.

1356 knowith: apparently the scribe wrote *know to*, realized his omission, and went back and added a small superscript *t* and a hairstroke to separate it from the following word.

1361 *sum*, after *me* was perhaps picked up from 1358.

1364 bi: i.e., via. Sweet Thought is Love’s messenger.

1370 neythir: as *bothe* elsewhere, Charles uses the word as a plural as well as a dual.

1375 It is a commonplace that even though the lover will not see his lady, the letter he writes will. This cluster of ballades is particularly thick with epistolary references such as this.

1379 S&D, noting that Champion “says that this Ballade must apply to Bonne,” say of this ballade, “...it is Fortune, and not Danger, which separates the lovers. The same is true of Ballades 40–43, where also there is no allusion to the need for secrésy [sic] and fear of jealousy which marks the earlier ballades.”
1383 The line is too short; it may be defective, since "whose" is necessary for the sense (though it is difficult to know where in the line to place it).
1387 souereyn: a courtly inversion of the use of the word as a noun meaning "husband." Cf. CA 1.861–62: "The Prestes tho gon hom ayein, / And sche goth to hire sovereign."
1391 han: see 3807n.
1392 whan: it is also possible that this is an error for than: and often when I come to ask him for sight of you, then ... (cf. 6196).
1400 tan: syncopation of intervocalic [k] is a clear Northernism (Daunt, 150).
1402 hir: here and in 1404 the scribe has written him for hir (the rhetoric sounds more appropriate to Daunger than to Fortune).
   Fr: Pensant d'avoir, au par aler,
   Par Leauté, ou mon ressort
   J'ay mis, de Plaisance l'estraine,
   En guerdon des maulx qu'ay a tort
   Pour ma maistresse souveraine.
1407 It seems to have been possible to rhyme the word lese using either a long or short vowel (cf. 4718, MED examples, and LGW 1022 and 1545).
1423 speche: throughout the work the poet generally holds to a rhetoric of written documents and writing in reference to the poetry. Speche may here be an exception, or it may be taken to mean "discourse."
   rewdishe: rewd would suit the meter better.
1426 that: that which
1428 On the use of nere for nigh, see Mustanoja, 342.
1436 The double virgule after "come" appears to be added later, as no space was left for it in the line.
1440–41 Although the envoy is often the place to refer to the act of writing, balade as a verb is otherwise unattested, and Charles may here have simply borrowed it from Fr.
   sport: in this case the word probably carries overtones of amorous dalliance.
1447 avisyng: the poet wanted the word avisement but needed an -yng rhyme (the same is true of turn-yng, will-yng "[ill] will"). Avisement is the less usual form (see 2817).
1450 Though the poet speaks here of Fortune's wheel turning, it is phrased as a message from Hope, not an actual occurrence.
1469 Fortune: Miscounting minims, the scribe apparently read fortim for fortune and wrote Fortyme (note fortune, 2813).
1490 The original line was clear, though bungled by the scribe (perhaps because it is a May poem): "Far—nay too far—from my dear lady." The correction of Fer to thys is not an obvious improvement because the revisor neglected to erase may (see textual note).
1494 May: his use of the word to mean "young woman," used here as a form of address, involves a play on words. As he writes an apologia to the flower (in the Flower and Leaf "game," B 66), he is here apologizing to the month of May for not being able to serve her "now to yere." We shall never know whether this is one of the poems addressed to such a may,
perhaps because he has had to forgo the pleasures of a planned maying.

1499 infosterid: S&D gloss "kept"; I have adopted the MED gloss (MED reads "ifosterid [instructed]: fig. dominate the mind or heart of").

1503 S&D suggest "in thought rekklus" as the possible original (in the copy the scribe was working from) and further suggest that the scribe mistook the abbreviation in his copy when he wrote rekkeles ("reckless") and for some unexplained reason inserted and, thus spoiling both sense and meter. Whoever made the erasure in the line apparently planned to use the first letter of and as the article (this construction matches that found in the marginal version). The meter of the line as I have printed it is acceptable only if prayere is monosyllabic; it must rhyme with feere. It is probable that this correction supersedes the reading written in the margin by Revisor B, and, unusually, erased ("As a reklewsse sso leve y in pensir").

1511 Hermyte: picks up reklewse from the previous ballade (line 1503).

1518 where often replaces place. When used together (the place where), the relative is usually followed not by the infinitive, but by a clause. Charles may have intended wherin or some such but omitted the second syllable for metrical reasons.

1524 worth: the scribe confuses worthi and worth (cf. 71).

1540–42 Both rhyme words have been altered (wasilace), but it is not possible to read the original rhymes.

1548 In this ballade, the lover challenges Daunger to single combat. Similarly, because his lady refuses to see him or speak to him, Oton de Grandson’s narrator challenges one of the most valiant fighters in the English host, John of Cornwall, to single combat in order to fulfill his wish for death yet maintain his honor ("Lectres closes," Piaget, 424–28).

Speaking of the Fr counterpart of this poem, Wilkins says, "Formally, this ballade is notable for the extreme length of its stanzas, fifteen lines each, a sure sign that the verse has been liberated from the constraints of music" (One Hundred Ballades, 140, n. 89).

1553 On why: see 947n.

1560 carell: monosyllabic (cf. 1581).

1562 For Daunger a contradiction in terms, of course.

1568 The line is too long but shows no sign of correction; perhaps it is intended to emphasize the exclamation.

1570 amendes: like other diction in this poem, a legal term (see Alford, s.v. amendes).

1572 cry mercy: plead for pardon (usually on one’s knees), Alford, s.v. crien merci.

1574 The lover is acting as champion of the God of Love, whom Daunger has refused to accept as his rightful lord, thus acting rebelliously.

1578 Perhaps related to the motto of the Order of the Garter: "Honi soit qui mal y pense" (Shame to him who thinks evil of it)?

1580–81 Cf. ParsT 258, and see Alford, s.v. cherl.

Fr: Ce vous vient de mauvais talant,
Nourry en courage felon.
1583 oure: here and in the following line the scribe has written youre for oure (the only MS spelling).
1584 tyme of lustynes: S&D gloss the line "to occupy ourselves in lovemaking." MED is conservative, glossing lustynes with definitions that hold to the "joy" end of the spectrum. I have recorded both in the glossary. Cf. T&C 3.177.
1586 vertu and gracious deseraunce: in this context of such dalliance it is difficult to see what place vertu has except that, perhaps, of manly excellence. Deseraunce is unrecorded; in both instances (see also 1759) the word is taken directly from Fr to provide a rhyme.
1587 The line is short but shows no sign of correction; perhaps the gravity of the address should be drawn out.
1588 thi willis: Fr. "voz vouloirs."
1589 batell: see Alford, s.v. bataille.
1593 with myschaunce!: "confound you!"; see SumT 2215 and Masui, 257 (par. 136).
1595 chesen ... to thee: cf. OED, s.v. choose 10 refl: to set or devote oneself to.
1597 The line is unfinished.
1604–20 Lust must be an error for luste adj, for it rhymes with aduersite. In the second stanza, then, parte rhymes with slepe, and in the third, happe, with me.
1609 The scribe has omitted the large initial letter (usually followed by an ordinary capital) probably because he started at the top of the page, forgetting that he was not continuing a stanza from the previous one.
1614 bi Seynt Quyntyne: perhaps an oblique reference to the restoration of the sight of a noble Roman lady who found the saint's body when it floated to the surface of a river and gave it an honorable burial (Golden Legend, 31 October).
1617–20 Fr: Helas! quant vendra la journee
   Qu'aizins avenir me pourra?
   Ma maistresse tresdesiree,
   Pensez vous que brief avendra?
1623 likyng: for the adj form, see Chaucer's T&C 1.309, Rom 868 and 1564.
1629–57 short game of tablis: see Introduction, "Chess and Tables." The "short game" may be a reference to a French form of the game, since Strutt calls the E game (Ludus Anglicorum) the longest (248). Though I have not found a description of the rules for this particular kind of tables, Murray explains that most medieval games of tables differ only in the initial arrangement of the pieces, the points of re-entry and of home, and the number and method of using the dice (History of Chess, 703, see also his "Game of Tables"). In the first stanza, the lover apparently plays well (assuming that he has followed the skilled advice of Love, who has been tutoring him for some time). He must keep his "entir poyn" (Fr "point d'attente": point at which you must wait in order to enter the game); if he keeps "this poyn" (i.e., keeps his opponent from blocking with two or more playing pieces the point-shaped place marker on the board on which
he must enter pieces on the board), the lover will win in the end.

In the second stanza, the narrator is prevented from playing because his opponent has taken (at least) one of his men, and he is not allowed to have another turn until he throws a number which allows him to “enter” the piece on the board again. If this reconstruction of the game is correct, his opponent has meanwhile apparently blocked one or more points by placing two or more playing pieces on it (1637). The opponent can then take a series of turns, as long as the combination of his block or blocks and the numbers thrown prevent the narrator from re-entering the game. (The narrator may not play any other man while he has a piece to enter.) For a discussion of a variety of forms of the game of tables see Strutt, 248–49, and Murray, History of Chess, 569, 702–3. Tables was frequently associated with chess (see, e.g., FkIT 900, BD 51); cf. B 61.

Fr: Car tousjours me charge garder
Le point d’atentte seulement,
En me disant que vrayement
Se ce point lye scay tenir
................
Je suy pris et ne puis entrer
Ou point que desire souvent

1646 wayith: the word balaunce makes clear that wayfith ought to be wayith “weighs.” The scribe seems to have been thinking of the reflex of “waver” or “waive.” In any case it comes to more or less the same thing.

Weele and woo would be the logical entities to be weighed, but the line seems to say that they weigh the speaker (perhaps, as elsewhere, an otherwise unattested reflexive construction: me wayith?). Perhaps he intends something like “I weigh [my] weal and woe against one another in a pair of scales”—and it is doubtful which will be the heavier (see 6244n, 6370n). (Cf. KQ, st. 111.) The comparison does not appear in the Fr version: “Fortune fait souvent tourner / Les dez contre moy mallement.”

1656 iupart: the word is nicely defined in the OED: A position in a game,...

In which the chances of winning and losing hang in the balance; ... an undecided state of affairs (s.v. jeopardy 2). Cf. T&C 2.465–66.

1667 is: probably omitted inadvertently. Both sense and meter would seem to require it.

1678–79 Fr: Car en tous lieux ou est conguee
Chascun la nomme la plus belle.


1695 forshyuere: found only here with for- prefix, but cf. PF 493: “That wel wende I the wode hadde all toshyvered” and Lyd BlkKn 45–46: “So loude songe that al the wode rong / Lyke as it shulde shiver in peces smale.”

1701 affyle: apparently appears nowhere else in Fr or in E. MED gives one instance of foilen v (1) from foil (cf. OF foillir, come into leaf) used as a surgical term. Hammond (English Verse 471, 14.13) suggests that the word trees may be disyllabic, citing PF 173 and GP 607.
1703 his fest to: for this word order, cf. 2474.
1705 on whi: see 947n.
Fr: Bien scay, mon cuer, que faulx Dangier
   Vous fait mainte paine souffrir.
1707–8 Fr: Car il vous fait trop eslongnier
   Celle qui est vostre desir.
1709–10 The usual first treatment for lovesickness is distraction. Cf. T&C
   5.388–90.
1718 In the MS, the scribe has forgotten to leave room for a two-line capital
   and has consequently not capitalized the second letter of As.
   wisshis: stressed on the second syllable (rhyme: ther nys/etcc.).
1724 oft: “any,” “at all” would make good sense, but would duplicate the
   rhyme word of 1721 (and Charles never uses the shorter spelling of the
   word with this meaning). “Often” or “repeatedly” is less graceful, but pos-
   sible. The poet is attempting the tour de force of using ostensibly the same
   word in four different rhymes (also 1742–43) with four different meanings.
1725 This ballade is especially useful for the study of Charles’s methods of
   adapting the Fr poems into E. As S&D note, this is the only case in which
   Charles utilizes an entirely new refrain line (and envoy) in a poem that has
   a Fr counterpart. His replacement of “en esperant, qu’au par aler, de mille
   l’un puist avenir” with “in dowt therin wother mysdemyng oft thorugh
   false conspire of sum vnhappy wight” (1724–25) demonstrates the radical
   change he has made in the tone of the poem. He apparently worked from
   the Fr poem making a number of interesting “lateral” changes playing off
   specific Fr words. In 1727, for instance, he has transformed “[jamas]
   mon cuer ne se peut d’eulx lasser” into “[neuyr more] kan myn hert
   cesse the woo which is him wrought,” playing on lasser and laisser. In
   1730, the word baytith is suggested to him by the Fr esbat (he uses a
   similar play in 1266, see note). In the previous ballade, “disportis” (1710)
   translates “esbat,” proving that this is not simply a “mistranslation” by a
   translator. In 1736, “and so with Loue doth fester his woundis” replaces
   “et tient avec Amour ses plais,” with plays on plaiss/plaies and perhaps
   tient/tent (though here his wounds fester because they receive no tent). The
   resulting ballade is anything but a close translation of the Fr. It does not
   number among Charles’s more elegant E poems but demonstrates his
   ever-increasing attempts to stretch his E vocabulary and his straining away
   from his Fr “originals” in an attempt to write a truly E poem rather than
   simply to produce a translation. This kind of play on “sound alikes”
   between Fr and E is very common in this work.
   The lover’s wishes are treated at length again at the end of his jubilee
   (4389ff.).
1730 baytith: probably an aphetic form of abatith. Though MED gives no such
   meaning as “becomes dejected” under bayten, it does so under abayten,
   citing Urban 29 (see OED, s.v. abate v I. II.6).
1736 woundis: stress on the second syllable (rhyme: me is).
1739 ioyis: the plural form corrects both the meter and the agreement.
1745 sought: S&D suggest "sought, i.e., as an enemy," but the line is still difficult; *thou haue* suggests some sort of transcription error or partial revision.

1759 Octosyllabic. S&D suggest that the line follows the meter of the Fr, but this leaves unexplained the occasional octosyllabic lines in places where there is no Fr counterpart for the verse. Perhaps the word *callid* has been omitted.

1765 contrary: elsewhere the word is trisyllabic, but the length and cadence of the line suggest that here it is disyllabic. Perhaps Charles had the word *contrayre* in mind.

Fr: Mais il trouvera le rebours.

1766 vengeaunce: parallel with *hatrede*, the word seems to refer to a characteristic of Daunger rather than his acts; I have thus glossed "vengefulness."

1771-72 The scribe wrote *wassayle* (influenced, perhaps, by "we assayle" in the following line); OED cites the Laud *Troy-book* (c. 1400, line 9020) for the ironic use of *wassayle* as "sudden attack." Revisor B altered the reading to *wache*, which improves the meter.

Fr: fasons bon guet sans decevance
Et assailons par ordonnance,
Mon cuer, Daunger qui nous fait tort.

1775 The shift of the meaning of *keep* ("desire") in this last refrain line is very effective.

1778 ravisshe: MED cites this line as a unique instance of the word in the passive sense without *be*. Charles may have omitted it because of the meter.

Fr: Si ravy seray de liese.

1786 as this: thus; MED describes this use as "vaguely emphatic or deictic," s.v. as 3b (b).

1790 doon . . . observaunce: S&D refer to this phrase as "a Chaucerian favorite."

1796 Daunger is the eavesdropper.

1797 with: Charles often uses unusual prepositions (*on* or *to* is more usual), unless we should take *with* as "forthwith" (immediately).

1801 Cf. 4364; the meter and cadence of the line suggest that a syllable has been omitted.

1807 out: here, and in 2012 and 2018, someone erased the first three letters of *without* (leaving *hout*), suggesting that whoever it was (and in the first two cases, at least, the one-syllable form improves the meter) was accustomed to a form with *h*. Note the spelling *wehout* in line 10 of the ballade in Appendix I (no. 7).

1822-26 The poet seems to be playing on *dewre/dewryng/dewe* in this stanza (as well as perhaps *dewoure/deserwth*).

1829 geue me thus an horne: this is not a reference to cuckoldling in the narrow sense (since the lover and lady are not husband and wife), but to the lady's bestowing of her affections elsewhere. The narrator accuses Hope of "giving him a horn" (i.e., scorning him) because he has not intervened to unite the lovers and foster their relationship. S&D quote
Court of Love 1390, for which see Skeat's note in Chaucerian and Other Pieces, 553.

1830 make light of: this may be the first recorded instance of this expression, and the only instance of notforsyng.

1844 Dyane day: Benvenuto Cellini first deciphered this reference (228). He adds that the first of May fell on a Monday in 1419, 1424, and 1430, but "the first in moneth of May" could mean "the first Monday in May" as easily as "the first day of May." He does not explain why the day is seen as masculine in the first two stanzas (1845, 1848, 1850, etc.) but feminine in the third (see 1866n).

1854 bi this day: I have glossed as an asseveration, but the phrase may also be taken as "for today."

1856-57 The word tranquillite probably suggested itself to the poet by association with the storminess of the first stanza. The poet seems to mean "comfort," but expresses it as "peace, tranquillity." The statement is proverbial, "misery loves company" (see CA 2.263; CYT G747; T&C 1.709).

1858 profite: S&D list this word under preef ppl. The line could be read with either meaning: "I have tested (proved) the truth of this proverb" or "I have benefitted (profited) thus from the truth of this proverb" (i.e., the day has borne me good company). Given the spelling prove as the participial spelling of preef in 1160, I have opted for the latter reading.

1866 he: I have emended she to he for the sake of consistency, but the poet may be thinking of the lady as well as the month here (May is personified as a princesse in R 11).

1873-1927 Charles may have placed a chant royal (five-stanza "ballade" with envoy) here in order to mark the culmination of the love affair proper with an exchange of vows, in order to make the death of the lady even more poignant.

1882 S&D call the construction of the refrain an infinitive absolute and note that it is awkward (302 [42 in 1st ed.]; see n2 for parallel construction). This may apply to the other refrain lines, but here the construction may involve an ellipsis of gafe + refl. pronoun.

Fr: Quant vous retins premierement
Ma Dame, ma seule maistresse.

1883 deservaunce: created to provide a rhyme.

1924 steele: a type of hardness, i.e., trueness.

1928 This ballade marks a major turning point in the work. The lady's illness, announced here, is followed by a ballade of false hope, then by the announcement of her death and a series of mourning poems.
entresse: cf. entrise (912). The form with (s)se may vary from that used in
2666 (entre) because of the exigencies of rhyme.
Fr: qui a laissié entrer.
1953 Which is, of course, no comfort. The heart, for once, sees the truth.
1956 There are various metrical possibilities: harkith, prayeth, and humbly may
each be either mono- or disyllabic in this work.
1960 this othir day: “next” would be an attractive gloss, but the addition of
tofore suggests that the phrase simply means “(more) recently” or “yester-
day”
Fr: l’autre jour.
1966 The line is unfinished.
1969 Goodrich seems to suggest that the refrain refers to the birth of a child
(Themes, 111). Given the fact that this ballade precedes and in some way
(if only by way of false hope) announces the death of the lady, this inter-
pretation seems fanciful—nor does anything in the ballade point to this
interpretation. Charles’s first wife, Isabelle, died in childbirth in 1409, but
the lady of these poems is sick and needs to be “helid” (in B 55). In this
ballade she “was woxen hool” (1962). The tidings the heart wants are
confirmation of his lady’s good health; there is neither mention nor
implication of pregnancy or birth, which would be wildly out of place in
a courtly work such as this. Champion’s note on the Fr counterpart reads,
“Sur des nouvelles meilleures de la santé de sa femme” (555).
1979 The refrain here seems to be an added plea that what the lover has
reported to the heart (the lady’s recovery) continue to be true.
1985 gaf: S&D suggest that the word “has come from ‘gan’, probably through
‘gaue’,” but see OED, s.v. give IV 13b: “to apply or set oneself to do
something,” citing Cursor M., “Sco gaf hir al to murn and care.”
1992-93 In 1464 Charles had a book made which contained the office of St.
Gabriel (La Borde, 7035, Champion, La Librairie, 78).
Fr: ... la messe qu’il nommoit
“Saint Gabriel bonne nouvelle.”
1994 The opening of this poem is psychologically realistic: the lover’s anger
against death is itself a way of coping with grief. Hammond lists a series
of “outcries against Death” which bear some resemblance to this poem
(English Verse, 471).
2000 leuyr ... forto dy: for this construction see MchT 2163.
2001 Cf. Bo 2.pr.2.68–72, where Philosophy applies the word tragedyes to the
stories of the lives of Cresus and St. Paul; Chaucer gloses the term with the
word dite. Our narrator, however, applies the word to his own situation,
evidence perhaps of his awareness that he is turning his experience into
literature as it happens (or perhaps that Charles recognized the literary
sublimation involved in this ballade sequence).
2007 Hammond cites a number of instances of the word vnweldynes, as well as
of the phrase “alone am y out compane” in line 2012 (English Verse, 471).
2026 To this point the E ballades run exactly parallel to their Fr counterparts,
but beginning with this ballade, three poems which do not occur in the
French sequence are inserted (58–60). B 62 is likewise an “inserted” ballade without Fr counterpart (as is B 74), but apart from that the series continues through B 66. The “inserted” ballades are all mourning poems, one of which (B 59) is a reworking of a Fr poem by Christine de Pisan. Many commentators have felt the “sincerity” of the poet’s grief in these poems (B 57 through B 74) and attributed it to the poet’s response to the literal death of one or another lady (usually his first wife, Isabelle, or his second, Bonne), but Charles may equally well have written some of them at a later date than the rest of the ballades in this sequence (see Introduction, “Order of Composition”). All are exceptionally well-crafted poems. 2027 bote: the word might be taken (as S&D do) as “profit,” “good,” but given that the list is not a general one but a very specific one referring to the perfections of the (newly lost) lady, perhaps the poet intended the meaning “goodness,” a meaning OED and MED do not support. S&D suggest als or alle for also to improve the meter. 2038 Because the correction of care to cave makes no sense to me, I have relegated it to the textual notes (as in 2508). S&D gloss care-sewte “mourning attire,” without further explanation, though in that case for would make better sense than of. Charles may be playing on care as a kind of cloth and as a state of being; perhaps we are to think of a shroud, since it is also apparently the attire of his dead lady. A preceding preposition seems to have been omitted, though the line has ten syllables as it stands (the preposition to is likewise omitted in the previous line). 2042–43 The idea of being “equal to zero” echoes the nought of the refrain. The idea of having no value but giving value to some one else (as zero does to ten), is apparently proverbial (cf. MED, s.v. cifre; KQ st. 28 and Norton-Smith’s note 194–96; Richard the Redeles 4.53–54; and S&D 2042n). 2046 The repeated use of alone in this line anticipates the repetition of the word in the following ballade. 2048 soon: the plural is used simply for the rhyme. 2054–81 The Alone which stands at the beginning of each line does not simply function syntactically as a recurring adverb. It sometimes stands completely outside the syntactical structure and, like the tolling of a bell, punctuates rhythmically the lamentations of the poet (e.g., 2064–65, 2071–72, sometimes, as in 2067, followed by an omitted beat). This is emphasized by the virgules the scribe has inserted after each Alone. On this ballade, an adaptation or imitation of a lyric by Christine de Pisan (“Seulete suy et seulete vucl estre,” Varty, 7), see Urwin, and Cigada, “Christine de Pisan.” Fox translates the opening lines of her poem thus:

Alone am I, and alone I wish to be;
Alone has my sweet love left me.
Alone am I, without companion or master;
Alone am I, sad and grieving,
Alone am I, unhappy and languishing,
Alone am I, most forlorn of women,
Alone am I, without my love remaining.  

(Middle Ages, 302)

2056 Octosyllabic.

2062 wo . . . bigon ("deeply grieved") receives double intensification from the 
addition of the superlative ending -full as well as most. This kind of intensi-
ification is not unusual.

2072 are has been overwritten as and: in its original form, the line would mean 
something like "I prefer to avoid all company." In its altered version it 
could be read as an address to all people to witness the narrator's solitari-
ness, placed between references to his life and his death.

2080 willith: an apparently ungrammatical form.

2082-89 The use of oxymorons to describe love is commonplace (for the 
Chaucerian version see Rom 4703ff.). Charles varies the formula by 
applying the paradoxes to his grief at the lady's death. The poet seems to 
have invented the word dedy to match livy.

2084 Apparently the word lengthith is intended to imply lijf, though the poet 
uses both in 1360.

2090 The poet describes many strange relationships with aspects of his own 
physical being. Here he calls on his own spirit to cease breathing, then 
moves on to exhort his heart to burst, etc.

format: looks forward to the chess imagery of the following ballade.

2091 karkas: the poet probably had both definitions in mind: "dead body" and 
a contemptuous term for a living person. This is a poem full of ambiguity 
and self-loathing.

2095 The rhymes leche (like), reche (rich), and perhaps eche (eken, cure) sit 

2109 The refrain line has been omitted in the MS. I have added it in square 
brackets and included it in the line numbering so as not to diverge from 
Steele's numbering.

2110 This ballade is a tour de force of elaborate word play. Commonly associ-
ated with love in the late Middle Ages, chess displays many of its meta-
phorical possibilities here. Chess is frequently associated with death, as in 
BD and in the visual arts (see, e.g., the chessboard in a stained glass 
window in which a bishop turns away from a skeletal figure of Death in 
Hussey, 140; also Murray, History of Chess, 536a).

In Lydgate's translation of Les Échecs [or Échez] Amoureux, Deduit 
(son of Venus and brother of Cupid) is a god of games, playing not only 
At mereles, dees, and tables . . .
But best and most specialy
At the Chesse he dooth excelle
That philomestor, soth to telle . . .

(R&S, lines 2404, 2406-8)

According to Murray, the game played in Les Échecs by the lover and his 
lady is described in some detail (477ff.).

2112 kepte eche poyn: S&D suggest that the phrase is borrowed from back-
gammon (i.e., tables, cf. 1634), but in that case it is difficult to see what it would mean. The sense is that he kept each piece without losing any of them, at first. Perhaps a scribal error is involved.

2115 Strictly speaking, ouyrdrew cannot apply very neatly to the lover's game, unless Fortune overturned the chessboard. There are in fact numerous instances in history and art of chessboards being literally overturned (Murray, History of Chess, 443, 740–46; Strutt, 251), but the image makes more sense, perhaps, in light of the resonances of both words. The game (in the original sense of "joy," "pleasure") is destroyed by Fortune, who casts the lover into a state of dejection. The game is also the game of love, which Fortune (in league with Daunger) brings to nought by allowing or causing the lady's death. The image of the turning of the wheel (2130) is combined with the idea of bringing the lover's suit to nought, but neither use applies directly to the game. In B 46, Fortune turns the dice against the lover (1645–46; cf. also ouyrdresse 2130).

Fr: Et par meschier, que maudite soit elle!

2116 lady: on the role of the queen in the late medieval game of chess, see Introduction, "Chess and Tables." In the proof stage of this book, it came to my attention that Steven Guthrie is doing exciting research on medieval chess and literature that may very well supersede the hypotheses I set forth in my introduction concerning the role of the queen in this poem and in Chaucer's BD. For a similar, though brief, use of chess imagery, see KQ, st. 168–69.

2117 this may y se and say: this has the ring of a common asseveration, but the MED does not record it.

2118 make a lady newe: make a new queen by reaching the far end of the board with a pawn (as in draughts or checkers). The fact that he would consider a new lady (an idea repeated with each refrain line and then taken up again in the next ballade), however briefly and rhetorically, takes on a different cast in view of the lover's receptiveness to the suggestions of Venus later in the work (cf. 2675). The pun on make ("choose as mate") probably does not extend to "mate with, marry."

2120 nere: probably used in place of nigh because of the exigencies of rhyme (see Mustanoja, 329, 394).

2122 all my warde: a chess term (see Murray, History of Chess, 499).

2125 pley: though the primary, surface meaning of the word is "playing of the game of chess," in this case the word carries overtones both of "pleasure" and of "the turn of Fortune's wheel." Cf. "Fortune's play": Bo 2.pr2.56 and Lyd TB 2.2031.

2126 Chess is a game on which men lay large wagers, as this lover has.

2128–29 Charles uses alliteration rarely but effectively.

seyftull: Charles apparently created this aphetic form to fit his meter (see 6103, where it also alliterates); he seems particularly fond of aphetic forms.

2130 ouyrdresse: MED cites this instance as well as 2373, translating "over-turn." S&D, following the Fr ("tournier a rebours"), suggest "reverse," which seems to make better sense. Here it is the opposite of dressen, in the
sense of to arrange or put (moves) in order (i.e., decide on a strategy in the game).

2131 there or here: reversed to suit the rhyme.

2132 The suddenness of Fortune’s attack suggests the increased “speed of attack and defence” that Eales attributes to the new chess (see Introduction, “Courtly Occupations: Chess and Tables”), in which “the consequences of a single weak move could be much greater” (77)—as opposed to the medieval game, which could be agonizingly slow (69, 78).

2147–48 At a number of points Charles links ballades, especially in the early poems. This reinforces the assumption that many were composed in more or less the same period. Here the poet borrows the lady newe from the chess imagery of B 61 and turns his thoughts to the phoenix. The phoenix is traditionally the reincarnation of a phoenix which immolates itself after living five hundred years. The force of the refrain derives from its absoluteness: the lady’s beauty is as unequivocal and her death is as certain and as irrevocable as the fact that the phoenix lives without heir. Unlike the phoenix, the lady has no power to reincarnate herself, and the lover refuses to make (take) a lady newe. This is one of the finest of the grieving poems.

Having read the whole work, the reader may see in this poem a suggestion that it is possible to make a new lady and that this fenyx might perhaps have an heir after all, in the form of the lady of the second ballade sequence.

2162 cherry fair: a common medieval “gather ye rosebuds” phrase (used by both Chaucer and Gower). Brand refers to cherry fairs as taking place (where else?) in cherry orchards (2.457).

2165 Once again the scribe (or the poet) seems to have trouble with “weighed” and “waived” (cf. 1646).

2166 Daunt points out (148) that layre, supported by the rhyme, is a Northern form of lore (Charles’s more frequent spelling). See also 4380, 6468.

2175 here: S&D suggest that the word be glossed “rape” (deduced from the verb herie, “to plunder”) or that it is a scribal error for bere, “bier” (though, as they admit, that word is used in 2196, and Charles never seems to use the same rhyme word twice with the same meaning). Though not elegant, the line may be read as “death has divested this world here of her” or “has stripped her from this world here.” Here simply provides a rhyme.

2179 allys: monosyllabic (a unique spelling).

2195–96 Yit: otherwise hit simply repeats Hit.

S&D take to day as “today,” but more likely the lover’s heart is filled until, being over-full, it threatens to cause his death (cf. 721, 2533, etc.). It therefore makes him wish that he had prepared his bier. clothid had my bere: a variation on the more usual expression: “to clothe one’s grave” (here and in 4229; see T&G 5.1418). Charles uses the “correct” expression in 2421 and 4479 and a variation with sepulture in 2038 and 2593. MED records only the clothing of graves, but clothe can
mean to prepare, e.g., a bed, so that "to prepare a bier as if it were a bed" is not a very linguistically innovative expression (cf. 2763, 4299).

2198-2205 The first stanza of this ballade seems to contain no main clause and have no grammatical connection with what follows, unless each of the first two stanzas is treated as dependent on "Me thenkith," in the third (2214).

2200 S&D cite for comparison KnT 2006: "his herte blood."

2207 Dido, Cresseid, Alcest, and Eleyne: Poirion identifies Creseide as "héroïne de Boccace" (Le Lexique, s.v. Creseide). Charles's naming of Dido and Alcest may point to his reading of LGW, but such lists were common.

Fr: Creseide, Yseud, Elaine.

2230 expelle: the scribe has written excelle in error, perhaps under the influence of the rhetoric of the previous line.

Fr: pour oster merencolie.

2231-34 See Introduction, "Courtly Occupations," for a discussion of the Flower and the Leaf. The "game" is here associated with May, as it is in LGW. The narrator makes an elegant distinction between the trivial, annual choosing of flower or leaf and a more serious and permanent choice. The present choice of the leaf, determined by lot, is part of the social game of love, whereas his permanent choice of the flower is represented as a serious decision made in "real life." What we have in fact is a double gambit, on two levels, in the game (see Stevens, 180-82). What is odd is that the "flower" does not seem to perceive the situation this way (see 2269-72).

2238 The "choice" is explained in such a way (here and in 2232 and 2277) that it is clear that the matter was decided by lot. The "truth" of the matter may be that the narrator does not intend to take responsibility for his apparent fickleness; the reader must decide on what level the truth (if there is one) is to be found.

2245 me: omitted after to.

2246 Octosyllabic.

2248 schesse: here, the original reading, was probably a scribal error for bere, though the revisor (or Charles, on rereading) may not have realized that, and so changed it to schesse ("choose"). This stanza is very typical of Charles, smoothly modulating from phrase to phrase.

Fr: Pour ce la fueille porteray
Cest an....

2250-51 Fr: Et a mon povair me tendray
Entierement de sa partie.

2263 This (mini) dream vision is the poet's first experiment with the genre. B 70 has a bit of the feel of a dream vision, though the narrator is not asleep. B 72 borrows some imagery from the genre in its opening lines but begins with the awakening of the narrator. All of these ideas are reused in the second dream vision. The poem forms a pair with the previous poem.

2264 The idea is a common one in this kind of love poetry (cf. LBD 1).

2277-78 this heyre: Fr: "cest an."
The speaker feels that it is perfectly all right for him to serve the leaf, since he does not really care about it and did not choose it with any real conviction (cf. 2290). *FL* has a similar startling reversal, but in the opposite direction; after witnessing the apparently serious representation of loyal and frivolous love by two groups of knights and ladies, the narrator is asked by one of them, "... and which woll ye honour, / ... this yeere, the Leafe or the Flour?" (573–74).

2285 The flower that appears to the lover is not the lady, but in some sense her representative, the head of the lady's "faction" (Flower with a capital F), as this line makes clear. Since his flower has been taken away, it is only reasonable, he thinks, that he serve the leaf.

2296 The reader is perhaps being presented with a love problem: what are we to think of the speaker's defense? And what about its juxtaposition with the following ballade? The *Fr* version is followed by the counterpart of B 70.

2297 At this point, the order of ballades differs from that of the *Fr*. Assuming that the arrangement of the *Fr* poems is the earlier of the two, B 67 and B 68 are placed earlier in the sequence (the *Fr* versions occur between the counterparts of B 72 and 73), and then the series continues in parallel through B 73 (B 74 has no *Fr* counterpart), except that B 69 and B 70 are in reverse order from the *Fr* sequence. In this process *Fr* ballades LXVII and LXVIII are displaced to the second ballade sequence (B 101 and B 107). See Appendix II, "Index of . . . Counterparts."

B 67 and B 68 are mourning poems that fit very well with what precedes. Ballades 69–73 are more problematic. Line 2376 mentions the *dowblines* of love. In another context this would be taken to refer to the lady's fickleness, but here it may perhaps be taken as a reference to the lover's loss (cf. 2380–82). B 70 fits well among the mourning poems, looking both forward to the vision of Venus and back to the first love affair. B 71, likewise, may be read as suitable in the context of the lover's mourning, though S&D object on the grounds that the poet does not mention the lady's death (the same is true of the ballade that follows it). B 73 is a general ballade on the difficulties of love, and B 74, in which the poet longs for death, might be seen as the logical end to the series of mourning poems before the solution presented by Age in the vision that follows.

It is true that there are touches in these last poems of humor and irony that imply that the lover is not going to give up on life and love. "That all is broke and newe to make ayene" (B 69) may mean that the lover's life is shattered and he must find a way to rebuild it, or it may be taken to imply the possibility of a new lady in his future; the word make is suggestive, and Venus picks up this suggestion in the following ballade, though the lover rejects it. The refrain of B 71 ("Without so be the wounde renewe agayn") also suggests the eventuality that love might be rekindled. If the poet meant to suggest that, after a period of almost frenzied mourning, the lover regains his composure and begins to look to the future—a future which may include another lady—then the reordering of the ballades is certainly effective.
2302–3 were: was must be an error.
made al to the same: S&D suggest “[made] in the same style,” i.e.,
imbued with sorrow, but it is also possible to take made as “matched,”
i.e., the tomb matches the torches (in being made of sorrow). It comes to
the same thing. The lines are octosyllabic, as are 2305–6.
2305 The tomb is an oblong stone sepulchre with a carved inscription running
around the upper moulding.
2307 The omission of an unstressed syllable between all and worldly gives the
line a heavy, somber rhythm.
2310–11 the safere doth token trouthe: “it makep be hert stedfast in godnes”
(Evans and Serjeantson, 102); the passage quoted by S&D is part of a
poem in which all the stones named are said to be stedfast. Cf. 1153–54.
Poirion suggests that gold (not to be confused with yellow, the color of
jealousy and cowardice) is the color of happiness because it is the “sym-
bole du succès” (Le Lexique, s.v. or; see also s.v. saffir).
2314 floweren: echoes the two previous ballades.
2320 Because hir is repeated in the following line, I have emended to the.
2328 Noon: S&D read Noou and gloss “?now,” but the crossover to “serious”
religious terms that their reading implies is unlikely in this context.
Fr: Si croy que Dieu la voulu traire
Vers lui, pour parer son repaire
De Paradis ou sont les saints;
Car c'est d'elle bel parement,
Que l'en nommoit communement
Le tresor de tous biens mondains.
2330 There seems to be a syllable missing before “this” (perhaps as this).
2331 The narrator uses the plural apparently because he imagines himself in
the context of “all the world” (2322).
therfo: I have glossed “besides,” but the word might be an error for
therfor.
2373 amverse: this problematic word, which Charles uses repeatedly, does not
find a place in the MED. Chances are it is his “English” version of Fr
avers or envers (anvers/auvers/advers), a word which he does not use in his
Fr poems, or perhaps it is a form of ME inverse.
onyrdres: see 2130n.
2378 S&D suggest that more here and moche (2384) have been interchanged,
though they do not say how this might have happened (2378n).
gentilnes: Charles uses the form with n only twice (against twelve times
without), both times in rhyme position (on Chaucer’s careful distinction
between gentillesse and gentilnesse, see Baker, Variorum, 123n, 98–99).
2382 Then: when in 2380 suggests that That should be Then; S&D term the
word redundant, retained to keep the meter.
2383 yet: repeated twice.
2384 moche or lesse: S&D suggest that either Charles adapted the phrase from
the Chaucerian “moche or lyte” or moche is an error for more (2378n).
Given his use of *lite or lasse* in the previous stanza, he may have thought it an unremarkable construction.

2395 Hevynes: echoes the word from 2393, linking the two ballades. Utley includes this ballade among his “Dialogues, Debates, & Catechisms” (Hartung, 3.728). For a discussion of the (closely related) Fr counterpart, see Calin, “Density,” 97–100. The Fr (“En la forest d’Ennuyeuse Tristesse”) makes an interesting comparison with his later and more famous ballade that begins “En la forest de Longue Actente” (B CV).

2396 The Fr version of this ballade is not a May poem. Charles seems particularly attracted to the juxtaposition of dolor with times and occasions traditionally associated with joy (but see Gower as source, Introduction, “Sources and Influences: Gower”).

2399–2402 S&D read *As* (2400) as an expletive and *oon* as the object of *convey*. I think the narrator’s response is more informal: (where am I going?) where Fortune sends me—like someone who is exiled from joy (much as I hate it)—so that men may call me. . . It is this dolorous but disjointed response which elicits Venus’s smile, a response we recognize when we encounter her again in the second dream vision. Here, however, the poet seems to draw back from the implications of the goddess’s smile.

2404 This is the first time Venus speaks in the work; she will not speak again until the second dream vision, where she once again addresses the narrator as *frend* (5113 and 5173).

2412 The pronoun, necessary for the impersonal construction, is omitted.

2419 There is no way of telling whether the envoy is also spoken to Venus or whether it acts as a summary statement of the whole ballade. If this ballade suggested to the poet the narrator’s encounter with Venus in the second dream vision, it is interesting that “no care,” the name of the narrator’s future retreat, is mentioned in the next ballade (2430).

2420 fer myswent: S&D gloss “for fear of going astray.” The manuscript spelling of “fear” is usually *fer* (the only exception is 5090). I would take *myswent* as *pl* used adjectively and read “completely lost” (i.e., having gone far astray): “completely lost, feeling my way with my staff.”

2421 MED gives no examples of a reflexive construction with *cloth* in this sense.

2425 This ballade involves a play on physical and mental pain and further develops the physiology of the heart that Charles returns to again and again. Here Dr. No Care replaces Dr. Hope of the (lost) opening allegory (see Introduction, “Argument of the Poem”). Charles was very interested in medicine and deals with the healing process at some length in this work (cf. e.g., B 82, R 103; see Champion, *La Librairie*, 1–lii). The second stanza of this poem sounds very much like an actual encounter between doctor and patient. (For a manuscript illustration of the bedridden lover from Bernier de Chartres, *La vraie médecine d’amour*, see Wack, 73; for the “surgical” removal of the heart from such a lover, *King René’s Book of Love*, fol. 2, reproduced in Wack, 95.)

2428 hertily: in 3 and 355 the two-syllable spelling is correct. Here it should
have been the more common three-syllable spelling.

2438 The addition of thou before kepe improves both sense and meter.

2442–43 Beware governs the whole stanza.

at an eye: the phrase is Fr but was introduced well before Charles’s time (Prins, 65). Cf. 3141.

2445 Although the relation of Youthe to the narrator is put in the past tense, it is clearly the very recent past.

2446 It is the eyes that set the heart on fire.

2455–62 S&D cite parallels to the opening in SqT 671 and F&L 1–2. Hammond also cites Lyd TB 1.626 and terms “day of Seynt Valentyne” an accusative of specification, “on the day” (English Verse, 473).

If Charles read PF, his divergences from his model are more interesting than are his borrowings (see Introduction, “Sources and Influences: Chaucer”). See also Gower, CB, Ballade 35.

Fr: Le beau soueleil, le jour saint Valentin
Qui apportoit sa chandelle alumee,
N’a pas long temps, entra un bien matin
Privevement en ma chambre fermee.

2458 soft: Charles clearly chose the word for the rhyme and not the meaning, as it does not chime with the refrain (cf. CA 4.3019–20).

2463 parten there bottyne: bottyne is “what boots one,” i.e., relief, cure, weal—in this case, their mates. S&D gloss “divide” their “booty.” The birds cannot “divide” (or “share,” MED) their mates; they must “choose” or “assign” them (given the necessity of discussion in 2465–66, perhaps the latter is more correct).

The Fr is less cryptic but more abstract: “pour partir leur butin / Des biens d’Amours” (cf. Rondeau CCLIV). Poirion cites a close parallel from Les Cent Ballades and glosses “profit, récolte,” 149 (Le Lexique, s.v. butin).

2465 me neye biside: cf. MED sv. neie 3(a): ~ ajoinaunt, closely adjoining. Myn should have been corrected to Me when neye was corrected.

pletid ther latyne: in ME latyne “Latin” had become conflated with leden (from OE le(o)den), which was used of both “Latin” and “language”—in this case bird language. Poirion glosses “langue ésotérique, ‘jargon’” (Le Lexique, s.v. latin). Chaucer’s birds simply make a huge noyse (PF 312). Cf. Piers Plowman B.12.253, 262; SqT 436–37, 478.

2467 Cf. PF 670 and Grandson’s “Le Songe Saint Valentin”: “Bec et bec, masles et femelles, / Ilz se embrassoint dez elles / Et alignoyent leur plumettez” (Piaget, 310, lines 47–49).

2468 dresse: they are pleading their case before Nature, though she does not actually appear in the ballade.

Fr: Tous les oyeaux, qui parlans leur latin,
Crioyent fort, demandans la livre
Que Nature leur avoit ordonnee:
C’estoit d’un per, comme chascun choisy.

2481 S&D suggest that this comfort is an error for discomfort; Hammond takes this comfort sole as “without this comfort” (English Verse 473, 19.27). If this
is not an error for, say, out ("Whereas, without comfort, I lie here alone"), it can only refer to the lover's weary acknowledgement that at least others are successful in love.

Fr: de Confort desgarny.

2483 This ballade is a good example of a lyric which begins by paralleling its Fr counterpart, then diverges entirely in the third stanza (the Fr, which lacks an envoy, is the last in the series, followed in the MS by Songe en complainte—the vision of Age). Though written in octosyllables, a frequent choice of the poet when he composes in Fr, he has not reproduced the meter of the Fr in this case; the Fr ballade is written in five-syllable lines (and has no envoy).

playne: cf. Alford, s.v. pleinen: to make a legal complaint or accusation.

2487 S&D's reading (forlighly, "very easily") is also possible.

2491 weelee: perhaps the poet intends a play on "weal" and "will" (cf. 2873).

2492–93 Thinking of it is bad enough; desiring it is worse. Steele reads: vanth, i.e., wantith, altered to rath, perhaps suggested by a similar phrase in 4376 ("to suche as wanten brayne"). The v is of a different form from those of the main scribe, however, and it is not clear that the r is written over the v rather than vice versa. Both the v and the tittle are written in (light greyish) plumm. It seems more reasonable that a later hand has altered rath to vanth, that is, "wantith" (in part because the clause lacks a verb). Hath would be the logical candidate for a verb, giving something like "Who thinks that has a rash mind."

Fr: C'est fait follement
D'ainsy desirer.

2507–8 pechere: (trisyllabic; rhyme: volunte) Because the marginal correction to pevechere makes no sense to me (and does not fit the line), I have relegated it to the notes. Following S&D's line of thought, MED gives "?fishpond" (S&D: "fishing ground, catch of fish"), a reading which seems rather too improbable even for Charles. The word probably represents either some form of OF pechier, "sin, fault, wrongful action" (a word he uses in R CCCLXI, as well as pecheresse in B CI) or (a noun form) of (em)pechen, "hinder the freedom of, interfere with" (cf. OF empechier, "interference, obstruction"). Charles uses the word in this sense in B XL (see Poirion, Le Lexique, s.v. empeschier). Restraining one's lady, or in fact interfering with her freedom in any way, is indeed a serious sin.

Fr: A rebours trouver
Tout leur pensement.

2512–13 Pity here is masculine. Pity's weal (i.e., what he would prefer) is sleep: "the lady must awaken Pity, out of kindness [for the lover]"

2515 Full of wrenching sorrow, this ballade never mentions its cause.

2518 This would result in the death of both. The heart is the executive, served by the lover.

2519 S&D rightly suggest that the passage would make better sense if y (2519) were corrected to thou.

2521 almes: not recorded as a verb (cf. OF almosner), but his use of the word
in 906 shows that he knew how to use it "correctly." This is the only instance in this work of an octosyllabic refrain in a decasyllabic ballade.

2522-39 "Mixing" Furies and Fates, Charles first calls on Tisiphone (2522), perhaps an echo of Chaucer’s opening of the *Troilus*. That “cruwel Furie, sorwyange evere yn peyne” helps Chaucer’s narrator to write “this woful vers” (6–11). In calling on the three Fates, the poet reverses the usual order, calling first on Atropos, who cuts the thread of life, shifting the blame then to Lachesis, who measures it out too long, and closing with Clotho the spinner, who gives too much of it to Lachesis in the first place. (Chaucer does not call upon *Attropos* until 4.1208 and 1546 or upon *Lachesis* until 5.7).

2527 strecche: MED cites the word but gives no useable gloss (2d: extend, give, increase, direct). He is not asking that his sorrow be in any way increased, but that the heart measure his sorrow against that of Tisiphone, “the Goddes of Turment,” and, recognizing that it is a crushing burden, release the narrator from life. The use of *strecche* is forced, probably because of the poet’s need for a rhyme.

2529–31 sorowe/borowe: one of the poet’s rare feminine rhymes. Cf. 5858; *BD* 597; Lamentations 1:12.

2534 at: the scribe wrote *as*, perhaps because the two adjoining words end in *s*.

2538 The scribe wrote *hit* instead of *hir*.

2540 This narrative section includes the first dream vision (of Age) and narrates the (ex-)lover’s withdrawal from Love’s service. In my view, this marks the end of the first of the three major parts of the work (made up of the opening allegory and the first ballade sequence). For a translation of the Fr version of this vision, see Goodrich, *Biography*, 218–21.

2553 writhid: literally “twisted, wrung, contorted,” but here it is better translated “struggled” or “wrestled.”

2556 resonyd: MED cites this line and glosses “address,” but the word here and in 2266 more likely means “rebuke” or “call to account” (see Alford, s.v. aresounen; Greimas, s.v. araisnier 4).

2558–61 This passage refers to the action of the opening poem, now lost (see Introduction, “Argument of the Poem”). In the Fr counterpart of the opening allegory, *Aage* (as he explains again in lines 2568ff.) brings a letter to *Enfance* (Childhode) from *Dame Nature* announcing that it is time that the narrator be given into the care of *Dame Jenennes* (*Youthe*):

> En cest estat, par un temps me nourry;  
> Et après ce, quant je fu enforcy;  
> Ung messagier, qui Aage s’appela,  
> Une lettre de creance bailla  
> A Enfance, de par Dame Nature,  
> Et si lui dist que plus la nourriture  
> De moy n’auroit et que Dame Jenennes  
> Me nourrirroit et seroit ma maistresse.  
> Ainsi du tout Enfance delaissey  
> Et avecques Jenennes m’en alay. (11–20)
This passage may be intended to evoke the experience of Boethius, as well: “I byholde my noryce, Philosophie, in whos hous I hadde conversed and hauntyd fro my youthe” (Bo, 1.pr.3.5–7). On the role of Age as a facilitator rather than a specific period of life, see Introduction, “Argument of the Poem.” Old age is named Elde. For a more absolute and realistic confrontation with age, see Charles’s final rondeau (CCCCXXXV).

The convention of the debate of Love and Elde governs this passage (see Burrow, “Portrayal of Amans”), but Charles has no intention of letting the tradition of an aged lover who leaves Love’s service make the courting of a second lady impossible. The God of Love attempts to induce the lover to take a new lady, as does Venus later. Neither would do so if the lover were unfit to serve them on account of his age.

The figure of Age here resembles Gower’s Venus in discoursing on the relation of love to age near the end of the Confessio Amantis. (For an interpretation of Venus’s actions that contrasts nicely with those of Charles’s goddess and resembles those of Age, see Lynch, 187–89.) Unlike Gower’s Venus, however, he does not announce that the narrator has become old, but only that Elde “caste with thee [the lover] to aqueynt” (2571, see 2576).

2561–63 Cf. BD 797–802.
2564–65 Fr: Or est ainsi que Raison, qui sus tous
                  Doit gouverner, a fait tresgrant complainte.
2566 MS: Vnto Nature on thee and on thi maystres. Omission of the second on (perhaps dittography) improves the meter.
2569 As in Piers Plowman, Elde, the mother of infirmity, is in the service of Nature.
2573 what: Daunt explains that the vowel is lengthened by metrical stress (152).
2575 The suggestion of Age that it is possible to “depart . . . from loue algate,” reinforced in 2602 and 2612, seems in light of later events not to be true: after a single roundel that celebrates the narrator’s withdrawal from love, Roundel 2 begins “Now holde him siff from loue, let se ðat may” (3152), and Venus concludes her debate with the narrator with “where ye cast alway from loue withrawe, . . . ye trowe yowre labour vaylith not” (4960–61). See 2663–75n.
2575–79 The lover may withdraw from Love’s service because his lady has died. He has not yet been captured by “Louys foo,” Elde; he must escape before that happens. Cf. 2590–91, and MT 3230: “For youthe and elde is often at debaat.” On the phrase falle at . . . debate see Prins, 132.

as this: see 1786n.
2583 Elde here stands for the (generalized) lover. Clanvowe, 168–69: “For loving is in yonge folke but rage, / And in olde hit is a grete dotage . . .” (see Scattergood). Cf. Hoccleve, Lepistre de Cupide, st. 33, lines 225–31. Dotage involves both “infatuation” and (ModE) “dotage” (see 2587n).
2584–85 yond drye image: (cf. Elde in Rom 359–66). The statement is difficult to render literally, though the meaning is clear. Cf. MerchT 1463; Sir Orfeo 508.
EXPLANATORY NOTES

Fr: Chascun s’en rit, disant: Dieu quelle joye!  
Ce foul vieillart veult devenir enfant! [Champion’s punctuation].

2587 as a colt to rage: MED gives “play, romp, frolic,” but the expression has strong sexual overtones. Chaucer’s Alisoun is “wynsynge . . . as is a joly colt” (MiIT 3263), and his Wife of Bath “hadde alwey a coltes tooth” (WBT 602). See OED, s.v. colt, and cf. Scogan 35; such expressions involving colts are common.

2589 siithe: probably a scribal error for sithe or suth; the addition of a final
-n(s) would improve the meter (cf. Revisor A: sydys, 3542).

2592 displesaunce: this is a clear instance of Charles’s use of the word in a very strong sense: displesaunce causes death.

2597 yelde thee thy homage: cf. 2655; the vassal first “returns” his homage to his lord and then “takes back” his oath.

Fr: reprendre l’ommage.

2599 Bilevyng: bi levynge (“by leaving”) would also be possible.

2602 depart out mawgre: either departen or without would improve the meter.

2603 Burrow, in discussing the Fr poems, suggests that in his retirement the narrator adopts “a variety of middle-aged roles,” including the hosting of the banquet announced in B 84 (Ages, 185). The use of the term myddil age suggests a progression (Childhood) Youth, Middle Age, Elde (see Ages, 71), but 2561–69 suggest that Yelde follows directly on Yowthe (cf. 2647–49).

2608 case: see Alford, s.v. cas.

2610–11 graunt thi service: apparently the lover must indicate his desire to serve Love even as he withdraws from it.

Fr: Car de servir estiés desireux
Amours, et tous ceulx de sa seigneurie.

2612 ponysshment: Charles apparently wanted a rhyme in -ment and stretched a point to get one. MED cites this uniquely as meaning “jurisdiction” (S&D; Fr: “povair”).

2615 Cf. Machaut, Remede 2411–36: “. . . she will be sweet to you when she observes you with the face she has in front, generously promising you sweetness, joy, and happiness . . . [but] if you are observed by the other face, be careful, because Fortune is attacking you with lance at the ready” (Wimsatt and Kibler, 300–302).

2617 to ben lent: the phrase seems to mean “to grant.”

2625 “Plesere” is of course used ironically. S&D suggest that B 80 was already written when the encounter of the narrator with Age was composed, since “no care” is mentioned here. The order of composition was just as likely the reverse (cf. B 70 and the second dream vision); the idea of “no care” here may have suggested the idea of further development. The fact that both poems follow the general order of the Fr, in which the vision precedes the ballade, might support this argument.

2626 flet: fletten, from ON flyyja, “forsake” (S&D).

2632 dissent: S&D gloss “opposition.” Charles may have had the word disseyt in mind (which would make better sense but would not fit the rhyme; cf. 2619). MED gives only the verb (“withholding of consent”) and OED
records the meaning "opposite of consent" first in 1651. The fact that the only other use of the word (1236) is also problematic argues perhaps for some confusion on the part of the poet as to its meaning. The Fr diverges from the E at this point.

2636 In the MS, the scribe has mistakenly written EVen.

2639 ynheve: note the rhymes: apsen trelpardel/auquesynten me. yn- is one of the prefixes Charles uses productively, along with en- and for-. Poore is disyllabic.

2647-52 Though Age is male, Elde is female. A writ of attachment is a writ issued for the apprehension of a person, placing him under the control of a court of law (see Alford, s.v. attachen).

2649 in yowthe: the narrator is still in the "custody" of Youth, i.e., he has not passed out of the age governed by Venus.

2655-56 lost: S&D suggest that the scribe misread left as lest, and then wrote lost (citing the Fr "laissié," but the Fr phrase "laisié tout office" corresponds to "yelde ... myn office"). Cf. OED, s.v. homage sb. 1: "to resign homage, formally to renounce allegiance." Cf. 2597.

Fr: C’est pour le mieulx, s’avant je me pourvoy,
   Et trouveray Viesllesse plus propice,
   Quant congnoistra qu’ay laissié tout office
   Pour la suir. . . .

2663-75 This wise advice to himself accords with that of Age, but, just as later evidence suggests that it is not so easy to withdraw from love, so the eyes are specifically named as the agency by which the lover is to be frustrated in his wish for a peaceful retirement (3053-66). Cf. CA 8.2085-2236.

2669 slepy rest: a comment on the nature of No Care.

2671 at large: the phrase, though Fr (au large), was not introduced by Charles (Prins, 67; Mustanoja, 365).

2674 to his bihoue: the scribe has omitted to (for the correct form, see 1148, 4386).

2675 make: to take as mate, perhaps with a pun on make (i.e., create, invent). Inasmuch as plesaunce is usually stressed on the second syllable in these poems, this must be a Lydgate line.

2676 yn myn owen herte: an unusual use of herte in these poems (cf. 2613, 2801).

2684-86 A difficult construction.

Fr: Mais en ce temps, ne congnoissoye pas
   La grant doleur qu’il couvient que soustiengne
   Un povre cuer pris es amoureux las.

2693 bill: "formal petition"; see Alford, s.v. bille.

2695 at the lest: MED glosses "at the least" adj; surely S&D are correct in seeing it as a noun: "at last."

2696 Royal (high court) parliaments were sometimes held at festive occasions (though this was increasingly rare), when all the appropriate subjects of the realm were gathered in one place, e.g., for a royal wedding, a feast day such as Christmas, etc. It is not inappropriate therefore to refer to a parliament's being convened when the ruler "next holdith fest."

2701 S&D suggest the removal of my to improve the meter.
2704 Steele attempted to correct the sense of the line with his reading of "reklamer" (appeal, petition) in the outer margin. Apparently not understanding the word (or some version of it), the scribe changed it to "fayre speche," according to S&D (but whoever corrected the line neglected to erase "fayre" along with "speche"), giving: "Thus may y lo rekewre bi reklamer." The word "rekewre" was then "crossed through in order to get a metrical line," but the result ("Thus may y lo bi reklamer") makes no sense. MED has taken cognizance of Steele's reconstruction but presented it "Thus may y, lo, bi fayre reklamer...."

Unfortunately, the word in the margin is "rekkwer," which destroys this attractive argument. "Rekkwer" was intended to replace "speche" (which does not rhyme) and "rekewre" was crossed out either in error or because the poet was looking for a word less like the rhyme word (though, given Charles's love of word play, the former seems more likely). It is not certain whether the marginal correction was the work of either A or B. The word has quasi-legal connotations in English; Poirion glosses requerir both "demander avec insistance" and "en appeler en justice" (Le Lexique).

Fr: Et requerray, par treshumble priere
Qu'il me quitte de tous les couvenans
Que je luy fis.....

2708 For this construction, see 177–78n.

2710 The Fr version would suggest that the may be an error for for ("Pour plus seurté d'estre son serviteur"), but, as the line differs significantly in E, it is also possible that the scribe has written seturete for seturely.

2716–2813 Three lines are left blank before the address (2716–17) and two lines after. Charles handles the syntactical difficulties of versifying a pseudo-legal document (complicated by his use of short lines requiring frequent rhymes) easily. "La syntaxe, à base de subjonctifs et d'impératifs, donne une très grande cohérence à ce petit poème, dans le mouvement pressant de la requête," writes Poirion of its Fr counterpart (Le Poète, 423). The difficulty of versifying such legal language should not, however, be underestimated (see Hall, Formula Book, pt. 1, no. 102: privy seal letter, 1482). As always, the document is phrased in the proper way. Camargo refers to his "studiously imitating dictaminal style" (101).

2719 A number of the short lines in this document are apparently headless: 2725, 2752, 2776, 2809; in Fr Charles uses four trisyllabic lines per verse paragraph.

2722 That suget ly: this may be a plural used for a singular for the sake of the rhyme, a makeshift he employs in 2777 and elsewhere. It is also possible to take the phrase as "Of them that lie," i.e., most unworthy of all your subjects. The humility he expresses is typical of the narrator and a topos germane to this kind of literature, but it is also appropriate form for a document such as a petition.

2743–65 This verse paragraph outlines the offence committed against the petitioner. Following that (2754–65), he reaffirms his vow of loyalty to his lord but then asks for release from it.
2745 Apparently octosyllabic, as are 2757, 2780, 2790, 2793 and 2795–96.
2753 The who... hit: a split relative pronoun.
2765 him sifl to bow: cf. OED, s.v. bow II8c.
2766–72 The introductory clause runs to the middle of 2772; he is the subject. Desert might be taken either as a ppl or as a noun. The vassal asks to have his oath returned to him, an interesting extension of the usual feudal reciprocity. Cf. 2597.
wothe: Joseph Wright includes woth as a dialectal form and labels Somerset. The fact that it is a revision of worke may indicate that the scribe did not recognize the form.
Fr: En lui quittant son serment.
2775 sat him nere than euyr sat him shert: see OED, s.v. shirt Ie: a type of what is nearest to one's person. "[the matter] touched him as nere as his shert," 1548 Hall.
2777 to hem pat for hit cry: S&D suggest that cry is a plural used for the singular, for the sake of rhyme, but the plea might also be couched in more general terms: grant mercy to those who plead for it, i.e., the lover.
2778–81 On writing vs. dictation to a secretary and the circulation of poems in Machaut's day; see Williams, 434–39; see also Alford, s.v. lettre.
2786 See Alford, s.v. dischargen I.
2787 For this use of for, see OED, s.v. for VI.19.
2790 On this use of seid, see Mustanoja, 176–77.
2794 MED cites lay under lien 10c, "depend on"; it is rather a form of leien, "record."
2807 The line is incomplete.
2813 The petition has no closing (place, date, signature).
2814–15 See 2696n. Here the celebration which provides the occasion for the parliament is called the "fest of Loue." Charles is blending a kind of historical realism with literary fantasy. On this use of gan, see Mustanoja, 610–15, esp. 613. This is the first of a series of seven narrative ballades without envoys that detail the actual withdrawal from Love's service and retirement to the castle of No Care.
2816 I only: either "I presented it myself" or "I presented the only request that was presented."
2830 The God of Love's rhetoric is reminiscent of that of Pandarus in T&C 4.400–427.
2833 aplly: the meaning "devote" usu. requires a reflexive pronoun, but Charles occasionally omits the pronoun, perhaps for metrical reasons.
2838–2959 The narrator's withdrawal may be modelled loosely on Oton de Grandson's " Complainte de Saint Valentine," where the bereaved lover protests to the saint and Amours:

Helas! sire, pardonnez moy,
Et me laissez souffrir ma paine.
Je ne quier qu'estre en ung recouy
Pour regrecet ma souveraine,
De qui ma plaisance mondaine
M’estoit venue entierement,
Dont jamais liese certaine
Ne puis avoir aucunement. (lines 129–36)
The scribe usually matches spellings and rhymes, but in this case he
writes lade instead of lady, probably under the influence of the previous
line (see Introduction, “Versification”).
In B 76 through B 81 the scribe has not made room for a two-line
initial at the beginning of each poem, another indication that these “narrative
ballades” form a group and differ from all the other ballades in the work.
2845 ferre: the spelling with -erre, usually reserved for the comparative, is used
here and elsewhere by this scribe for the positive form.
2870 nor: an error for ner (ne wer) or perhaps nis.
2880 court of parlement: high court of parliament is a formal phrase which
emphasizes the gravity of the case being heard, in this case, before the
God of Love sitting as king.
2881 quytance: see Alford, s.v. aquittance.
2884 content: the verb ought to be reflexive, and the line is lacking a syllable.
2886 Fr: Tantost Amour, en grant arroy;
   Fist assembler son Parlement.
2887 had: hath written in error.
2888 declarid: see Alford, s.v. declaren.
2890 ther graunt vnto hit went: perhaps “was given” (from go) or “turned”
   (from wend).
2898 gouvernem: his usual form is gouvernaunce; the suffix was chosen to suit
   the rhyme (see Introduction, “Versification”).
2902 Perhaps octosyllabic.
2904 in an extreme: not recorded in MED, but see Alford, s.v. in extremis.
2909 In the Fr version the counterpart of this ballade is followed by a poem of
forty-four lines entitled “Copie de la quittance dessus dicte,” which does
not have an E version (though it is referred to in 2891). It is dated “Feste
des Mors” (All Souls’ Day) “mil quatre cent trente et sept” (1437), “ou
chastel de Plaisant Recept.” For an example of an acquittance of certain
monies due, issued by Edward III (in Anglo-Norman), see Hall, Formula
2912 hit: if it is not an error for yit, it must be taken to anticipate 2915–17
   (S&D).
2913 regally: MED glosses “royal court,” citing this line, but in light of the fol-
   lowing line Charles’s usual sense of “highness,” “majesty” is perhaps better.
2921 hardly: disyllabic (cf. 4975).
2923 A negative would seem to be missing in this line, but the meter (which
   is fine) and the line that follows indicate otherwise.
2928 as a man for ravished in a trance: see Wack, 64–65, 151–52.
2940 Presumably the place where jenesse first appears to him in his chambre
   on Valentine’s Day to invite him to make the acquaintance of the God of
   Love (in the lost opening allegory).
2945–46 We are probably meant to imagine the “Hard Road of Sorrow.”
Fr: A Confort dis: "Jusqu’a demain
Ne me laissiez, car je pourroye
Me forvoier, pour tout certain,
Par desplaisir, vers la saussoye [lieu planté de saules—Champion]
Ou est Vieillesse rabat joye."

2947 The tense changes abruptly from past to present.
2950 It is possible that at is an error for that, but, inasmuch as the line is short a syllable, I have chosen to add that.
2953 This porter (Tyme Apast) parallels that of the manor of the God of Love (Compaignie) in the opening allegory (see Introduction, "Argument of the Poem").
2956 paynt my wordis: the reference is to the colors of rhetoric (as it is in 4899). For a concise discussion of the "colors" see Hammond, English Verse, 452–53.
2957 The refrain line has been erased. The intended sense (if, indeed, Charles himself did not have the line erased) was probably something like: "Welcome (I cannot speak grandiloquently) to the Castle which is called No Care." In other words, simply, Welcome. I have numbered the phantom line to maintain the same line numbering as S&D. The Castle of No Care replaces the Castle of Humble Desire from which the opening patent was issued (54).
2959 Tyme Apast: also called Passid Tyme (2979 and 3046). Charles seems to play on the name of the constable of the castle. The exact meaning of the term is important in determining the nature of and motive behind the narrator's activities while in retirement. As Tyme Apast he is a figure from the lover's childhood, the period preceding youth (2939–40), i.e., the past. As Passid Tyme he represents diversion, pastime (also a character familiar to children and a proper keeper of No Care, but even more appropriately the usual cure for lovesickness). In 3046 the second of the two meanings is the only possible one. MED gives no meaning "pastime" (OED quotes Caxton as its earliest witness). In the Fr version of the poem Passe Temps is the only name used.
2960 The epithet Wanton is meant to be a bit of gentle teasing ("with glad countenaunce"), perhaps accompanied by some pretended sternness on the part of a former authority figure. OED first records the word as a form of address "sometimes used as a term of endearment" in the sixteenth century (s.v. wanton adj B2 1589 Greene: "Wepe not my wanton!"). S&D's characterization of Tyme Apast is unnecessarily severe. He is a man of few words and some authority who speaks in formal, self-deprecating terms. The narrator reports to the God of Love that Tyme Apast "resceyvid me in right godtly manere" (3003).
2969 quytaunce: see 2909n.
2970 in substaunce: perhaps in this case the phrase refers to the document itself (see 546n).
2971–73 Fr: Aussi de ce me remercie
Que je vouloie demourer
Avecques lui toute ma vie.

2974 Fr: Le lendemain, lettres foison.
2975 avaunce: an odd use (perhaps influenced by Fr), for the rhyme; it means simply go. It is Comfort who wishes to leave rather than, as in the Fr, the lover who declares no further need of him.
2976–77 In which: refers to the letters the narrator has written, which are not specifically mentioned.

made recommendacioun of his goodnes: this is not so un-English a phrase as S&D make out; see MED, s.v. maken 12a/b.
2978 prance: “go”; if the word is not chosen simply for the rhyme, it may indicate the rider’s eagerness for the return journey.
2981 The refrain does not fit well syntactically with the verse here; “And” seems to be superfluous, unless we are to read “and (to report) how I was to bide there with him until the hour I died,” or “and that I would abide there...”
2984 The narrator writes to the God of Love to apprise him of his safe journey and fair welcome and to apologize for his unseemly behavior at his leave-taking. The epistle, which rhymes in couplets, is laid out in eight-line stanzas in the MS. Though this MS resembles Charles’s autograph MS in many details of layout, the poem corresponding to this one is written continuously.

2987 recomaunde: the elliptical construction omits the reflexive pronoun me (as well as to), perhaps felt to be unnecessary because it anticipates “recomaunde... me” in the following line.
2992 Fr: Et si bonnes comme je le desire.
3011 I have emended to withouten to fit both the line length and the stress pattern.
3022 “The practice of merely outlining one’s message and leaving the bearer to fill in the details is... typical of medieval correspondence” (Camargo, 104).
3037 Octosyllabic.
3038 The narrator asks God Almighty to send the God of Love honor and long life.

to endure: as it does not parallel an earlier verb, “long life to live” would seem to mean no more than “long life.”

3040–43 It is difficult to say whether the division into stanzas is scribal or authorial (though the number of enjambed stanzas implies that it is scribal), but the thought beginning in 3036 is not complete until line 3041, and lines 3042–43 are part of the “signature” completed in 3044–45.
3042 The details of dating are more exact in the Fr versions of these poems than in the E (another reason to think them prior). The quittance, which does not exist in an E version, is dated 1437 (see 2909n).

The Fr letter to the God of Love gives not only the date, but the time of day:
Escript ce jour troisiesme, vers le soir,
En novembre, ou lieu de Nonchaloir.
Le bien vostre, Charles, duc d’Orlians,
Qui jadis fut l’un de voz vrais servans. (lines 547–50, 118)
yove: see 53n. The name of the sender is often followed by a word or phrase identifying his position or relation to the recipient, as in 3045. On the reason for dating the letter November, see Stokes and Scattergood.

This passage has given rise to various misguided autobiographical speculations. Arguing from the dated French version, some have assumed that Charles was about forty-three when he wrote this section or that we should see the narrator as about forty-three years old. Especially given the fact that we do not know when the E version of the Vision of Age was written (and that the French version makes no mention of middle age), such reasoning is purely speculative. On the dangers of reading such biographical details from the life of a poet’s persona, see Huot on Froissart as aging poet (From Song to Book, 317).

3045 servaunce: either the scribe has matched the spelling with the rhyme word “Orlyaunce” or Charles had the Fr form in mind (“vos vrais servans”), or both.

3046 St prints the heading “The Book of Jubilee: A Banquet of Song and Dance” at the beginning of the next ballade (B 83), but the layout of the text suggests that the scribe saw this ballade (B 82) as the first of a group of three (this ballade begins with the customary two-line initial letter, but B 83 and 84, like the “narrative ballades” that preceded this one, do not). The three ballades in turn announce the lover’s “cure,” the celebration of his Iewbile, and the menu at the planned fest.

Passid Tyme: the context implies that Charles meant “pastime” (see 2959n). Diversion is a standard remedy for lovesickness, but in this case the lover’s “cure” is exceedingly temporary. At this point the order of the poems once again diverges from that of the Fr, where the counterpart of B 82 follows that of 83. B 84 has no Fr counterpart, and its composition may have occasioned the reordering.

3053 Cf. B 71.

3057 This line is typical of Charles’s occasionally odd word order.

3061–63 The eyes apparently know how to act in a disciplined manner (3061–62), but the narrator foolishly refuses to rein them in.

y lete them renne vpon the playne: i.e., the lover does not disguise the fact that he is looking. The implied metaphor may be an oblique reference to the horse and rider imagery common in debates between the body and soul (see Vogel, 59). The eyes are controlling the narrator rather than the narrator, the eyes. Cf. the relation of the lover to his heart in B 8.

Fr: Mes yeulx tense, main et soir,
Mais ilz sont si treshastis,
Et trop plains de leur vouloir
Au fort, je les metz au pis [je ne crains rien, quoi qu’ils fassent—
Poirion, Le Lexique, s.v. pis],

Facent selon leur advis.
Note the play on playn/ plains.
more lesse: ? even less; not English, however it is construed.
It is difficult to know how to scan the opening line. Presumably the line is octosyllabic, as is its Fr counterpart (baladis is probably disyllabic; perhaps the second foot is inverted). There are problems, too, in the scansion of the lines that rhyme with this one. S&D resort to suggestions of emendations in 3073 and 3093 (and guess at a longer original word underlying the correction in 3082) to improve the meter, assuming, apparently, that the stress falls on the penultimate syllable. Judging from the high degree of regularity in Charles’s verse and the apparently usual alteration of stresses in the rest of the line in each of these instances, it would seem that (odd as it sounds) the stress is, in each case, on the final syllable, even though the final two syllables rhyme (in the Fr the inflectional ending constitutes a syllable: complaintes, estaintes, etc.). This is very unusual in Charles’s E verse and in his Fr. (That the poet had some difficulty with the poem is evidenced by correction in the rhymes of 3082 and 3084.)
The poem is unusually obscure. It is clear, however, that the narrator first envisions his retirement from love as simply an absence of the pain he feels, i.e., no care (B 71 and 82), but soon discovers that he is expected to continue writing (or “performing”) love lyrics. In the following ballade he agrees to do so, primarily in order to please his “guests” (his readers).
Fr: Essaier vueil se je sauroye
Rimer, ainsi que je souloye.
Au meins j’en feray mon povoir,
Combien que je congois et scay
Que mon langage trouveray
Tout enroillié de Nonchaloir.
The stanzas of this ballade are longer than usual, and the penultimate line might therefore be taken as the first of a two-line refrain, though it varies from stanza to stanza. The pair rollid/enroillié (“rusted”) from the E and Fr refrains is especially amusing (see Introduction, “Relation of the English Poems to Their French Counterparts”). The Fr refrain is only one line long. On the idea of despair as an inhibitor of composition, see Kelly, Medieval Imagination, 253–55.
This is the only place in the manuscript where both revisors emend the same word—a sure sign of some difficulty in the original. Revisor B’s apparent [dis]antys makes little sense, but perhaps he intended [dis]yantys (in fact another form of A’s revision). The correction of A to disyoentis does not reflect the meaning of the Fr version (sont estaintes, “are extinguished”), though it makes reasonably good sense. It is probably a form of “disjoin,” for which MED gives “dislocated”; “disjointed,” of course, comes to mean “incoherent” (of language) at a later date. On the pronunciation of disyoentis, see Daunt, 137.
The fact, however, that both choose not to separate the final two
letters of the word indicates that this is probably not to be read as a participle plus auxiliary, despite the lack of agreement in number with wordis. (St treats detaynt and depaynt as separable from is; Daunt prints only the latter as two words [137].) The poet elsewhere uses singular for plural and vice versa to suit his need for rhymes.

3083 forsotid in foly: "besotted"; cf. LBD 325-26: "Ladies be nat . . . so sotted of foly."

3087 lust: must would make better sense (or perhaps ye should be y, cf. 3091).

3088 in rage yowthe so full of play: the meaning of this phrase may be less violent than the image the MED definition of rage (wanton, wild, riotous) conjures up, as the word play suggests. As in the narrator's encounter with the constable of the Castle of No Care, where the poet uses wanton as a mild, affectionate form of address, here the E is mild and more or less equivalent to the Fr line in tone: "jeune, nouvel et plain de joye."

3089 square: MED, following S&D, glosses "grumble." In this context it means "miswrite" (or "misspeak"); he cannot express himself as he wishes.

3093-96 My paraphrase here should be taken as no more than a suggestion. Having wrestled with these lines repeatedly, I still am not confident of their meaning. S&D divide MS settis (3094) and print sett is. Comparison with the Fr causes as many problems as it solves:

Amoureux ont parolles paintes
Et langage frois et joly;
Plaisance dont ilz sont accointes
Parle pour eulx; en ce party
J'ay esté, or n'est plus ainsi.

It may be, rather, that Pleasure teaches the lovers to plead their cases effectively.

fresshely: the word seems to entail two meanings here: "depaynt" suggests the colors of rhetoric, hence the paraphrase "brightly." The word also carries the meaning "in a lively or vigorous manner" (that is, lovers have nimble tongues) to contrast with the ex-lover's tongue, which "turns away" from love talk. Depaynt is would appear to be the only instance in this rhyme set of participle plus auxiliary. Cf. HF 245-47.

3104 or y day: The unfortunate phrase is used simply as a filler (though he does not expect to celebrate another jubilee in his lifetime).

The envoy of the corresponding Fr poem differs radically:

Mon jubilé faire devroye,
Mais on droit que me rendroye
Sans coup ferir, car Bon Espoir
M'a dit que renouvelleray;
Pour ce, mon cuer fourbir feray
Tout enroillié de Nonchaloir!

Here the poet undergoes a "fountain of youth" experience and immediately acts like a young lover again (this is followed by the Fr version of B 82). S&D's title for the central narrative section ("Love's Renewal") is bor-
rowed from the Fr renouvelleray. The idea of a jubilé is completely undeveloped in the Fr poems. For a discussion of the idea of a jubilee, see Introduction, “Authorship.”

3109 The regular correspondence between the Fr and E works effectively ends here. Though the first fifty-two Fr chansons run parallel to the E roundels, there is no evidence that Charles connected them in any way with his “livre de pensée,” which Champion ends with the letter the narrator sends back to the God of Love from the Castle of No Care.

3110 The opening word, “but,” emphasizes the close relation of this poem to the previous one, as does the lack of a two-line capital (also in 3071). The emphasis is on the delicacy of the food offered, both in size (“lyte”) and in quality (“deynte”). The contrast between the ease of this poem and the tortured syntax of the previous one speaks volumes about the relative difficulty of “translation” and “free” composition.

grose mete: from the Fr (grosse viande), but Charles did not introduce the phrase into E (Prins, 143-44).

3113 For the first time, the narrator speaks directly to his readers or listeners, who are his guests at the banquet to follow. Stevens writes of late medieval poets speaking to their “gallery of lovers” (158); here Charles does so explicitly. The audience addressed is the same as the “louers” whom the narrator is attempting to induce to pray for his soul in 3105; no longer a lover, he will attempt to sing of love anyway for the benefit of his audience of lovers (and ultimately for himself). This abrupt shift in relationship between the narrator and his audience (who up till now have “overheard” the events of his love affair) from an indirect to a direct one is only one of the striking techniques the poet uses to draw us into his world.

3115 The banquet idea is carried over the roundel sequence to the verses that follow (4319-4486). This use of the metaphor of literature as food is perhaps best known from Dante’s Convivio, where in the first chapter he offers his guests (his audience) a banquet: “the food for this banquet will be served as fourteen courses, that is, as fourteen canzoni, treating of both love and virtue” (The Banquet, 1.1.14; see 1.10.1). Charles’s banquet, or fest, is provided solely for the entertainment rather than for the edification of his guests and consists exclusively of poems without commentary (cf. Rondeau CCLXXXIII, where food is love “dedans l’amoureuse cuisine”).

The source for both Charles and Dante is, of course, ultimately biblical. The idea of text as food, with images of chewing, savoring, and digesting, can be found throughout the religious literature of the Middle Ages. The most vivid visual representation of the idea is perhaps to be found in the illustrations of Rev. 10:9-10, for which see Gellrich (16, pl. I; the caption reads simply “John eats the book.” Cf. Jer. 15:16: “Thy words were found, and I did eat them. . . .” See also Curtius, “Alimentary Metaphors,” 134-36; Marks).

3116 for mysvse: I have glossed “because (of),” but S&D gloss “against misuse,” for which see OED, s.v. for 23c/d.

3117 among: Charles seems to have attempted to give the word a different
meaning in each stanza. Though not entirely sure that all are glossed correctly, I have ascribed a different definition to the word each time it occurs.

3118 short song is good in ale: an untraced proverb meaning that short songs allow more time for drinking (Whiting & Whiting cite only this line S471).

3120 The poet probably chose sweetest because it can easily apply to both food and song. Cures for lovesickness often include prescriptions for “temperate” food; Peter of Spain connects lovesickness and nobility and explains that “the material cause of the disease is an excess of seed produced in those who live in leisure, quiet, and bodily pleasure” (Wack, 89; see Peter of Spain’s prescription of cibum temperatus in his commentary on the Vaticum in Wack, 228–29). The lover, however, indulges himself and his guests in delikatesen (what Chaucer’s Parson denounces as “to delicaat mete” [ParsT 829]).

3125–29 Tilley records: “Lovers live by love as larks live by leeks (Heywood I, S. C 3v)”; a 1721 citation in the same entry explains it: “a jest upon them that eat little” (L569). The poet thus both emphasizes the extreme daintiness of the fare and invokes the modesty topos, at the same time that he implies that this is a banquet that is not a banquet. It will “feed” no one, least of all the narrator, who will find at the end of the meal that his lovesickness is aggravated, not cured (see R 103 and what follows).

If lokis is disyllabic, the line has eleven syllables, but the line that rhymes with it (3128) has ten. Though both the penultimate and the final syllables rhyme, I would suggest (for the reasons given in 3071n) that it is this line which is in error.

3128 The “bok” is the roundel collection with its framing poems, as well as, in a larger sense, the whole work.

3136 so small: this apparently modest remark points out the length of the roundel series (approximately 100 poems) while seeming to belittle the accomplishment. He may also be alluding to the “trifling” size of the individual roundels.

3137 The poet promises to revise his work if it does not please his guests (cf. 3091). The if clause parallels that in 3135. For a discussion of the roundel series see Introduction, “The Roundel.” The roundels are extremely miscellaneous, and little attempt has been made to organize them coherently. They seem to be set in a kind of fantasy land: the lover gives and receives many kisses, he flirts a good deal, and things seem for the most part to go his way. H. A. Mason reads this ballade as a declaration that all the roundels that follow are occasional poems that Charles had copied “for the entertainment of his friends” (164–65).

3141 The proverbial expression (see S&D and OED, s.v. flea 4b) is from the Fr: “avoir la puce a l’oreille, être inquiet, agité” (Littré, s.v. puce). Fr: “pusse.” Cf. Whiting & Whiting, F259, esp. Lyd Pilg 9574–78. Johnson says, “One of the meanings of ‘avoir la puce à l’oreille’ is to suffer mental anguish or torment” (114).

3144 THis: the capital H is copied from the opening line.
3147 S&D suggest that *that* may have been omitted after *For*.
3152–53 Both *holde* and *kepe* may also carry the meaning "defend (against)," "guard." The relation between this roundel and the previous one resembles the turn between the first stanza of B 82 and the rest of the poem. After he swears that he is cured of love, it becomes immediately obvious that his desires have not even been curbed, let alone extinguished.
3163 The line, which has eleven syllables as it stands, has been altered, yet still contains an evident error.
3176–77 An inversion of the more usual irregularity, here Charles writes two decasyllabic lines within a lyric written in octosyllables.
3182–83 Fr: Il m'est advis, par mon serement,
    Que sa parcell n'a en vie.
3198 Octosyllabic.
3199 Such a proverbial expression, if it is one, is unrecorded.
3211 To eueri wight hir prays doth newe repayre: people hear her praised again and again, because each time someone sees her he realizes how gracious she is. The sense of repetition in *repayre* is picked up in *renewith* (3213) and is clarified in 3216 as an oblique reference to the lady as the phoenix.
3222 An asseveration followed by an address to the lady. S&D suggest that "since Fr *foi* became *E fay*, it may well have seemed reasonable to Charles that 'joie' might be rendered 'jay'" (on the pronunciation see Daunt, 136).
3223 Octosyllabic, as is 3232.
3225 yowre body with long streight sidis tay: According to the MED, "sides" ("between the shoulder and the thigh") were commonly described as "longe" (and "smothe," "white," or "gent,"), but it records no instances of ladies' figures being "streight." This seemingly odd way of describing an ideal of beauty in the late Middle Ages receives a convincing explanation from Margaret Scott in her discussion of "The Gothic Nude" (39–47).
3230 Fr: Combien que parler envieux
    Souventesfois moult fort me blesse.
3241 It is he (or his heart) who should not speak.
    Fr: C'est droit que vostre conseil celle.
3250 As: as the catchword confirms, the guide letter should have been *A* rather than *I*. The line is octosyllabic.
    Fr: Ou regard de voz beaulx doulx yeulx.
3251 refrayne: MED (following S&D) cites, giving "remove, take away," though S&D revise to "withhold" in their corrigenda (this line only). Slander rather prevents the lover and the lady from being together. It would be very unusual for Charles to use the same rhyme word twice with the same meaning.
3252 wisshith hit me: this would seem to be an invented impersonal construction suggested by the (reflexive) form of the Fr: *Me souhaide*.
3255 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital (St mistakenly places it at the beginning of the previous line, but the scribe of the autograph [Fr] manuscript lays it out correctly).
3256-57 These lines are intended to answer the charges of Wikkid Speche. Line 3263, then, expresses the lover's dismay that the lady could even think of believing such lies.

3258-60 The scribe indicates that three lines should be repeated, though the as . . . as construction in 3256-57 makes a three-line refrain awkward. The three-line refrain works better in the Fr version:

Savez pourquoi, mon bien joyeux,
Celle du monde qu'ayme mieulx
De loyal cuer, sans changement,
Ou regard [de voz beaulx doulx yeulx,]
Dont loing [suis par les envieux,]
Me souhaide [si tressouvent?]

3261-62 Forwhi: gives the answer to the question beginning in 3255. This line prepares for the irony in 3262; the only pleasure he receives from her is her disdain.

3265 Werthefully: the word is unattested. The lady withholds her glance from the lover on account of (to preserve) her honor.

3269-74 my eye: the scribe rarely slips up on my/myn forms, but his other difficulties may have caused him to overlook this one. The poet, too, seems to have had unusual difficulty in turning the first stanza from octosyllabic Fr into decasyllabic E and maintaining a rhyme scheme at the same time: “de bien en mieulx” becomes “from gret to more goodly.” These same difficulties on the part of poet or scribe, whatever they were, may account for the length of lines 3271-72 and the incorrect form plesaunt in 3272.

3283 This might well have been an occasional poem. Cf. B 53, where there is some confusion as to whether May is male or female.

3305-6 grise: literally “to shudder”; the word was chosen to suit the rhyme. Spence reads something like “cast all concern away that troubles you” (French Chansons, 24-25), but the lover is rather asking the lady not to hesitate to test him (presumably because of some natural womanly distaste for such an act). Cf. Alford, s.v. assaien.

3311 At this point the order of roundels diverges from that of the Fr chansons. Apparently the scribe was copying from a quire containing roundels 11 to 26 that became accidentally disarranged (the manuscripts at this point being unbound); the second bifolium (R 13, 14, 23, 24) was placed on the inside of the quire, giving the roundel order 11-12, 15-18, 13-14, 23-24, 19-22, 25-26. This disarrangement must have been prior to the copying of H, as the quiring is different (the Harley quire begins with R 9) and the leaf after R 20 has been left blank, though the numbering of the roundels is consecutive. Except for this disarrangement, the order of the E roundels follows that of the Fr chansons exactly. The order of the Fr poems in the autograph manuscript was certainly approved by Charles. The fact that the order of the E poems was never corrected provides evidence that (since he did not correct the numbering) Charles did not intend that the roundels "tell a story”; the "banquet" is simply a collection of lyrics (on the reordering of some of the ballades, see Introduction, "Relation of
Harley 682 to Charles’s Autograph Manuscript”). See S&D 3138n.
3312 Octosyllabic.
3315 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital.
3319 hit: apparently omitted before cry.
3327 So willith me: “This construction is not recorded in E, but it may well have been written by a foreigner on the analogy of such phrases as Whi lustith you, 3322” (S&D). Cf. 3252.
3329 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital.
3333 werid . . . with: Charles’s use of with rather than bi might seem to support the idea that he is playing on “make war on” and “make weary,” though his use of prepositions is often erratic. See 255n.

Fr: Desplaisir me guerroye.
3343 to geef: me omitted (the scribe of the Oxbridge manuscript failed to notice the omission).
3346 For other examples of this proverbial expression see KnT 1566, Lyd BlkKn 489, and OED, s.v. shirt 2c. The image is reinvoked in 3354 when Death stands at his sleeve.
3353 The lover’s moods sometimes vacillate between extremes as in this stanza.
He challenges Love and demands justice, then collapses into despondency.
3358 S&D call attention to the poet’s “imitation” of Chaucer’s Pity, but his source, if he needed one, may well have been French or Italian.
3360 The cadence of the lines suggests that the rhymes ordeynyd/enprisonyd/bandonyd/draunsonyd/gardonyd are probably masculine (-onyd pronounced as one syllable), lines 3359–60 probably being headless and lines 3367–68, octosyllabic (onyd is monosyllabic).
3361 The phrase “the bewte of yowre goodlihed,” which seems tautologous, is in fact a bit of padding.
Fr: de vostre grant beauté loingtains.
3365 A did not correct the refrain (to agree with 3359; MS: Suche is myn), and the new line does not make especially good sense in this position. The scribe of the Oxbridge MS picked up other revisions of A, but did not think to correct this one.
3369 “Surely the lover should not wish to be freed from the spell of his lady’s beauty” (S&D); true, but Daunger’s “spell” insures that the lover remain imprisoned, i.e., that he never succeed in his suit. He asks to be released from (her) daunger so that he may be free to act. It is not impossible that this last line contains a sexual double entendre.
3371 MS: Suche is myn
3377 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital.
3384 straungely chere: OED gives no adj form with -ly (cf. adv form without ending in 4778). The line is octosyllabic.
3391 poore: disyllabic.
3405 This roundel provides convincing evidence that the roundels are a miscellaneous collection without any connection with the “plot” of the work except that stated by the speaker in B 84. The lover has not been banished from Love’s hous; he petitioned to leave it. The lady has not
“sworn his death”; she is herself dead.

3408 delyuerid: ironic.

3410 The poet plays on serviur/deserven.

Fr: Car pas ne doy ce mois servir.

3413-16 He has lost his way (i.e., Comfort) because Mysfortune has wounded him, which is to say his lady is unkind. His loss of Comfort together with the attack of Misfortune comprise his double sorrow. These last words echo the opening of the *Troilus;* Troilus himself may well have provided one model for Charles’s excessively doleful lover.

Fr: De confort ay perdu la voye,
Et ne me veult on plus ouvrir
La barriere de Doux Plaisir,
Par Desespoir qui me guerroye.

The word *entirmell* in the E may be intended to carry overtones of its other meaning, “to be locked in battle,” which would draw out the metaphor a bit further.

3419 Champion suggests (*Poésies,* 565, XXIVn) that the Fr version of this poem may allude to financial help Charles received while in England from the house of Armagnac (family of his wife Bonne). Both the Fr and the E may be occasional poems offered to ladies, but if Champion’s guess is correct, this is one of several Fr poems on other subjects which Charles adapted into E as love poems.

3424 goode doon good: Whiting & Whiting (1968) list “Good comes of good [and ill ofttime of ill]” c. 1450. The modern “pretty is as pretty does” may be related.

3430 The lover’s plan to “raunsom yow or eve” suggests perhaps a payment of kisses “before evening.”

3437 Here and in 3451, the scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital.

3458 The line is short. Perhaps hit has been omitted after hert, or goon should be agoon.

3461 Perhaps a reflexive dative with intransitive askape (Mustanoja, 100), though Charles may have simply created the reflexive form.

3463 redres: MED glosses “relief.”

3476–77 Octosyllabic.

3478 in bandone: generally means “in captivity” or “under someone’s control” but the meaning here is “abandoned” (Fr: “abandonner”). This cannot therefore be a mistranslation of the Fr, but a misunderstanding of the E expression.

3489 Either the line is a syllable too long (If the masculine rhyme falls on the plural ending) or the rhyme is spoiled.

3499–3500 arent: although MED gives no such meaning, OED records the meaning “pay rent for” from 1530. In the Fr version of the poem it is the lady (*beauté*) who would make the lover a “renter” (*rente*, i.e., one who must pay rent) for her love. In E it seems to be (the sight of) her beauty which is so dear, whereas in the Fr it is her love (unless “yowre most plesaunt fresshe
bewte” is a form of address, as is “vostre tresplaisant beauté” in the Fr, but this seems unlikely in this context). These lines are decasyllabic.

3505 soiowr: OED gives soiorn(e, soiourn(e. The final -n may have been omitted to fit the rhyme.

3511-14 These lines should rhyme abba. It is difficult to account for the spelling soeware, especially as it seems to represent a spelling more common in the b rhyme: (a: vphore/evirmore/fore/soure/sore as against b: honour/soiour (favourel/valowrel/tresoure). It is most likely a simple error for swore (“sworn”) by the scribe, who did not pay close attention to the rhyme scheme.

3522 Spence suggests that “the sense of this poem depends upon taking ‘see’ and ‘say’ as paranomastic [sic] and, at least subliminally, synonymous [sic]. So, for example, in lines 2, 5–6, 10” (Chansons, 229). The idea is attractive, but unfortunately the forms used for the two words do not suggest this except in the rhyme word say (“saw”) in line 3522, and this spelling was surely chosen to “match” the spelling of day/away. Though the play on say is evident in 3521–22, the poem does not depend on their synonymy; he sees visions of his lady and he speaks to her of those visions both in her absence (that is, to no one) and in the letter he sends.

3531-36 An unusually regular use, for Charles, of the caesura.

3542 sydys: d may be a miswriting (or misreading) of δ [eth].

3545 Fr: Se mon propos vient a contraire
Certes, je l’ay bien desservy.

3568 In the Fr version he lives in distress for three months; as usual the English lover suffers more.

3590 rekeuer: apparently disyllabic.

3601 within would seem to be required by both sense and meter.

3602 In R 33 through R 43, “kissing poems” alternate with poems in which kisses are not mentioned (see also R 47, 48, 57).

3619 At S&D’s suggestion, I have inserted with after were.

3621 For the spelling ben, cf. 5715.


3638 currishshenes: S&D (“ill-breeding”) are closer to the mark here than MED: “attitude of a (?mean) watchdog.” The word, both here and in 1796 means “baseness, ignobleness” from cur: “small hunting dog . . . esp. a mongrel, cur, stray” (MED). Both the evesedroppere and Daunger are showing their baseness by their opposition to the lover. (OED, s.v. currish: mean-spirited, base, ignoble).

3643-56 Fr: Comment vous puis je tant amer
Et mon cuer si tresfort hair
Qu’il ne me chault de desplaisir
Qu’il puisse pour vous endurer?
Son mal m’est joyeux a porter,
Mais qu’il vous puisse bien servir

Las! or ne deusse je penser
Qu’a le garder et chier tenir,
Et non pour tant, mon seul désir, . . .
S&D object strongly to Charles’s revamping of this poem in its E version, saying that he has destroyed the argument of the whole poem by changing it. He has indeed altered the relations within the poem, but he has not written nonsense. “Which” (3645) must be taken to refer to the lady, who is not attentive to the lover; this idea is picked up, then, in 3650–51. This is the kind of change the poet commonly makes.

3647 Octosyllabic.

3657 prayse: line 3665 makes clear that in this context it must be “prize” and not “praise.” Fr: “prise.” Spence suggests that the Fr is a loan word from E, but Poirion glosses prisier, “apprécier, estimer” (Le Lexique).
cossis Dowche: an interesting expression that does not appear in the Fr, it is not recorded by MED, but clearly refers to ceremonial kisses as opposed to kisses of plesaunce. Spence translates “sweet” (OF douce), but ceremonial kisses are hardly sweet and would provide a weak contrast to kisses of plesaunce (Chansons, 74–75, and “French Chansons,” 290). The Germans (or Dutch) were known for excessive ceremonial kissing, providing exactly the kind of specific detail that Charles is attracted to in his E poetry. On the disappearance of the kiss from French feudal ceremonies and its retention in England, see Major (esp. 526 n. 30). On the other hand, Jones says that “most kisses in MHG literature occur on fixed occasions, particularly at welcomes, farewells, reconciliations, and negotiations” (201), and he goes on to distinguish between French (erotic) and German kisses (209). On formal occasions there were of course rules about the niceties of the giving and receiving of kisses (one example of an etiquette book containing such guidelines is The Honours of the Court mentioned by Vaughan in his Valois Burgundy, 184). This charming poem is a fine example of the delicate but perfectly prepared little birds the generous host has provided in abundance for his guests.

3660 towche: i.e., kiss; somé do it for the sake of appearances and in order to win friendship, but others for baser physical reasons.

3661 crosse or crowche: any coin with a cross on it.

3679 That: S&D call this a possible scribal error, but perhaps not. The lover says he has “oon poore hope,” which is “that my faynt hert . . .”

3681 nar: plural for singular, perhaps intended as a subjunctive (ner).

3685–3703 Cf. R 57. Poems like these have been used as evidence that Charles had one or another serious attachment (or affair) with one or more English ladies. (Champion suggests the wife of Robert Waterton, or even Alice Chaucer, in “Prince des lis,” 23). They are more likely the equivalent of greeting cards or simply compositions in a sub-genre masquerading as jeux d’esprits.

3688 The poet’s switch from subjunctive to indicative is not unusual.

3699 alls: “also”; crossed double / occurs within a word nowhere except here.

3704 This roundel contains a play on “seekfull,” “seeklew,” “seek,” “seeke.”

3720–22 In the Fr version of this poem the lover “buys” kisses, not outright
but against the collateral of his heart (Fr: "en aurés mon cuer en gage"). The kisses he receives he owns absolutely ("pour les prandre par heritage"). In the E version, the lover likewise leaves his heart "in morgage," but it is also given absolutely to the lady to dispense with as she wishes (3720). I can see no solution to this paradox. Apparently the roundel has been only partially recast. (Its inconsistency is no argument for a translator, as the inconsistency would have been just as apparent to him as to the original author.)

3723 me seems to have been omitted after with.
3724 dwelle: the form (without -s) follows the exigencies of the rhyme.
3729 bargeyne: see Alford, s.v. bargain.
3730 with forsorow: if Charles intended forsorow as a noun, it is the only compound with for- he creates to make one (though ME allowed such formations). The use of the word forswell (puff up with pride or anger) suggests that the poet may have intended forsorow to mean something like "extreme vexation." S&D print for sorow and suggest that with means "against" ("though Daunger against [the bargain] swell up on account of sorrow"), or perhaps "therewith."

Fr: Mon vueil et mon desir entiers
Sont vostres, maugré tous dangiers.

3732 Fr: partage.
3740 The scribe has erred in beginning this line with a large capital rather than the following one (and S&D reproduce his capital).
3761–62 S&D’s reading, "It is grievous to him to be awakened from sleep (he will be in a bad temper)," is plausible, but my suggestion seems more straightforward.

Fr: Jamais ne puist s’esveillier!
Faittes tost et parlez bas.

3766 The Fr version of this poem is addressed to a man ("mon bel amy sans per"), presumably from a woman. The E poems are in fact unusual in this period for maintaining the masculine voice throughout the lyric sections.
3770 Fr: Car mon cueur m’a voulu laisser.
3772 Alwhere: MED does not pick up S&D’s gloss, "everywhere," but see OED, s.v. allwhere.
3777 S&D suggest that ther has been omitted before in.
3784 Deservaunce ("deserving") does not seem a likely reading; it is probably an error for Deseraunce, "desire," in spite of my desere in 3791.

Fr.: amoureux desir.
3786 ioyous, fresshe manere: the spelling is made to match the rhyme; Charles’s usual spelling is manar.
Fr: manoir de Joye.
3795 Octosyllabic.
3807 slepen: "This seems an early case of the incorrect use of -n in the verb-singular" (Hammond, English Verse, 473); cf. 1391.
3821 So that: "though" (see MED, s.v. so 16b).
3825 Fr: "bonne lettre seelee."
3831 *me* has been omitted after the second *bas*. Burrow cites Skelton’s “*Speke, Parott,*” 104: “*Bas me, swete Parrot, bas me, swete swete*”; and *MilT* 3709: “*Com ba me,*” saying “the allusion is evidently to a popular song” (*English Verse*, 292).

Fr: Vostre bouche dit: Baisiez moy.

3833 Daunger stant so nygh: perhaps in her eyes?

3842 This image is absent from the Fr.

3845–58 The poet has changed the central metaphor, though retaining some of the same imagery of the Fr version, which turns on the idea of great quantities of deception vs. minuscule advantages in love. In the E version Charles emphasizes the inextricably entwined double nature of love.

3859 the: probably a scribal error for *thy*. The line is proverbial (Whiting & Whiting, F634; Tilley, F694; see also Morawski, no. 171; Bohn, 6, 41; Le Roux de Lincy, 2.232 and 485). Champion writes of the Fr version of this roundel, “*Vers 1433? La chanson est sans doute pour Philippe le Bon*” (2.566), an idea he seems to have found in Chalvet’s 1803 edition. Champion’s dating “system” is, however, untrustworthy.

3869–70 A common style of epistolary closing.


3876 A proverbial statement cited uniquely in Whiting & Whiting (F282), but references to related proverbs (F141, F428) show that the idea is a common one; cf. Cotgrave, s.v. *coeur*: “*Qui n’a coeur, ait jambes*: Prov. *He that dares not trust to his hands had best trust to his heele; or, he that dares not fight may do well to flie.*” Poems in which proverbs appear seem to come in loose clusters. In particular, this part of the roundel series and the second ballade sequence seem to be thickly sprinkled with them.

3881 An octosyllabic line, but S&D suggest on the basis of the Fr (“*Retrayez vous soubz l’estandart*”) that *vndir* has been omitted before *the*.

3887–90 The author of the Fr counterpart was not Charles (S&D posit a lady as author of the Fr chanson and suggest that it “has been altered so that it may be addressed to presumably a different lady”). See 1285n. Inasmuch as Charles includes in his E poems a version of a poem by Christine de Pisan (B 59) and another by Philip the Good, duke of Burgundy (B 113), the fact that he may have turned a roundel by another hand into E (or indeed Fr) is no impediment to the argument that both English ballades are his own work (see also 4011n). On the other hand, another poet may have borrowed Charles’s lines 1285–88 for the opening of his or her own chanson.

3892 so wis God helpe me so: cf. *BD* 550, 1235; *NPT* 4598; and Pearsall, *Variorum*, 252.

3902 *hevy*: in the sense of too large a quantity, too much. The word was probably chosen for its connotations of “sorrow, woe.” The poem would seem to involve a sexual metaphor. None of the remaining roundels have Fr counterparts.

3905 The scribe neglected to indent the line in order to leave room for the usual capital letter.
496 EXPLANATORY NOTES

3915-28 This roundel, full of word play, is a favorite of anthologists. Its dreamlike atmosphere filled with very concrete images and clever puns may account in part for its appeal. An interesting comparison has been made to Wyatt’s translation from Petrarch, “Who list to hount” (Leyerle, 114–18), as well as to his “They fle from me” (Nathan; see 1340n). The sentiment expressed is quite unlike that of the rest of the work.

3919 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital.

3920 hay: used as a call with hunting dogs. This is another instance of the poet “creating” a verb out of a word (in this case an interjection) not earlier used as one. The sense here seems to be that the lover has been too forward, assuming too quickly that his feelings are returned and thereby alienating his lady (hers is the heart of 3916). The line is clearly related to the proverb “Not to hallow until one is out of the wood” (OED, s.v. halloo 2b). The modern Dutch proverb: “roep geen hei, voor gij over de brug zijt” (never call “hey” till you are over the bridge), suggests that this “hey!” may be more proverbial than technical (nothing like it is to be found as a call in The Master of Game).

3929–34 The meter, the grammar of the first stanza, and the form of the refrain are all somewhat problematic. S&D suggest that a syn has been omitted after fowle in 3930 (cf. 110), which leaves only 3931–32 as octosyllabic.

3935 This line (as well as line 3956, the corresponding line in the following ballade) should be a b rhyme rather than an a rhyme. I am grateful to Gregory Bouman for pointing this out and for sharing his discussion of these roundels with me, in the form of an unpublished paper entitled “Refrain from a Musical Tradition: The English Roundels of Charles d’Orléans.”

3936 S&D suggest MS hem refers to “ladies” (though it has no plural referent); perhaps it is an error for her.

3937 The form of the refrain is a complete anomaly among the roundels of Harley 682. It is more likely a scribal error than a poetic innovation, since the first line makes no sense in the context here (3940) or at the end of the poem. If the first two lines are repeated, the poem makes sense but does not follow the roundel form, and the same is true if all five lines are repeated. I have therefore printed the poem as it stands.

3945 to bewail: parallels endure in the previous line.

the tyme y evir se: the day I was born (S&D).

3953 yowre hard suffraunce: apparently an unusual collocation, meaning “your cruel patience (in allowing my suffering to continue).” Cf. LBD 545: “hard suffraunce” (translating Chartier, st. 65, line 517: “durté”).

3977 In religious terms, make satisfaction. This is another frequently anthologized poem, one of a series of “kissing poems” among the roundels. For another lyric built on the images of confession, see Rondeau CCCLXI. Cf. also 5275–78.

3980 The charm of this poem lies, among other things, in the twist of asking forgiveness only if he does not restore the stolen property, i.e., the kiss.
3984 Richard Green has suggested that this may refer to a love token in the shape of a heart ("Hearts, Minds," 147).

Whiting & Whiting cite this line, as well as 4344–45 (S381), but in fact the two expressions are different. The later passage describes deception; this one a sincere wish. (Neither expression is equivalent to wearing one's heart on one's sleeve.) In fact this line may not involve a proverbial expression at all. The lover simply wants to give the lady his heart; the obvious place for her to put it would be in her sleeve (where small knives or other objects were often carried).

3999 high parage: from Fr ("de haut parage"), the phrase did not originate with Charles (Prins, 227).

4004 Though the spelling *bethynike* does not occur in the MS, the scribe has written *be* here and in 4010.

4005 Octosyllabic. Lines 4005–8 invert the correct rhyme scheme, rhyming *baab* instead of (properly) *abba*.

4011 This roundel is an adaptation into E of a poem published in Vérard's *Le Jardin de Plaisance*, an anthology printed in 1501 in which a number of Charles's Fr poems appeared (it does not appear among the poems of O):

Adieu ma tresbelle maitresse
Adieu celle que iayme tant
Adieu vous dy tout mon vivant
Adieu lespoir de ma liesse

Je ne puis parler de tristesse
Tant mest le partir desplaisant
Adieu &c.

Car pleurs et lermes a destresse
Seront en moy doresenuant
Quant ne verray le doulx semblant
De vo verray le doux semblant
Adieu &c. (no. 363, fol. 95 verso)


4015 The scribe neglected to leave space for the usual large capital. From here to the end of the series the scribe becomes increasingly careless about leaving room at this line in the roundels (ordinary capitals are used at 4030, 4043, 4057, 4071, 4099, 4127, 4141, 4155, 4169, 4183, 4211, 4281, 4295, 4309).

4025–38 This would seem to be one of the poems which was not looked over and corrected by the author. Although *drivith* is not an unusual form for Charles to use as a plural (4027), both *dilayes* (4026) and *dayes* (4027) are awkward plurals. Line 4034 has been left incomplete (lacking a word to rhyme with *wayes*), which complicates the reading of the stanza. Daunt attempts to explain *say this* as "a scribe's 'improvement' on an original *say es*, or *say is*, 'say it'" (*Rhymes*, 137), but Charles never uses those forms, and the line is short.
S&D suggest that *ther* in 1435 may be an error for *thes*, and they gloss *respite* (1436), "put off." The difficulty with this gloss is that it is the heart (which is dying of sorrow) who is being addressed (unless "ferful . . . vayne" is some sort of parenthesis). Perhaps: "Fy, fearful heart, who continually seeks new (other) ways for the sole purpose of granting me (your servant) a temporary respite, but all in vain."

S&D see reminiscences of *KnT* in this roundel, esp. *KnT* 1042–45 and 1491–94.

4048 *bat* as was: perhaps "such as was."

4053 Though he mentions her *jantilesse*, the lover's emphasis is on the lady's beauty, which he expresses as *goodlynes*.

4063–64 Octosyllabic.

4067 Here Charles chooses another epistolary theme, composing a roundel which gets no further than the material that precedes the letter proper.

4069 4068 or *pat y* to yow write: i.e., before I begin the substance of my letter.

4082 The image of the lover's childhood returns again, with fond memories of love received from his "nursemaid" and "governess" (i.e., his late lady). This lyric is an odd mixture of the erotic and the religious.

4095 This roundel seems to draw out the notion of the lady as (the child's) teacher.

4099 Three *fic's* on the lady's three *nay's*.

4104 *afirmore*: perhaps a garbled form of "evermore" (orig. *?afirmore*) or *?afterhand*, "afterward."

4105 *lijf'ywrought*; perhaps *ybrought* was the original intention. On the other hand, the awkward infinitive in the following line might confirm the suspicion that the author's grasp of his syntax was not always firm.

4109 *me bithought is of*: this construction seems to be some sort of conflation of a passive (I am bithought of) and a reflexive ([I] bethought me of).

4120 S&D suggest that *now* should not have been omitted before *wel*. Though Charles uses the construction frequently (1342, 3854, 4087, etc.), it is more likely that he did not intend the full form here. The line makes perfectly good sense without it, and the addition of an extra syllable would spoil the meter.

4126 *towchis nyse*: S&D gloss "impressions," following OED (s.v. touch, III.13b). The phrase "tacchis nise" in 4335 suggests that this is another form of (or an error for) the same phrase; I have consequently glossed "bad habits" (i.e., foolish behavior).

4140 *fetis lite*: "little feet"; a double plural. The physicality implied in this roundel anticipates 4827ff.

4145 *gef y durste or may*: the lack of concord between the verbs is probably due to the need for a rhyme.

4151 This roundel reverses the metrical pattern in this work of a shorter (octosyllabic) first line: here the opening line is decasyllabic; the rest, octosyllabic. This is one of the very colloquial roundels that hint at the
casual, witty style of the later Blois rondeaux.

4152 Lydgate defines the word *townyshe* in his description of the townspeople crowding around the arriving Jason and Hercules in his *TB*:

\[\text{\textit{\textbf{P}}\textit{s} \textit{eury} \textit{c} \textit{h} \textit{e} \textit{w} \textit{old} \textit{e} \textit{w} \textit{h} \textit{i} \textit{s} \textit{h} \textit{e} \textit{f} \textit{e} \textit{l} \textit{a} \textit{w} \textit{r} \textit{ow} \textit{n} \textit{e};} \\
\textit{\textbf{P}}\textit{ei \ w} \textit{r} \textit{e} \textit{m} \textit{e} \textit{s} \textit{h} \textit{o} \textit{r} \textit{u} \textit{d} \textit{e} \textit{t} \textit{o} \textit{ \textit{st} \textit{ar} \textit{en} \textit{a} \textit{d} \textit{t} \textit{o} \textit{g} \textit{a} \textit{se},} \\
\textit{To \ g} \textit{a} \textit{p} \textit{e} \textit{\& \ l} \textit{oke,} \textit{a} \textit{s} \textit{i} \textit{t \ w} \textit{e} \textit{r} \textit{e} \textit{r} \textit{e} \textit{a} \textit{m} \textit{a} \textit{s} \\
\textit{\textbf{P}}\textit{i} \textit{s} \textit{t} \textit{\a} \textit{\textit{w} \textit{\textit{y} \textit{\textit{s} \textit{h} \textit{c} \textit{e} \textit{f} \textit{o} \textit{\l} \textit{k} \textit{d} \textit{d} \textit{o} \textit{\textit{s} \textit{\o} \textit{\textit{\o} \textit{\c} \textit{om} \textit{\textit{w} \textit{h} \textit{\a} \textit{\i} \textit{n} \textit{\y} \textit{n} \textit{\textit{l} \textit{y}}}

Late medieval writers opposed urban to courtly behavior (whereas our age opposes rural to urban), so that we might gloss *townyshe* behavior as (paradoxically) “boorish” (the same sort of meaning is intended by *lewde* in 4155).

It is curious that William Dunbar should have written a line involving this odd collocation: “3e be to townage, be this buke, / To be my ladeis presoneir” (Kinsley, 9.39–40; also 13.10). Kinsley glosses “bourgeois, uncourtly.” There seem to be no other verbal echoes of *Fortunes Stabilnes* in Dunbar’s work.

S&D think that the “book” referred to is the book of roundels, but Kinsley’s gloss, “an oath sworn on the Gospels,” suggests that it is equivalent here to simply “I sweat!” (In the opening allegory of the Fr version, the narrator enters the service of love by swearing with his hands “sur ung livre,” 382.)

4154 on: St reads *ou* here and in 4156 and seems to suggest that they are scribal errors for *you*. The scribe uses the spelling *you* (never *ou*) in only four instances in this MS, as against 524 instances *yow*. It would be easier to read *on*, “one.”

4155 knakkis askaunce: *knakkis* is monosyllabic. S&D suggest that the phrase may be an error for *knaves avaunce* and read “Your manners . . . cause you to take pleasure in the way you allow such worthless fellows to, etc.” This would solve the apparent problem of the lack of a verb in 4155–56 (*wise*, “leads”). Lydgate’s “definition” of townishness, however, points to “gaping” as the charge against *Love* (and indeed looking for and gazing on Beauty is an important love problem; see B 82). Love causes problems by letting the eyes look unrestrainedly at the objects of their affections; they should look at them only at the proper times, and otherwise only once a week. Cf. R 87, 88, 91.

4159 glaunce: though not given with this meaning in MED (*glhenchen*, “glance aside”) and not in OED before 1583, the word obviously refers to the act of looking (cf. 4156).

4166 Cf. 3486 and B 33.

4170 The poet generalizes from one woman to womankind.

4193 For another instance of this expression see 4779. The expression is not otherwise attested, but *nice* in this instance must mean something like “smooth” (in the social as well as in the physical sense). Perhaps the closest definition given by OED is in the phrase *make it nice*, “display reserve” (s.v. nice). The speaker is counselling his heart (rather sternly
and impatiently) to give up its wild swings of emotion and compose itself. For such emotional swings as a symptom of lovesickness, see Wack, 63–65. MED follows S&D in glossing “delicate.” Whiting & Whiting cite Fortunes Stabilnes uniquely.

4195 bi seynt Gyle: St. Giles once cured a man possessed by the devil, who was disturbing the faithful in a church. Perhaps his heart’s alternate weeping and smiling (4198) reminds the lover of the actions of a madman (Golden Legend, Aegidius, September 1).

4196 titil fitill: OED gives only fiddle in this sense, (though tiddle in the sense "fidget, fuss, fiddle" is attested in the eighteenth century).

4199–4200 The scribe has written both refrain cues on the same line, leaving a blank line at the bottom of the page. I have separated them and numbered each to maintain S&D’s numbering.

4201 The scribe wrote an ay, which he apparently picked up from 4193.

4202 or: MED explains (2b): introducing a clause which tells the consequences of failing to obey a preceding command or entreaty (cf. MilT 3712).

4203 fil . . . from: lit. “polish out or away.” In this context the phrase might be roughly paraphrased “shed this hypersensitivity.”

4212 Octosyllabic, as is 4218.

4221 Almes is disyllabic, as the spelling in the refrain lines makes clear. The following line is hexasyllabic.

4229 S&D are probably correct that the scribe has mistaken y met, intended as present (“meet”; rhyme: feet), for a ppl, “correcting” as to is. Daunt suggests that ymet could be the ppl of mete(n), “measure” (141).

4236 Cf. 3063.

4240 glide: a word probably chosen for rhyme rather than meaning.

4253–54 The answer is the lady, of course.

4263 fondist: “are mad”; MED does not record the word in this sense, and the first use as a vb in OED is ?1530 (s.v. fond v, but see fond a and sb 3). It may, of course, be an error for fonnist (cf. 368).

4265 An ironic tidbit in light of the banquet in which it is served: a retirement from love.

4277 poore is disyllabic.

4280 See Alford, s.v. dischargen II.

4286 desperation: S&D suggest that this is an error for desesperaunce, which would better fit the meter. Either form is possible (this one is easily constructed from despair; Chaucer uses both despair and desesperaun, and the line may well be headless, with the stress on the second syllable of desert. Charles never uses the longer form (cf. 1018).

4291 Oblesse is apparently Fr obli with a noun suffix added, on the analogy of noblesse; porrar should perhaps be ?porrai. (In 5984 the poet uses the word oblyaunce, uniquely.) Charles produces macaronic verse elsewhere: “Satis, satis, plus quam satis, / N’en avez vous encor assés?” (Chanson LXXXVI); “Non temptabis, tien te coy, / Regard plain d’atrayement” (Chanson LXXXVII); these have no E counterparts.
The woeful speaker seems to address his guests here and in the following roundel. The fact that roundels 95–101 were never copied into the manuscript (the leaves are blank except for roundel numbers) suggests that Charles composed these last two poems as a closing for the series before he had completed all the others.

Galen: trisyllabic in Chaucer. The word play in this roundel revolves around the image of the serving of wine at the end of the banquet of roundels (see B 84). Seeming to refer to two famous physicians from among the ancients, in line 4308 it becomes clear that the names are puns on the names of two drinks. Ipocras is a cordial, a concoction of red wine, sugar, and spices drunk for pleasure as well as for its medicinal value (see R&S, 3396ff., but also TB 2.58, where “pyment, bawme, and ypocras” are clearly intended as three remedies). Galen is also a medicinal drink (CT, C.306, Skeat’s note in Works, 5.266, and the Cynurgie of Guy de Chauliac, 631, 636). The host is saying to his guests, “This drink will not do me any good, but I hope that it will please you (even though it is not as clear as I would like).” At the same time, 4305–6 echo such sentiments as the Black Knight expresses in BD: “Ne hele me may no phisicien, / Noght Ypocras ne Galyen” (571–72). At this point the ex-lover makes clear that his supposed retirement from Love has been in vain and that he is just as “sick” as ever, in spite of having gone through the motions of a retreat and cure (on the usefulness of wine in treating lovesickness, see Wack, 63, 81, 104, 190–91).

trobly: means both “cloudy” and “distressing” (cf. CA 6.354–64). Charles is fond of the literal and metaphorical opposition of cloudy (ME trobly, Fr troublre) and clear (ME fyn, aclere, Fr esclercie) liquids (see 1711 and Rondeau CCCXXV).

hit is probably omitted before doth; its addition improves the meter.

Grace was commonly said at the end of the meal. The narrator claims he cannot say a proper (religious) grace because he is a servant not of God Almighty (a clerk) but of the God of Love (4321–22). He then proceeds to say a kind of grace anyway, ending with the blessing in the stanza beginning in 4382. Both this section and the washing/wishing that follows (ending with the dance) are part of the courtly ceremony celebrated in both life and art in the late Middle Ages (on the dance and the ceremony surrounding it, see Stevens, 167–69). Fifteen blank lines at the top of this leaf may have been left for decoration.

fedde: error for feode “infeof” (S&D). The food image was probably picked up from what preceded.

strijf: MED omits this spelling.

enpresse: form of emprise (Daunt, 144).

browderure: the spelling is extraordinary. Broudur/brouderie/broudering are all possible spellings for “embroidery,” whereas a browderer is an “embroider.” Perhaps Charles added an extra syllable (or altered the suffix) to fill out the meter and match the rhyme.

The sense of this line seems to be that a fast-talking man without honor
might choose women for trivial reasons, calling more than one woman his lady, which is a linguistic impossibility in the honorable lover’s language (and contrasts strongly with the narrator’s rhetoric). In real life, however, things could run differently, even among the nobility; for an account of the Duke de Berri’s disgraceful suggestion that one should dissemble, see Green, “Troilus,” 206.

toy: though not attested this early by OED (or Halliwell-Phillipps), the word here appears to mean a person as plaything, a trivializing term for “woman” (OED, s.v. toy 8).

keverkope: “kerchief”; a Frenchman’s Anglicization of cuevrechief, “cover-cop”?

Charles’s use of sleue here (and in 3984) implies that there is already a developed metaphor of wearing a lady’s heart (not one’s own) on or in one’s sleeve, represented here as wrapped in a keverkope, an object reminiscent of his kercher of plesaunce (see Cotgrave, s.v. manchon; also Gairdner, 1.40–41). Whiting & Whiting cite Skelton, Speke, 2.21.423: “he careyth a kyng in hys sleue, yf all the worlde fayle.” The expression also exists in Fr: “avoir une personne dans sa manche” (Le Roux de Lincy, 2.174); “chacun a un fou dans sa manche” (Bohn, 12). Like 3984, this line does not refer to the kind of show of feelings so scorned by Iago in Othello 1.1.64.

so: the manuscript clearly reads so rather than lo (S&D’s reading), probably in error.

report: the meaning “pronounce, assert” is slightly strained, but the word was probably chosen to fit the rhyme.

hem: properly it should be yow, since he is addressing lovers, but such small shifts are common in these poems.

S&D print lov is, but the spelling lov occurs nowhere in the MS, whereas lovis (possessive) occurs twelve times; the scribe misread the line.

avoche: Daunt explains the vowel as lengthened by metrical stress (152).

champioun: see Alford, s.v. champion.

Octosyllabic.

In this final stanza of his “prayer” the poet returns to the beginning, calling on the God of Love to protect his faithful followers.

as that y haue seid aboue: one more proof of the distance of this discourse from orality.

The twelve blank lines between 4388 and 4389, whether intended for decoration of some kind or not, clearly mark a division between the grace and the customary washing of hands at the end of the meal. The section that follows the prayer involves an elaborate play on wishing and washing. (Charles turns everything—eating, drinking, washing—into words.) Harrison calls this section “an after-dinner reading” (Allegorical Mode, 92).

Though the scribe usually matches the spelling of rhyme words, he here allows wessheldisshe, perhaps because he saw the pun and realized that the wishe spelling would obscure it. This list is similar to the list of Love’s commandments in the opening allegory (see Introduction, “Argument of the Poem”).
The repetition of *no* is awkward, but the remnants of virgules in the erasure imply that, as elsewhere in the manuscript, a word is repeated. The word play is drawn out here: "your hands are not dirty" also means that the narrator has presented no "foul" thoughts in his roundels.

*soth/swerthe*: final *-e* is no problem in these poems, but the rhyming of long and short *o*, as well as *o* with *or*, is difficult to account for. Daunt suggests that the *r* is an error and that *wothe* is a form for *wot*, glossing, "No other knows me as now I know myself" (146). The gloss does not fit the context particularly well, but the line has been altered and may have been incorrectly or incompletely rectified.

Mase: MED gives "be confused, bewildered" and cites this passage, but surely the context requires something like "be distraught" (with grief) or "faint" (with woe or sorrow).

loo/do: on the rhyme, see Daunt, 144.

The comparison follows the form of a number of others (I wish I were as *X* as she is *Y*) but does not work in the same way. If the lover were as "poor" (i.e., had as much) as the lady is rich in Fortune's gifts, he would be rich indeed. This equation is reinforced by the following one: I wish I were her equal in all amendment (of my faults). I have attempted to number the poet's "wishes," but other readers may feel that my divisions should be adjusted here and there. The passage is a difficult one. As usual, it is hard to know whether the author was aiming at a particular number of items (perhaps twenty?). (S&D title this section "End of Banquet, Three Wishes.") I have not attempted to reproduce Charles's syntax in my paraphrases because of the complexity of this single, long utterance.

S&D's suggestion that there is no pause at the end of this line may be correct; it is possible, however, to read: (I wish) my heart served God as much as her spirit does (is set wholly to do).

S&D suggest that *hirid* is a corruption of *spirid* and that *lich* is a repetition of *liche*. More likely *hirid* is an error for *hir* and two related comparisons run over three lines.


Although most of the wishes occupy two lines, these two lines seem to augment the previous two rather than to contain a new wish.

S&D (corrigenda) suggest that *with* is an error for *within*. Here he again varies the structure, substituting a *lijk* construction for *as... as*.

By itself the line is difficult, but the following two lines explain it: they would be alike in *parage* ("worth, nobility") if he were as noble as she is generous.

The gret vnsoft: cf. 1454 and *HF* 36.

creature: an unrecorded use; the word was probably chosen for the rhyme (for a similar construction, cf. 5279).

This sudden turn reminds the reader that the purpose of his retreat is to assuage his grief, a purpose he has plainly not achieved.

Here the poet once again suggests the link between poetry and music
in referring to the little poems that follow as “symple” dances.

4483 is for yow go: S&D gloss “? is being fetched for you” (OED, s.v. go 58b [only citation 1594]); Charles uses for to mean “from” in 1686, however, and it is just possible that the reference is to the removal of tables for dancing after the “spice” and wine is served at the conclusion of the banquet. Wine and sweets were customarily served at the very end of the meal or after some after-dinner amusements (cf. SqT 291ff.; LGW 1104ff.; Skeat, Works, 2.506, also 5.266; MED, s.v. spice 1b: Ponthus 15). Even today in the north of England spice may refer to gingerbread, sweetmeats, dried fruit, currant cake, etc. (Wright, s.v. spice).

For a more detailed description of a banquet much like this one, also drawn from a courtly poem, see Machaut’s Remede: the noble company enjoys dinner followed by music, dancing, and games such as chess and tables. Then a knight calls for wine and spices (“le vin et les espices”), which the squires hasten to provide. That finished, it is 3:00 P.M., and time for the guests to depart (Wimsatt and Kibler, lines 3909–4020). See also MerchT 1765–70; SqT 283–96.

4485 Here the banquet proper ends. The miscellaneous lyrics or carols that occupy 4486–4637 are the “symplil” dances he recommends to his guests in 4480–81. For another courtly banquet followed by dancing, see LBD. Nineteen blank lines between this section and the “dances” that follow may well have been left for decoration.

4487 S&D label the following poems as “caroles,” but the term should probably apply only to those beginning in line 4569 (Champion likewise labels the Fr equivalents of 4569–4637 as “caroles”). Inasmuch as the banquet and the entertainment which follow are transparent metaphors for a body of texts, and the narrator explicitly refers to “daunce[s]” that follow, it would be reasonable to expect lyrics that derive from dance forms, such as the virelay (or possibly the carol, such as the retainers of the God of Love dance in RR, 727ff.; cf. the caroles danced after supper in Sir Gawain 1026 and 1655). See Greene on both forms (lv–lvii).

4487–4504 This minimalist lyric bears comparison with Christine de Pisan’s rondeau: “Dieux / Est. / Quieux? / Dieux. / Cieulx / Plaist / Dieux” (Wilkins, 92; Roy, 1.185).

4502 See 947n.

4505 S&D seem to read 4505–4552 as constituting three poems, but (even though each begins with a two-line letter and is accorded its own MS page) the sense seems to indicate a single three-stanza poem, just as 4487–4504 does (note, e.g., the use of For in 4521). Perhaps Charles intended a series of three three-part poems (“dances”) in ascending order of complexity (with the poem beginning in 4553 coming between the second and third, perhaps in the voice of the narrator/host). Each of these “verse pieces” is preceded by a few blank lines, for reasons unknown (see Introduction, “Scribal Layout of the Roundels”).

4535 greve: for rhyme cf. 3427: greveleve.

4547 turne and lye: the image of the suffering lover who has taken to his bed
is only implied, in keeping with the extreme brevity of the poem.

4553 tyre: silk, originally from the city of Tyre. Inasmuch as the poet repeatedly mentions kerchers, keverkopes, and such, it is not unreasonable to suppose that this “pece of tyre” is a similar bit of cloth with romantic associations (see 4557)—perhaps a gift from his lady. The poem may well have been composed for an occasion.

4557 feure white: Cf. Gower CA 6.239-49 (see also Clanvowe, line 41n).

4559 The image here may be of a man “drunk on love,” formasid by too large a draught of amorous pleasure.

4569 In the Fr version the lover complains to Merencolie, not Fortune. Richard Leighton Green, in discussing “The Carol as Dance-Song,” emphasizes repeatedly the alternation of burden and refrain as characteristic of the carol and discusses Charles of Orleans’ “carols” as “artificial and literary,” without refrains. (These poems have no headings in the MS; the label is editorial. They do indeed have refrains, but severely truncated ones.) Green says of the carol, “the conventions of courtly love touch it hardly at all” (English Carols, xliii–lv).

4570 ye: the scribe has written yow in error.

4575–76 is: apparently an error for nis.

Fr: Mais nul bien n’en puis avoir

Dont mon cœur est presque mort.

4591 myn affyance: trusty companion; in apposition to Hope. Hope is an advancing warrior, aiding the lover to free the heart from prison (4610).

4603 It is unclear in all of these carols whether the refrain line should be written out or left in the abbreviated form of the manuscript.

4604 Parde: the guide letter is clearly a p, but the context suggests that perhaps it ought to read Tarde, “tardily.”

Fr: Vous lui avez fait promesse.

4609 go: the word is not used transitively in ME.

4618–21 I invite correction of my paraphrase (4619 might be taken as parenthetical?). This quatrain varies significantly from the Fr, which is simpler and more positive:

Espoir m’a dit que Leauté

Vous fera souvenir de moy,

Car votre bonne vouenté

Ne peut faillir, comme je croy.

Charles has obviously recast the relationships, referring to the lover’s rather than the lady’s loyalty and projecting a lady who is disdainful.

4637 In my view, this marks the end of the second major division of the work (the dream of Age, the withdrawal from Love’s service, and the Jubilee), which separates the two love affairs. The third section is made up of the vision of Venus and Fortune, the encounter with the new lady, and the second ballade sequence.

4638 Fifteen lines at the top of this leaf were left blank, perhaps for decoration.

hertis: lovers. Just as Idleness keeps the gate of Guillaume de Lorris's Garden of Mirth, so the idleness of Charles's narrator is the perfect state of mind in which to encounter Venus (the "occupation" of the banquet having done him little good).

Camargo calls this episode (preceding the dream vision) "rather gratuitous" (105). It is, on the contrary, essential for a variety of reasons: it shows the narrator continuing to deceive himself in thinking that he is writing poems that are not born out of his own emotional state; it provides the setting for and triggers the vision that follows; and it highlights the idea of Fortune's stableness, the concept that epitomizes the work.

4650-54 The phenomenon of asking another to express one's love in poetic form is not uncommon in medieval literature (and life as well); Machaut's narrator in FA is asked to send a "lay or complaint" to the nobleman's lady on his behalf (1501-4). Robbins cites a rubric to one of Lydgate's lyrics that indicates it was composed for the use of a "squyer" ("Court Love Lyric," 210).

4657 S&D take love as an error for low.

4668-69 Chaucer's House of Fame, made of beryl (3.1184-85), sits on a roche that is shiny and clear as alium de glas (3.1125-25).

4670 a benche of moss & gras: a garden seat (built of earth, topped with carefully-trimmed grass, somewhat moss, and tiny flowers, held in place by wooden boards, wattle, or brick) was common in medieval and Renaissance gardens. For a short discussion and a series of illustrations see Crisp, 1.81-83, "Turfed Mounds and Turf-Topped Benches Used for Seats," and vol. 2, Figs. 114-134; More hears of the wonders of Utopia while seated on such a turved bench. What is obviously unusual about this "mossy bench" is that it is built, not in a garden, but on a cliff overlooking the sea (cf. FK T 902, where the garden "ther bisyde" is often spoken of by readers as near the seashore and Dorigen's castle, but is elsewhere in the tale described as "yond, at swich a place" [1326 and 1489], and lies on the other side of town from the castle [1502]). Turved benches are mentioned in LGW, F.204 and in F&L, 50-53. On this setting, see Introduction, "Themes and Conventions."

4673-76 I had to plan it carefully since (1) it had to be done and (2) I have difficulty writing intricate verse (a good joke). Cf. HF 245-48:

What shulde I speke more queynte,  
Or peyne me my wordes peynte  
To speke of love? Hyt wol not be;  
I kan not of that faculte.

as ... that: both are redundant (as is as in 4670).

4678-79 The progression "seide," "sprede," "wrote" would seem to imply either that seide is simply used to mean "composed" or, perhaps more likely, that the poet first composed it by saying it over and over out loud until he had it the way he wanted it and only then spread out his paper and wrote it down.

4680-4735 The lyric the narrator writes is a double ballade with envoy. Those
readers familiar with the narrator's *complainte* on Fortune in Machaut's *Remede* (and the advice of *Esperance* that follows) will see how this *complainyn* plays off that more traditional view. Cecily Clark notes a similar motif in Charles's Rondeau CCXIII, where Fortune is described as "tousjours une" ("Perspectives," 258; see also Introduction, "Title of the Poem," and "Sources and Influences: Gower"). The ballade functions here as a *mise en abyme*, in the definition of William Calin, "a literary or artistic structure contained within a larger narrative whole which reflects, repeats, glosses, and/or anticipates the thematic concerns or esthetic processes of the whole" ("Medieval Intertextuality," 3).

4685 symplisse: another reference to his state of ignorance in his youth when he first became acquainted with Love. "Whereas" cannot introduce a statement of fact in contrast to that of the main clause; the poet says that Fortune is unchanging: she has always been hostile to the narrator.

4691 a sympill wight: *don* is to be understood before this phrase from the following line.

4701 *bi* seems to have been omitted after *ordaynyd*.

4705-6 Octosyllabic. The image of Charles of Valois, son of Louis of Orleans, complaining, in the person of his foolish narrator, that Fortune has given him an unpolished simplicity coupled with a "tobisy demenyng" is rich.

4712 now were me wondir wise: S&D gloss: "(?) defend me wondrously." The poet is attempting to flatter Fortune by attributing wisdom or prudence to her and suggesting that her best course of action is to give him what he wants.

4718 S&D print *in noyouslesse*, read *in noyous lese*, and gloss: "you feed me in evil pasture" (Cf. *T&C* 2.752). The poet probably did write *in noyous lese*, but a charge that suits Fortune better is: "you harrass me with painful deceits" (cf. 1407n and *LGW* 1545). The scribe picked up the wrong spelling of the ending from *redresse* in the previous line and consequently joined the two words. The three rhymes in this stanza, *-ise [i:z]*, *-ese [e:z]*, *-esse [es]*, do require scribal care.

4724 an hire: the scribe has written *am hir* in error. The correction would also rectify the rhyme (Daunt, 139).

4733 *truse*: according to OED, first recorded as a verb ("truce") in 1569. Ralph Hanna suggests "truss up" (see OED, s.v. *truss* 1b, first use 1394).

4739 S&D suggest, probably for reasons of meter, that *soth* may have been omitted following *all be hit*; but cf. *WBT* 1172: "Al were it that myne auncestres were rude."

4741 *sevyn*: "sleep"; OED records no form without *-e*; MED records the form here and in 6412 as possible errors (cf. 4759 and note Charles's use of *tayne/twayne*).

4742 *evyn*: S&D call its final position un-English. The rhyme is masculine.

4747-48 Fully: Owen and Owen read "folly" (but print *Filly*): "So it is not, in my opinion, any folly to pay attention to them." Read as *fully*, the word order is no stranger here than elsewhere in this work.

4755-57 The narrator falls asleep on the bench that stands on the cliff. The
rocky cliff stands on the headland or high place at the shore which extends out over the sea. These details give the reader a sense of height and wildness (so uncharacteristic of the love vision) as well as a momentary sense of heightened reality. (In Ballade LXXV Charles mentions "Dovre sur la mer," and he may have had such a site in mind in composing this passage.) At the same time, the sea must evoke the idea of Fortune, who will soon appear and play a decisive role in the narrator's future (cf. 1043, TB 2543–45, and Introduction, "Setting"). Note that the setting is identical in his waking and in his sleeping states.

4760 Cf. Chaucer's Venus in HF 128–37 and KnT 1955–62 (the astrological Venus), and PF 260–73. Lydgate says of Venus's cote: "men myghte se / Hir shappe throug-out, so was hit maked, / Lych as she had in soth be naked" (R&S 1563ff.).

4761 were: a pronunciation current in the fifteenth century makes it a sound rhyme with there (cf. 4976).

4762 Cf. PF 237–38.

4764 Kercher of plesaunce (Fr: "couvreachief de plaisance"): the veil of pleasure. As in line 404 and elsewhere, the poet puns on the name of a fine lawn made originally in Piacenza (Charles's use of plesaunce generally implies both desire and its satisfaction). The play on plesaunce was popular in the fifteenth century. (For some idea of how very sheer such cloth could be woven in the late Middle Ages, see, e.g., Scott, color pl. 10 and 11.)

A kercher (rather than, e.g., a vayle) was by definition a head-covering (see Pippinier, 74 and passim), though it could also be used to wipe the face, bind up a wound, etc. (cf. 4344). Lydgate's Venus, for instance, wears a chaplet of roses, "for kerchef pleynly had she non" (R&S 1575). The use of a head-covering as a "loin cloth" is intentionally remarkable. It is therefore a good guess that Charles took the term from Chaucer's PF, in which Venus is dressed similarly to his own goddess (269–73). As usual, Charles borrows but does not imitate; he replaces Valence with plesaunce, a word and a place-name which offers better opportunities for word play. (On the veil as an attribute of Venus—and of Fortune—see de Tervarent, s.v. voile.)

4765 owl: see Introduction, "Allegorical Figures." Lydgate lists birds known for "here falshed & here doublinesse ... Iayis, Pyis, Lapwyngis & these Oulys" (TG, 21). Nor is the owl accordant with beauty: in the reverse anatomizing of a lady, one poet says she is "Most fresch of contenaunce, euyn as an Oule" ("Vnto you," 6, Robbins, Secular Lyrics, 219–20; see also Le Roux de Lincy, 114: "On ne peut faire d'un hybou un espervier"). Venus is appropriately accompanied by doves (as here) or sparrows.

4766 owt more suffisaunce: though unattested, the phrase must mean that this Venus Marina floated toward the dreamer on the surface of the water "without any other support" (or means of conveyance); Venus's usual means of transport is the scallop shell. Perhaps it is an unconscious acknowledgement that her mode of transport was mysterious, her shell having been transformed, due to a medieval error in transmission, into the
shell she is often portrayed carrying (see Twycross, 18–22). Fortune, in contrast, arrives in a chariot.

4767–68 Owen and Owen translate, “I seemed to wake up”; but the dreamer is only commenting on the dream: it seemed to be real.

4770 Charles keeps his reader in suspense for a full twenty-five lines before revealing that the lady is Venus.

4773 Wearisome because she travels over the cold sea, without adequate clothing. Owen and Owen comment on the narrator’s “graceful wit and innocent boldness” (413), but both his gallant concern and his rhetoric are foolishly out of place here.

4777–78 The enjambment of this stanza into the next is a brilliant stroke. In the earlier stanza the lover is courtliness personified. The stanza ends mid-sentence, halfway through an offered kiss, and after the pause occasioned by the end of the stanza, the new stanza presents us with a picture of an angry goddess. The narrator’s initial greeting and offer of a kiss is a faux pas of the first order. He realizes this only when he finally recognizes Venus in line 4794.

4779 nys . . . as purse is of an ay: see 4193n.

4781 The lover, foolishly, cannot decide. Owen and Owen attribute No to Venus (and split the responses in other cases, as well), but the response of the narrator is typical of him, and there is no reason for Venus to insist that he recognizes her—or Fortune (cf. 2552–62, 5102–3, 5109).

4782–83 The fact that the meter runs properly suggests that there is no unintended repetition in who . . . who in 4783. Perhaps related to Lean’s proverb, “Poor men and idiots are ever the most confident and bold” (4.84). This proverbial passage probably has no relation to that alluded to in SqT 491 (to beat the dog before the lion; Morawski, 1669). In any case his response serves to show that it is the last thing the narrator is expecting to hear, and the tenor of the statement (together with the expression in 4779) characterizes Venus as uncourtly and lacking in the severe dignity of Cupid.

4786 where: Daunt explains that this pronunciation (sp. ware, rhymes are) is a common Northernism (138). Cf. 5712. How should apparently read thow.

4788–89 The original rhyme forms were probably deverelere (S&D). If, as they suggest, the narrator’s deyuure to Venus is the writing of the roundels, it is also a statement by the poet that he will continue to write love poetry, and it recalls Geffrey’s writings in the service of Venus, Cupid, Love, and the servants of love in HF (614–28). Both poets are rewarded for their services. On the other hand, the use of the future is odd if it refers to the roundels we have just read. Owen and Owen take deyuure as a reference to the chant royal the narrator has just written and translate: “I thank you for your service . . . that you shall perform for such as are my servants.”

4790 ye: the scribe apparently first wrote y shulde, then went back and added a very narrow e.

4798 The meter suggests that sympesse should be symplesse.
4801 Cf. the encounter of Gower’s lover with Venus (CA 1.148ff.).
4802 Geoffrey in HF also lives as “an heremyte” in the service of Love (659), though for different reasons. The image is not uncommon.

Blue was, of course, the color of constancy, for which the narrator has no use since the death of his lady (cf. 1153–54); it was also a kind of cloth (Stafford blue, blue of Ypres, etc.). Rossett probably involves word play on the color rose (which is appropriate for a lover) and russet cloth (though a lover would never actually wear such rough cloth). S&D associate the rosette with RR, and it is the color, apparently, of the heart in 4808. The figurative meaning of tawny probably comes from the Fr word tanner: “fatiguer, ennuyer, tourmenter.” Cecily Clark suggests that this word play, which also occurs in R XXXIX but is otherwise unattested in ME, provides some evidence that both poems are written by the same author (259 and n.). A. E. B. Coldiron has provided me with a collection of sixteenth-century references associating forsaken lovers with tawny, taken from the Paradise of Dainty Devices, ed. Rollins. Apparently Charles thought his audience would understand the connotations of the color. Tawny can also refer to a kind of cloth (OED, s.v. tawny B2). The stanza is constructed on a play on the socially recognized connotations of four colors (black, blue, rose/russet, tawny), of which the last three involve triple word play: the color, its connotation, and a name for a kind of cloth.

4813 With this question, Venus gets straight to the heart of the matter. The whole point of the lover’s retirement to the Castle of No Care was to soothe his pain, to cure him of love’s malady, and ultimately to make him forget his misery. Reed treats this dialogue briefly in his chapter on the Middle English debate tradition (164).

4815 bidyng: the meter would allow for place after bidyng (cf. 1518). His vital misstep in the argument that follows is his admission at the outset that he does not, in fact, dwell in No Care, the only safe refuge from love. Instead, he mourns for his dead lady, thinking of her constantly. This makes Venus’s strategy of causing his transference of his affections to a new lady considerably easier. This passage shows a marked difference from his state on first entering No Care “joyfull at hert” (3001).

4816–21 Cf. BD 595–97.

4818 to and to: S&D list this under “Uses” in their introduction (xliii) and gloss “side by side.”

4822–43 The lover apparently treats his retirement to the Castle of No Care a bit like hotel living, returning when he pleases (which is often) to the places where his love affair took place. Influenced by Troilus’s recital of his memories of Criseyde (5.565–81), Charles presents a lover who is a bit more specific and concrete than his Trojan predecessor. The when clause of 4822–26 has no resolution.

4825 aundir: this may be an eccentric spelling of yondir, or (more likely) it is a slip by the scribe who copied an/au from the previous word but did not go back to correct it, simply adding four more letters.
4829 S&D suggest *aslepe* or *on slepe*, but the cadence of the line (and the absence of *And*) suggests that it is headless.

4830 lorche [rhymes worche/chirche]: a version of the medieval game of tables (see 1629n and Murray, "Tables," 61, 65).

4834 This game of Post and Pillar followed by the narrator’s profession of love is mirrored precisely in the events of the narrative section that follows the dream, in which the narrator meets the new lady (519ff).

4835 The poet’s use of "so" indicates that the game of Post and Pillar was known as a game associated with *luf-talkynge*; see 522n and Introduction, "Courtly Occupations: Post and Pillar."

4840 This passage certainly gives the reader a very different idea of the relationship of these two than could be gleaned from the first ballade sequence. Thomas W. Ross in his investigation of taboo-words in fifteenth-century English finds that *pappis* was an inoffensive word in the late Middle Ages and that Scots such as Henryson and Dunbar associated it with descriptions of gentle ladies (151–52).

4851 riche: probably a scribal error for *riches*, "treasure" (i.e., my lady, making *thoughtis* the possessive); otherwise *hit* in the following line has no (singular) referent. Death is the thief.

The narrator remembers many things, including that she died in a certain bed; he stops just short of saying he was actually present at his lady’s death (and it is pretty unlikely that he would have been).

4853 smokke: again the narrator speaks in strikingly concrete terms, this time naming a piece of intimate apparel.

4854 shift: (ME *shith*; not given in MED; OED first use 1598) Though they give "?shift" in their glossary, S&D suggest "sheath," which is not attested as an article of clothing in the fifteenth century. (Their statement that the phrase "painted sheath" referred to clothing in the Tudor period is not quite accurate, esp. in light of Hieron 1613: "thys painted sheath and gay clothing" [OED, s.v. sheath 1d]). Chaucer uses *sethe* figuratively in Scogan 39, but the metaphor is clearly of the holder for a knife (which can rust). To call her smock a lady’s "scabbard" does not seem especially apt. S&D find more likely the reading "sight," referring back to *thoughtis riche* in 4851 (the spelling *sythte* is recorded in OED; the *sh-* is completely anomalous). MED (suggesting that *sithis* is an error for *sitht*) gives "The visual cognizance (of sb. or sth.), view; also, an instance of such cognizance, a visual perception; also fig." Being unsure how the lines would then run, I have opted for "shift."


4858 His "service" is to think constantly of the joy he had in serving his lady.

4864 Kissing the walls of the saint’s cell, treating an object (even a stolen one) with veneration, and using loaded words like *profession*, *ancre*, and *contemplatif*, all play on devotion to God and devotion to (the memory of) the lady. Venus, of course, has no use for such "holiness."

4866 wherof serue y: cf. *AL* 15.

bete the ground: this proverbial expression takes many forms: "beat the air
(water),” “fight against the wind” (cf. Lyd TB 3.771.7086–89); cf. Cotgrave, s.v. barre: “Batre l'eau. To loose his labour, or employ his time to no purpose.”

4867 vnto: the preposition (in place of of) is unusual in this context.

4869 “Remembrestow that thow art a man?” (Bo 1.pr6.55–56). The tenor of Venus’s inquiry is markedly different from that of Philosophy. Whereas Philosophy was trying to show Boethius that he was a rational animal (made in the image of God), Venus attempts to show the lover that he is a human animal and so ought to follow the nature of animals. In Les Éschéz Amoureux it is Pallas who warns the lover that he is in danger (from listening to Venus and the God of Love), reminding him that “God has made man higher than the beasts of the field and reason should rule him”; as the lover of the RR does, the narrator proceeds to defend both deities (Galpin, 290).

4871 employ it: S&D assume that the pronoun refers to the narrator’s life (4862). A much closer referent would be lymys, i.e., genitals. The poet’s use of the singular pronoun supports this meaning (ME lim is often used in the singular, and Charles is frequently careless with number). The poet surely intended the ambiguity. Cf. WBT 115–34.

Venus and Nature are commonly allied under the banner of procreation. J. A. W. Bennett points out that the atmosphere in Chaucer’s PF grows “more sultry, more sinister, and at the same time more voluptuous” as we move from the domain of Cupid to that of Venus (91–92). Charles, too, makes clear distinctions between the (overlapping) realms of the God and Goddess of Love. Cupid is the god of erotic illusion while Venus stands for the erotic force (see Lewis, Allegory, 121).

4879 as: completes as wel in 4876.

4881 in yowre arme: cf. MilT 3405: “She sholde slepen in his arm al nyght.”

4883 S&D gloss say, “try” (corrigenda).

4884 The ex-lover’s outrage at Venus’s suggestion is reminiscent of Amant’s taking Reason to task for her frankness in RR (6928ff.).

4890 The rhetoric echoes that of the narrator’s other encounter with Venus in B 70 (The envoy contains the same extreme dolefulness). It is likely that that ballade contains the seeds of this full-blown allegory, including Venus’s “half” a smile (2403), her addressing him as “my frend,” and her offer to solve his problems. He in turn laments the loss of his lady to death. The “ofcast creature” echoes the refrain of B 59, and 4892–93 echo 2584–85.

4897 toy: though the phrase might be taken as “foolish fancy,” my guess is that Venus is once again being sarcastic, referring to the “amorous sport” of the grave (see OED, s.v. toy 1 and preceding note).

4899 paynt: MED, citing this line, glosses “feign,” “deceive.” Much better is 6b (cited for line 2956): “give a false appearance, disguise, color (one’s words)”; the reference is to the colors of rhetoric. Venus is referring to her own manner of expressing herself: she holds nothing back.

4905 If she were as wonderful as her reputation seemed to proclaim, you
would have wanted to take a new lady—an odd sort of argument.

For a sy: S&D and Daunt (151) agree in glossing the word "spot" or "stain," citing Wright, s.v. sie (where, in addition, "sieless" is glossed "stainless, unblemished"). OED (s.v. sye sb2 2) gives the same meaning (from 1781). S&D add the suggestion that it is an error for fy.

it: apparently superfluous (?perhaps some kind of confused impersonal construction).

Cf. T&C 1.1.

goth ... to: "to betake oneself to (an employment or occupation),"

OED, s.v. go 34.

he vsith fillith of chaunge: the behavior of hypothetical lovers in these two lines should logically contrast, but "abundance of fickleness" (S&D) and "flattery" are not opposite. Fillith [filth] is "vile speech" (cf. Rom 7527–30: "Fayr-Welcomyng in prison is, / That ofte hath played with you, er this, / The fayrest games that he coude, / Withoute fylthe, stytle or loude"). Both fillith (in this context foul only because it tries to mask inconstancy) and flattery (in a positive sense) are thus forms of speech, as well as approximate opposites.

ye make a gret perail: the phrase surely means "you are making a great fuss" (?you act as if it were a great risk), but no such meaning for perail is attested in Fr or E. S&D gloss "preparation."

Octosyllabic. S&D suggest the omission of so in 4942 to improve the meter.

where: repeated in 4953, 4960, for which use see Mustanoja, 338.

The advice could be phrased in many ways; Venus is telling him to calculate what he would like to achieve before using his observation of other peoples' tactics to show him how to reach his goal.

 Cf. 2668.

Cf. 5133–34. Echoes Crisseyde's speech to Diomede: "it happen may, / That whan I se that nevere yit I say, / Than wol I werke that I nevere womghte!" (T&C 5.991–93); but the expression is proverbial: "Quand les yeux voyent ce qu'ils ne virent oncques, le coeur pense ce qu'il ne pensa oncques" (Cotgrave, s.v. Oeil).

The figure of Fortune in the Morte Arthure likewise descends "downe fra the clowddez" wearing a "surcott of sylke" covered with gems, etc. (3250ff.).

The line is unconnected to the sentence grammatically, but it explains why the chariot was so wondrous.

Fortune was usually represented as a queen in the Middle Ages and was often represented riding in a chariot. For a discussion of the figure of Fortune, see Introduction, "Allegorical Figures." Cf. Chaucer's Fame in HF 1361–1418.

S&D suggest that but may be a scribal error for by, but but may be used to introduce an emphatic statement, while very God may stand alone. nyse: MED cites this line and glosses "foolish, absurd, senseless, mistaken"; in this context the word means "extraordinary."
Here the narrator emphasizes the dual nature of his vision: it is both miraculous and realistic (see Introduction, “Fortune”).

Cf. KQ 1114–15, st. 160: “And ane surcote sche werit long that tyde / That semyt to me of diuere hewe.” Lydgate’s Juno (R&S 1392) also wears a surcoat of many colors, richly set with stones. His Mercury wears a rich robe “Whos colour, sothly, was nat stabel / But dyuers, and variabile, / And of mony sondry hewe: / Chaungyng alwey newe and newe” (lines 1725–28); his Cupid is similarly clothed (lines 5340ff.). Such changeable robes were common in the language of allegory.

later to mean “bodice,” in this context it would seem to be a more inclusive term meaning all the parts of the dress which cover the body, as distinct from the arms (OED, s.v. body 6) and would be more or less synonymous, then, with surcot. The “playtis” or folds would then be of the lower part of the “body” below the hips (or “skirt”).

thorugh & thorugh: usually means the same as in ModE, but he seems in this context to mean “all over.” Jewels were usually limited to a row of besants down the front of the surcoat, but the Morte Arthure contains a description of Fortune as a duchess dressed in a “surcott of sylke fulle selkouthely hewed,” with “Bruchez and besauntez and oþer bryghte stonyes / . . . / Hir bake and hir breste was brochede all ouer” (lines 3250–57). Such garments are to be found in medieval illuminations. For a description of actual fifteenth century jewelled garments, see Evans, 67. I am grateful to Roger Wieck for help in sorting out many of the details of Fortune’s costume.

as (4982): more usually with.

arayse: present tense is used for preterite to suit the rhyme. Linguistically, it is difficult to see how the folds could “rise” up “and down.” The poet’s need for a rhyme may have overridden that for sense. S&D suggest that the intended rhyme might have been either balayse/arayse/wayne or balise/aris/wise; Daunt explains the rhyme as a Northernism (148). The idea is that, as Fortune moves, the folds of her garments move in such a way that the eye sees the blue of the sapphire change into the red/purple of the ruby and back again. The many different kinds of movement described create an esthetically pleasing but bewildering show of color and splendor.

purnal: a color name which, from classical times through the Middle Ages, denoted color ranging from red, through purple, to blue (see Planché, 198). The Purple Heart, given to American soldiers wounded in combat, recalls this traditional ambiguity.

S&D gloss MS forgoth, “is outstanding” (perhaps suggested by OED, s.v. forgo 3b obs. rare “to overreach, deceive” [1382 Wycliff]; see MED, s.v. forgon 4b). The scribe seems to have taken the word as forgo, but it is probably an error for forgeth, “counterfeits.” MED cites no instance with of, but perhaps the preposition belongs with substaunce.

pyrche: MED cites only this line and glosses “pleated fabric? pleating?”; according to the OED a “pinch” is a pleat or gather (s.v. pinch 8).
Perhaps the word should be *pynches* or *pynched*. Scott has suggested that the word may be a form of the word “pinked,” since “the linearity of true pleating . . . is alien to French or British taste at the time of Charles d’Orleans” (private correspondence).

The grammar of this passage is difficult, though the meaning is fairly clear: just as genuine ermine is generally decorated with (black tips of ermine) tails, so this “counterfeit ermine” (perhaps intended to suggest Fortune’s untrustworthy nature) is made of finely pleated lawn powdered with eyes (Scott calls tears embroidered on clothing “a fairly common conceit among lovers,” 97). It is difficult to envision finely pleated lawn which could counterfeit ermine, except in its whiteness and perhaps its soft contours, but this is apparently the idea. The poet does not specify where the ermine is to be found, but “open” surcoats (which is probably what this is) were often trimmed along the edge of the great openings or arm-holes (sometimes around the hem as well). Rarely the entire upper part of the garment was trimmed with ermine.

4996–97 The figure of Fortune in James I’s *KQ* likewise wears a “surcote . . . of diuere hewis” and a copious mantle “large and long”; it is her mantle, rather than her surcoat, that is furred with ermine with its black spots (1114–22, st. 160–61; this is common in representations of Fortune). There were many ways of fastening mantles in the Middle Ages, including drawing silken cords (often gold, with tassels) many times through rings attached to the fabric. Houston lists the popularity of full and voluminous draperies as one of the leading features of early fifteenth century dress (163).

Such fabric is described in Fr as *changeant* and is called shot silk in E (Piponnier, 114–16, 382; OED, s.v. shot). Planché claims that the technique of weaving two colors together, one warp and one weft, was used as early as the seventh century in England (s.v. Purple). For more detail, see Dodwell, whose description explains why representations of this kind of silk in medieval illuminations appear to be powdered with gold flecks (145–50).

5002 *tisew*: a rich kind of cloth, often silk interwoven with gold or silver, not necessarily diaphanous in texture; *tisew* was used for hangings and in garments where more heavily-woven materials would be more appropriate. We are probably to imagine cloud shapes (as well as moons, 5007) woven into the cloth, perhaps with metallic thread (or perhaps embroidered or appliqued). Such brocaded materials are typical of the period before 1420 (see Scott, chap. 4, and Gradon, 344 n. 2).

5003 there & here: inverted for rhyme (cf. 5012).

5005 In the inventory of 1389 of the house of Orleans, a “chambre de drap asur” is said to be brocaded with the rays of the sun across the sky (Graves, no. 135, 72).

5006–7 worst: Charles perhaps provided an exemplar to his scribe which was unclear at this point. The word, which is clearly written in the manuscript, is certainly some form of the word *wrought* (*worft, worht, wort*, *wrost*). The
last of these spellings is used by Revisor B in the following line, and Charles uses wroff in line 3288 [rhyming with thou3t/ought]. (Neither OED nor MED lists any spellings with s in place of f.)

Such a garment need not be thought wholly a product of the poet's fantasy; Richard I apparently had a mantle which was "ornamented with half-moons of solid silver, and nearly covered with shining orbs, in imitation of the system of the heavenly bodies" (Fairholt, 102). The deleted line, "some of them wholly full, a very marvellous sight," introduces a third phase of the moon (it would be impossible to represent the fourth, the new moon). The poet apparently felt that waxing and waning moons were sufficient, and this image fits in with other dual images of Fortune's nature.

othir some: see Mustanoja, 212.

5008 Cf. T&C: "Wait ... upon the chaungyng of the moone / Whan lightles is the world a nyght or tweyne" (3.549–50).

5011–15 ron: continuous ornamental embroidery used as a border on garments is called reminge orfrais. The border of the cloak is evidently decorated with a rose pattern in which the roses alternate from side to side along a snaking golden stem (on sprede, cf. BlkKn 31–34).

Some of the leaves would be fastened (appliqued or embroidered) to the garment, while others would hang loose and flutter with every movement; both kinds were decorated with exquisite pearls. "The almost ragged appearance of [dagged edging] could be complemented by literally thousands of tiny gold or silver plaques or bells hanging from one houppel-ande. Raising an arm, or taking a step, would have caused the slashed edges to move, each piece hanging slightly differently, while the metalwork ensured that every movement caused a musical clinking" (Scott, 83; see also 87–88, illus. 86, and the border of the mantle the king wears on 92).

The grammar of these lines is not as "loose" as S&D suggest. The "bei" of 5014 could refer to either the roses or the leaves or both.

5016–17 so playn ... so smothe: while it is difficult to see the difference between these two qualities, one is clearly intended (cf. Lyd BlkKn 50: "the soyle was pleyn, smothe and wonder softe"). In this case "playn" may signal a contrast with the three-dimensional effect of the leaves just described (cf. 1040), and "smothe" may refer to the fineness of the material; or perhaps Charles had in mind Fr plain, "of one color," contrasting with the many colors of the surcoat and the outside of the mantle. The form of pratiely would imply that these are adverbs, but they may be intended as adjectives modifying lynyng. On the interchangeability of adjectives and adverbs, see Mustanoja, 314, 648–50.

5017–44 The octosyllabic line suits this kind of description well.

5019–20 soven: Littré gives the full name of the flower as souvenez-vous-de-moi (but identifies it, as does the MED, as the forget-me-not). Skeat distinguishes between the soven or remember-me (veronica chamaedrys, which Littré identifies correctly) and the ne-m'toublie-pas or forget-me-not (myosotis), but because the names are nearly identical in meaning, confusion
between the two was (and is) probably common. Skeat was commenting on a passage from AL: “margarites ... /... were accompanied with mo, /... m’oublie-mies & sovenez also; / The poore penses ne were nat disloged there” (Chaucerian Pieces, 535 n. 61). S&D seem to suggest that Charles borrowed the references, but it is more likely that he was the source for AL (see Pearsall, Floure and Leafe, 18, and notes to 61–62, 85–88, 170, 225, 526, 533). Fortune is unmistakably associated with the imagery of love by the decoration of her mantle with roses, remember-me’s, daisies, and pansies.

In the inventory of the house of Orleans of 1408 we find “une robe d’escarlate rousée, doublée d’un cendal rouge, brodéde toute à rateaux et semée de fleurs de ne m’oubliez mie, sans perles” (Graves, no. 526, 114; see Champion, Poésies, gloss., s.v. oblies mie).

Pancy: viola tricolor, Heart’s Ease, Love-in-Idleness; from Fr pensée, “thought.”

5022 serpe: the word is used both of a necklace and of a baldric (OED, s.v. baldric 1), though this serpe (OF écharpe) must be the former. S&D describe this neck ornament as a collar, but collars were generally heavy, flat, linked metal ornaments which lay flat against the chest, and it is difficult to match this description with the whirling dice of the text. See following three notes.

5023 balis: a “bale” of dice consisted of three die (see Murray, History of Chess, 703, and OED, s.v. bale sb.3, 4). The “bales” or sets are broken. Perhaps we are to imagine a neck-piece made of a great many unmatched dice. MED gives no instances of broken applied to sets of things; the first instance cited in OED is 1741.

5024 fillen out: “fell”; according to OED, a southern form of the preterite. The word out is difficult to explain unless the poet had in mind an expression such as MED (s.v. fillen) quotes from “1400 St. Anne (1) 3292: Full of water þas pottes 3e fille ... Fyll out of þylyour þat in þaim er.” That is, the poet may be suggesting that the dice “pour” or fall as if from a dice cup. Like a moving electric sign, the dice are continually falling (from dice cup to table) but never come to rest. It is also possible that the poet is playing on the phrase “to fall out” meaning “to happen (by chance).”

5025 avalis: Charles uses the present for the preterite (avaled) here and in the following line. As in many other instances, his need for a rhyme seems to override his need to observe tense or number strictly.

bi lynkis: S&D gloss “in strings.” Though necklaces in the modern sense of strings of beads were not worn, this serpe (if it is not similar to a livery chain from which metal replicas of various devices were hung, for which see St. John Hope, 313–14) could resemble a choker from which dice on short strings or chains (lynkis) are suspended, spoke-like. This arrangement would suit the cut of the surcoat well and would give the dice a chance to whirl about in a fairly orderly fashion (on the latter see Très Riches Heures de Jean duc de Berry, April, and the detail of the St. Omer altarpiece in Scott, color pl. 9).
5028–29 The syntax is loose; this whi clause parallels the how clause of 5026. chausnis: this may refer to the numbers thrown, perhaps in the game of Hazard (cf. PardT 653), but also to one’s fortune as predicted by the fall of the dice (cf. T&C 2.1347–48). Chaunsis/verryaunces is one of Charles’s rare feminine rhymes.

5030–32 The waves complement the other natural phenomena represented in Fortune’s costume (clouds and moons), but the top edge of the crown is also scalloped as in the commonest popular image of a crown. The reysyn up is not (as MED takes from St) a “raised pattern” but simply the place where the crown rises to a point; a fleur-de-lis tops each point. Both meanings (waves and scallops) are surely intended.

Such a crown stands above the porcupine in the insignia of Charles’s son, Louis XII, in bas relief carvings that decorate the courtyard of the chateau at Blois (one is just visible in Lesueur, 58). It is unclear why waves should be represented by carbuncles, i.e., by red or fiery-colored stones, but carbuncles were common in crowns. In the opening allegory, the narrator is said to be “de la maison de France, / Creu ou jardin semé de fleur de lis” (lines 166–67).

5035–36 “which spread so as to cover her shoulders.” A lady’s hair would not ordinarily have been worn loose, but encased in a (golden) net or covered by one of the extravagant headdresses of the day. Only maidens and queens wore their hair loose (Scott, 82). To these categories I would add (depictions of) saints (whether technically virginal or not) and allegorical figures; Fortune is frequently depicted with flowing hair. Like the Green Knight, this lady’s hair is quite out of the ordinary; it not only covers her elbows, as the Green Knight’s does, but the entire chariot in which she rides.

5039 S&D print sone.

5042 beryl: a transparent stone (in its blue-green form, aquamarine; in its dark green form, emerald), in this case probably pale green, since it resembles glass, with which it is often linked in descriptions (see Lyd BlkKn 37). The term berillus or berel was applied both to this family of stones and to a form of fine crystal, a form which better accords with descriptions of walls and windows made of beryl in other ME poems. Fortune’s wheel is often made of glass to emphasize her “brittleness.” Chaucer refers to Fortune’s gifts as bruelt in Bo 2.pr5, and Troilus laments: “O brotel wele of mannes joie unstable!” (T&C 3.820).

5045 S&D gloss owt rayne “out-reign”; MED defines as “to reign longer than all others.” The phrase is a translation of the Latin mottos frequently found on medieval representations of the Wheel of Fortune: regnabo (“I shall reign’’); regno (“y reign’’); regnau (“y haue raynyd’’); sum sine regno (“y owt rayne’’). Thus, “I [am] without reign” (I no longer reign). The meter of the line prevents the poet from including the verb. (Cf. “Po Whel of Fortune,” line 56, where “po lowest saies ‘withouten regne am I’ ” [Horstman, 2.71]). Pickering’s discussion of Fortune is very useful (168–222), and he includes a number of relevant illustrations, including
two (8a, 8b) representing the same sort of crowd scene that Charles depicts in this stanza (see also Hussey, 63; KQ, st. 159, 163–65).

5048 The addition of some before wolde clarifies the line and improves the meter.

5051 goodlynes: “beauty” is the only definition which refers to what is visible.

5060–61 Venus has her back to the scene and has not yet seen Fortune or her wheel.

5063 she: the scribe has mistakenly written y.

5068 swete: because it is unlikely that the narrator is addressing Venus with this word (though the sense of the line would run more easily if he were), I would read: “Death would be sweet to me—rather than that I should...”

5070 The effects of Fortune are foretold in lines 2615–35, including the suggestion that the narrator’s lady has not really died—an apparent prophecy when he spots a lady he thinks he recognizes on her wheel. For a description of a fifteenth-century Parisian manuscript of Boccaccio’s Fall of Princes which is unusual in showing a woman at the top of Fortune’s wheel, see Thorp, plate 12 and MS description no. 54.

5072–78 The stanza is written in octosyllables.

5073 Goodrich assumes that Venus is correct and the lover has fallen into some kind of second-level dream (Themes, 145–46); in fact he is simply transfixed by what has occurred behind the back of Venus (in the same discussion Goodrich misidentifies the object of the narrator’s interest as Fortune herself).

5075 St reads nemene; the word is neiuen (OED neiuen, neyuen); MED neiuen (rhyme: hevene, a common rhyme-pair, e.g., LGW 2236–37).

5080 as it were who: Prins cites as (he) who as a construction derived from Fr com cil qui (59). This seems a conflation of that construction with as it were. The scribe was perhaps thinking of the common expression as who seith (Mustanoja, 217).

5085 bowt: a- apparently omitted (cf. 5079, though Charles is fond of aphetic forms); its addition improves the meter. S&D and Owen and Owen gloss bowt, “but, only.”

5089 The “boch” may be a sidelong reference to Froissart’s Joli Buisson, where the narrator hides within a bush of youth (or desire), “inflamed with amorous and poetic passion of a remarkable intensity” (Huot, From Song to Book, 317–18)—or it may simply mean “woods.” Cf. HF 482ff. On the rhymes see Daunt, 145, 151.

5092 Cf. 5281.

5095–96 Not logical, but passionately spoken. Owen and Owen read, “Except for my lady, I defy them completely,” but it is not clear how his lady could be included in such a group.

5096 Owtssepte: MED records the correction as Owit, but it is clearly Owtt.

5097 An untraced expression, probably not related to the expression that one’s eyes “draw straws” when one is sleepy. If the scribe has bungled the line and my is an error (S&D), Venus may simply be saying, “Yea, baw! you have a straw (hull) in your eye!”—that is to say, you do not understand (don’t have a clue). Cf. Cotgrave, s.v. oeil: “Busche en l’oeil. [that was]
a log, or beame in his eye . . . [that cast] a mist over his understanding." The expression echoes Matt. 7:3 (Luke 6:41).

5099 we wymmen to ben ware: nominative absolute (S&D).

5103-4 See 5140n.

5108 and: S&D print aynd and gloss "indeed"; Owen and Owen print ains and gloss "former." It is probably used here to emphasize the word or phrase following it (see MED, s.v. and 3.): "But is it really your lady sitting there?"

5109 This is the only case in which Owen and Owen's attribution of the middle of the line ("O nay, no, nyst") to Venus makes good sense, but in light of the other cases of severe indecision on the part of the narrator and of his inability to recognize Age, I think the whole line is spoken rather by the dreamer (see 4781n).

5111 hit is not hit: "it is not she"; the construction is one Charles is fond of (see OED, s.v. it 2d, and 5136). The lover's response to the sight accords with "the Ovidian dictum that 'a new love drives out the old'" (Wack, 104).

5113 Owen and Owen give the line to the dreamer, which seems to make sense, but he never refers to Venus as my frend (nor should he), whereas she addresses him thus in 5173. Venus's humor is dry and ironic throughout.

5114-15 She mocks him, calling him a big-time merchant at a great trade fair. (You wouldn't want to have anything to do with a little country market!)

5116-18 engros vp: to corner the market by buying up at wholesale prices a certain commodity, with a view to raising the price. She accuses him of planning to buy up a "payre" of ladies: one is his first love; the other is the lady he sees on the wheel ("this same"). Presumably he will "sell off" the less desirable one (or both?) at a later time. She is laughing at him. For a description of such unscrupulous transactions from a sixteenth century source, see Harrison, Description, 247-51.

5120 See Alford, s.v. regrater.

5126 The goddess is indulging in a fit of pique. Venus proceeds to advise him, though she said she would not—indeed could not.

as haue y ioy: an asseveration ("as surely as I hope to have eternal bliss").

5133-34 Venus is saying "I told you so" (cf. 4962-63). The image of gnawing bones brings to mind the "hond" of 4783 and again points up Venus's lack of formality with the lover.

5135 Owen and Owen print "what cast you? love or no?"

5136-37 Venus tells the lover again that she wants him in no doubt that it is not his lady that he sees. Cf. HF 597-98.

5140-41 The new is extraordinarily like the old; in fact if it were not so he would not love her (5142). The new lady is the one being referred to in 5143 and 5144. The intricacy of reference in this stanza points up the confusion concerning the two ladies in the mind of the dreamer. Cf. "Complaignte de Saint Valentin," in which the bereaved lover is immediately ravished by the sight of a new lady:
Et quant je la viz si tresbelle,  
Si jeune et si bien renommee, ...  
J'entray en trop forte pensee,  
Car aucunement ressembloit  
A la belle qu'avoye amee,  
Pour qui mon cuer tant se douloit.  
(lines 201–2, 5–8; see Kelly, Medieval Imagination, 179–81)

5146-47 A negative seems to have been omitted, probably before saw (though the meter seems fine as it stands). Cf. 2923–24.

5154 redles: echoes rede of 5138.

5155 His total inability to decide between two alternatives is reminiscent of the problem of Chaucer’s knight in WBT (lines 1219–26) and his narrator in PF (lines 148–54), both of whom, like this narrator, solve the problem by accepting the decision of an authority figure. Note that, having left the service of the God of Love, the narrator does not re-enter it. No (overt) coercion is applied; no oaths are sworn.

5161 Perhaps a conflation of moche or lite with more or lesse (S&D).

5163 all forgee: Cf. 6362 and Anel 280.

5167 yon: the scribe’s any certainly seems to be the wrong word in this context; S&D suggest that it may be an error for yon.

5170 Presumably the veil is still fastened around Venus’s loins, her only bit of clothing.

5171 The fact that the lover does not actually reach the lady may be intended as a sign that he will enjoy little success when he actually does meet her. Cf. KQ, st. 169–71. For a representation of the climactic moment when the lover reaches the lady (a moment which is comically delayed, then omitted from Charles’s poem), see Huot, From Song to Book, 178 (the illustration is of the Roman de la poire, from B.N. MS. fr. 2186, fol. 2v): the lady, seated atop Fortune’s wheel, helps the lover to ascend the last bit of the wheel’s curve.

thee: perhaps an error for you, this is Venus’s only use of thee in addressing the dreamer. Lydgate, too, is inconsistent (TG 333ff.; see Mustanoja, 126–28).

5174 The thought of slaying Fortune is clearly absurd, especially in a poem dominated by her influence. Reminiscent of the “riotoures thre” in the PardT, the lover reserves his homicidal tendencies in 5178 for his arch-enemy, Death.

5184-87 The lover’s flight begins “dredles,” but ends quickly in panic. To “cry mercy” is a Gallicism (crier merci) but Charles did not introduce it into E (Prins, 105).

5191 Lady Philosophy lost some pieces of her robe, too, but Venus has less to lose. As in 4755, there is no clear difference between the worlds of the narrator’s sleeping and waking states.

5194 Octosyllabic.

5195 a foot: cf. OED, s.v. foot v, 4. On the rhymes put/mut/(a)foot, see Daunt, 147.
5198–5201 The acquaintance of the lover with the new lady takes place, not in a garden, but in a clearing in the woods—a sign perhaps that this affair takes place under the aegis of Venus rather than Cupid. Clanvowe encounters the cuckoo and the nightingale on “a launde” (61) and Chaucer’s goddess Nature sits “in a launde, upon an hil of floures” within a garden (PF 302), but neither of these is a scene in which the narrator encounters a lady. See Haskell.

5200 Presumably to the Castle of No Care.

5202 For an explanation of the game, see Introduction, “Post and Pillar.” Games were an important part of courtly life. Stevens discusses a number of courtly games, including chess, tables, and other “games of love” (171–77), but no running games other than the one described here. Froissart’s beautiful young people play the game “roi qui ne ment,” (Le Joli Buisson, lines 4410ff.).

5205 On as as a relative, see Mustanoja, 202

5216 bihight: Daunt suggests that this “stands for bihete” (141).

5218 Though the line was revised, the cadence remains less than smooth.

5219 The lover spies an old acquaintance, whom he addresses as “cosyn,” and whose place he takes in the game, which must, therefore, have depended on an even number of men and women, plus someone who was “it” and someone who was chased. The lover starts out as “it.” Cf. LBD (Fr or E), in which the bereaved lover/narrator is forced by two friends he runs into by chance to join the party, where he overhears the love debate.

5221 in his corse: a corse is presumably a turn in the game.

fortore: though unlisted in MED, OED, s.v. for- gives “ffor-tatyrd and torne” from the Townley plays (Surtees 239) and “That byssful bodye ... was for-rent and for tourne” from Dives and Pauper (vi.xv.258/2).

5226 Again the friend is very gracious, assuring the narrator that he is welcome not only because he wanted to quit the game anyway (which his comment to the company in 5223 confirms), but on the narrator’s own account as well.

5227 The couples must be well spaced, because the one who is chased must be able to dart between them (and one of the attractions of the game was the opportunity for “communing” or luf-talkynge). They have apparently moved closer to the spot where the player with the unfortunately torn hose has gone to greet the lover and must now return to their places.

5231 The lover tries to demur (for form’s sake?) but the friend will not hear of it.

cosyne: MED apparently allows only blood relatives or god-relatives, but line 5219 makes clear that the two are acquainted but unrelated. OED gives, “term in intimacy, friendship, or familiarity” (s.v. cousin 5), and Poirion glosses the Fr “titre de politiesse” (Le Lexique, s.v. cousin).

5232 The second half of the line may be declarative rather than interrogatory. It is probable that the exclamation “St. Iw!” is no reference to the saint, but a pseudo-oath, perhaps in common use, “calling upon” the ancient market at St. Ives (Hunts.), famous for its cloth dealers and thus appropri-
EXPLANATORY NOTES

5237-40 to renne y gan to make a foot: S&D read a-foot, “on foot,” which does not quite seem to work. Perhaps the closest (almost) modern expression is to “shake a leg” (see OED, s.v. foot v 2.b “to foot it”). He gives chase, “hotfooting” it after the other player.

abowt: around the outside of the circle; once he has tagged the other player (“on ... of the rowt,” 5239), he is then free to cross the circle, running “here and there” (5240). He takes refuge with the new lady, causing her partner to flee the pursuer (see 5318-19).

5244 pooreposse [MS poore posse]: “purpose”; Johan Gerritsen has suggested that both this word and “very aunces” (5029) might be the result of a process of dictation at some stage in the transmission of these lines before the preparation of the present manuscript. The fact that Charles usually rhymes the word on the second syllable might be adduced in support of this hypothesis. The scribe resolved the sounds (or odd spelling—?pourpos) into two words meaning something like “poor venture, undertaking.”

5246-53 Stevens says of this passage that it has “an authentic note”; it represents the kind of “luf-talkyn” much prized at the time (160; cf. LBD 789ff.). In 5243 the prospective lover considers various rhetorical ploys and settles on a standard form. The fact that he begins with a hypothetical question suggests an integration of a physical game involving couples and a verbal love game. For a discussion of games involving love demandes (including one that begins “yf ye hadde a trewe felow that louede you well, and that ye louede also ...” [219]), see Green, “Le Roi Qui Ne Ment.” In this case, as in fairy tales, the hero asks the wrong question. The lady’s answer accords with the kind of decorum suggested by many of Green’s examples.

5253 Owen and Owen gloss way, “oppress, i.e., destroy.” Cf. 5262.

5259 sit: MS set is probably an error (rhymes witt), i.e., “suits”; but elsewhere Charles rhymes short [e] with short [i] (4389-91, 5056-57).

5265 Cf. the argument of the third tercel in PF 470-73.

5276-78 Cf. R 57.

5279 The MS shows a dotted i followed by e (the word has been altered from y). The scribe has erased the second stroke of y incompletely (because of lack of space), leaving the first one to do duty for i and adding e. Because the i is a makeshift for reasons of space, I have printed ye.

5281 Cf. PF 656.

5282 The lover is complaining of his lack of skill at luf-talkyn.

5284-89 The lover’s appeal has caused the lady to turn pale. He is apparently
more worried than she is about appearances, and from her reply it would seem that he is taking over her role at this point (cf. *Remede* 3429–32, where it is the lady who returns the lover's greeting quickly so that the company will not notice his obvious love for her). For her use of *nyse* in describing the lover, compare that of Venus in 4779. (The mention of a *kercher* is probably no accident.)

5289–5302 The addition of *of* in 5290 improves meter and sense.

Like Chartier's lady, she finds the lover's praises excessive and doubts that the pain he suffers is life-endangering (see *LBD* 293–96, 615–16; Chartier, 265–68), showing very clearly that she is not deceived by his florid language and refined manner. She seems experienced, and her reply, rather in the manner of *La Belle Dame*, hints at her possible unresponsiveness in the future. She makes no promises she may not want to keep later. In 5296 she claims to have no power to regulate his behavior. Despite this, the lover maintains his baroque eloquence, perhaps one reason for his lack of success in this affair.

5301–2 Cf. *FklT* 981–82.

5308 Cf. 5427.

5311 He asks if she can read (using an interrogative form which assumes a positive answer); the author must have thought this an appropriate question. Perhaps she admits to being able to read only "so-so," but in line 6391 the same three words are used to mean simply "yes, yes, yes." Cf. 4839, where the lover remembers seeing his former lover writing.

5317 *raket*: the MED glosses this as a game-term ("the player being chased to and fro in the game of pillar & post") on the basis of this passage. S&D gloss "noisy crowd." The context suggests that the reference is to the "pair," i.e., the chaser and chased. See OED, s.v. *racket* sb.1 (1374–1440), "some game played with dice"; sb.2 (1529–), "a game of ball played by two persons"; sb3 (1565–), "disturbance, loud noise, ... produced by noisy ... conduct ..."; how these meanings might relate to Charles's is unclear.

5324 *Crepusculus*: should be trisyllabic to fit the meter (cf. Chaucer's "crepuscule," *Astr* 2.9.1).

5326 Perhaps: "because I was not dining (with that company) that night," or perhaps he is giving evidence of the depth of his love. Owen and Owen suggest that he fasts as "part of his ceremonial grief for his dead lady," but this would not be a good point at which to remind the reader of his previous allegiance (which is about to be compromised).

5330 Cf. Gower *CA* 4.2875ff.

5332 The lover retired to the Castle of No Care to get rid of Sorrow; according to his account to Venus of his experience of his retirement, he dwelt there with Sorrow nonetheless; now he "welcomes" Sorrow back again. See 364, 2046–47, 4816–19, and 5856–58.

5333 *y shryme* yowre berd: S&D offer two guesses in their glossary: "?shrivvel (see OED *scrimp* [and Burchfield, 126]); ?error for *shyme*, mock, cp. Ger. *schimpfen." Both glosses would seem to suggest that the lady is somehow
blaming the lover for something, but the invitation that follows in the next line (and in 5337) seems to contradict this. A more likely explanation might be cobbled together as follows: the expression “beshrew” (“a plague on”) used with weakened force (“humorous or playful”) is attested in the sixteenth century (OED, s.v. beshrew 3b). The aphetic form “shrew” is also attested (a unique instance of the word “beshromp” is recorded from 1547 and glossed “beshrew”). In addition, Halliwell-Phillipps gives “shrape” [J. Wright: “shreap”] (to scold) and “shrip” (to rate or chide). My guess is that the lady finds the lover’s expression of his distress, “Now welcome, Sorrow,” overly dramatic (which is in keeping with the skepticism she has already expressed). She responds with a direct statement (“You frighten me!”) and a playful reproach indicating mock severity (“I shrew your beard!” meaning “a plague on you!”); a British colleague suggests “I’m ruffling your beard!”).

5335 seynt Iohn to borow: “St. John protect you”; cf. PF 451 and SqT 596.
5336 bet: used in this case as a kind of intensifier rather than a comparative form. The lady is encouraging him.

5339 The naturalness and concreteness of the discussion of such arrangements contrasts sharply with the indeterminate idealism of the ballades to follow.

5342 As in his relationship with the first lady, his heart cleaves to the lady (5330; cf., e.g., 794–95) and yet (illogically) suffers with the lover (cf., e.g., 895–902).

5346–49 The procedure is described once again as a choice between speaking and writing; both love affairs (with the marked exception of the narrator’s account to Venus) seem to be affairs of the written word. In 5313, the lover asks permission to write to the lady, but here the lover decides in the first place to speak because he does not want to allow much time to elapse during which his new lady might forget him. In line 5404–5 he even says that he can express his pain better in writing than in person.

5352 sorse & welle: a common phrase, frequent in Lydgate.

In the second ballade sequence, the lover is even more abject, more florid, more tortured, and apparently nearer death than in the first. He begs to be punished—even killed, if necessary—for imagined wrongs (B 85). For her part, the lady is mistrustful (B 88) and has a heart of stone (B 90 and 103). She is a murderess (B 91) who thinks the lover a goblin or bear or serpent (B 92), and so on.

S&D felt that neither the ballades nor the epistle Charles moved into this sequence (all with Fr counterparts, assuming that the Fr versions are prior) fit very well into the context of the second love affair. B 101 may contain “happy talk” about stealing kisses, but there is no evidence that the lover succeeds in his theft. The envoy of B 107 is very much in accord with the tone of this sequence. Though speaking of an impending absence, there is nothing in the epistle (5688ff.) to render it inappropriate to this love affair; on the contrary, his complaints about his heart and his concern for appearances (5728) echo his concerns from his first meeting with the lady. For a succinct description of the kind of lady the lover has chosen,
see Chaucer's *Anel* 183–92. (B 111 and B 113 were written very late in Charles's captivity and apparently intended in the first place for this sequence; see Introduction, "Order of Composition.")

5354 helle: "conceal"; rhymes welle; cf. 4075: *helde dele fele.*

5359 Cf. PF 217.

5365 bettir: a metrical improvement on scribal *bett.*

5376 In his very first ballade to the new lady he pressures her to make a definite move, claiming already that he "kan no more." The preliminaries are very nearly eliminated.

5380 More: S&D suggest *No more;* Charles's opening lines are usually so carefully crafted that I have chosen rather to consider it a headless line and add the negative necessary for sense to the following line.

5385–96 Cf. 184. He proceeds to give the lady his heart (5385), service (5388), body, and goods (5396).

5406 "If *not the lesse* were removed, it would be an octosyllable, as in 5405; so there is a chance that there has been an attempt at revision" (S&D).

5415 The lover discovers the lady's unresponsiveness almost immediately, and his situation rapidly deteriorates from there.

5436–39 The idea was proverbial both in E (Whiting & Whiting S797) and in Fr ("Après grant guere grant pees," Le Roux de Lincy, 2.472, also 239–40; see also Morawski, no. 109ff.). Cf. Gower, *CB* 20, st. 2: "Apres la guerre om voit venir la pes, / Apres l'ivern est l'estée beal flori," and *CA* 8.2259–65.

gray: though our reaction to the comparison is different, *gray* must have had positive connotations for the poet. Cf. R 62.

5445 Plural for singular to accommodate the rhyme.


Le ciel amont de la justice dieu
Trespercerai, si j'eo les seintz requiere;
Mais a ce point c'est ma dame abstenu,
Qe toutdis clot s'oraille a ma matiere. (CB 18, st. 3)

this is no nay: cf. *LBD* 433.

5455 As y it had bigonne yestirday: there is a certain hollowness in this statement, as this is only the fourth ballade he has addressed to the lady.

5462 Cf. the disclaimer of Tyme Apast in 2956 as well as 3099–3100.

5471 The syntax of the sentence is not entirely clear. The refrain might be read "so that your disdain slays me [though I am] guiltless" or perhaps "by which your disdain [the cause of the pain (5469)] slays me...."

5470 Octosyllabic.

5486 marbil hert enkerue: anticipates the following ballade (see 5500n).

5487 S&D suggest that ye is omitted.

5488 This is the only Valentine reference in the second ballade sequence.

5497 Apparently a conflation of two constructions: the poet has inserted into a clause that means "... you who appear soft, but are hard" another clause that means something like "according to the evidence of my eyes it
EXPLANATORY NOTES 527

... seems that I love someone who is soft...” Which refers back to you in 5485.

5500 Cf. 5516 and LBD 717: “O marble herte, and yet more hard, parde.”

The image of a marble heart is common in medieval French literature.

5501-2 quantite: the word has two aspects: that of time is picked up in “lengthe of tyme” (5504); that of quantity, in writelsaynelcomplayne. According to Lydgate, women who are left alone, “Thogh they [be] harde as dyamaunt, / Mercy maketh hem plaunt,” for “Water that droppeth euer in oon / Myneth ful depe in-to A stoon” (R&S, 6913–14, 6917–18; also Gower, CB, Ballade 18). The expression (in various forms) was proverbial (Whiting & Whiting H277; Tilley H311).

5508 Charles chooses the story of Pygmalion to illustrate the hardness of his lady’s heart, an unusual emphasis. Pygmalion “the kerver” echoes 5486. These images link up with the image of hardness in B 91. The story of Pygmalion has a particularly rich history in late medieval love poetry, beginning with the RR (see Huot, From Song to Book, 296–97, 312–13, and passim).

5520–43 “In my entent” (5523) parallels “in youre party” (5524). “Kynde” (5520) is picked up in “vnkynde” (5522) and “kyndenes” (5539), used in both of its senses, “unnatural” and “unkind.” To compound the poem’s intricacy, God sins (5523), the lady is a potential murderer (5525, 5530) and no woman (5528), and the interplay of death and life is prominent.

5530 Although there is talk of “slaying” in the first sequence, the rhetoric used here would have been unthinkable there. Grandson had also referred to his unresponsive lady as “tel dame murtleire” (“Livre,” line 1741; Piaget, 450).

5549 S&D suggest that it repeats hert; it seems more typical of Charles’s syntax to take it as referring to lemys in the wrong number (or conversely, though less likely, that the scribe wrote lemys for leme, though this would injure the meter). Hath is the same sort of “plural” as found in 358. The line may owe something to the opening of CT. Charles uses the word perse four times: once in the first ballade sequence (1289) and then three times in the space of four ballades (5447, 5502, 5549).

5550 O furlong way: modifies restrayne; cf. HF 2063–64.

5557 The scribe wrote is, probably an error for as used with the temporal expression when y come (Mustanoja, 333), since otherwise it repeats the verb of the previous line.

5560–62 Gobelyne ... crewelle worme ... bere: on such images of barely-contained anger and violence, see Wack, 158; the state of mind she describes is that of the lover through most of the second ballade sequence.

5564 lo as this: lo may here be acting as a “spacer” and as this emphasizing and pointing to the second cause.

5566 Cf. 430: “[I] lese the good chere that straungers have alway”; and LBD 420: “[I am] lesse set by, than other that be straunge.”

5569 bihouyth: neither OED nor MED gives “benefits” for the verb form.

5581 fele: parallel with shewith; strictly speaking, the form should be felith (and the poet may have been thinking of y as the subject).
5583 Charles uses the word *wo(o)* eighty-nine times, always in the singular. 5586–87 what begins tentatively ("me thynkith") ends as a positive assertion ("y yow ensewre"). 5594 many may report: a word such as *thewis* (virtues) must be understood ("I may report many [such virtues]"). 5604 S&D take *doon* as "cause": I have caused to be abandoned, and I shall (continue to). I suspect that *bandonyd* simply repeats *doon* in the same tense, just as a noun often repeats a (preceding) pronoun: "I have given up and shall continue to"; see OED, s.v. do 25d (and 31). 5612–14 The Golden Rule (Luke 6:31, Matt. 7:12) is an old ploy in the game of fulfilling one's desires and a common proverb in the late Middle Ages. 5614 scripture: echoes 5600 (the only other use of the word), where it is applied to the ballade itself. It may in fact have been the use of the word as a rhyme which suggested to Charles the use of the Bible here (and its echo in the following ballade, 5640–41). 5623–24 It is possible that *als* after *vnkynde* was picked up by the scribe from the previous line; if so, these two lines are octosyllabic. 5629 If I have interpreted it correctly, this line combines an introduction or pointing to the proverb with an expression of the lover's innocence. For this use of *singe*, cf. CA 2.1299–1300. If it is not proverbial, Charles borrowed the expression in 5630 from *T&C* 2.392. Cf. LBD 436: "love for love were lawful deservyng" (Chartier, 408: "Qu'amour soit par amour merie"). The "proverb" echoes the Golden Rule, above, and anticipates 5640–41. Whiting & Whiting cite Chaucer, Roos (L506). 5637 The use of *wherto* with *trusten* is odd. 5653–54 fest: probably chosen for rhyme. Charles seems to use the word with broader meaning than either OED or MED allows, e.g., of the gathering of the God of Love's parliament. In this case I have glossed "delight." 5661 S&D take *nouncertayne* as a noun ("in uncertainty") and suggest that the verb has been omitted. Since the meter indicates no omissions, I have taken *nouncertayne* as an adjective and in as in error for is. 5664 is: MED reads *as* (s.v. infortune). This is one possibility. The other is to read "since it is so that Ill Fortune desires to . . . " —a construction that would parallel the opening line. 5688–5783 Following Champion, S&D title this poem "Complaint," but the one beginning on 6129 (without Fr counterpart) a "‘Letter’; both are love epistles. They find this poem inappropriate to the second ballade sequence (its Fr counterpart is part of the first sequence). The poem dwells on the lady's absence rather than her cruelty, but there is no reason why that should render it unfit for inclusion in this series. It introduces some variety into the series, counterbalances the other epistle in the series, and recalls the lover's loss of composure at his first leave-taking from this lady. Camargo discusses both epistles (chap. 4; see also chap. 1) and points out that the two epistles divide the second ballade sequence into groups of twelve, twelve, and thirteen ballades. He also notes that the epistles are marked as less formal than the other pseudo-documents in the work by
being written in the same form as either the ballades or the narrative verse, whereas the other documents each have their own verse forms (106).

5688–91 These four lines constitute the salutation of the letter, followed by the usual reference to the well-being of the sender. In fact, of course, (nearly) all the ballades are also to be read as letters; the two epistles in this sequence are simply longer and more thoroughgoing examples of the genre.

5694 The scribe (who usually matches rhyme-word spellings) may have taken *fele* ("many") as *fel(le)" grievous," "painful."

5704–11 Daunt explains that these rhymes should be taken, not as diphthongs [er] but as [i:] (143). It is not possible to say with certainty whether these are masculine or feminine rhymes; given Charles’s apparent aversion to feminine rhyme, he may have pronounced -*eyen/-*ien as monosyllables.

5711 *suffir: the Fr version suggests that this is an error for so fer.*

5712 *tefore: apparently repeats tofore in the previous line, but the MS form toforne spoils the rhyme. Charles might well have written toforne, however, in which case the emendation is merely a bit of overzealous tidying-up.*

Fr: Q’oncques ne le vy, en nulz lieux,
   Si eslongnié de Reconfort.

5713 Charles is here playing on will/well.

Fr: . . . mes yeulx estoient
   En un tel vouloir de pleurer.

5717 *insuspeciou: MED glosses "inward or secret suspicion." The suspicion belongs not to the eyes but to those who keep a close watch on them. The in- prefix thus probably acts as an intensifier (as in ingoodly) rather than an indication that the suspicion is inward.*

5724–25 Was: perhaps an error for Nas (I was never so upset in all my life . . .), though on other occasions Charles introduces a negative at a point in the sentence later than we expect.

5725 *forcast aside: in this context aside probably has the connotation of "into seclusion" (woe separated the lover from human society), or perhaps it was simply used in place of adoun because of the exigencies of rhyme.*

5737 *partid yow away: MED does not record part away used with an object but without from.*

5738 *diskewre: cf. 5251: ensewre/creature/diskeuer.*

5739 *The lover thus spends more than half his letter impressing on the lady how difficult his last parting from her was.*

5746–48 After the lover dies, he will continue to serve the lady by praying for her with his (disembodied) soul. He seems to expect that she will outlive him, though this is probably nothing more than the excessive rhetoric he employs. The rhyme of line 5748 plays on the Fr ("S’il en estoit en son devis"), "if it were in her (i.e., the soul’s) power."

5752 MS nenyscher is apparently an error for nenyster (ne nys ther; cf. 5942: nyster).

5766 *wante: * has been omitted on wantep, probably because of confusion caused by the following p.*
5767 Cf. 4840 and R 69.
5769 -eris is monosyllabic (5772 is a Lydgate line).
5776–83 This stanza constitutes the closing of the epistle.
5784–86 Charles has omitted a stressed syllable after Ankir, as well as after gladder in 5786.
5788 pikid: MED glosses "obtained." The lover has taken on a life of endless woe even though he is free to live as he chooses among men. The hermit, who has few choices, is both holy and happy. Therefore I have glossed the word "chosen."
5793 Cf. 4852.
5804 staynyd: MED glosses "taint," "sully" (s.v. steinen). The lady makes other ladies looked "stained" only by contrast with her own beauty; she wishes them no ill. The possibility of distinguishing in literary Fr between subject and object forms may have contributed to the poet's disregard of more usual word order.
5806 nare: cf. 3745: "'alas that y nare to yow nere'"; apparently Charles felt he could use the form as first person singular.
5810 worthis: switches from the subjunctive of the previous two lines to indicative.
5812–35 The idea of the repetition of patterns of initial words in the first three stanzas seems to have arisen at the end of the previous poem (Wo worth) and echoes the technique in B 59.
5830 The final how is probably an error for now (S&D).
5834 entewne: not attested by MED with the meaning "bring into tune," but the OED records it, citing FL 180.
5837 doth: "'to' should be added, rectifying the metre; cf. 5679" (S&D).
5848–55 Cf. BD 599–615 and T&C 5.1373–79. In this stanza only the first and third (rhyming) lines are decasyllabic; the rest are octosyllabic.
5858 Cf. BD 597. Both lines (Chaucer's and Charles's) are octosyllabic.
5863 is has probably been omitted before tornyd.
5868 of: "or"; cf. 2661, 4360, and 393n.
5870–71 Echoes the second stanza of the previous ballade.
5873 doer: i.e., "wikkid folke" (5875).
5874 Cf. T&C 5.1596: "Syn ye with me, nor I with yow, may dele."
5876–91 This word-patterning is similar to that in 73–78, one reason why it is logical to suppose that that verse was written fairly late in the composition of the whole work.
5885 Not maugre but in spite: "the English word appears to the poet to be stronger than the French" (S&D).
5896 In the final arrangement, this ballade was displaced from the first ballade sequence, as was B 107 and the first epistle. S&D find it, "with its happy talk of stealing kisses" (5352n), awkwardly placed among these ballades. On the other hand, it follows very easily on the envoy of the previous ballade. S&D do not mention that there is no indication that the lover receives anything at all from the lady ("ye myght well amende all bis matere," he says in 5910). The lover simply takes another tack in his
effort to win some favor from his distant lady. The following ballade
implies that the gambit failed.

5901-2 Fr: Mais que n’y prenez Desplaisir
Et que le Veuillez consentir.

5924 Saue me my lijf: for this construction see LGW 1648.

5954 The scribe has written put in error for piti.

5958-59 The ballade has a two-line refrain. Me seems to repeat that (whom).

6006 secunde daunce: S&D gloss “in the second stage of my love” but do not
explain what that might be. It is unlikely that he would be reminding his
lady that she is his second love, but it surely suggests to the reader that
the narrator has danced this (old) dance before, and that he seems unlike-
ly to become wiser, however his lady responds. Cf. “the dance of lufe”
(KQ 1290, st. 185).

6014 for: S&D gloss “in return for,” but this sits ill with borow in the previous
line; it is rather a conj.
in ther company: S&D remark aptly that this ought to mean “in their
place”; I have found no better solution. The premise of the ballade is that
the lady has taken his joy from him (by force) and left him in place of it,
as a pledge, woe. Needless to say, he would like her to redeem her pledge,
but since she does not seem to be in a hurry to do so, he suggests, in the
third stanza, that the pledge be sent to her foes (Suspicion, Evil Sayers,
and their ilk)—better for them to suffer woe than him.

6016 Weal and joy are treated as a single entity (i.e., singular) throughout,
except in 6014–15. For the spelling with will(e) (weal), see also 6015 and
6032 (where, according to the rhyme spellings, it ought to be wele).

6025 MED lists no use with vnto in this negative sense. S&D suggest that
youre is an error for owre or my.

6027 hem: scribal home is probably an error.
bi a dede of yeft: an official document transferring the pledge from him to them.

6028 Kent is a county apparently much used in proverbs to mean "the end of the world" (e.g., "from Kent to Northumberland," "from here to Kent"). Cf. OED, s.v. go 30b. S&D suggest that the deville and Kent may mean the same thing (Kentish men were said to have long tails). Halliwell-Phillipps says that Kent "was so famous a place for robberies in Elizabeth's time that the name was given to any nest of thieves" (s.v. Kent).

6029 care: parallel to wolde in 6021.


6033-34 arowe: a strained rhyme (and one of Charles's rare feminine rhymes).
This is another instance of the lover's more desperate ploys against this second, less responsive lady.

6043 The word me after do is apparently an error (omitted in the following refrain lines).

6045-46 The collocation eschewe to plus verb is perfectly common; a complication arises because flee requires from plus noun. The whole stanza apparently escaped revision.

6048 flee would repeat the rhyme from 6045 (with the same meaning). The context suggests that it is perhaps an error for see. One possible solution would be to read: "But when þe hert causith the eyen see / And her biholde..." S&D suggest that there is an error for they.

In the first stanza the heart (which collaborates with Love) is the primary offender. In this stanza, though the speaker says it is impossible for any heart that looks on the lady to flee from love, the heart nevertheless causes the eyes to look on her, which (because the heart is already prepared to love) causes the lover instant pain, and the spiral of love is underway. This cluster of ideas comes from the tradition of the debate of the eye and the heart (see Introduction, "Themes and Conventions: The Heart"; and Leyerle, 126n). Spence speaks of the "breakdown not only of the courtly voice but of the courtly persona as well" that the separation of eye and heart from the lover betokens, but the late medieval debates between eye and heart, as well as this text, suggest otherwise ("French Chansons," 285).

6055 ye: he speaks here, not to the lady, but to the heart, to the eyes, and perhaps also to Love.

6057-58 S&D suggest (glossary) that were is an error for nere and gloss, "It is not because of you that I am not dead; it is not your fault that I am still alive." I have not found a better solution.

6064-96 Fr: "Mon cuer dormant en Nonchaloir." Having displaced this ballade to the second sequence, the poet has eradicated the reference to No Care, which would make little sense in this context. The padding out of (Fr) octosyllables into decasyllables seems especially evident in this stanza; the result, both heavy and wordy.

S&D state categorically that this ballade "is no better placed in E than it was in F," but the optimism of the lover may well be intended here
to provide some dynamics in this sequence, based, perhaps, on an unfortu-
nate misreading of his lady’s intentions or as a result of a cruel joke on
her part. In any case, B 107 and B 108 contrast wonderfully in tone; the
promise made in 6110 may well be that rejoiced over in this ballade. Well
may he “drede hir manase,” in the envoy, which Charles wrote only for
the E version of the poem (6098). The lover’s repentance in the epistle
that follows then provides another twist in this tortured affair. Charles’s
conscious linking of many “strings” of ballades leads me to believe that
his organization of the poems was intermittent, but careful.

Richard Green suggests that the heart in this poem may be a love
token in the shape of a heart (“Hearts, Minds,” 147–48). The reference
in 6086–87 (“logge in þe fresshe manar / Of the body of hir”) suggests to
me a rather more physiological exchange (she “buys” the heart only in the
sense that she “pays” with her own).

6075 A demonstration of the two ways of stressing refuse.

6077 The only clear instance of are with a second person singular pronoun,
probably used for the rhyme.

6080 The meter requires the shorter form, Out.

6085 The scribe (or the poet?) simply copied the same refrain line four times
without noticing that the context required a change of pronoun.

6086 logge: ought properly to be reflexive. Daunt explains the -ar spellings in
the rhymes as Northernisms (138).

6101 The contrast in tone between this ballade and the previous one is stunning,
as it was surely meant to be. The lover has been seriously misled—or he has
deluded himself into some fantasy entirely without the help of the lady.

R. H. Robbins (who surely read more love lyrics than any of us) said
that “a complaint must never become an attack on a lady for withholding
her ‘solace’; to do so would not only be bad form socially, but would
direct attention away from the poet himself” (“Structure,” 250). This is
assuredly “bad form socially.”

6105 say: either Charles has used a plural for singular for the rhyme or, less
likely, -s has been dropped out of tongues before a following s-.

6109–6112 The tone of bitterness in this passage, expressed in somewhat nasty
terms, is new at this point. The lover accuses the lady of making a promise
(to give him her heart?) in order to put him off and then be unfaithful to
him—pratily. His coarseness accords with his painful disillusionment. His
recounting of this in the third person reflects his unwillingness to speak
too frankly even in the depths of his pain. It is a very effective ballade.
to holden on honde: Robinson, glossing the phrase in HF 692, says it
gyve an horne: see 1829n. MED records only haue an horn (s.v. horn).
Ross (Miller’s Tale) finds “no evidence . . . that horns were associated with
cuckolds in Chaucer’s time” (3161n, 125). Cf. RR 4809–10: “Plus est
cornars que cers ramés / Riches hors qui cuide estre amés.”

6121 The proverb is a common one in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.
Whiting & Whiting cite Heywood (1564): “I see daie at this little hole”
EXPLANATORY NOTES

(D38.92) among others (D61); in other words, it only takes a small betrayal to show you the true nature of the person you are dealing with. Charles incorporates proverbs into many of his Fr poems (e.g., in Rondeaux XXXV and LXIII), a practice common among his French contemporaries. Shakespeare represents the duke as fond of proverbs (and repartee) in Henry V (3.7).

6122–23 Another common proverb. Cotgrave, s.v. hair: "He neuer soundly loued that hateth for a toy"; also Tilley, O16 (with variations). The lover's recourse to proverbial wisdom is a measure of his disgust and despair; he has run out of means to express himself in his own words.

6124 Because of the altered syntax, the refrain lacks a (stressed) syllable.

6129–35 His "offence" is the previous ballade. The opening of this epistle is less strongly marked than that of the previous one.

recomaunde: S&D note the stress on the second syllable, "common especially in Northern poems" (6130n).

6136–40 We are not told the precise circumstances of this upheaval in the relation between the lover and his lady, but we are to understand that the previous (bitter) ballade was written in response to an unkind letter from the lady. Her "haste" (perhaps not fully-considered action) is contrasted with his "wikkid hast" (rash reaction). That his rash answer was born of impulsive action makes him think (6139) that her letter was likewise composed on impulse, or at least that is how he plans to excuse her. The motivation for this longer epistle would seem to be that the lover has a lot of explaining to do.

6142 Without: something like With such would seem to make better sense.

6146 S&D give, "the contrary of which took place, to my mind" and cite T&C 4.1562 for the take construction. It is the poet's use of the article before which that leads me to a different reading.

6149 ruggid: perhaps "crude." Cf. 4203: ragged (of thoughts). MED glosses squaryng: "wrangling, grumbling" [s.v. squaring(e)].

6162 The addition of a before store improves both sense and meter.

6164–70 This fine stanza sounds like a genuine epistolary good-bye written by a lover who, despite his arguments, knows he has gone too far this time to hope to be forgiven, but the effect is not lasting. The lady apparently sends some encouraging words, as the following stanza attests.

In 6169 he may be playing on "well/weal" as well as on "will" (wish).

6178–79 The ballade has a two-line refrain, the second of which seems to be an imperative: "besse hit to me"; but I have not solved the riddle of its meaning. S&D suggest we take hit as hite or hijt and besse as bese (to be): "you are promised, pledged." Perhaps bisen (OED besee), "give heed (to), think (on)," is worth consideration.

6181 nor set o poynt ashore: S&D paraphrase the line, "do not play for safety, but launch out boldly." MED, s.v. setten: "to fix on a point for guidance, take direction" (6268); and "even one small portion" (6181). Daunt glosses, "'don't set the course one point towards the land,' e.g., 'don't
retreat or hesitate’” (145). In both instances the context seems to point rather to a meaning like “leave nothing out.” Ashore is related to that in the modern phrase “to shore up” rather than to “(sea)shore” (see OED, s.v. shore sb3, v1, and MED, s.v. ashore, “aslant”; also, s.v. point sb III6b).

6192 We never learn what it is the lady would/ought to know but does not, just as we have not been told what she swore to the lover earlier in the ballade (6173–74); but judging from the first two lines of the stanza, it is something that makes the lover very happy. “The missing syllable at the cesura makes the effect more striking” (S&D).

6200 meint: the preposition twene makes clear that this is not mengen (mix), as S&D have it, but menen. The nearest the dictionaries come to the meaning “goes back and forth, alternates” is “mediate” (OED, s.v. mean [OF moiien]) or “act as go between” (MED). Apaille (6201) and enwarme (“to make warm, i.e., red, with anger,” 6206) illustrate this alternation. The spelling is probably an error for men, perhaps because the scribe was aware that in the complexions of beauties: “Rose and lileis togedir were . . . meint” (TG 276); but see BkhKn 229–31, 235–36:

With hote and colde myn acces is so meynt,
That now I chiver for defaute of heten,
And, hoot as gleed, now sodainly I swete.

For heten I brenne; and thus, betwixe twayne,
I possed am, and al forcast in payne.

This lady seems especially susceptible to changes of complexion: see 5284.

6203 Taken: MED glosses “to derive (sth., a quality), draw” (s.v. taken 20a).

6217 Whiting & Whiting cite both this instance of the proverb and T&C 4.586–88 (W555).

6218–19 I.e., as quickly as the proverb is recited, the suspicion subsides. He is reassuring her in order to pave the way for his request, which follows immediately.

6221 Cf. 5630.

6223 al: perhaps an error for and (S&D).

6227 Charles addressed the Fr counterpart of this ballade to Phillip, duke of Burgundy, and refers to his duchess (“ma cousine”) in the third stanza. For the ballade, Charles chose merely to echo the refrain, which in the Fr runs “de cueur, de corps et de puissance.” The rest of the two ballades has nothing in common (the Fr is in eleven-line stanzas, with a six-line envoy). The fact that the poems are nonetheless related is confirmed by the fact that B 113 is an adaptation of a ballade sent by Phillip to Charles, which opens with the same line Charles used as his refrain in this poem (see 6283n). Both Fr poems were written in 1439. On these poems, see Harrison, “Orleans.”

6244 S&D suggest sekis is imp pl (glossary); if so, it is the only instance of -is (the poet uses only -ith, occasionally -eth, or no ending for the imperative).

6261 Perhaps because the second ballade sequence is drawing to a close, the
lover seems to have less and less need for words.
6264 Me: the scribe has written Mi, perhaps picked up from the following line; cf. 6130.
6268 set no poynt ashore: see 6181n.
6269 aspectis: if this is what Charles wrote, the lady is seen as a heavenly body whose current motion (i.e., away from the lover by 180 degrees) brings evil influence.
6275 livith withouten pere: a variation on his phrase “livith withouten ayre” (2148).
6283 This ballade is an adaptation of a poem written by the duke of Burgundy in response to a poem by Charles. Burgundy borrowed Orleans’ refrain for his first line (“de cuer, de corps et de puissance”), and that line is translated more literally in the opening line of this ballade than it was in B 111 (cf. also the opening of B 86). Though transforming Burgundy’s ballade into a love poem, he produces an E counterpart which refers to the Fr poem repeatedly (not only in verbal echoes, but in tone), diverging completely from Burgundy only in the envoy. Where Burgundy wrote of “la noble maison de France,” Charles writes (in E) of his lady’s physical charms, an interesting and probably significant transformation. Burgundy writes of peace obtainable only through Charles’s delivrance from England; Charles writes of his delyverance from pain only through the lady’s grace. The two poems invite further study. Although the first two lines (and 6288) are decasyllabic, the rest of the poem is in octosyllables.
6293–94 We are left to guess (without much difficulty) what it is the lover would like to see. S&D (306) mention the “suggestive remarks” in 6293 (as well as those in 941, 3582–83, and 5906) as having no counterpart in the Fr.
6295 that: repeats hit, unless perhaps hit is an error for pis.
6312 am has apparently been omitted after y. This idea is picked up in the opening line of the next ballade.
6315 without part of elliswhere servise: the line may be borrowed from the “Littera Troili” (T&C 5.1318), or perhaps it is a common formula.
6320 sende: used without object both here and in 6324, though in the second case the line is short. A letter or message is implied.
6324 Octosyllabic.
6330–41 Lines 6331, 6333, 6337, 6341 are decasyllabic; the rest, octosyllabic.
6338 brest: singular for the rhyme.
6342–66 One of the very few octosyllabic ballades.
6347–48 deth/seith: see Daunt, 141.
6348 Cf. BD 875–76; Lydgate, “Epithalamium for Gloucester,” lines 104–5 (Hammond, English Verse, 147). This is perhaps the most explicit debate (or striff) between the eye and heart.
6349 The scribe has written then in error.
6363 It is possible that Charles wrote goodlihod, but the spelling with e improves the rhyme.
6367 This poem is an exercise in Daunger; the lady manages to hold the lover at
bay without ever being less than courteous. She presents him with a conundrum and literally "out-wits" him. Apart from the lover's account of their first encounter, this is the only time the lady speaks. The first ballade sequence, too, contains a ballade in dialogue form, but there the lover converses with his heart. The "voice" of the first lady is never recorded.

This kind of ballade in dialogue form was popular in France; see, for instance, Christine de Pisan's "Balade a Responses" (Oeuvres, 121–22).

occupy: the poet uses this word on only one other occasion (1584), where it seems to mean simply "occupy." Utley refers to the "obscure pun on the word 'occupy'" in this ballade and says that the lover "threatens to beat her [the lady] and she succumbs" (Hartung, Manual, 3.729). S&D do not clarify things much ("occupy: in the 15th and 16th centuries this could represent the Latin occupare amplexu")—and they quote Shakespeare [6375n]). In 5352n they refer to this ballade as "frivolous" and claim that it "cannot celebrate the same lady," but they give no idea of what they think it really means. In the sixteenth century, the word had taken on the meaning "to copulate with a woman," but it has clearly not developed that far by the time Charles uses it, for the word is used by the lady as well as the lover (see Partridge, Henke, McClure, 54, and 2HenIV 2.4.161). MED offers the meaning "to fill (one's heart or mind) with love, lechery, desire." The oversized hand drawn in the margin that points to the first line of this poem may be a reaction of a reader to the content of the poem. Though I once thought so, I am no longer convinced that the poem has risqué overtones.

mot me wite: once again Charles uses an objective form where we would expect a subject (cf. 1646, 6244).

woo is me for yowre seek hele: an exact restatement of Venus's mock sympathy in 5071; "heele" in the next line echoes it (cf. 5295).

that cosse: attempting to return irony for mockery, he thanks her for the kiss she denies him with her logic (in effect, "Write that one off!"). Judging from her response (6385–86), his effort at irony is lost on her.

Forwhi: St suggests "?however." Perhaps it is an error for for which, perhaps referring to the kiss? A simple "but" would seem to do the job.

Her flippant rejoinder makes the lover angry, and he retorts with, "You'll pay for that remark!" The lady in return feigns fear. It is at this point that the refrain seems to take a turn that is completely obscure. "It" in 6389 would seem to be the kiss under discussion, but if so it is difficult to see what to make of the following line. Reed says that "a lover is utterly stymied by his mistress until he threatens to beat her, which apparently so amply proves his virtue and love that she relents" (163).

At the prospect of a kiss the lover instantly changes his tone (and presumably moves closer to his lady). The lady delivers the coup de grâce. Before he can "collect" the promised kiss, she out-wits him ... but it is unclear how she does so.

of yow y mysse: St identifies a later hand here, but I see only a variant of the hand of the main scribe, probably written later (there is no erasure).
6400–1 The penultimate line of each stanza (and the envoy) is octosyllabic, except for the third stanza.

6403 oren: S&D suggest that it is an error for men, adj “mean” (glossary). MED disagrees, taking it as a verb from ore, n2: “have mercy on, show favor to” (cf. MilT 3726; Prins, 280); they do not cross reference their own entry aren (also or; from OE arian): “to show mercy, forgive, treat gently, spare.” The line, however, remains obscure.

6406 payne: apparently the verb is reflexive, with mi karkas (a contemptuous reference to himself) taking the place of me. case: we might expect tyme or space, but Charles resists repeating a rhyme with the same meaning.

6414 If my reading is correct, as is an error for vs.

6411–12 wel parcas: just on the chance (S&D).

seven: see 4741n.

6413 No one has thus far been able to identify what the “pevisshe” eighth sin the lover fears is. Could it be dreaming of another lady? The passage is obscure as a result, and the paraphrase, very tentative.

6414 as: perhaps a scribal error for us (S&D).

6421 S&D observe, “This looks like an appeal to Fortune to be converted, but the tone of the ballade makes this unlikely.” They suggest reading, “because of all thy frauds wilfully turned awry.” The matter is simpler than this; the lover is asking Fortune to turn her wheel and show him her better “side.”

6423–24 coffer: though citing only this line as an example, MED lists coffor as a variant spelling rather than an error.

6424 Cf. 5096.

6426–27 This ballade has a two-line refrain.

6430 were an horne: if the meaning “be mocked” is correct, the expression repeats the sense of the previous line (see 1829n).

6432 it: singular for plural; the referent is mokkis.

6439 thi iuparty: the dangerous situation you put me in. In light of his earlier game of chess with Fortune, iuparty probably carries some overtones of “stratagem (in the game).” Machaut, likewise, accuses Fortune, with “ta fausse loy” (your false law) and “ti faus tour” (your false turns) (Johnson, 51–52), but without the implication of Fortune’s wheel suggested by the E meaning of the latter word and Charles’s “revolue” in the preceding line.

6448–75 A poem on the delaying tactics of a lady, the “retorre” of the first line echoes 6439 and thereby suggests the presence of Fortune. The primary metaphor is of the lover following his lady (presumably on horseback) as she rambles (“guides” him) through the countryside. The lover clearly has trouble keeping up. This ballade is marked by complicated word play.

6450 twart: S&D gloss “oblique.” Surely Charles is playing on the literal meaning of “difficult because crooked (zigzagging, circuitous)” and the figurative one of “adverse” or “froward” (OED, s.v. athwart, overthwart). He is saying in effect, “Don’t play games, be straight with me.”

6451 ouyrgone: S&D gloss “escape” (corrigenda), but in light of the following
line "go too far" makes more sense. She is leading him a merry chase.

6453 forvery: on the use of this prefix, see OED, s.v. for-, pref 1, 6b.

6457 forgo: cf. HF 115 ("quite exhausted").

6463 Ye: probably an error for I.

6466 stilis: S&D suggest the word is a corruption of sty OED sb1 "a path or narrow way," but the word can simply mean "stile." Like sty, the phrase "strange stiles" evokes the idea of byways and country lanes.

6467-71 Here the point of the metaphor becomes clear. The lady is leading the lover in circles (or "down the garden path"), staying always out of his reach. He decrives her behavior as sloth in love (6470). When the lady falls in love, he threatens, she will suffer as he does—or worse. The second half of the refrain line is a poignant return to 6467: she will be treated harshly, as the speaker is being treated. The idea of the punishment of ladies for sloth in love is familiar from Andreas Capellanus’s fifth dialogue (Book 1), where they must sit on bundles of thorns and suffer the heat of the sun (112–15).

6472 S&D suggest that or and y (3) are probably scribal errors for and and ye (they do not provide a translation of the projected reading). On the other hand, the scribe is generally careful to place virgules between repeated words to insure that they are not miscopied or misread. As he writes "Soune ye or y / y / wolde / y vndirstood," that is probably the way he received his copy, but the meaning is obscure.

6476-97 The first stanza of the ballade is written in line pairs that alternate praise of the lady’s virtues with blame for her lack of responsiveness. The so’s of this ballade are reminiscent of B 59, and, as in it, the technique—does not work equally well in every line, e.g., 6488. Like lo, on occasion, so operates in many lines more like an initial beat (empty of meaning) than a meaningful word.

6485 On the rhymes mystrust/dilust/twist/twyst see Daunt, 147.

6488 for what cawse: i.e., why do you not desire to play the game of love.

6492, 6494 Apparently in the initial writing of this ballade the scribe wrote as lo and, to keep the rhyme, forgo (it may take final -n or not). This was probably not a matter of authorial revision, since the main scribe seems to have corrected as he went and does not seem to have returned to the manuscript later. Seeing his error, he corrected to a lon and forgon.

6494–95 S&D gloss, "If I do not speak of my sorrow, I shall die."

6501–2 The word order (in S&D’s words, “extraordinary”) has misled an MED editor (s.v. ioy), who reads, “Goo poor bille . . . For me to ioy my sorowis,” and glosses ioy as “to enjoy.”

6504 Goodrich suggests that the lover represents the poet, who is taking leave of his English lady to return to France (Themes, 102). Cf. R 60.

6507–8 sore: “wound” (6507); “sworn” (6508). For the second, OED gives a ppl form, soren, dated 1530 and pret some, 1531 (s.v. swear, II.10.d and II.b). Cf. 3511 sowre.

6524–26 The padding in this line suggests that perhaps both it and 6526 were conceived in octosyllables and only partially “corrected.” S&D suggest,
“now that I am given a way (i.e., an opportunity, by her absence) of weeping,” and further that me is omitted after on in 6526 (“If this be error, and upon me proved,” Shakespeare, Sonnet 116). Though it is oddly phrased and repetitious, the meaning of the passage is clear. The lover applies the old saw, “love is blind,” to himself: he is afraid that he will, unawares (i.e., blindly), give himself away by his sighs—in spite of himself.

6531 The final line “biwrays” that the lover is still not through with love, in spite of his farewells to his lady. The reader can imagine little except the endless continuation of this peevish love for an unkind lady. No counselor is forthcoming; the lover has no will to withdraw his “eternal” loyalty from his lady; and, even if his lady were to die, he is not himself likely to do so, in spite of the precedent set by Chartier (who presents a bereaved narrator and an unsuccessful lover who dies). Charles may have expected his readers to ask themselves at this point, “From which of the two loves did the lover suffer more?”
Glossary

The glossary is much fuller than might be expected for a text of the first half of the fifteenth century because of the unusual character of the language. Charles’s English is difficult for a variety of reasons (surveyed in the Introduction, “The Language of the Poems”), and thus an overview of Charles’s language would seem to be more useful than a glossary of hard words. If I have erred on the side of fullness, I trust some creative scholar will find interesting material amidst the superfluity. Though the glossary represents every form in Charles of Orleans’s English, it is not intended as an exhaustive glossary (or a full concordance). The reader should be cautioned, however, not to account every entry he recognizes as superfluous; in some cases an entry has been included because it performs an unusual grammatical function within a clause, because it has more than one spelling, or because another possible definition of the word in question is being excluded. The large number of entries should facilitate the reader’s comparison of passages.

The glossary includes an overview of the poet’s usages based on a survey of all occurrences of each word. All occurrences not accounted for fall under the definition that is followed by (usually the first) three instances plus “etc.” (except in a few cases where such precision seemed out of place). All words inserted by the two revisors, A and B, are included, as are all (readable) words crossed out or otherwise marked for correction. In cases where no infinitive or singular form occurs in the text, the oblique or plural form is used as the headword.

The glossary is intended to be as easy to use as possible. To avoid sending the reader on multiple searches (and to make the material available to scholars interested in Charles’s language), all alternate spellings are listed as headwords except where they occur within a few lines of each other. Verbs, however, are drawn together under a single headword (with all other forms following the entry). In general, w/w and i/y are treated alphabetically as u and i when vocalic, as v and y when consonantal (the headword spelling being chosen on the basis of frequency). The semi-vowel y follows w.\(^1\) Initial ţ is expanded to th.

Multiple spellings of the headword are listed in descending order of frequency. In those cases in which two spellings are represented in one word, e.g., thyn(ne), both spellings occur about equally. Where the difference in spelling is only a final -e, -n, or -se and that ending occurs three times or fewer

---

\(^1\) The capital forms of y, i, and j are identical, as are small j and i. In those cases where these letters occur in the manuscript in the capital form, I have retained that form in the glossary, even though all other letters there are small. I have not attempted to distinguish between a number of closely-related pairs of words, such as mō/more, part/party, the two meanings of the verb will (OE willan/willian), fecche (OE fecc(e)an/ fetian), and many other pairs which are frequently interchanged in the Middle English period.
(whereas the primary word occurs significantly more often), it is more space-efficient to present: confoundl-e (5:1 occurrences), chesel-n (9:3), distres-se (32:2). Final -e is in many cases a variant which appears only once in the manuscript. Line numbers are given for at least a representative sample of all minority spellings (a great many of which occur in rhyme position). With a little effort (more in the case of common verbs), therefore, the reader should be able to locate an example of any spelling in the text.

I have also attempted to give the reader, as unobtrusively as possible, some idea of where Charles’s English stands vis-à-vis the rest of the known Middle English sources by placing ♦ after every line reference which is cited in the Middle English Dictionary (I am sure to have missed some of them), U after any line reference which is cited as the only instance of the word, and O after any part of the entry (word, part of speech, definition, etc.) which is not attested there at all. Mosse’s glossary has provided a model for this system, though my purpose is quite different from his. In cases where the spelling used by the MED differs significantly from that found in the Harleian manuscript, the dictionary spelling is entered in square brackets to facilitate comparison; in a few cases an Old English or Old French form is given. The OED is not superfluous in such an undertaking, even for the words already dealt with by the MED, and the reader will encounter regular references to it in the explanatory notes. I have relied primarily on Skeat’s glossary and the Chaucer Glossary for Chaucerian usage. The Stratmann and Bradley dictionary of Middle English as well as glossaries which accompany late fourteenth- and early fifteenth-century editions have been plundered on occasion.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Symbol</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>noun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>adj</td>
<td>adjective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>adv</td>
<td>adverb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pron</td>
<td>pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prep</td>
<td>preposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conj</td>
<td>conjunction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>interj</td>
<td>interjection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>art</td>
<td>article</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pl</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poss</td>
<td>possessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>comp</td>
<td>comparative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sup</td>
<td>superlative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres</td>
<td>present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prt</td>
<td>preterite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prp</td>
<td>present participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ppl</td>
<td>past participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imp</td>
<td>imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>refl</td>
<td>reflexive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subj</td>
<td>subjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pass</td>
<td>passive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(in)trans</td>
<td>(in)transitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ger</td>
<td>gerund</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$</td>
<td>see explanatory note</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*</td>
<td>not in MED (most are commented on in the notes)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>♦</td>
<td>cited in MED</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U</td>
<td>unique (only witness in MED)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>occurs in refrain (more than once)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Charles of Orleans prefixes a number of verbs with *a*- which are not so attested elsewhere. Inasmuch as the addition of the prefix does not alter the meaning of the word and the prefixed form was probably often used for many verbs which have not survived in print, I have not marked those anomalous forms with a *. I have, however, glossed verbs that occur in both forms (with and without *a*) separately.

a, *interj* Ah!, 1421, 1548, 2030, 4123, 5088, 5113, 5335

a, *prep* 1. in, 198, 491, 918, 2228, 2968, 4309, 4391, 4401, 4806, 4961, 5338; 2. of, 5011

a, *pron* 1. he, 919, 1097, 1850, 2316, 2492, 2508, 2804, 2901, 3368, 3770, 3992; 2. it, 2499, 3245

ab (e), adv about, abode, abone, able, abite, abidyng, abide/abiden, aby/abey, aboundaunce, abeggyng,abay, abak, abaft, a, pronl. he, a, a, a-), cur

those for fixed tested of Charles verbs prep 704

for however, mark, else, mark, the verbs mark, anomalous in both aimed at- prep forms glossed gloss, was mark, probably have mark, of, mark, which mark, does mark, of, which mark, and mark, not mark, of, mark, which mark, so mark, a mark, of number mark, not mark, a mark, of openly, mark, 4973 mark, ab(o)undaunce, n abundance, 549, 704

abound(e), v ~ in: to overflow (with), 422; come abundantly, 735, 1958

abowt, *prep* about, 163, 2305, 4764, 4971, 4989, 5021

abowt, *adv* 1. around, 166, 1004, 3054, etc.; 2. around, here and there, 5238; also bowt

abrace*, v embrace, 876

abreide, v 1. utter, 4785; 2. started, recovered (from my astonishment), 5064; 3. awoke, 5190; *pt abreid/abrayde*; see also brayd

abrod, *adv* so as to cover, 5035

absence, n absence, 516, 523, 1031, etc.

absent, *adv* absent, 553, 774, 1185, etc.; ~ *payne*: pain of absence*, 1896

absent, *n* absence, 1185

accord(e), v 1. grant, 667; 2. record, 1111; 3. accord, 2246, 5413; 4. reconcile, 6346; *3s accordith*; *imp pl accordith*

accordyng, *adj* harmonious, 5771

acesyne, v put an end to, 1836

achase, v chase 1018, 3075; *ppl achasid*; see also chas

achere, v [chere] 1. console, 438, 3469; 2. bring (me) to feel, 4120; see also chas

acheue/acheven, v 1. win, 4702; 2. succeed in, 4387

aclere, v clear away, 1711 ♦

acort, n accord, 1060

acqu-, see acqu-

acursid/acurst, *adj* 1. damned, 951r, 2005; 2. malicious, 4584

adewre, v [duren] live, 2485; see also dewre, endure

aduersayre, n enemy, 778

aduersite, n 1. misfortune, adversity, 324, 405, 560, etc.; 2. hostility, 2685

aduert, v 1. discover, 2433, 3352; 2. consider, be heedful, 2710, 2773, 3204 refl, 5928; 3. devise, 69; 4. make (the) observation, 308, 5880; 5. suppose, 3395; hit doth me ~: it seems to me, 2212 ♦; see also avert
advisé, n advice, 1006; also avise
afer, adv 1. far off, 162; 2. from afar, 4767; see also fer
aferd, v ppl 1. afraid, 3884; 2. as adj frightened, 4836
affray, v attack, 30
affyance, n 1. confidence, 686, 724, 1648; 2. solemn promise, 2964; 3. friend, companion (i.e., trusted one)*, 1057, 1122, 4591; see also fyance
affyne, n confederates, 26, 5903, 5911, etc.
affoyle, v [foil n] to adorn with leaves, 1701 ❀U
affray, n 1. consternation, 1715; 2. disturbance, 5439
afyn, adj right wel ~: to good purpose, 5132
afyn, n [Ar. al-fil, "elephant" ] bishop, 2124
afyre, adj on fire, 1426, 2446
afoot*, adv on my feet, 5195
afore, adv 1. before, 865r, 1851r, 5318; 2. earlier, 4656, 5318
afresht, v ppl [freshen] resupplied (the ship), 1038; see also fresshe
afright, v become frightened, 255
aftir, 1. after, 541, 1541, 2237, etc.; 2. afterwards, 1110, 2556, 6163; 3. in, 93, 1065; 4. in keeping with, 10, 137, 1983; 5. for, 1302; 6. concerning, 2274; in ~ tyme comyng: at some time in the future, 692
aftirmore*, adv henceforth, 4104 ❧
aftirson, adv soon thereafter, 1791
aftirward, adv afterwards, 4742, 4751
agayne/agayn(e)/ayen(e), adv 1. again, 650, 1125, 1483, 2210, 2374r, 2432r, etc.; 2. in return, back (again), 97, 2503, 2532, 3978, 5389, 5569, 5583r, 5609, 5641, 5671; 3. moreover, 97, 2768, 3021, 5315, 6137, 6448; 4. (once) again, 3759, 5592, 6022, 6174, 6516; 5. in reply, 2403, 2923, 6137; 6. on the other hand, 385; 7. ?each time, 1352; then ~: on the other hand, 1483; see also ageyne
agarneshe, v ppl equipped for defense, 1077; see also garynshid
agast, adj frightened, 5741; see also gast
age, n age, 2558, 2603, 2645, 3731
ageyn(e)/ageyns/ageyne/ayen(st)/agayn(e)/agaynward, prep 1. against, 26, 295, 885 [erased], 1062, 1050, 1071, 1753, 2251, 2270, 2276, 3041, 3759, 3930r, 4945, 5764, 6487, 6489; 2. in preparation for, 2170, 2652; 3. as adj contrary (to his will), 2388; see also geyne
ageynward, on the contrary, 4320
agide, v manage, direct, 2232
agoon(n), ppl as adv 1. ago, 350; 2. past, 797; longe ~: for a long time*, 606 ❧; late ~: recently, 1309; tyme ~: some (?a long) time ago, 1434
agoon, v ppl 1. gone, 5092; 2. (be) gone, depart, 5319
agraunt, v grant, 2868; see also graunt
agre/-e, v 1. agree (to), consent, 3941 refl, 5369, 5986, 6042; 2. be reconciled to, 316; 3. reconcile, 3941; 4. approve (of), 4302; 5. compensate, 5763
agreeable, adj pleasing, 2677
agrise, v 1. frighten, 1342; 2. shudder with fear, 1032
ahim, interj Ahem!, 113
ay, n egg, 1194, 4193, 4779
ay, adv 1. always, constantly, 1291, 1667, 1822, etc.; 2. always, forever, 520, 585, 596, 2283, 2314, 2332, 2414, 2522, 2787, 2828, 4048, 4328, 4574, 4623, 4885, 5458, 5745, 6102; 3. again and again, ever, 507, 1236, 1254, 2120, 2154, 2502, 2536, 2873, 3087, 3293, 3840, 4048, 4844, 4859, 5990, 5992; 4. continually, 507, 2223, 2808, 3213, 3840; 5. regularly, 1710; 6. earlier, 2798; 7. in each instance, 3087; 8. progressively, 5055
ayde, v to aid, 19, 937, 1100, 2573; stonde in ~: stand firm in support, 6356
ayelde, v repay, 878; see also yelde
ayen(st), see agayn adv; ageyne
prep
ayre, n heir, 2148r; also eyre, heyre
ayre, n air, 4763, 4965; vndir ~: on
earth, 772
al, see all
alace, interj, see allas
alak, interj alack!, 338, 894, 902, etc.
alase, interj, see allas
albe, conj (with it, that, so) 1. even if,
although, 211, 624, 654, 3230,
3519, 3581, 4211, 6316; 2. [al
(although) be], 880, 6530; see also
alle conj
alday, adv continually, 4196
ale, n ale, 3118
allesse, v alleviate, 1537, 5642
alfordrownyd, adj [fordrouned (per-
haps al fordrownyd)] completely
drenched, 1986
algate, adv 1. altogether, 2575; 2.
unceasingly, 6159
alight, v 1. relieve, 2805, 3675; 2.
lighten, 3901r; 3s alightith; ppl
alighttid; see also light
alite, adv a little, 4033, 4076
aluye, adj alive, 6210
allas/allas/-e/alace, interj allas!, 78,
105, 2243, 4463, etc.
all/alle, adj 1. all, 2, 59, 202, etc.; 2.
everything, 2374r, 2570, 2834,
2874, 3420, 4476, 4753, 6175,
6234r; 3. (the) whole, 275, 2152,
2461, 2969, 3606, 4160, 5036,
5177; 4. all (of this/them), 4016,
5204; 5. every way, 20; 6. the
greatest, 660; 7. everyone, 4955
all/alle, adv 1. wholly, entirely, 550,
592, 595, 751, 814, 1527, 1982,
2134, 2304, 3083, 3376, 4067r,
4310, 4343, 4554, 4827, 5035,
5633, 5750, 5774, 5781, 5832,
6223, 6296, 6457; 2. very, 2420,
2487, 4932, 5164; 3. fully, 747
(2); 4. all over, 4991; 5. [em-
phatic], 983, 4619, 6005; ~ to
nigh: altogether, 625, 5832; ~ to
longe: (for) far too long, 1412,
4607; ~ thing: altogether, 4760
all/alle, conj [also: ~ be (hit so)] 1.
although, 261, 582, 624, 654,
737, 747, 812, 858, 1234, 1478,
2186, 2400, 2519, 2706, 3079,
4211, 4619, 4739, 4937, 5112,
5629, 5673, 5678, 5732, 5762,
6232, 6239; 2. even though, 2186,
5555; 3. whether, 5678, 5762
allegeaunce, n relief, 698
alls, see also adv
all thing, pron everything, 5949
allyaunce, n 1. party, (group of)
allies, 299, 725, 877, 1009, 3393;
2. (an) alliance, 1072; 3. treaty,
1106 §; of my ~: on my side,
1767; see also allyes
allyed, ppl allied, 1515
allyes, n pl allies, 1005; see also ally-
aunce
almes, n 1. pity, (act of) mercy,
1377, 2803, 3698; 2. alms, 906,
908; 3. merit earned for works of
charity, 932
almes(se), v* give (as alms), 2521r §,
4221r, 4227r
almyght/almyghti/almyghty, adj al-
myghty, 468, 1286, 1782, 3905,
6125
almost, adv almost, 2331
aloft, adv 1. up in the sky, 2456,
5171, 6311; 2. on high, 2187; 3.
on top, 5047; set(te) ~: set(s) on
high, i.e., make(s) happy, 392,
1460, 1738
alone/aloon/alon, adj alone, 590r,
1826, 2012, etc.
alone/alo(o)n/aone [error], adv alone,
2046, 2057, 2061r, etc.
als(o)/allys/alls [revision], adv 1. also,
1044, 1157, 1297, 2179, 3699 §,
etc.; 2. and another question,
1915, 5480; 3. moreover, 243;
also as
als(o), conj as, since, 243, 1096,
2283, 4440; also as
also long, adv as long, 3176
althermost, adv most of all, 4039
although, conj although, 1452, 1763,
3353
alway/alwey, adv 1. always, 971,
1213, 3039, etc.; 2. every time,
3626; 3. forever, 4960
alwhere, adv everywhere*, 3772
am, see ben
am [error for an], 4724
amende/-n, v 1. rectify, 1448, 1869, 2135, 5524 subj, etc.; 2. improve on, 453, 3087; 3. forgive, 4384; 4. cure (the hurt), 4889; 5. improve (my lot), 6155; see also mend
amende(s), n 1. reparation, amends, 1569; 2. remedy, 6213
amendement, n redress, 2269
amys, adj 1. wrong, 3218, 4616; 2. amiss, 5826, 6154
amys, adv 1. badly, amiss, 601, 6449; 2. mistakenly, wrongly, 5093; did fer ~: did a great wrong, 4887; say ~: speak evil, 5875r; also mys, messe
amytte, v receive (as a member of one's household), 6; amyttid to grace: received into (the lady's) favor, 2488, 4007
among, prep 1. among, 916, 995, 3125, 4423, 4700, 5050, 5207; 2. together 3117; 3. continually, 3133; 4. here and there, at some time or other, 3137
amongis, prep (from) amongst, 5788
amverse*/amverse*, n [inverse (OF envers)] reverse, contrary, 2519r; in ~: into (its) contrary, 2373 §, 5847r
an, art 1. an, 94, 100, 190, etc.; 2. on, 5747
ancr/anker/ankir, n 1. anchorite, 4802, 5784, 5792; 2. as adj* (of a) recluse, 4862
and, conj 1. and, 1, 6, 13, etc.; 2. if, 133, 574, 785, 968, 1041, 1329, 1348, 1604, 2281, 2458, 2620, 2947, 3114, 3245, 3291, 3366, 3545, 3609, 3883, 3895, 4103, 4493, 4633, 4906, 5221, 5281, 5384, 5456, 5782, 5976, 6336; 3. (introd. an explanatory or emphatic sentence, clause, phrase) 1892, 1902, 5108; 4. but, 2912, 5581; 5. or, 918; 6. so, 4330; 7. [hendiadys] 4990; 9. that, 6152
and, adv also, 5013, indeed, 5108 §
any/eny, adj any, 21, 864, 5507, 5557, etc.; any kind of, 5952
anker, ankir, see ancre
anoy, n suffering, 482
anoynaunce, n vexation, 3704
anoon, adv 1. at once, 197, 612, 1346, etc.; 2. at once (i.e., so fast), 4170
anothir, adj 1. another, 94, 877, 4167, 4239, 5564; 2. as n another person, 5318; see also othir
answerid, v prp answer, 1980, 2274, 2399, 2437; prp answering
apace/apase, adv 1. rapidly, 350; 2. immediately, 4769; see also pace n
apalle, v 1. grow pale, 6201; 2. slacken, 6310 subj
apart, adv apart, 5829
apase, see apase
apast, ppl past, 1253; tyme ~: the past, 638, 2206, 2286, 2425, 2999, 3002; apassid, ago, 1820
apese, see appese
aplight, v prp yowre trouth ~: bound yourself by oath, 1879; see also plight
aply, v devote, 2833
apparayle, n preparations, 2254
apple, v 1. accuse, 1549, 6033; 2. challenge, 1576
ap(p)ese, v 1. relieve, 846, 4716, 5865; 2. reconcile, 6349
appetit(e), n 1. inclination, 3124; 2. desire, 1197, 4554
approchen, v draw near, 1617, 2814
apsen, adv aspen, 2637
aqueynt(en)/a(c)quaynt, v (1) 1. (to become) acquainted, 2529, 2571, 5856; 2. to acquaint, get to know (sb), 3160 refl, 4844, 5282; 3. familiarize, 2643; 4. ?makes known, ?teaches, 3095 §; 3s aquayntis; ppl aquayntid
aqueynt, v (2) [aquenchen] put out, 2449 ppl
aqueyntaunce/aquenchaunce, n 1. friendship, companionship, 1066, 2980, 4162; 2. (easy) familiarity, 327r, 2912; take ~: win (someone's) friendship, 3659, 4928
aqueke, v tremble, 4161, 5144; prt aquok
aquyk, v revive, 6325
aquyt(e), v 1. acquit, 623r refl, 1199r, 2854; 2. properly rewarded, 4790; imp pl aquytt; ppl aquyt; see also quytteth
ar, see be
aray, n 1. clothing, 148; 2. behavior, 375, 4197; 3. fashion, 377; 4. (a) state, 2134, 2409; 5. armor, 3875; 6. composition, 5462; out of ~: out of their proper order, 3102
aray, v dress, 1611
arayse, v prt rose, moved, 4984
arase, v [arace] flay, 930 refl
arave, v ppl were ~: had arrived, 5825
are, see be
are, adv [ere] always, 4789
aredith, v reads, 414; see also rede v (1)
arent, v ~ it dear: pay such a high rent (i.e., fee) for it*, 3499
arest, n control, 5657
aret, v consider, 1423
right, adv properly, 3410; as it should be, 4371
arise, v 1. increase, 907; 2. come, 1023; 3. grow, 1362; 4. get up, 888, 6065
armys/armes/arme, n pl arms, 564, 779, 3751, 4896, etc.
armyd, v ppl armed, 297
arme, see be
arowe, adv in every detail, 6033; see also row, rewe
art, n art (of poetry), 3084
as, rel pron which, that, 4048 §, 4146
as, adv/conj frequently redundant 1. as, 7, 62, 134, etc.; 2. with, 151; 3. if, 231, 3018; 4. that, 290; 5. like, 2928; 6. when, 3680, 4656; 7. that which, 4438; 8. so, 4878; 9. such as, 4146; 10. just as, 4988; 11. also, 1085, 5013; 12. as if, 5080, 5085, 5455; [MS vs] 6451; as (so) ... as: 5039, 5164, 5400–5401, 5454–55, 5461–62, 5498, 6460–61, etc.; ~ with: on behalf of, 428; ~ for: because, 1085 §; ~ were: as it were, 1790; ~ wel: also, 4387; also also
as [error for at], 2534; [error for us], 6414
asay(d), see assay v
ascende, v rise, 4691, 4696; 3s ascendith
aseith, v besieges, 3394
ase, n reparation, 6361
ashore, adv aside, 6181 §, 6268
aside, adv 1. aside, 1225, 4042, 5538; 2. around (over the shoulder), 5086; 3. down, 5724; leie ~: set aside, 4811; sett ~: puts out of consideration, 3111
asise, n ashes, 2149; also asshis
asittynge, v prp [sitten] suitable, 4451; see also sitt
askape, v escape, 3461 refl §
askaunce, adv 1. insincerely, with affection, 3667; 2. deceptively, 4337
askaunce, conj in such a way, 4155 §
aslake, v alleviate, relieve, 560r, 665
aslepe, adj 1. asleep 174, 1870, 2512, 5917; 2. inattentive, 3074; see also slepe
asleth, v 3s kills, 4955; see also sle
aslope, adv levting ~: slanting, 1265
asondir, adv asunder, 4821
aspectis, n pl aspects (astr.), 6269 §
aspy/aspien, v 1. see, observe, 456, 4994, 5050; 2. spot, 4237, 5220; 3. look (about), 3457; 4. perceive, i.e., figure out, 4373, 5705; 5. descry, 5081; 6. found out, seen in this state, 5114, 5726; espay abowt: discover (by spying), 3054; prt/ppl aspide; see also spy
assay, n made ~: had experience, 530; put him in ~: make a (great) effort, 1852
assay/assay, v 1. attempt, try (it), 821, 982, 2406, 3076, 4408, 4481; 2. test, 3306; ppl assayed
assayle, v 1. (to) attack, 946, 974, 1772; 2. overtake, 1754r, 2542; ppl assaylid/assayled
assault, n attack/temptation, 326
assawt, v assault, 5927
assemblid, v prt convoked, 2887
assent, v assent, 784
asshis, n pl ashes, 3842; also asise
assignyd, v prt allocated, 9
assort, n company, 1062
assure, v ~ (thee) in thi gourn-
aunce: be assured in (i.e., con-
trol) your behavior, 143 refl
astate, n honor, rank, 458, 6069;
also estat
astert, v escape, 310, 3353, 5363
astoneth, v is overwhelmed, 2319
aswowne, adv in a swoon, 304, 1784
at, prep 1. at, 243, 871, 880, etc.; 2.
to, 1692; 3. in time of, 3859; 4.
in, 5836; ~ al: anything at all, 4188
at [error for out], prep without, 1236
atchid, v ppl arrested, 3005
atayne, v, see attayne
atayne/atwayne, adv in two, 378, 3068
atamyd, v ppl humbled, 114; see also
entamyd
atere, v [OE teorian] wear down, fa-
tigue, 1029, 1485
athanke, v thank, 62, 1065
atony, see attonys
attayne/atayne, v 1. reach, 365,
1041, 1640, 5635; 2. obtain, 537,
544, 655, 3563, 3961, 5597; 3.
keep*, 4917
attaynt, v ppl [atteinen] worn out,
exhausted, 5842
attendyg, ger* the act of devoting
oneself, rendering service, 284
at(t)onys/attones, at once, 2090,
3629, 3639, 3910, 6097
at(t)urbaunce*, n [OF turbacioun]
distress, 699 §, 1653, 1903, 3715
atwayne, see atayne
aught, see owe
auncient, adj of great antiquity, 2939
aundir, adv yonder, 4825
autour, n authority, 4743
avayle, n good, 360
avalis, v falls, 5025 §
avauence, n advancement, 347
avaunce, v 1. assist, 15, 6004; 2. ad-
vanke, go, 1594, 1764, 2975,
3402, 3963 refl; 3. come forward,
1789, 4591r refl
avault(e), v boast, speak proudly,
710, 3302, ~ that, 3342
avenge, v avenge, 883
aventure, n 1. fortune, 2236r, 3942,
4280, 4307; 2. circumstances,
2002r, 5736; 3. lot, 1395, 5369;
in ~: in doubt, 5598; wo worth
myn ~!: a curse on my luck!,
2067
avert, v 1. be heedful (of), 2619,
3633; 2. state (as the result of ob-
servation), 4187 §; 3. consider,
4490, 6393; also aduer
avise, n advice, 1364, 1709; vnto
yowre ~: in your judgment,
4331; also advise
avise, v 1. advise, 1529, 6122, 6318;
2. (re)consider, 65, 2568, 3182;
3. (to) devise, 156, 5433; 4. plan,
6005; 5. realize, 6132
avisely, n bi good ~: with due
consideration, 2817
avisily, adv discreetly, 4002
avisoun, n account of a vision, 4744
avisynes/avysynes, n 1. deliberation,
1155; 2. premeditation, 3973;
bi good ~: with great skill, 2112
avisyng*, n tath a bettir ~: makes a
tbetter decision, i.e., changes
(hers) mind, 1447
avmferse, see amverse
avoche, v declare, 4356
avoyde, v escape, 1656
away/awe, adv 1. away, 540, 705,
1995, etc.; 2. on (my) way, 2398;
3. at a distance, 3444, 5281
away, v conspire, 29
awayte, n scheme(s), 6445
awake/awke [error], v awaken, 888,
3761, 5188, etc.; prt awook; ppl
awakid; see also wake
awhile, adv a while, 2556
aworth, adv take ~: accept kindly,
3117
axcess, n attack of lovesickness, the
malady of lovers, 5840
axe/-n, v 1. ask, 219, 223, 225,
2295, 2398, 2435, 2899, 5156,
etc.; 2. (fig.) calls for, requires,
GLOSSARY

784, 1714, 2826; 3s axith; prt axid; prp axyng

B
bad, see bidde
badde, adj distasteful, 4902
bay, see bie
bayne, n bathing room, 4827
bayte, v [baiten (OE bæten)] 1. feast, feed, 1266; 2. harass, 4718; 2s baytist
baytith, v 3s [aphetic form of abaten (OF abatetre)] becomes depressed, 1730 §
balad(e), n ballade, 764, 1506, 3071, 4654; pl baladis
balade, v compose ballades, 1440 U
balayse/balise, n balas ruby, 4982, 4987
balaunce, n payse in ~: judge carefully, 144; wayfith in ~: in a balance (scale), 1646
balis, n pl sets of dice (usu. three), 5023
bandoun/bandone, v 1. give (himself) up, 811; 2. committed, 5605; 3. subjugated, 3363; in ~: forsaken*, 3478; ppl bandonyd
baner, n banner, 944
baneshe, n banishment, 964
banysse, v (to) banish, 686, 1017, 1517, etc.; ppl banysshid
banke, n 1. shore, 4756, 4769
bare, adj 1. altogether lacking, 2364, 5795; 2. bare, 4852
bare, see bere
bareyn, adj devoid, 6479
bargyne, n bargain, 3729, 5397, 6072
basse, n kiss, 5897
bas{se}, v kiss, 3831, 4840, 6371; prp baste
basshe, v (be) disconcerted, embar-rassed, 1782, 2273; prp basshid
batell, n geue ~: engage in combat, 1589
batith, v 3s ceases, 6272
baw, interj bawl!, 5097
be/bi/ben/bene/bi [error] | name/nare, v 1. (to) be, are, etc., 18, 41, 44, 56, 61, 70, 97, 100, 136, 174, 192, 209, 297, 640, 682, 1064 subj, 1177, 1202, 1216, [error for are] 1246, 1255, 1269 subj, 1886, 1888, 2194, [error for were] 2303, 2349, 2607, 2633 subj, 3199, 3855, 3986 4450 subj, 4810, 4978, 5007, 5085, 5229, 5306 subj, 5444, 5669, 5712, 5796, 6127, 6135, etc.; 2. become, come to pass, 5106, 6341; will be, 3875; 3. it is, 800, 1286, 1666r, 3140, 3147, 3336, 3681, 3745 subj, 4113, [error for nis] 4575, 5089, 5109, 5806, 5942, 6248, etc.; are not, 5106; 5. is nothing, 2205r, 2735, 4740; 6. even though (she) is, 4885 subj; 7. living, 4541; 8. was not, were (would) not, 2143, 2145, 3363, 3917, 4646, 4998, 5142; 9. would be, 2051, 2080, 2144, 6191 fut, etc.; 10. had, 5825 subj; 11. were not (did not exist), 3685 subj, 4359 subj, 5142; ~ knowe: (did) become known, 5119; nad be: had it not been, 5215; Is am | name/nare|; 2s are/art; 3s is/ys/be | teys/ist/tis/tesse | nys/nis/nyst/nyse/nar; 1,2pl are/ar; 3pl are/ar/be/ben/ bene/arne | nar/nys; subj be/ ben | nar/ner/nor [error]; imp be/beth; prp beyng; prt Is was; 2s were; 3s was/were | nas; pl were/ware/wer; prt subj were/ ware/wer | ner; ppl ben(e)/bee; see also were v (1)/(2)
bed/bedde, n bed, 2462r, 4843
beddid/ybeddid, v ppl prepared, 2763, 4299
bedeman, n beadsman, 4222
bee, see be
beef, n beef, 3112
before, adv before, 1601; also bife
begge, v beg, 4226; see also abeggyng
begoon, see bigynne
beuyng, prp [beien] submitting, 213, 275; see also obay, bow
beyng, see be
bel(ie), n petition, 786, 1159, 1806;
also bill
belle, n bell, 2260
bemys, n pl beams, 2457, 5005
benche, n a boxed, turf-covered
mound used as a seat, 4670
ben(e), see be v
bene, n pl bees, 193
ben-, on Charles's use of the verbal
prefix ben-, see Introduction,
"Grammar"
benfalle*, see bifalle
benholde*, see bholde
benygne, adj gracious, 176, 1166,
1536, etc.
benleue*, v leave alone, 5706
bent, v prt/ppl 1. resolved, 5244; 2.
inclined, 1248
benwaylyd*, see biwale
benware*, see beware v
berayvith, see bireve v
berd, n beard, 3877, 5333
bere, n bier, 436, 970, 1416, etc.
bere, n bear, 5562
bere/-n, v 1. bear, 135, 867, 891,
1039, 1399, 1463, 1756, 1845,
4997, 5040, 5185, 5306, 5727,
6187, etc.; 2. hold, carry, 794,
2696, 3369, 3902, 5209; 3.
endure, 722, 1430, 3435, 4593; 4.
wear (a certain kind of expres-
sion), 952, 1472, 2253, 3868; 8.
conduce (yourself), 1226, 6436;
3s berith; prt bare/bore; prt subj
bare; ppl borne/bore/ybore/
born
berel, n beryl, 5042
besche, see bische v
beseid, prep besides, 3526
besy, adv importunately, 4641
besily, adv diligently, 2169
besse, see note 6178r §
best, n beast, 2824, 5444
best, adj sup best, 375, 1709, 1748,
4442, 6357
best adv sup best, 123, 149, 153,
e tc.; most suitably, 2171; for the
~: in (your) best interests, 5128
bestbilouyd, adj as n most beloved
one, 1224, 1534
betake/bitane, v ppl [bitaken] taken,
95, 2173
bettir/bet(t), adj comp better, 107,
306, 1447, 3437, 4307, 5235,
5365, 5544, 5601
bet(tir)/bett/betir, adv comp 1. better,
160, 723, 2504, 5259, 6030, etc.;
2. more readily, 3493
bete, v beat, punish, 4195, 4783,
4866, 6389; ~ down: conquers,
2570; 3s betith; ppl bete/betyn
beth, see be v
bewar(e)/benware*, v 1. (to) beware,
2442, 3447r, 4133, etc.; 2. avoid,
2619, 2632, 3759, 5284 (the
meaning of this word largely
overlaps that of [be] ware adj)
bewte, n beauty, 129, 162, 173, etc.,
form of address 440
bewtevous, adj as adv beautifully,
3932
bi/by, prep 1. by, 11, 141, 146, etc.;
2. via, 1364, 1368, 2906, 2945;
3. by means of, 1402, 5025; 4.
because of, 1883; 5. according
to, 1980; 6. by (the side of),
2362; 7. with, 2930; 8. concern-
ing, 4632; 9. in, 2715, 5405; 10.
on, 4832, 6026; ~ lynkis: link by
link [St: in strings], 5025
bicause, conj [sometimes preceded by
for] because, 220, 3110, 4394, etc.
bicome(n), v 1. become, 60, 88,
213, 1511, 2048, 2372, 3466,
3910, 4020, 4943, 5756; 2. (it)
becomes, 449; 3s bicometh; prt
bicome/bicame/bicomen; ppl
bicomen
bidde, v 1. urge, command, 814,
926, 1938, 4285; 2. beg for,
3891; prt bad/bit; ppl bad
bide, v 1. remain, 1520, 2965r,
3506, etc.; 2. wait for, 2076
bidyng, adj dwelling, 4667; ~ place,
1518, 4815 [place omitted] §
bie/bay, v 1. buy, 1129, 1251, 1268,
3132, 6433, etc.; 2. done, 2185;
~ hit dere: to pay dearly for it,
2186; prt/ppl bought; see also
abey
bifalle/bifall/benfalle*, v 1. befall, happen, 741, 749r, 2660 subj, 4746, etc.; 2. falls to (my) lot, 5384 subj; were me ~: had befallen me, 217; how it is ~: how I have fared, 2694; prt bifill; ppl bifalle; see also falle
bifale, see bifale v

bifalle, v 1. befall, happen, 741, 749r, 2660 subj, 4746, etc.; 2. falls to (my) lot, 5384 subj; were me ~: had befallen me, 217; how it is ~: how I have fared, 2694; prt bifill; ppl bifalle; see also falle
bifare, adv 1. earlier, 2430; 2. in front of, 2551; 3. as adj earlier, 1780; also before
bigyle, v deceive, 4202 subj, 6429; ppl bigilid
bigynne, v begin, 152, 202, 1401, 5455, etc.; prt bigan; ppl bigonne
bigynnyng, n beginning, 2170
bigoon/begoon, ppl most wooffullest ~: most deeply overcome with grief, 2062; wel ~: lucky, 6187; see also woobigoon
biheld, see bihold v
bihist, n promise, 6486
bihight/bihet(e)/bihite/bihyte, bihest, biheld, bigynnyng, bigyle, bifore, biholdyng, biholdyng, biholde/bihold/benholde*, bigynne, bifalle/bifall/benfalle*, v 1. befall, happen, 741, 749r, 2660 subj, 4746, etc.; 2. falls to (my) lot, 5384 subj; were me ~: had befallen me, 217; how it is ~: how I have fared, 2694; prt bifill; ppl bifalle; see also falle
bifore, adv 1. earlier, 2430; 2. in front of, 2551; 3. as adj earlier, 1780; also before
bigyle, v deceive, 4202 subj, 6429; ppl bigilid
bigynne, v begin, 152, 202, 1401, 5455, etc.; prt bigan; ppl bigonne
bigoon/begoon, ppl most wooffullest ~: most deeply overcome with grief, 2062; wel ~: lucky, 6187; see also woobigoon
biheld, see bihold v
bihist, n promise, 6486
bihight/bihet(e)/bihite/bihyte, v 1. assure, promise, 298, 744, 802, 1215, 3692, 4568, etc.; 2. charged, 4267; prp bihetyng; ppl bihight
biholde/bihold/benholde*, v 1. behold, see, look (at), 233, 455, 477 subj, 483 subj, 767, 3269, 3832, 4992, 5900 imp, etc.; 2. obligated, 40, 4655; 3s biholth/biholdith; prt biheth; ppl biholde
bihodyng, adj under obligation, 1048
bihodyng, n looking, 259
bihoue, n benefit, 1148, 2674, 4386
bihouyth/bihoth(u)/bihoth, v 3s benefits*, 5569; what ~: of what use is, 305
did you benefit?*, v 1 (1) leave, remain (with), (with), 1165, 2590, 2599, 3101, 4848, 5330; 2. turn from, 5706; prp bileyvyn; prp/pl bifleth
did you benefit?*, v 2 (believe), 49, 600; see also leue, v (2)
bill-e, n 1. petition, letter, 175, 2693, 3288, 5544, 6500; 2. document, 2365, 4736; also belle
bilyouyd, adj beloved, 4446, as n 1876; see also bestbilyouyd
bimase, ppl stunned, 4161
bynde, v bind, 275, 1117, 4114, 4863, 5366; 2. fixed, 420; 3. under obligation, 5458; 3s byndith/bynden; ppl bound(e)
birdis, n pl birds, 1694, 2474, 3120, 4043
bireyve, v 1. take away from, 589, 1441, 1998, 6012; 2. rob of, 680, 3765, 6269; 3s birevith/berayvith; ppl biraught/birait; see also rayue, enrayfid, birobbe
biried, v buried, 2362
birrobew, v rob, 1074
biseche/beseche/bisechen, v beg, ask, 91, 176, 578, 612, 2718, 6017, etc.; ~ to: begged for (sth to sb), 2869r; 3s bisechith; prp bischeyng; ppl bisought
bisecher, n petitioner, 2790
bisetth, v 3s [bisitten] is proper for, 2312
biseide, prep near, 2465; me ~: at my side, i.e., with me, 124
bisy, adj 1. eager, 1115, 4705; 2. constant, 3951
bisy, v strive, 4697bisyne, n 1. task, 4663; 2. difficulty, 4701; sett ~: busy (oneself), 1583, 5494
bisought, see biseche
bistad, v ppl 1. afflicted (with), 803, 6522; 2. affected, 5060
bit, see bidde
bitake, v [bitechen] 1. entrust, 103, 2345, 2561, 4282; prp bitook
bitane, see betake
bithynke/bithynke/bithynk/-en/bithenke, v 1. consider, 1352, 1878, 2688 refl, 4212, 6399 refl, 6520 refl, etc.; 2. think (on, of), 651, 1120, 1906, 3998, 5699 refl, 5760, 5777; 3. suppose, 1146; 4. resolve, 1569; 5. devise, 1620 refl; [line fragment] 1966 refl; 6. [subj omitted] (I) realized, reflected, 2237 refl; 7. [subj omitted] decided, 5053 refl; newe ~: reconsidered, 1446; ben ~: keep (it) in mind, 3293; (haue/were) wele ~: thought about it seriously, 3442 refl, 4097, 5931; decided
GLOSSARY

(That), 2644 refl; (me) ~ is (of): (I) consider, meditate (on), 4109 refl pass; y am on her ~: I remember her (quite well), 5102; y am ~: I just remembered, 5173; pri/pp/ ppl bithought

bitide, v befall, 89, 4919; ppl bitide

bittirnes, n bitterness, 5870

bitwene, prep between, 1107, 1256, 2416, etc.

biwayle, v 1. utter lamentations (over), complain (about), 756, 2019, 2393, 4687, etc.; 2. compose a complaint about, 4660; prp biwayling; ppl benwaylyd* [corrected from benwayd]

biwray, v 1. betray, reveal, 493, 5721, 6511r; ppl biwried

blak/-e, adj black, 758, 3147, etc.; as n 1329, 2907

blame, n blame, 187, 989, 4419, 5733

blame, v 1. blame, 1568, 2279, 2795, etc.; 2. criticize, 3845, 4682; prp blamyd

blasty, adj* gusty, 2439

blent, v ppl blind (folded), 1234

blesse, v give thanks to, 1230; 2. deliver, 4346

blew/-e, adj 1. blue, 1153, 2309, 4986, etc.; 2. blue/a kind of cloth, 4805

blis/blisse/blys, n 1. joy, bliss, 238r, 2307r 4091, 4388, 6410, etc.; 2. paradise, 2347

blisfull, adv happy, 6091

blyn, v be silent, 495

blynnd, adj blind, 2419, 6523

blynke, n [blenk] (a) glimpse, 795 §

blyue/blyve, adv immediately, 2150, 6057

blood, n 1. kin, 6471; 2. blood, 6474

blowyng, v prp blowing, 1044

blusshen, v turn (color), blush, 1336, 1803, 5087, 5331; 3s blussith; prp blost/blosshid

boch, n woods, 5089

body/bode, n 1. body, 24, 249, 1670, 2840, etc.; 2. person, 260, 4750; 3. the trunk or waist, 4981 §; on ~: to yourself, 103 §

bodies, n pl buds, 4044

boystous, adj awkward, 6224

bold, adj presumptuous, 247, 4837, 5214, 5361

bollid/bolnyd, adj* swollen, 2092, 5968, 6510

bollyng, adj* rising, 6526

bon/boon, n bone, 5134, 5517

bond, n 1. domination, 291; 2. document containing the feudal obligation, 2786, 2892

bondage, n servitude, 39

bone, n 1. request, 2858, 3319; 2. prayer, 4092

bo(o)k, n book, 420, 3128; bi this ~: I swear, 4152

bordir, n border, 5009

bore, see bere v

brow, v to ~: be your protector [usu. as farewell], 5335

brow(e), v 1. borrow, 2531, 6013; 2. go find (some), 5110

bosom/bosum, n bosom, 2908, 3601, 5192

bostis, n pl loud talk, 4181

bote, n ?goodness, 2027 §; alternative, 5234

bothe/both, adj 1. both, 24, 360, 2416, etc.; 2. all, 1111; ~: both of us, 2953

botith, v is of avail, 2572, 5745

bottyne, n part ~: choose mates, 2463 § U$§

bought, see bie

bound, see bynde

bounte, n 1. benevolence, generosity, 344, 458, 850, etc.; 2. beauty, 2229, 3170, 6047, 6480; of ~: out of kindness, 1253, 2513

bow, v submit, 2765 refl, see also beying, obay

bowl, adv [pa- omitted] about, 5085; also abowt

brayd, in a ~: suddenly, 2636; see also abreide

brayne, n judgment, 4376

brayne, adj mad, 2492

brak, see breke

bras(e), n pair, 920, 6094

bred, v ppl bred, 4380

brefly, adv briefly, 5353
look at, 1802 subj, ppl casten
cast/kast/caste, v (2) 1. intend, plan (to), 133, 332, 2571, 2668, 3878 refl, 5116 refl, 6117, etc.; 2. contrive, scheme, 2214, 3148, 3405, 4948, 6041; see also forcast (1)
castelle/castell, n castle, 54, 1749, 1755, etc.
cause/cawse, n reason, cause, 1056, 2289, 6488, etc.; ~ of whi: (good) reason, 4209; ~ and reson whi: argument, 5553
cause/cawse/sawse [error], v 1. cause, 46, 47, 212, 279, 728, 806, 1573, 4377, 4680, 5293, 5676, 6482; 2. induce, 1157; 2s causist; 3s causith/cawsith; ppl causid/cawsid; see also encause
causes, adj 1. without reason, 5563r; 2. as adv 5555
cawsey, n [cauce(e)] highway, 2945
cely, adj miserable, 1999; also sely
certayne, n true nature, 5652
certayne/certeyne, adj certain, 2087; in ~: assured, confident, 5391
certayne/certeyne, adv certainly, 400, 534, 647, etc.; in ~: certainly, indeed [rhyme tag], 1105, 6139; see also vncerteyne
certis/certes, adv certainly, 802, 1048, 1124, etc.
cesoun, n season, 703
cesse/sesse, v 1. cease, 816, 984, 1528, etc.; 2. stop, 1727; 3. leave, 2058; see also acesyne v
chambre/chambrir, n inner room, 1609, 2458, 4826
champion, n one who engages in combat as another's representative, 4359
chapell, n chapel, 1991
chare/chayre, n chariot, 2456, 4966, 4973, 5036
charge, n 1. duty, (burden of) obligation, 2589, 2852, 4131; 2. (feeling of) concern, 2358, 4848; 3. blame, 2613; 4. weight, 4997
charge, v order, 814, 1631, 2937, 6077, 6493; prp chargid; prp chargyng; ppl chargid
chas, v chase, 3920; see also a chase
chase, see chase
chaste, v ppl disciplined, 3061
chaunce, n 1. (good) fortune, 1074, 1555, 1640, 1774; 2. opportunity, 1124; 3. lot, 325, 680, 5991; 4. circumstances, 1913, 2977; 5. numbers (thrown), 5028; pl chaunsi
chaunce, n 1. change (of affection), 1215, 1239, 2661, 4857; 2. changeableness, 4681; 3. alteration, 4684, 5440, 5443r; 4. exchange, 6075; 5. for exchange, 4934 §; 6. the new moon, 5008
chaunsi/chauen, v 1. change, 2512, 738, 2863, 4979, 5001, 5602, etc.; 2. moved, 1526, 3916r; 3. waxing, 5438; 2pl chaunsi
t imp; prt chaunce; prp chaungyn; ppl chaungid
chaungid, adj waxing, 4086
chauenge/chauengement, n change, 1228
chief, adj 1. greatest, 1040; 2. chief, head, 1670
che(e)f, adv especially, 4557; in ~, 2283, 4915
chees, see chase v
checkis, n pl cheeks, 3057, 5229, 6306
chepe, v bargain (in order to buy), 4127
chere, n 1. manner, expression, 445, 952, 1173, etc.; 2. frame of mind, 1011, 1054, 1202, 4302, 4583, 6188; 3. face/behavior, 2129, 2615; 4. welcome, 5570; 5. gestures, 5771; 6. joy, 6272; bere my ~: set my expression, 1472; made a ~: gave a look, 4824; pl cheris
chere, v (to) cheer up, entertain, 1436, 1698, 1974, 2738, 3161; prt cherid
chere, n ~ fayre: cherry fair, 2162
cherish, v 1. foster, 3652, 4819; 2. value, 3665
cherle, n churl, 150, 1587; poss cherlis; also carle
cherte, n devotion, 1164; had in ~: held dear, 960; take in ~: receive with devotion, 1260
chese/-n/schesse, v (to) choose, prefer, 357, 1408, 1595, 1669, 2143, 2166, 2248, 2751, 4567 refl, 4876 refl, 4918 subj, etc.; prt chase/ches; ppl chose(n)
chesyng, n (the) choosing, 2277
chesoun, n reason (for sth), 2966;
for no ~: on no account, 239
chesse, n chess, 2110
chest, n 1. coffer, 4361; 2. body, 5749
chevishance, n stratagem, 1799
child, n 1. girl, 153; 2. disciple, child, 5276
childhood(e), n childhood, 2559, 2940
childishe, adj puerile, 93, 191
childissh, adv childishly, 622
chirche, n church, 2298, 4831, 4845
choys/choyse, n 1. choice, 2144, 2238, 2255, etc.; 2. choosing, 1241, 3528
chose, see cheve v
circumstance, n with all the ~: with careful attention to propriety, 5983
clakke, v tell, 4909
clappe, v tell tales, 4370
clawse, n story, 4909
clef, n cliff, 4756
clay, n dirt, 150; closid vndir ~: buried, i.e., slain, 2174
clene/cley, adv completely, 872, 2662, 5290, etc.
clenly, adj more ~: cleaner, 1171, 1273
clipid
clere, adj 1. bright, beautiful, 2308, 5005, 5803, 6277; 2. clear, 4393
clere, adv entirely, 1635, 2173, 2622, etc.
clerk, n 1. cleric, 4319; 2. scholars, 2149; pl clerkis
clerte, n radiance, 1627
cleve, v break, 4534
clight, v ppl [clicchen] fastened, 1924
clyme, v climb, 5048
clippe, v embrace, 565
clos, adv secretly, 2843, 3688
close, v 1. close (up), 1169, 2664, 3452, 4316; 2. covered (up), 2547, 6509; 3. walled in, 5789; ~ vndir cley: buried, 2174; ppl closid
clotth, n (outer) garment, clothes, 296, 4802; pl clothes
clothe/clothe, v clothe, wrap, 2039, 4807; ~ (my sepulture/graue/bere): cover with funeral trappings, 2038, 2196 2421, 2593, 4479; ppl clothid
clovis, n pl cloths, 2547
clowde, n as adj cloud-shaped, cloud-like, 5002
clowdy, adj of clouds, 5325
clovid, adj cloud-covered, 6311
coffer, n deceiver, mocker, 6423
cofer/cofre, n chest, 1170r, 1190r
cold, adj cold, 4838
cole, n coal, 434
coloure/colour, n 1. color, 1153, 4979, 4998; 2. complexion, 4458, 4780, 5284, 5470, 6200
colt, n colt, 2587
comaunde/-n, v command, order, 1161, 1747, 2780, 3297r, 5612, 5961, 6090; 3s comaundith; prp/ ppl comaundid
comaundement, n order, 17, 763, 2889, 3016
comaundyng, n command, 1468
comberaunce, n distress, 1502
come/com/cum, v come, 263, 562, 636, 667, 692, 746, 900, 917, 1294, 2070, 2810 subj, 6475, etc.; ~ to: happens to, 267r; ~ of: come on! hurry up!, 667 §; are ~: have become, 3918, 3991; ~ on: approach (with hostile intent), 2132; 3s cometh; prp come/
came; prp comyng; ppl come/
comen
comer, n messenger, 2995
comfort, n relief, consolation, 282, 393, etc.; source of encouragement, 209; do ~: comfort, 1445
comfort, v 1. comfort, 1136, 1937, 5518, etc.; 2. succor, 331; 3. cheer up, be comforted, 1546, 4592; imp pl comfortith
comfortyng, n encouragement, 1458
comfortyng, adj comforting, 1312
comyn, adj as adv commonly, 267r
comyng, ger coming, 2652, 6196
company/compahe, n 1. company, social gathering, 481, 521, 557, etc.; 2. companionship (esp. of his lady), 2012; 3. retinue, 2367, 2914, 4264; in ~: together (with), 521, 656, 1311, 1434, 5573, 6014; in (a) social gathering(s), 953, 2227; one of their company, 2607, 3097; to be a friendly ~: to be good company, 1853
comparisone, n equal, 3739
compas, n in ~: around the edge, 5043
complayne/complayn, v 1. make a complaint or appeal (to authority), 1032, 2330, 2392, 3067, 3954, 5504, 5552, 5555, 5658; 2. lament, 4651, 6513; 3. (to) complain (about), 2942, 6036; 4. give expression to, 786; 3s complaين-
th; see also playne
complaynt/compleynt, n 1. lament, (poem of) complaint, 1422, 3071, 4653, 4674, 5791r; 2. formal complaint, 2565; pl compla
yntis
compleyntouere/complayntouere*, n one who laments, complains (about sth), 5563r
complet, adj perfect, 482
condicioun, n 1. nature, 4690; 2. condition, 1567, 2711
confesse, v make confession, 3696 refl, 3969 refl
confessioun, n confession, 5278
confound/-e, v 1. destroy, 430, 671, 753, 1934 refl, etc.; 2. confuse, mix up, 4865
conquer, v win, 133, 708, 3400; prp conqueryng
conquest, n victory, 2699; make a newe ~: gain another lady’s love, 2830
consait/consayt, n 1. opinions (of me), 3305; 2. notions, 3139; in my ~: in my judgment, 31; pl conse
titis
consent, v consent, 388, 2753, 2900; prp consentid
consideryng, prp considering, 919
conspire/conspere, n plotting, 965, 1071, 1725r
conspyre, v plot, plan, 1410
constrayne, v 1. compel, 2507; 2. struggled, 5046 refl*; prp constraynyd
constraint, n distress, 5492
contemplatif, adj devoted/contemplative, 4864
content, adj content, 2908, 3531
content, v 1. be content (to), satisfied, 1520, 1854 refl, 2884, 5161 refl, 6144 refl; 2. satisfy, 3864, 4522 refl; 3. content, 666; 4. suf
fice*, 683; 3s contentith
contynew, see contyne
contrayre, adj opposed (to me), 780, 4456
contrayre, v contradict, 3212
ccontrary, adj another, i.e., different, 619
contrary, n opposite, 711r, 1765
contrary, adv to the contrary, 4693
contre, n [coutour] counting house, 4361
contruye/contryue, v 1. compose, 2155; 2. plot, 5532, 6043r
contyne/contynw, v remain, 5831; ~ forth: carry on, 4357
conuenyent/convenyent, adj (be)fitt
ing, 2631, 2834, 2870
conuernt/convert, v 1. change (one’s) mind, 186; 2. convert, 2444, 2714
convey/convay, v 1. escort, guide, 2399, 2935, 6459; 2. to take, 2346
corage, n spirit, 38, 2581, 4424
corner, n nook, 6244
corse, n a run(ning), a turn, 5221 §, 5240, 5322; also course
cosyne, n form of polite address 5231 §
cosse, n kiss, 558, 3657, 3666, etc.; pl cossis
coth, v see quod
couert, see covert
counsayle, n advice, 5127, 6026
counselere, n counselor(s), 966
counsell/counsayle/counselle, n 1. counsel, 351, 596, 1007, etc.; 2. council, 50, 55
countenaunce, n 1. outward appearance, facial expression, 500, 2918, 2959, 4334; 2. behavior, 141, 370, 4327; 3. composure, 1780; 4. pretext, 5084; a ~: outward show, 3658
course, n (as of a disease) course, i.e., have had their way, 634; also corse
court, n court, 629, 4278, 6468; ~ of parlement, high court parliament, 2880, 2887
cover/couert, adj 1. concealed, covered (up), 2615, 4809, 5285; 2. hidden from view, secret, 2776; 3. under cover, 3402; 4. closed, 3640; 5. ?private, 5882
coverture, n concealment, i.e., disguise, 4339
coward/cowert, n 1. form of address 1594, 3876; 2. recreant, 301, 3399
coward, adj cowardly, 670; also koward
cowardly, adv miserably, 3316
craft, n 1. art, occupation, 845, 2626, 2667, 4141, 4147, 4375, 4931; 2. diligence, 4168; 3. skill in trickery, 4344
crampe, n ~ of deth, mortall ~: the death agony, 1001, 4576
creature, n 1. person, 1384, 2040, 2061r, etc.; 2. created thing, 2021, 2827, 5579; 3. self, 4472
crede, n creed, 913, 1097
crepe, v go, creep, 903, 2443, 3141
crese, n increase, 5595
cresyng, v prp waxing, 5008
crewell/crewel, adj cruel, 165, 778, 4279, etc.
crewellfull, adj cruel, 4585
crewelly, adv cruelly, 4914, 5532, 5936
crewelnes, n cruelty, 2570
crewelte/cruelte, n heartlessness, cruelty, 329, 574, 1588, etc.
cry, n 1. cry, voice, 2468, 2899; 2. lamentation, 2304; pl cries
cry/crie, v 1. beg (for), 906, 2777, 4250, 4545, etc.; 2. to cry (out), 565, 979, 1298, 5187; 3s cry(es)
croft, n small piece of arable ground adjacent to a house, 2464
croke, n ruse, 2642
crokid, adj at an angle, 3904
crosse, n cross, 3661
crowche, n cross, 3661
crowne, n crown, 4761, 5030
crowne, v crown, 2189
cruelte, see crewelte
cum, see come
cup, n cup, 4308
cure, n (medical) remedy, 2821r;
takist ~: pay attention, 2557;
vndir ~: in (my) custody, 4281; also quere
cure, v cure, 2079, 4306
curris(g)h(enes), n baseness, 1796, 3638

curse(n), v curse, 2059, 2472, 6469
cursid, adj 1. accursed, 27, 865r, 925, etc.; 2. malicious, 1590, 2739, 3230, 4610, 5719, 5935; see also acursid
cursidnes, n malice, 4296
curteys, adj courtly, refined, 141, 145, 4443
curtesy/curtese, n benificence, 320, 556, 2601, etc.
custome, n custom, 1693; in ~: in (my) usual manner, 2177

D
daisy, n daisy, 5019
day/-es, n 1. day, 53, 251, 1714 poss, 4027, 6217, etc.; ~ old: (for) a long time, 783, past, 4656, 4924; bi this ~: 1854 assev §; pl dayes
day(de), dayes, dayne, see dy v
dayly, adv daily, 2218, 4460, 4877
daylight, n daylight, 2546
dayneth, v 2pl condescend, 5971
dame, n lady, 463
dar/dare, v 1. dare, 167, 219, 328, 653r, 1300, 4145, etc.; as y ~, if I dare, 512, 555; prt/subj durst(e)
dart, n arrow, 311, 330, 4260, 5662
date, n date, 3042
daunce, n 2026, 3188, 6006
daunce, v 1. dance, 450, 4111, 4480, 4826; 2. have, 3849; prp daunsyng
dauncyng, see dauncyng
daunger/daungere, n 1. reserve, dis- dain, 26, 27, 165, etc.; 2. risk, 5934
daunergous, adj 1. domineering, 574; 2. reserved, 4443
daunsyng/dauncyg, n dancing, 4432
dawbid, v ppl, bespattered (with), 150
debe(e), n opposition, 6080; are falle at great ~: have quarrelled bitterly, 2576
debonayre, adj as n gracious one, 762
decay, n decline, 419r, 3099
declare, v 1. describe, 5022; 2. pleaded, 2888; prt declarid
ded, see do v
ded/deed/dede, adj 1. dead, 1332, 2034, 2035, etc.; 2. (who are) no longer alive, 2017; 3. dull, 4855; 4. adj as n dead one, 2181
dede/deede/ded, n 1. deed, 421, 456, 780, 1111, 1921, etc.; 2. document, 1123, 6027; in (verry) ~: indeed, truly, 892, 1793, 2147, etc.; pl deedes/edis
dedy*, adj deathlike, 2082
de(e)dly, adj 1. mortal, 1940, 3238; 2. nearly dead, 5144
deel, eche ~: entirely, 5310
deepe, adv deeply, 2425
defawte/default, n 1. lack, 2338; 2. blunder, 5730
defende, v protect, 4382
defy(e)/defie, v 1. defy, 1082, 1371, 5096, 6424; 2. reject, 4039
degree, n (social) rank, 139, 2497, 5401; in no ~: (not) at all, 225, 340, 1263, 1397; in oon ~: without wavering, 2873; (vn) to my (poore) ~: as well as I am able, 1858, 2854, 4623, 5964; in (eche/his) ~: in (every/his) way, 5412, 6249, 6287
deiyng, ger death, 2287
dey(e), deyde, deyen, see dy v
deynte, n delicacy, 3110
deyuure, n make ~: pay (one's) re- spect, 4788; also devoure
dele/del(l), n times, 1591; (in) every ~: entirely, 2256, 3535, 5165, etc.; neyur a ~: not at all, 122, 4938, 5691; eche a ~: entirely, 5398
delay, v delay, 543
dele, v 1. have dealings, cope, 4078, 5874; 2. give away, 6506
delise, n flowre ~: fleur-de-lis, 5032
delite, n delight, 5851
delite, v take pleasure (in), 425 refl, 483 subj, 4397, 4433, 4553; prt delited
delyuer, v 1. relinquish, 2713; 2. di- vested, 3408; ppl deluyerid
delyueraunce, n delivery, 6301
delyuernent*, n delivery, 2897
delive, v dig (your grave), 4957
deme, v 1. judge, 4935, 5893; 2. think, 5907, 6204; Is demeth
demene, n demeanor, 477, 3273, 5593
demenyd, ppl borne, 444
demenyng, n 1. demeanor, 4435, 4933; 2. efforts, 4705, 4721
demyng, ger (an) inkling, 684
denyen, v refuse, 5368
de paynt, v [OF depeint, ppl of de- peindre] 1. stained, 2304; 2. adorned (with rhetorical figures), 3093; ppl depaynted
depart/depar(en), v 1. depart (from), 2575, 2578, 2602, 2771, etc.; 2. part, 3867, 5323, 5660; 3. separated, 3476; 4. give (away), bestow (on), 104, 121, 1325, 1739, 2370; 5. distributed, 2354 subj; ~ away from, leave, 2654; prt departid; see also parten
departement, n separation*, 1241
departyng, n 1. separation, 1059, 2916, 5145, etc.; 2. departure, 4016, 4537, 6268; 3. leaving (your service), 5743
departure, n 1. alteration of choice, 1408; 2. parting, 5588
depe, adv deep, 1935
depist, adj sup depth, 1719
dere, adj 1. dear, 309, 421, 448r, etc.; 2. valuable, 3219, 3818; hert: sweetheart, 1621, 1916, 3751, etc.
dere/der, adv dearly, 3499, 6319; (a)bye ∼: pay dearly for (acquire with great effort), 1129, 1193, 2186, 4238
derk(e), adj 1. gloomy, 869; 2. obscure, 1406; 3. dark, 5004
derkid, derk(e), dere/der, 527, 1608r, 3713
descende, v (to) descend, 3280, 4692, 4698, 4965; 3s descent-; prp descendying; ppl descended
desevaunce, n deception, 1771
desyve/desseyue/deseu, v deceive, 1814, 6424, 6437
deseraunce/desyraunce*, n amorous desire, 1586, 1759
desere, see desire n
desere, see desire v
desert, n wilderness, 1013, 4286
desert, n 1. reward, 842, 1884; 2. worth, merit, 185
deserue/desert/deserven/deseue [error], v 1. deserve, 75, 83, 188, 1341, 1825, 2272r, 2772, 4190, 5965, 6158, etc.; 2. earn, 2503, 5921; 3. serve, 3410; 4. repaid, 3428; 3s deserveth; prp/ppl deseruyd; ppl deserue/deservid/desert; see also ondesert
deservance*, n deserving, 1883
deservance*, n [error for deservance] desire, 3784
desyraunce, see deseraunce
desire/desere, n 1. desire(s), 54, 264, 1465, 5774, etc.; 2. affection, 2759; 3. wish, 6235; to (my/his) as (I/he) wishes, 1024, 1042, 1643; ppl desiris/deseris
desire/desere, v 1. desire, 1035, 2493, 2990, etc.; 2. ask, 239; prp desirying
desirous, adj desirous, 5905
desolat, adj separated, 4067r
desperaunce, n despair, 4286; also disperaunce
deseyue, see deseyue
destance, n falyn at ∼: quarrelled, 885
destene/destyne/destyn, n (mis)fortune, 899, 2473, 3943, etc.
detayntis, v [OF define-] to detain, ModE detain] is held back, 3084 §
deth, n death, 79, 2359, 4260, etc.; poss dethis
dethe, see do
dette, n debt, 3817r, 3821
devill, n devil, 6028
devise, n heraldic device, 4338; at poynt ∼: perfectly, 4975
devise, v 1. imagine, 164, 5498, 5748; 2. declare, 890; 3. describe, 1351; 4. contrive, 5607
devoure, n duty, 1822, 6271; also devuure
devoure, v destroy, 4914, 6350; 3s devowris
devowt, adj devout, 2328
dewe, adj 1. due (to be performed), 1143, 1826, 4925; 2. proper, 3025
dewre/-n/dure, v (to) endure, 533, 603, 856, 1623, 2071, etc.; my lijf forth ∼: for the rest of my life, 221 §; prp dewryng; ppl dewrid; see also endure, adewre
dewresse, n suffering, 4586; also dures
dewte, n [ducte] 1. (fulfilling my) duty, 2281; 2. what is due (to you), 2534
dy/day/dey/dye/d(e)yen/dayne, v (to) die, 260, 301, 489, 721, 909, 959r, 1541, 2073, 2163, 2536, 2618, 3163 subj, 3604, 4030, 4518, 4921, 5708, etc.; to ∼: of dying, 736; 3s dey/dayes/dieth/dyes; prp deyde/dayde/dide; prp diyng
dyane, adj ~ day: Monday, 1844
dide, die, see dy
dyen, see dy
diffende, v defend, 294
dight, v ppl 1. destined, 237, 1921; 2. appointed, 5977
digne, adj noble, 2723
GLOSSARY

dilay, n delay, 1175, 4026, 5576, 5940; pl dilayes
diligent, adj diligent, 2502, 2895

dischargid, v prt 1. deprived, 4280; 2. release, relieve, 2560, 2786; prp discharging; ppl discharge

disclosen, v make known (to), 1894
discomfiture, n do ~: defeat, 1402

discomfort, n discouragement, sorrow, 1542, 2028, 3673, etc.
discomfit, v be discouraged, 3480 refl

discomforture, n discouragement, 5580
discryue/discryve, v 1. describe, 2153; 2. recount, 6061
discure/diskeuer, v reveal, 5251r, 5372; ~ out: 3175; also dissewre
disdayne/disdeyne, n (a show of) disdain, 21, 165, 446, etc.; ~ of courage: thinking it beneath (him), 38; hast thou ~?: do you hold it beneath your dignity?, 1415; take in ~: am scornful of, 3262; takith ~: be disdainful, 5643
disdayne/disdeyn, v 1. disdain, 3955, 5314 refl; 2. display contempt (toward me), 649
dise, n pl dice, 1645, 5024
disese, n 1. woe, 3704r, 5474, 5814, 5847r; 2. sickness, 3051
disgisid, v ppl disguised, 5916
dishon(0)ure, n dishonor, 4370, 5733

disyoentis, v [* in this sense] are located, 3082 §
diskeuer, see discure
dislust*, v do not desire, 14; ~ a-gyne: opposite of "lust after," 6487
dismay, n consternation, 2219
dismayd, v prt (became) alarmed, 5218 refl, 5723; ppl dismayd

dismys, v release (from), 2781
disobay, v refuse to follow, 417

dispeyre, n despair, 1934, 6101

dispayr, v ppl in despair,

2750, 5634, 5844, 6101

dispende, v 1. dispose of, 3721; 2. spent, 2726; ppl dispendid

disperance, n despair, 1018; also desperance

dispite, n anger, 430, 1513; in ~: amiss, 4069

displaye, v raise (as a sign of the onset of battle), 944

displeasaunce, n 1. misery*, 528r §, 701, 1012r, etc.; 2. annoyance, 3957; do ~: offend, 5466

displese/-n, v 1. offend, 534, 2277, 2288, 2605, 3685, 4731; 2. (be) offend(ed), 4715, 5556, 6235; prp disleysyng; ppl displeysid

dispersere, n 1. misery*, 734 §, 1346, 1430, etc.; 2. anger, irritation, 418, 2733, 2761, 3610; take ~: be grieved, angry, 487, 1938, 5901; savyn yowre ~: , 5622

displeysyng, ger ne takith ~: do not be offended, 289 §
disport, n 1. leisure activities, pastimes, 450, 1710; 2. amusement, 2026, 2848; pl disports

disport, v amuse (himself), 161, 1978 refl

disprayse, n disparagement, 488

disprave, v despise, 5833

dissay/disseyt, n 1. deception, 28, 1062, 2619; 2. deceptiveness, 6420

dissyvaunce, n deceit, 4279

disseyve, see deseyve
disseyvith [error for disservith], v deserves, 5945 §
dissent, n* [error for disset], 2632 §; at ~: undoubtedly*, 1236 §
dissent, v falls, 6050
disseruer/disseever, v part, 5069, 6414
dissee, v reveal, 5738; also dis-cure, diskeuer
dissee, n dish, 3125, 4391; pl dis-shis
distres/-se, n anguish, 208, 478, 521, etc.
distrov, v destroy, 1011, 2215
ditid, v ppl indicted, 5119
dyuerse, v change, 4985
dyvyne, v ~ forth: go on being suspicious, 6215
do/doon/don, v. 1. (to) do, 106, 728, 1204, 2195, 2724, 4314, 4682 subj, etc.; 2. behave, act, 1212, 3797, 4100, 4103, 6026; 3. give, add, 76, 664, 1377, 2585, 3549, 3569, 4407, 4662, 6180; 4. deal, 240; 5. would do, 892; 6. done, i.e., kept, 1184; 7. put forth, 2216; 7. commit, perform, 2023, 6079; ~ way, interj. Enough of that!, 151; ~ with or folly: act wisely or foolishly, 572; to ~: from expressing, 3027; 3s dost; 3s doth/dooth/dethe; 3pl doth; prp did/de(e)d; prp doyng; ppl doon/doi(e)d/yo/doon

do(on)/don, v. cause, 272, 362, 402, 422, 726, 770, 905, 1051, 1089, 1144, 1153, 1212, 1305, 1345, 1349, 1358, 1362, 1391, 1402, 1445, 1449, 1488, 1499, 1502, 1553, 1554, 1590, 1706, 1707, 1773, 1893, 1897, 1921, 1991, 2044, 2071, 2106, 2137, 2196, 2212, 2417, 2485, 2533, 2801, 2916, 2967, 3105, 3139, 3203, 3321, 3386, 3434, 3505, 3715, 3834, 3883 subj, 3992, 4111, 4118, 4126, 4154, 4218, 4343, 4356, 4458, 4580, 4586, 4607, 4619, 4629, 4692, 4845, 4879, 4904, 4910, 4940, 5144, 5286, 5359, 5367, 5375, 5379, 5466, 5484, 5577, 5681, 5718, 5744, 5778, 5800, 5837, 5908, 5941, 5962, 6040, 6066, 6351, 6438, 6496, 6507; ~ wite; subj (that), 5, 2783; 2s dost; 3s doth/do; pl do/doon/doon/doth; imp do(o); prp did; ppl doon/doon/ done
deer, n. one who does, 5873
dol, adj [dul] tedious, 6223
dool, adj doleful, melancholy, 4467
dombe, adj mute, 2651
dome, n. judgment, 5890
dotage, n. infatuation + senility, 2583, 2647
doty, adj* silly, 5061
doughtir, n. daughter, 147, 150
doutaunce, see dowtaunce
dowbil(l)/dowble, adj 1. two, 775; 2. false, 4327, 6439; ~ chere: two faces/natures, 2129; also dubbil
dowbilines, n. 1. faithlessness, 4358; 2. (a) double nature, 2376
dowche, adj German(ic), 3657
dowfs, n pl doves, 4762
downe, adv down, 2570, 2902, 3280, etc.
dowt/-e, n. 1. doubt, 1893, 2306, 4959, etc.; 2. fear, 1144, 5561; 3. uncertain situation, 4959; ~ to dyen: fear of dying, 736; in ~: for fear, 1724, 6204
dowtaunce/doutaunce, n. doubt, 3313; withouten (more) ~: doubtlessly, 1636r, 1769; take ~: fear, 1027
dowte, v. 1. doubt, 5561; 2. fearing, 418; prp dowtyng
dowtles/-e, adv 1. surely, undoubtedly, 742, 1146, 1890, etc.; 2. fearlessly, 2076; 3. without any doubt in (my) mind, 5053
draynt, v [drenchen] drowned, 2516; see also fordreynt
draught, n. move (in chess), 868, 874; (experience of) pleasure, 4558
drawe, v. 1. to make a move in chess, 2131; 2. draw (near to), 4562; 3. withdraw, 4259, 6513 refl; 4. draw, pull, 4969, 5234; ~ to: seek, 1710*, 1981 refl; prp draw; ppl drawen
drede/dred, n. 1. fear, 167, 500, 670, etc.; 2. uncertainty, 4459, 4464, 5136, 5850; 3. jeopardy, 6117; 4. risk, 4005; out of ~: without doubt, 1081, 1316, 5111
drede/-n, v. 1. (to) fear, 1732, 1740, 1785r, 2567, 3065, 3685, 4124, 4237 refl, 4417, 4920; 2. honor (fear + respect), 3358, 5465, 5888; 3. are afraid, 5424; 3s dredith
dredles, adv 1. without fear, 5184; 2. doubtless [emphatic], 5305
dreem/dreme, n. dream, 2638, 3517, 4640, 4740, etc.; pl dremys/drems
drenchyng, v prp drenching*, 403
drepe, v languish, 905, 975; 3s drepe

drepyngth

drepyngly, adv mournfully, 4258
drey, adj melancholy, 2927
dresse/dres, v 1. prepare, 1569, 3639
ref; 2. apply, 1798, 2386; 2. address, 2468; 4. lie down, 2481
ref; see also ouyrdres
drew, see drawe

dry(e), v 1. lacking in warmth of feeling, 955, 2584; 2. dry, 1275
drie/dry, inf endure, 4546; ~ in: 1896, 4634
drye, v (make) dry, 1176
dryffe, n (its) course, 4027
drynke, n drink, 808
dryue/dryve, v 1. drive, 206, 5240; 2. cause to pass, 4027; ~ forth, ~ away: while away, 3577, 4847; 3s
drivith; prt droue
drope, n drop, 5430, 5501
dubbil, adj double, 3416; ~ fold, twice as much, 4923; also dowbill
duk, n duke, 5
dul(l), adj [dool] doleful, 5791r
dull, adj [dul] dull (witted), 61, 4720
dullid, adj dullid, 1546
dure, see dewre, endure v
dures, n distress, 2517, 3231, 3386; also dewresse
durst(e), see dare
dwelle/dwel, v 1. (to) dwell, 596, 1489, 1518, etc.; 2. remain, 3409; prp dwellyng
dwellyng, adj dwelling, 628 as n, 6238

E
eche, v [eken] improve (i.e., cure), 2107
eche, adj 1. every (other), any, all, 19, 33, 242, etc.; 2. a, 1507; ~ a: each, every, 3860r, 6406; ~ (a)
dele: entirely, 3598, 5310; ~ othir: every, 1297
eche where, in ~: everywhere, 976, 1678
echon, 1. each one, 3279; 2. each of you, 4484
eek, adv conj 1. also, 320, 775, 1354, etc.; 2. therefore, 5258

eeiris, n pl ears, 2664

effecte, do the ~: ?show (me), 4028

eft, 1. again, a second time, 274, 2623, 2841, 3682, 3688, 5674, 6117; 2. afterwards, 1177, 4198, 5282, 5599; ~ agyne: once again, 650, 6174; (to) ~ sone: until/at (a) later (time in the immediate future), 1274, 1682, 4787, 6531; also oft

ey(e), n 1. eye(s), 162, 231, 312, 1608r, 2019, etc.; 2. point of view, 3269; with ~: with my eyes, 3779; pl eyen/eyene/eye; also y
eyre, n heir, 3216; see also ayre, heyre

eerde, n 1. Elde person., 2576, 2642, 2647, etc.; 2. an old man, 2583, 2587; also yelde

eleccioyn, n choice, 3738
elle, n pl ell (45 inches), 3722
ellis, adj more, 3465
ellis, adv 1. otherwise, else, 342, 663, 909, etc.; 2. if I do not, 3980; 3. at other times, 4160; 4. in addition, 5381; not ~: no other thing, 1360, 4639
elliswhere [sometimes two words],
adv 1. somewhere else, 985; 2. some other person, 1919; 3. as adj other, 1241, 2255, 6315
emprire, n (difficult) undertaking, 4387, 4714, 5496, etc.; see also empresse, entirprise
enbataylid, v ppl fortified, 1760
encause, v cause (to), 260; see also cause
enclyne, v direct, 24731
enclosid, v ppl confined, 1874
encombrance, n temptation, 5989
encrese(e), v increase, 2991, 5798
ende/end, n 1. end, 385, 1519 [deleted], 2210, etc.; 2. death, 4388; in ~ of: to end, 4467; ~ what: which end (of my subject), 492
endite/endyte, v (to) write, compose, 831, 2697, 2994, etc.
endityng, n made sum ~: written
ensample, n model, 45; also example
ensewith, v 3s follows, 2541
ensewre/ensure, v assure, 1159, 3168, 5248, etc.
ensewrid, adj assured, 4366; wel ~: self-assured, 4436, 5052
ensewridnes*, n wel ~: self-assurance, 445
tamayd, v ppl tamed, 5444; see also atamyd
entencioun, n desire, 1566
entent, n 1. desire, 10, 2862, 5243, 5652; 2. heart, 765, 2736, 2833, 3017, 6025, 6146; 3. purpose, intention, 2833, 2348, 2862, 3934, 5301; 4. attention, 16; 5. reason, 3812; after/to/in his/my/youre ~: 1. to my mind, in my opinion, 83, 989, 1226, 2223, 2525, 4628, 5523, 5892; 2. at your pleasure, 16; do thyne owen ~: do what you wish, 2614; yvill ~: ill will, 4411
entere, adj entire, 2707
entewne, v to bring into tune*, 5834
entelry, adv devoutly, 4415
entir, adj ~ poyn: the point on a backgammon board where a taken piece may be entered, 1632
entirmelle/entirmell, v 1. (inter-)mingle, 1967, 2261, 4808; 2. interfere, 123; 3. have to do, 3416, 3732; ppl yentirmelle
entirprise, n 1. undertaking, 898, 1025, 5679; 2. temptation, 5993; also emprise, enpresse
entre/entresse/entryse*, n [entre, entraunc] entrance, 912 §, 1615, 1928, 2666
entre, v enter, 1637
entristid, v ppl [* with en-] trusted, 5449
envy, n envy, 3767, 5935
evyous, adj envious, 29; as n 3202
enwarne, v to make warm, i.e., angry, 6207
ere, n ear, 2154, 3141
erly, adj early, 6081
ermyn, n ermine tails, 4989
erst, adj first, 6393
erthely, adj earthly, on earth, 4707, 5254, 6188
eschew/eschew, v 1. avoid, escape, 273, 1531, 3379, etc.; 2. shun, 2963; 3. forgone, 5127; prp eschewyng; ppl eschewid
eschewyng, n avoiding, 261
ese, n 1. comfort, 125, 2373, 2406, etc.; 2. peace of mind, 2261, 4240, 5129, 5849; 3. relief, 2083; payne of ~: painful comfort, 2083; to doon thee ~: to comfort you, 2921; doth an ~: gives comfort, 3549
ese, v relieve, 4600, 5648, 6497
esy, adj pleasant, 4649, 4810
esily, adv gently, 2907
esperaunce/espyraunce, n hope, 526, 691, 1751, etc.
espy, see aspy
estat, n 1. rank, 444; 2. condition, 861; 3. honor, 2991; also astat
euen, see even
euery/eueri/everi, adj every 158, 1486, 3211, 3297, etc.
euerich(o)n, pron everyone (who asks), 121, 3926
euerydel(l)/euery dele, adv utterly, 3405, (in) ~: entirely, 2256, 3535, 4070, 5165, 6034
euyr, see evyr
euymore/evymore, adv 1. ever, always, 181, 2280, 3506, etc.; 2. continuously, 2448, 3041, 4979, 5041; 3. every time, 3080, 4982; his lyue ~: for the remainder of his life, 34
eve, n evening, 3430, 4638; ~ and morn: always, 1831
even/evyn/euen/evene, adv 1. [an em- phatic] indeed, 82, 799, 1466, etc.; 2. exactly, 193, 4742, 5039, 6341; 3. quite, 3449; 4. completely, 5491; ~ as: as if, 5560
evensong, n evensong, 4647
evesedroppere, n eavesdropper, 1796
evir/cuylr/evyr, adv 1. always, ever, 86, 384, 739, etc.; 2. repeatedly, 1631, 3148
ewre, v grant, 854; also vre
ewrous, adj favored, 2313
example, n example, 934; also en-sample
excellence, n the ~ of love: this excellency, Love, 2610; yowre ~: Your Highness, 3024
excellent, adj unexcelled, 58, 1786, 2716, 2984
excllid, vprt surpassed, 215
except(e), v exempt, reserve, 3217, 3525, 6289
exesse, n excess, 2078, 5650
exylid, v ppl exiled, 2400
expelle [MS excell], v banish, 2230
expres(se), v 1. declare, 5353; 2. to be put into words, 5648
ex(s)treme, n in (an) ~ (for)to dy(en): in extremis*, 2904, 5708, 6354
extorcioun, n illegal exaction, 2051

F

face, n 1. face, 370, 4728, 4793, etc.; 2. [a person as having certain traits], 925; 3. expression, 3408; tofore my ~: in my presence, 874
fadir, adj caused to waste away, 2256
fadir, n (spiritual) father, 1581, 3969, 5277, 6470
fay, (bi) his/ma/my ~: truly, 1990, 2404, 3480, etc.
fayle, n withouten ~: without doubt, 1105
fayle, v fail (to obtain), 363, 894r, 1238, 3862, etc.; ~ of: lost, 716; prt faylid; imp faylith/fayle; ppl faylid
fayne, adj 1. happy, contented, 551, 2380, 2498, 2633, 3064, 3570, 4517; 2. pleasing (to sb), 2451, 4147, 4774
fayne, adv gladly, willingly, 542, 544, 609, 3563, etc.; sup faynest/ faynyst
fayne, v (1) be pleased, 6488
fayne, v (2) 1. feign, make false pretenses, 374, 2100, 2501, 3256, 3965, 4379, 5649; 2. refrain
GLOSSARY

(from serving), 545; 3. invent, 5629

faynyd, adj false, 1890
faynt, v 1. fade/faint, 2568, 5284; 2. becomes exhausted, 1731; ~ me: exhausts, 2060; 3s faynth
fayntid, adj weared, 1295
fayntise, fayntid, adj wearyed, 1233
faynt, adj 1. beautiful, 319, 346, 357, 755, etc.; 2. considerable, 10, 1102, 1440; 3. pleasant, 1838; 4. fitting, 6465; 5. as n beautiful (one), 203, 485, 609, 698, 2799, 3217, etc.; pl fayre; sup fayrist
fayre, adv 1. courteously, 764, 1840, 2897, 4381; 2. well, 5230; 3. most graciously, 2147; sup fayrist
fayrid, adj embellished, 6103
faith, v bi ~ of my bode: on my corporeal oath, 2840; also feith
faith [error for faithful], 793
faithfully, adj loyally, 1183, 1229; also feithfull
faithfully, adv loyally, 1199; also feithfully
fall(l), n fall, 1469, 5224
falle/fall, v 1. (to) fall, 419r, 1449, 2245, 2902, 4189, 4738, 5047, 5345, etc.; 2. befall, 1604, 3542 subj, 4355 subj, 4638, 4751, 6306 subj; 3. entered, 2583, 2980, 3595; ~ in: succumb to, 3051; to ~: of falling, 5186; if euyr ~: if it ever was, 1987; mi fortune ~: it befell me (as chance would have it), 2227; ~ at desistance: quarrelled, 885; are ~ at debate: have quarrelled violently, 2576; was ~: had fallen to, 2238; ~ out: fell, 5024 §; prt fel(l)/fill/fallen; ppl fal/yfalle/fall/falyn; see also bifalle
fallyng, adj falling, 5502
false/fals, adj 1. treacherous, 28, 965, 1071, etc.; 2. base, wicked, 534, 1579, 2417, etc.
false, v be unfaithful to, 2157
falsyn, n violation, 3351
fame, n renown, reputation, 2324, 3503
fantase/fantasy, n 1. longing, 1272, 1320, 1512, 5461; 2. arbitrary inclination, 346; 3. a deluded notion, 4752
fare, n 1. condition, doings, 858, 1310, 2999, 6318; 2. fare, 3114
fare, adv far, 498r, 553; also fer, afer
fare, v 1. fare, 601, 616, 1137, 5331, etc.; 2. turn out (well), 3106; 3. continues, 433; 3s farith; prt ferde
farewel, imp farewell, 2013, 2137, 2364, etc.; see also fare
fasso(u)n, n [facioun] 1. mode of behavior, 4001, 5983; 2. fashion, 5022; also fawkoun
fast, adj (well) fastened, 5014
fast, adv 1. soundly, 629; 2. intently, 3060; 3. fast, 5202; 4. quickly, 3098, 6449
fastid, v prt fasted, 5326 §
fatal, adj 1. mortal, 1957, 5590, 5665; 2. fatal, 3942, 5991
fate, n 1. fortune, 5590, 5665, 5969, 6091; 2. guiding spirit, 2037
favour(e)/fauoure, n reward, 3s
fawde [error for feode], v [feen] enfeof, 4328
fede, v feed, 400, 908, 1698, etc.; 3s fedith
fee, n 1. reward, 223, 6053; 2. feudal obligation (to me), 2866; in ~: according to (your) feudal obligations, 342
feele, see fele adj, v
feere, see fere
feet, see foot n
feith, n faith, 5362, 5399, 6019; also faith
faithful
faithfull/faithful, adj loyal, 738, 3181, 5382, etc.; also faithfull
faithfully, adv loyally, 1208, 1217, 1221, etc.; also faithfully
fel, see falle
felawne, n companion, 1857
fele/feele, adj many, 403, 1094, 2516, 2698 §, etc.
fele/feele/felle, v feel, think, 115, 1454, 2669, 2689, 4629, etc.; 3s felith; prt felt
feleship, n [felauhine] company, 5340
felicite, n happiness, 348, 1625, 1861, etc.
felyng, n 1. experience, 827, 1821; 2. emotions, 837; to my ~, me ~: in my opinion, 983, 4538
felle, adj intensely painful, 5694
felle, see falle v, fele adj
felly, adv fiercely, 4576
felony, n sin, 3697
felonsly, adv villainously, 948
feloun, adj base, wicked, 1581
felt, see fele v
fenyx, n phoenix, 471, 2148r
feodaries, n pl retainers, 50
feode [MS fedde; MED feen], n enefow, 4328
fer, n that which is far, 2086
fer/ferre, adv far, 506, 519, 862, etc.; ~ afore past dayes olde: long since past, 4656; did ~ amys: erred greatly, 4887; will/wolde more ~: wish (to go) further, 182, 5308, 5427; also fare; see also afer
fere/fere(e)r(e), n fear, 728, 3555, 5090, etc.
fere/feere, n company, 1501; in ~: together, 957, 1028, 1111, 1692, 5267
ferde, see fare
ferforth, adv to (as high) a degree (as), 531, 4040
ferful(l), adj 1. (easily) frightened,
4685, etc.; 2. decide, 707, 780, 871, etc.; 3. experience, 2261; 4. came upon, 5201; 2s fyndist; 3s fynt; prt fond(e); ppl found(e)
fynysse, v end, 3007
fyre, n fire, 434, 976, 984, etc.
first, adj first, 214, 1696r, 1713, etc.
first, adv 1. first, 492, 825, 1401, etc.; 2. prior to (your going), 3790
fittil, see titill
flaterere, n flattery, 1127
flaterynge, prp (false]y) pleasing, 1812, 4935 §
flatir, v 1. beguile with pleasing words, 2616; 2. commend without reason, 3191
flawmys, n poss flame's, 5989
fle, v [lfen (OE fleogan]) go abroad, take flight, 212, 5531; is ~: has vanished, 3915r; ppl flowe
fle(e), v [lfen (OE fleon]) flee, be lost, 1088, 3873r, etc.; are me ~: have fled, 4597; inp fleth; ppl flede
flee, v [lfen] fly, 1379, 5990; 3s fleth
flee, v ?error for see, 6048
fleis, n pl flies, 3141
flesshe, n flesh, 5517, 6474
flesshe, adj made of flesh, 5512, 5514
flesshe, adv in body, 5498
flet, v [flitten] abandon, 2626
fletyng, prp floating, 4767
fletter, v flutter, 4763
flex, n thread, 2538
flight, n flight, 302, 1911, 2091, etc.
flowre, n 1. flower, 704, 2234, 2244, etc.; 2. most excellent example, 2240, 4915; ~ delise: fleur-de-lis, 5032; ppl flowris
flowre/-n, v 1. flourish, 2314, 2581; 2. flowering, 2004; 3. filled with flowers, 1702; prp flowryng; ppl yflowrid
flowryng, n flourishing condition, 2744
foo/fo, n foe, 199, 817, 1343, 2048, 4456, etc.; ppl fooes/foon
foylis, n pl leaves, 5436
foysoun, n abundance, 3848
fold, adv many/dowoble/thousand ~: many times, in many places, in various or many ways, 41, 775, 4923, etc.
folden, v ppl wrapped, 1177
foly/fole, n 1. folly, 262, 1187, 3479, etc.; 2. madness, injury, 3069;
do ~: act foolishly, 572
foly, adj foolish, 4368; see also foole
folily, adv foolishly, 2554
folk(e), n pl 1. people, 5, 46, 268, etc.; 2. retainers, followers, 30, 664, 1557, 2611, 2700, 2914, 3139, 4789, 4901, 5915; ppl folkis
folow, v 1. be guided by, 2657, 4181; 2. ensue, 4486; 3. imitate, 137, 4951; 4. fulfilled, 5617; to ~: in following, 2659; ppl folowid
foltishe, adj 1. foolish, 322; 2. ill-advised, 4162, 4368
foltisshenes, n foolishness, 126
fomy, adv foamy, 1382
fon, n fool, 5061
fond(e), see fynde
fonde, v establish, 4804
fondis, v [error for fonnest] are foolish, mad, 4263 §
fong(e), v 1. receive (it), 3135, 5264; 2. take, 926
fonne, v act foolishly, 368, 6006; 2s fonyst; see also fondis
fonnyd, adj unwise, misguided, 4725, 5728, 5878, 6002
fool, n fool, 268r, 4265, 5996; pl foolish
foole, adj foolish, 6440; see also foly
foot, n foot, 800, 1665, 4140, etc.; a ~: on foot (i.e., on my feet), 5195; make a ~: hurry up, 5237 $
§; pl feet/fetis [double plural]
for, prep 1. because (of), on account of, 903, 1337, 1387, 1396, 2912, 3062, 3116, 4015, 4655, 6268; 2. in spite of, regardless of, 35, 2875, 3780, 3799, 4617, 5366, 6252, 6421; 3. in return/exchange for, 2385, 4631, 5378, 5956, 6073, 6221, 6240; 4. before, 676, 3850; 5. as (for), 949, 6024; 6. to be seen as, 2787; ~
him: on his behalf, 2794; ~
trouthe: in truth, 1159 interj
for, prep [fro] from, 1686, 4483 §
for, conj 1. for, because, 1497, 2487,
3118, etc.; ~ bicause (that),
3110, 4665, 5194, 5326; 2. by,
through, 1545, 6038; ~ which
that: for which reason, 72, 2553,
2687, 2886, 2971, 3014; ~ only
cawse: just in order to, 1056; ~
what: wherefore, 6144
forbasshid*, adj (her) dignity severely
injured, 4780; see also basshe v
forbede, v forbid, 43
forbere, v 1. give up, 726; 2. do with-
out, abstain (from), 3625, 6020
forbeteth, v betters, 3396
forblot, v ppl [* with for-] all bespat-
tered, 6501
forbrent, v ppl burned to death, 3841
forbrest, v burst, break (asunder),
2092, 2518; see also brest
forcast, adj toss about, 2515♦
forcast, v ppl [fore-/forncast, v] (1)
planned beforehand, 4367♦
forcast, v ppl (2) 1. cast down, 4293,
5633; 2. cast wholly, 5724; ~ in
suche aray: put in such utter
disarray, 2134
force, n force, 626, 1087, 2505; no
~: no matter!, 391; also forse
forchargid, v ppl [* with for-] over-
burdened, 3679
fordreyn, v ppl drowned, 2932
fordullid, adj spiritless, 1406♦
fore, adj aforesaid, 5403, 5413
forest, n forest, 2395
forfaddid, adj faded, 4893
forfaynten, v [forfeinten] absolutely
exhaust, 2689, 3073♦, 5840♦,
6453♦; 3s forfayntis; ppl for-
faynt/forfayntid
forfelle, v [* with for-] slay, 709
forfetyng, prp in ~*: on pain of for-
feiting, 23
forfought, adj exhausted with fight-
ing, 1730
forget(e), v forget, 648, 852, 1140,
1500, 1895, 2179, 4798, etc.; prt
forgat; ppl forget(e)/forgot(en)/
forgot
forgeth [MS forgoth], v 3s counter-
feits, 4988
forgetyng, n negligence, 2018, 5346;
~ to know: (your) disregard (of),
788; put(t) in ~: forgotten,
1330, forget, 1453
forgyve/-gef/-yeuele/-gyuel-geve,
v forgive, 228, 3090, 4444, 4529;
all ~: all is forgiven, 5163, 6362
fogo, v 1. give up, 6494; 2. lose,
6457
foryefnes(se)/foryeuenes, n forgive-
ness, 1827, 3980, 5162
forleft, v ppl deserted, 3770
forlose, v [forlesen] 1. be ruined, i.e.,
beaten, 2667 refl; 2. destroyed,
4587; 3. lost, 6422; ppl for-
lor(n)e
forlost, ppl [forlosen] disastrously,
completely lost, 2063, 2402r
formad, v ppl dumbfounded*, 5058
formasid, v ppl [* with for-] com-
pletely stupefied, 4559
format(t), v ppl [* with for-] 1. com-
pletely confounded, 2651; 2.
checkmated, defeated, 2090; see
also mate
forme, v create, 462, 3934; ppl for-
myd
fornakid, v ppl [* with for-] stripped,
2175 §
forow, prep from, 1490; also from
forpayne,v [for + peinen (OF pein-
ir)] to suffer, be overcome by
pain, 402; see also payne v
forpayne, v [for + pyn(den) (OE ge-
pyndan)] restrain, 500 §
forpayn(e), v [forpayn (OE pinian)]
torture, torment, 109, 4313, 5131
forplungith, v 3s [* with for-] over-
whelms (with), 5578
forpossid, v ppl tossed, 3854
forravishshid, v ppl [* with for-] trans-
ported, 2928
forrent, v lacerate, 768
forsake, v 1. renounced, 2866; 2. re-
ject, 5279; ppl forsaken
forse, interj no ~: no matter!, 754;
also force
force, n as of no ~: as (sth) ineffect-
tive, 3882
forseek, adj [* with for-] extremely distressed or ill, 3587r §; see also seek adj
forseekd*, v ppl made deathily ill, 5840
forshent(e), v ppl disgraced, ruined, 781, 2825
forshyuere, v [* with for-] splinter into little pieces, 1695
forsole (se), n extreme vexation, 3730 §; see also sorow
forsothid, v ppl [* with for-], besotted (with), 3083
forspent, v ppl squandered, 3100
forstayne, v [* with for-] streak, 550
forswelle, v [forswellan] in agony, 5475, 5842
forswell, v [forswellen] swell badly, puff up, 3730 subj
forswore, v ppl renounced, 2453, 3554, 5122
forth/-e, adv 1. henceforth, (from this time) forth, 221, 723, 2249, etc.; 2. forth, further, 156, 743, 952, 1988, etc.; 3. go on (ahead) and, 3125, 6215; 4. away, 3577; - see also hensforth
for then, conj [for-than (OE forthon)] therefore, 2015
forthenke, v change (your) mind or purpose, 1095
forthy, conj therefore, 488
forthrow, vprt overcame, 3056
fortify, v fortify, 1749
fortime, n former time, 2813
fortyme, see fortune
forto, prep 1. [in place of to, usu. before inf] 11, 13, 19, etc.; 2. (in order) to, 1206, 1537, 1539, etc.; ~ ben: so as to be, 2516; see also to
fortore*, v ppl 1. lacerated, 1982, 3414; 2. badly torn, 5221 §
forges(e), n stronghold, 1056, 1077, 1403
fortrobelid*, v ppl made stormy, 1849
fortune/fortyme [error], n 1. (good) fortune, 363, 849, 1469, 4660 poss, etc.; 2. adventure, 4486; poss fortunes
forwery, v* wear out, 6453
forwerry, ppl as adj sick at heart, 1437
forwhi/forwhy, conj 1. because, for, 207, 532, 586, etc.; 2. wherefore, therefore, 2245, 2849; 4. on account of which, 3261, 6384
for which (that), conj for which reason, because, 72, 2687, 5218, 5292, 5319; therefore, for which reason, 2886, 2971, 5349
forwound, v to wound grievously, 745
forwrappid, v ppl wrapped up, 5633
foster, adj foster, 1581
fosterid, v ppl encouraged, 5758
founed, see fynde
fountayne, n source, 2202
foure, see fowr
fowle/fowl/full, adj 1. foul, unseemly, 110, 1225, 2142, 2166 as n, etc.; 2. miserable, 1613
fowl(e), adv 1. ill, 44, 4381; 2. in an unseemly manner, miserably, 3029; 3. utterly, 3930r; most fowlist sup: most harshly, 152
fowl, n bird, 2464, 3123, 5444; pl fowlis
fowle, v sully, 4392
fowr/foure, adj four, 4456, 4970
fray, n stir, 1210
frame, v do good to, 6338
fraude/frawde, n deceit, 1127, 2387, 3848, etc.
fraude/frawde, v deceive, 1128, 5649
fraunchise, n 1. magnanimity, 266; 2. privilege, 893; 3. (legal) care, 5750
frawders, n pl deceivers, 2356
frawdyng, adj deceitful, 21
fre/-e, adv 1. willingly, unreservedly, 222, 1180, 2868; 2. without hindrance, 326, 2791
freche, see fresshe adj
frel, adj lacking courage, 5877
fre(e)ly, adv without restrictions, unreservedly, 810, 2767, 2891, 3988
frend, n friend, 986, 1005, 1086,
GLOSSARY

frendly, adj amicable, 1853, 5915
frendly, adv beneficially, helpfully, 5921
frendship, n friendship, 2416
fresher, adj fresh, 6200; see also freshe
fresshe/fresh/freche/fresshen, adj 1. fresh, new, 1037 [erased], 1444, 1659, etc.; 2. cheerful, youthful, lively, 440, 1239, 1403, 1607, 1863, 2581, 3786, 6476, 6086; 3. vigorous, 5462
fresshe, adv 1. anew, 946, 2616, 3095, 3504; 2. gaily, 1611
fresshe, v provide a fresh supply, 148; see also afresht
fresshely, adv brightly, 3093, 5454
fressher, adj comp brighter, pleasanter, 1850
fright, n apprehension, fear (that I will die while we are apart), 6325 from/tro/-o, prep (away) from, 221, 498r, 511, 1366, 1490, etc.; also forow
fronter, n border fortress, 946
froward(e), adj refractory, 437; ~ and contrary: [written in margin, erased] evilly-disposed, 780
fulfill/fulfill, v 1. fulfill, 431, 3536, 5377, etc.; 2. do, 5893; ~ yowre
serviuce: carry out, 718
fulfillid, adj ~ of: filled, replete with, 1055, 3170, 6008
full/ful, adj full, 320, 1473, 1513, etc.; [of the moon] 4086, 5007
full/ful, adv 1. very, 279, 627, 859, etc.; 2. entirely, completely, 2512, 5014, 5023, 5031; at ~: fully, 5299
fully, adv absolutely, 4748
fuloften, adv ~ tyme: many times, 1262
furlong, n as adj furlong, 5550 §

G

gabbid, v prt lied, 2646, 5755
gabbyng, n lying, 676
gaf(e), see geue
gay, adj 1. merry, gay, 501, 3098, 5460; 2. merry and bright, 1860; 3. eloquent, pleasing, 2956
gay, adv brightly, beautifully, 1702
gayne, ganyst, see geyne
galien, n Galen/a medicinal drink, 4305 §
game, n 1. game, 1629, 1636r, 2115, 2125, 2130, 2134; 2. happiness, 2325; 3. joking, 2582
gan, see gynnys
gantiles(se), see gentilesse, iantilesse
gantilies, see gentilnes
gardone, v reward, 47, 760, 3368; ppl gardonyd/gardownnid
gardonyng, n rewarding, 5630
gardoun, n reward, 6221
garnysshid, v ppl equipped, 863; see also agarnesshe
gase, v gaze, 4156, 5059, 5074
gast, adj timid, 622; made ~: frightened, 5333
gastful, adj timid, 5242
gate, n (castle) gate, 280, 1222, 2935, 2954; also yate
geder/gedir/gidere, v gather, acquire, 677, 1491, 1692, 3612
gef, conj if, 2773, 4145, 4217, 4599, 5095; also gyf, if
gef(e), see geue v
geyn(e)/gaye/ganyst, prep against, contrary to, 245, 300r, 314, 1528, 2829, etc.; see also agayne
geynsey/geynsay, v refuse, 2870, 3322
gen, see geue
generall, n in ~: without exception, 4901
gentil(l), adj of noble birth, 136, 5204; as n noble ladies, 140
gentiles(se)/gant-, n 1. good breeding, 458, 2027, 6047; 2. graciousness, kindness, 1139, 1495, 5384, 5537; 3. noble actions, 140; yowre ~: honorific form of address, 3287, 4301; also iantilesse
gentilines/gant-, n 1. graciousness, 2378; 2. good breeding, 6478
gentilwoman, n attendant (to a queen), 1670
Glossary

gere, n (1) garments, 4974
gere, n (2) fit, capricious or impetuous mood or state, 432, 1015, 2132

gery, adj (of goddesses) 1. fickle, 966; 2. unpredictable, 3638

gesse, v 1. suppose, infer from observation, 120, 149, 5082, etc.

get(e), v 1. get, obtain, 97, 157, 2495, etc.; 2. capture, 6426r; 3. gain, win, 1649, 3493, 5894, 6162; 4. gather, 5914; 5. climb, 5047; ~ yow vndir key: take you prisoner, 4243

gue/gefe/geve/gyue/gyve/geven/yeue/gef, v 1. (to) give, 17, 102, 155, 240, 271, 284, 410, 587, 595, 717, 841, 1180, 1468 subj, 1508, 1800, 3042, 3343, 3451, 3464, 4369, 4709, 4906, 5166 subj, 5368 subj, 5383, 5386 subj, 5822, 6233, 6276, 6523, etc.; 2. dated, issued, 53; 3. announces, 891; 4. dedicated, committed, 1881 refl; 5. apply or set (oneself to do sth), 1985; 6. make, 5227; ~ batell: [more commonly with don], engage in combat, 1589; ~ fyauunce of: rely upon, 3018; to ~: given, 3343; ~ an horne*: scorn, mock, 1829, 6112; 2s gevist; 3s geveth/gevith/givyth; ptt gaf/gafe/gaue/yaue; ppl gue/geve/geyen/gen/geef/gefe/gyue/gyve in/you/geyen/geven
gide, n guide, 1375, 3788, 4245, etc.
gide/gy(de), v lead, guide, 379, 3013, 5160, 6177r, 6193r subj; ptt gided

gidere, see geder
gidyng, n conduct, 4936; see also mysgidyng
gyf/gif, if, 746, 776, 822, 4922, 6272, 6405; see also gef, if
gift/gyft, n gift, 148, 219, 664, 3419, 3512; ppl gifis
gilt, n guilt, 248, 5360, 6133, etc.
giltles, adj undeservedly, 5471r, 6038
gynnys, v 1. begin, 194, 2457, 2471, 2473, 2542, 2942, 5284, etc.; 2. gan (to): as pret auxiliary do, did, 2814, 2918, 2935, 2954, 2971, 2978, 3098, 4678, 4763, 4771, 4979, 5041, 5187, 5202; 3. did it before, 4226; ptt gan
gise, n custom, 100
glad, adj 1. happy, cheerful, 22, 134, 3312, 5786, etc.; 2. joyful/luxurious, 1860; 3. felicitous, 6072; ~ for: pleased with, happy to receive, 3196; comp gladder; sup gladdist
gladly, adv 1. customarily, 4690; 2. willingly, 6076
gladnes, n happiness, pleasure, 2, 216, 541, etc.; hath ~: is glad, 1356

gladsom/-sum, adj 1. happy, cheerful, 952, 1113, 1265, etc.; 2. congenial, 706; as n 1258r

glas, n glass, 4669, 5042
glauce, v cast quick looks*, glance*, 4159

glemshid, v glistened, 4669
glide, v 1. go somewhat astray, 3116; 2. slip away, 4240
glom, adj* [gloumen v] glum, sullen, 4950
glose, n iape a ~: jest flatteringly, 2859
gloue/glove, n glove, gauntlet, 1548, 1576, 1593, 4853
gnaw, v gnaw, 5134
go/goo(g)/gon/gone, v 1. go, 127, 156, 325, 642, 1309, 1352, 1692, 1937, 2045, 2396, 2402r, 2546, 2784, 3596, 4666 refl, 5785, 6028 subj, 6255, 6358, etc.; 2. walk, 800, 4867; 3. leave, 1366 [with froo], 1875, 2878, 4480, 4609; 4. passes, 1868; 5. ~ was given, ~ turned, 2890; 6. die, 2618, 4218; 7. circulate, 5948; for yow ~: passed around, 4483 §; ~ to: takes up, 4931; 2s gost; 3s goth; ptt went; ppl goon/gon/go(o); see also wene, went
gobelyne, n devil, incubus, 5560
god, n god, 1, 41, 57, 1939, etc.; pass goddis
goddes/se, n goddess, 1, 467, 4064, etc.
gold, n gold, 2308, 2311, 2361, etc.
golden, adj golden 2456

good/god, n 1. goods, property, 24, 1219, 1369, 1722, 2126, 2370, 3489, 3962, 5380, 5396, 5749, 5925, 6234, 6242, 6250, 6254; 2. goods, ?provisions, 1078; 3. reward, good things, 587, 1278, 3330, 4849; 4. good qualities/goods, 4414; what is good for me, 5871; 5. form of address 372, 1601, 3987, 4801, 5074, 5107, 5247, 5674; pl goods
go(o)d/goode, adj 1. good, 43, 70, 448r, 2700, 3668, 4870, etc.; as n 2. good people, things, 375, 3424, 4442, 4446; 3. free, 43; 4. careful, 1155; 5. sound, 4870; 6. right, 6464
good, adv in impers const. ~ lust/list: (it is) well pleasing to (sb), 12, 5866, 6287
goody/goodli, adj 1. beautiful, pleasing, 141, 156, 319, 4110, etc.; 2. opportune, 1359; 3. excellent, 156, 3272, 4445; 4. large, 5797; 5. kind, 6285; more ~: greater, 3272; most ~: most, 203, 762, 1163, 2275, 3372r, 3739, 3804r; see also ingoodly
gooldy, adv graciously, willingly, 1137, 4453, 5308
gooldhed/-hede/goodlyhed, n 1. beauty, 770, 2145, 3239, 3361 §, etc.; of ~: of (her) graciousness, 182, 1323
goodylnes, n 1. beauty, 3682, 4053, 5051; 2. graciousness, 1353, 6476
goodyld, n fair one, 2157
gooodnes, n goodness, 1145, 2188, 2314, etc.
goon, see go
goos, n goose, 3113
gost, n spirit, 64, 1295, 2090, etc.
gostly, adj spiritual, 3969r, 5276
gouernaunce/gouernance, n 1. conduct, behavior, 143, 1570, 1787, 2214, 3789, 4110, 4151, 4336, 4926, 6002; 2. guardianship, care, 688, 1188, 1334, 1508, 1630, 1875, 2589, 3952; 3. control, authority, 306, 1068, 1508, 2967, 3401, 3708, 5818; 4. way of life, 840, 861, 2727; 5. self discipline, 4366, 4720; had a ~: promised you, 3307
gouernes, n control, 1080
gouernement, n in ~: in his care*, 2898
gouernyd, v cared for, controlled, 1527, 2562
governyd, adj dressed, 758
grace/gras, n 1. favor, reprieve, 157, 347, 665, etc.; 2. mercy, pardon, 205, 909, 2777, 2903, 4796, 5235, 5263, 6477; 3. (good) fortune, 665, 1232, 2809, 3359, 5544, 5766; 4. graciousness, 1477, 2229, 3170, 3210; 5. grass/favor, 3915r, 3924; 6. prayer after a meal, 4319; youre ~: courtesy title, 70, 92, 860, 2721, 2767, 6403; of ~: of (sb's) graciousness, favor, kindness, 176, 936, 1166, 1460, 1955, 2022, 3609, 3632, 6236, 6459; as haue y ~: as I hope to merit divine grace, i.e., to be saved, 368, 6072
grace, v if that hit ~ me: if I am granted salvation, 5748
gracious, adj 1. favorable, 270, 1586; 2. noble, merciful, 4442
graffis, n pl graves, 5295
gray, adj 1. grey, 2551, 4041, 5437; 2. bright, 3226, 4137
gramercy/grauntmercy, interj (I) thank (you), 1218, 1376, 5291
grapsyng, v prp groping, feeling, 2420♦
gras/grace, n 1. grass, 4670, 5198; 2. grass/favor, 3915r, 3924; see also grace
graue/grave, n grave, 2421, 4479
graue, v ppl buried, 1935
graunt, n assent, 2890; made yow ~: promised you, 3307
graunt/grauten, v 1. grant, give, 92, 184, 323, 547 subj, 1884, 2610,
GLOSSARY

3319, etc.; 2. permit, 180, 222, 1774, 2768, 3870, 5313, 5317, 5407; 3. ?exercise, 2022; pr
graultid; see also grauntid
grauntmercy, see gramercy
gravell, n gravel, sand, 4758
gre(e), take in ~: 1. accept (sth) will-
ingly, look with favor on (sth), 3288, 3511, 3576, 5680; 2. take (sth) in good part, 539, 1131
gre, v agree (to), 3598, 6072, 6076
greet/greve/gref, n 1. (mental) tor-
ment, misfortune, 35, 919, 2823, 4571, 4600, 4630, 6260, etc.; 2. wound/(mental) torment, 1094, 2431, 2435, 3049; 3. hostility, 1452; in ~: in the wrong, 3427; pl
grefis/grevis/greves/grevous [error]
greet, n main point, 5872; see also
gret
grevis, see gref n, greuous adj
greid, v ppl [greithen] prepared, 1958
gren, v smile*, 517; laughs, 781; 3s
grent
grene, adj green, 190, 1702, 4998, etc.; ~ wood: forest, 5197
grepe, v [gripen] obtain, 897
greit/-e/greit, adj 1. great, 75, 165, 219, 741r, etc.; 2. lavish, 148; 3.
severe, 151; 4. extreme, 1473, 4468; 5. high, 6069; 6. serious, 6129; 7. much, 6481; sup gret-
tist; see also gretly
gretyng, n grieving, 3
gretyly/greit, adv 1. greatly, 329, 1785r, 5523, etc.; 2. effectively, 6024
grevaunce/greuaunce, n 1. misery, pain, 683, 1638, 1893, 3707, etc.; 2. injury, damage, 316, 334, 878, 1761
greue/greve(n), v 1. (to) oppress, 409, 1557, 1970, 3555, 3868
subj, 5457, 5473, 5765, 5792, 6212; 2. anger, 2271, 2578, 2658, 6489 subj; 3. grieve, 742, 2409, 3007; 4. harm, 1582; 5. in-
jured, harassed, 384; 6. would disturb, 3647 subj; ~ to: injure, 105; impers me ~: it grieves me, 4889; 3s greuyth/grevith; pr
grevid; ppl greuyd/grevid
greve, see gref
grevous/greuous/grevis, adj 1. grie-
vous, 181, 303, 1706, 5927, etc.; 2. burdensome, 4588; see also gref
grise, v shudder, 3305
grone, v groan, 2056, 5968
grones, n pl groans, 2092
grope, v 1. fig. lay hold of, i.e., find, 191; 2. consider, 4341; ~ for: grasp, take up, 1274
grose, adj heavy, of large animals, 3111
ground, n ground, 754, 1935, 4866;
(up)on the ~: in the world, on earth, 660, 846, 5152; goth on ~: exists, 3596
growe, v grow, 172, 3504r, 4671, 5943; 3s growth; prp growyng;
ppl ygrowe
grucchyng, ger grumbling, 1823, 3436

H

habitacion, n (dwelling) place, 2958
hassoc(e), v come abundantly, 1958, 824, 3588
habundaunce, n abundance, 693, 3662, 4394
habundaunt/habundaunce, adj abund-
ant, 3962 §, 6228
had, see haue
hay, v (to) cry Hey! §, 3920r
half, n half, 2524, 2924, 3328, etc.
half, adv half, 2264, 2403, 5364, 6101, 6188
han, see haue
hange, see hong
happe/hap, n 1. (good) fortune, 2236, 2247r, 2277, 2836, 3155, 3359
happe, v happen, befall, 672, 3534, 4353, 4822 impers etc.; 3s hap-
pith
happy/happe, adj happy, fortunate, 566, 940, 1618, 1640, etc.
hard/-e, adj 1. difficult (to attain), 2699, 3761, 4225, etc.; 2. difficul-
to bear, 3626, 5941; 3. paved/difficult, 2945; 4. (physi-
cally) hard, 2462r, 5499, 5500r, 5516, 5952; s. callous, 2359; 6. slow, unwilling, 3723, 3953; 7. unlikely, 4952; comp harder
hardy, adj bold, 1300, 1994, 4424
hardily/hard(e)ly, adv 1. certainly, indeed, 453, 1216 §, 4975, etc.; 2. boldly, 3926; 3. (come on) boldly! quickly!, 750; see also hertily
hardynes/hardinesse, n courage, 1093, 4421
hark(e), v 1. (to) listen to, 416, 1422, 1797, 1956; 2. heed, 1523; imp harkith
harm(e), n 1. misfortune, suffering, 172, 315, 2133, etc.; 2. a pity, 3245; pl harms
harm(e), v hurt, 321
has(e), hast, see haue
hast(e), n haste, 6136, 6137
hasty, adj imprudent, rash, 259
hastily, adv 1. soon, 1288, 1296, 1304, etc.; 2. immediately, 2000, 4907; 3. with undue haste, 2009; 4. suddenly, 5079
hate, n haue in ~: hate, 6157
hate, v hate, 110, 1514, 3644r, 3839, 5481, 6123; 3s hatith; ppl hatid
hatfull, adj malevolent, 1570
hatrede, n hatred, 1766, 2879
haue/have/han/has | nave/nauve, v (to) have, 7, 42, 250, 358 pl, 361, 364, 644, 691, 730, 813, 847 subj 919, 980, 1391, 1452, 1529, 1928, 2007 subj, 2381, 2512, 2524, 2563, 2613, 2768, 2842, [error for had] 2887, 3359, 3765 subj, 4154, 4209, 4473, 4586, 5009, 5072, 5073, 5223, 5433 imp, 6280, etc.; 2. do not have, 728, 828, 1518, 1846, 2289, 3001, 3330, 4848, 4903, 5123, 5225; 3. (would have) had, 5225 subj, 5260 subj, 5392 subj; 4. has no, nothing, 2624, 3512, 4599; 5. will have suffered, 918; 6. receive, 2176r imp; 7. hold, 2772; 8. got, 3898; 9. would have, 2268 subj, 4189 subj; 10. held, 4949; ~ doon: finish(ed), 3639, 6216; ~ ioy of me: find
me pleasing, 4892; nad be: had it not been (for), 5215; nad ben: had (rather) not been, 5306; ~ in hate: to hate, 6157; 2s hast | nave; 3s hath/hast/hase/hauve/ heth | nast/nath; prp havyng/ hauyng; pl han/hauve/hath | naue/nave; prt had/had[dist] | nad/nadde
haver/havour(e), n behavior, manners, 1354*, 2274, 4946*, 5289*, 6223
he, pron he, 12, 31, 32, etc.; ~ or she: a man or a woman, 4650
hed, n head, 168, 184, 1325, etc.
heede, n heed, 6165; took good ~ on: observed well, 4153; also hid
heer, n hair, 5033; also here
heyre, n 1) heir, 6470; also ayre, eyre
heyre, n 2) year, 2278; also yere
hele/heel(e), n 1. (good) health, state of well-being, 2440, 3000, 3534, etc.; 2. cure, consolation, 2434, 2997, 3597, 5946, 6458; 3. (general) welfare, 5692; seek ~: an oxymoron for the state of love 5071, 6377; see also helthe
hele/heele, v heal, 1941, 2431, 3387, 4578, 6378; ppl helid/heelid
hel(l)e, v conceall (sth), 4075, 5354
hel(l)e, n hell, 914, 5820, 5871
helpe, n help, 237, 497, 980, etc.
helpe, v 1. (to) help, avail, 19, 134, 159, 2828, 3863, etc.; 2. save, 914; 3s helpith; ppl holpe
helpyng, ger help, 1833
helthe, n a state of well-being, 5795, 6227; see also hele
hem, pron him, 968, 1033, 1097, 1845, 2602, 3917, 4231, 4356, 4658, 4662, 5998; also him
ehem/home, pron them(selves), to them, 41, 892, 968, 3936 §, 4343, 6027, etc.; also them, thym
hensforth, adv henceforth, 5165; see also forth
hent, v take, seize, 779, 1002, 2739, 2905, 5233; prp/ppl hent
her, pron her, 838, 3450, 4413; her/
here/heris, pos her(s), 106, 1383, 3163, 3277, 6099, etc.; also hir
her, pron their, 5921; also hir, ther her, adv, see here
herafter, adv 1. from now on, 2453; 2. in the future, 6427r
herber, n arbor, 190
here, n hair, 4760; also heer here/her, adv 1. here, 960, 1307, 4391, 5003, 5012, 5181, 5227, 5240, 5334, 5339, 5418, 5506, 5804, 6088; 2. here (on earth), 1420, 1706, 2033r, 2337, 2340, 5181; 3. where I stand, 2070; 4. now, 2731, 2993, 3123, 3328, 3373, 3435, 3550, 3575, 3618, 3740, 3765, 3826, 3869, 6084, 6174, 6195, 6259, 6261, 6368; and there: 1. this way and that, 2672; 2. everywhere, 3060, 4758; 3. to the left and then to the right, 5012, 5240; also hir adv here, v 1. (to) hear, 416, 426, 486, 1138, 3156, etc.; 2. listen to, 2620; 3 pl herith; prt herde/ herdist (2s); ppl herd hereafter, adv 1. before now, 2430
heretofore, adv 1. before now, 1820; 2. previously, 2407, 2452, 3550; see also tofore herin, adv in this, 1901
heryng, n hearing, 271, 5062
heritage, n inheritable property, 3721
herkyn, v pay heed (to), 23 imp
hermytage, n hermitage, 1512
hermyte, n a hermit, 1511
herof, adv of this, 5876
heron, adv on these terms, 6084
hert/herte, n 1. heart, 38, 68, 238r, 2200, 5953, etc.; 2. conscience, 2613; 3. mind, 2676; 4. cruelty, 2801; 5. hart/heart, 3916, 3924; 6. lovers, people, 4642; good ~ friendship, 3017; poss hertis/hert; pl hertis; also hurt hertily/hertly, adv 1. fervently, earnestly, 3; 355, 945, etc.; 2. sincerely, 1886, 2971, 3014, 3094; see also hardly
herto, adv till now, 4683
hest, n promise, 5488, 6103; pl hestis
heth, see haue
heuy/hevy/heue/heve, adj 1. woeful, 1573, 1612, 1855, 2230, 2852, etc.; 2. heavy, sleepy, 3902, 4427, 4737
heven(e)/heuene, n heaven, 997, 3280, 5817, etc.; poss 4091
hevynes/heuynes, n 1. grief, woe, 476, 529, 734, etc.; 2. heavy, sleepy, 3202; slepe of ~: deep, heavy sleep, 2460
hevenly, adj heavenly, 2189
hevyly, adv sorrowfully, 2300
hewe/hew, n 1. hue, 1154, 4985, 4987, 4999; 2. face, complexion, 550
hy, adv grandly, 1611; see also high
hid, n heed, 4748; also hede
hide, v hide, 207, 5088, 6502, 6522
hye, v hasten, 350, 6449; prt hyed
high/hy/-e/hie, adj 1. high, 485, 1259, 3280, 5209, etc.; 2. noble, high born, 444, 446, 389, 1550, 2343, 2982, 2984, 3999, 4566, 5401; 3. holy, 1991; 4. tall, 4668; 5. great, 4714
hight, on ~: aloft, 1926, 5209
hight, v prt [hoten] 1. pledged, promised, 584, 1744, 1878, 2158; 2. was called, 2959; ppl hight him/hym, pron 1. him, 6, 9, 13, 1845, etc.; 2. himself, 1126, 2645, 3160; 3. for himself, 2479; 4. them, 273, 631, 747, 3055; 5. [error for hit], 2347 §; also hem
hyndraunce, n harm, 1797 §
hir, pron 1. her, 124, 130, 133, etc.; 2. hiris, poss her, hers, 106, 185, 1160, 3177, 4430, 4451, etc.; 3. [error for his], 725 §, 4008 §; 4. their, 626; also her
hir, adv 1. here, 1371, 2181, 4974, 5089, 5170; 2. now, 1481; also here
hir(e)/hyre, n 1. hire, 5670; 2. reward, 4724, 5921
hirid, [error for hir] 4418 §
his, pron poss his, 10, 25, 26, etc.; as
n his (company), 1076, 3500
hit/hyt/hitt, pron 1. it, 44, 61, 70, 77, 5108, etc.; 2. she, 2313 §, 5111 (second) §; also it
hit, [error for yiz] 2195 §, 2912 §, 6178r §
hoffa howe, interj heave hol!, 1037
hoker moker, v hoard, 101 •U
hold, n castle, stronghold, 1750; in ː: in his control, 922
holde/hold(en), v 1. (to) hold, have, 55, 406, 1014•, 1698, 3316, 3444, 3725, 3747, 5202, etc.; 2. keep, observe, 597, 929 subj, 1147, 1235, 1530, 1556, 1693•, 1818 imp, 2696, 4686; 3. hold (prisoner), 523, 924, 948, 1031, 3747, 4570, 6316; 4. consider, 257, 1676, 4752, 5287; 5. restrain, 3152r, 4173•, 5106• subj; 6. side, 3477; 7. maintain, 5582; 8. deprive, 6032•; 9. is due to, 6057•; ː on: been faithful to, 2268; ː vp: uphold, 4360; ː company: maintain friendly association, 6082 imp; ː on honde: temporize, 6111•; 2s holdist; 3s holdith/holt; 3pl holde; ppl holdyng/holde
hole, n hole, 6121
holy, adj holy, 5336
holv, adj wholly, 4416
holow, adj hollow, 1182
holpe, see helpe
holt, see holde
homage, n homage, 2597, 2883; in ː of yow: as your liege man, 3725
home, n home, 2975, 2978; see also hem
homward, adv homeward, 5200
hond, n hand, 56, 1149, 1561, 5155, etc.; to his ː: to him, 2655; in ː tayne: hand in hand, 2934; holden on ː: put off, temporize, 6111•; pl hondis/hond
honest, adj honorable, seemly, 5645
honeste, n honor, 5427
hon(o)ur(e)/honewre, n honor, 458, 824, 1238, 2588, etc.
hong(e)/hange, v 1. hang, 5170, 5183, 5262; 2. set up, 934
honowrable/honourable, adj honorable, 2679, 5482
hoo, pron who, 2253, 2492; also who
hool, n cure, 482
hool, adj 1. whole, 748, 1047r, 1317r, etc.; 2. (of a number) full, 2146, 3732; 3. all, 3195; 4. ppl as adj cured, healed, 181, 1962, 2433, 2451, 3048
hool/hooele, adv entirely, wholly, 1168, 1466, 1508, 3195, 3320, 4114, 4282, 5366, 5429, 5529, 5540, 5750, 5774
hoot, adj hot, 2448
hoot, adv hotly, 5511
hope, n hope, 189, 196, 791, etc.; pl hopis
hope, v hope, 13, 752; prp hopyng
horne, n horns, 5438; geue an ː*: scorn, mock, 1829 §, 6112; were an ː*: be mocked, 6430; pl hornys
horrow, n tungs •: slander, 6029
hose, n stocking, 5222, 5232
hostage, n in ː: as guarantee, 2895
hound, n dog, 4783
houre, see howre
hous, n house, 1383, 3406
hout [corr.], prep without, 1807, 2012, 2018; also out
how, adv 1. how, 101, 116, 119, etc.; 2. no matter how, 1064, 6456; 3. what, 3184, 4864, 5169, 5210; 4. that, 1521r; ː that: 1. how, 3208, 5054, 5331; 2. that, 1924, 3984, 5054; 3. however, 3076, 4355; 4. by whatever means, 3984; 5. what, 5169
how, conjunctive adv ː that ther was: in what manner, 2684
how, interj Ho!, 1222
howre/houre, n hour, time, 87, 429, 4106, etc.
howso, adv how(so)ever, 3089, 6252
huge/hvug, adj 1. great, 851, 2209, 2354, 4668; 2. huge, 3271
GLOSSARY

humbil(l)/humble, adj humble, obedient, 54, 1181, 1571, etc. 
humbles/humblesse, n 1. graciousness, patience, 937, 1788, 2403; 
2. humbleness, 3, 2345 
humbly, adv humbly, respectfully, 67, 507, 555, etc. 
hundrid, adj hundred, 3568, 4374 
hurt, v 1. pain(s), sorrow, 438, 1516, 
1737, 4300; 2. injury to (my) 
reputation, 4419; pl hurtis 
hurt, n heart, 758; also hert 
hurt, v injure, grieve, 30, 341, 410, 
4689 
hushte, v ppl silent, 1734 
hvug, see huge

I 
[ModE vowel i (ME i/y) 
and consonantal j. 
For semivowel and consonantal 
y, see Y]

y/I, pron I, 23, 57, 60, 61, [error for she] 5063, etc. 
y, n eye(s), 6343; also eye 
iay, n source of pleasure or happiness, 
3222r; also ioy 
janglyn, v gossip, 4371 
iantiles/iantilesse, n 1. good breeding, 
4000; 2. graciousness, 4056; also 
gentilesse
iape, v 1. mock (you), 1424; 2. 
amuse (myself), 4596 refl; to ~ a 
glose: jest flatteringly, 2859
icolis, v ppl enclosed, 5785 
ydill, adj foolish, 4641 
ie, pron ye, 5279; also ye 
iealous, adj envious, 5719 
iealousy/ielowse, n jealousy, 27, 534, 
4328, etc.
iewbile/iubile, n celebration of retirement 
from the service of Love, 
3104, 4485, 4638 
iewise, n [juwise] (judicial) sentence, 
i.e., absence from the lady, 
5680; also iuyse 
iewparty, n danger, 3011; also iuparty 
if, conj 1. [sometimes followed by 
(so) (be) that] if, 69, 86, 170, etc.; 
2. ~on the understanding that, 
3137; see also gef, gyf
like, adj same, 1618 
ylle, n ill, evil, 2703 
ille, adj unskilful, 3623 
ille, adv badly, 2358 
ymage, n effigy, statue, 2308, 2651; 
figure, ?dummy, 2584
in/yn, prep 1. in, 16, 19, 20, etc.; 2. 
into, 806, 1358, 1449, 3056, 
5847, 5849, 5855; 3. to(wards), 
558; 4. on, 617, 619, 622, 1084, 
4078; 5. with, 297, 618, 1092, 
3420; 6. at, 738; 7. of, 988; 8. 
while, 1258r; ~ the stede: in- 
stead, 4991
in [error for therin adv], 3777 
indede, adv actually, in fact [also 
rhyme tag], 892, 2147, 3244, 
6119, 6167 
infortune, n (negative aspect of) Fortune, 
5664, 5829
infosterid, v ppl [MED: ?read: ifosfer-
id] dominated, 1499 U 
ingoodly, adj very beautiful, 1264 
U, 6087 
yheve, adj very depressed, 2639 U 
inoy, v enjoy, 1244
ynly/ynly/inliche, adv [inli] 1. very, 
extremely, 1243, 1607, 2339, 
4558, 5051; 2. heartily, 5668; 3. 
with great feeling, completely, 
1463
inliche, adv [inliche] thus, i.e., as it 
does, 5991; ~ to: like (unto), 
3056; ~ as: even as, 5483 
inncence/ynncence, n simpleness, 
93; in thyn ~: innocently, 2606
in oon, adv steadfastly, 597
ynow(e), adj enough, 2738, 6153 
ynow/ynow(e), adv enough, 1419r, 
2195, 3662, 5223, 6381
inrichely, adv very richly, 2309 U 
sight, n discernment, 456, 4372
instead(e), prep instead, 3115, 4393
insuspecioun, n (inward, secret) sus-
piccion, 5717 U 
inthroiwly, adv very thoroughly, U 
2323
into, prep into, 190, 419r, 469, etc. 
inward, adv fervent, 3514

577
inward, adv inwardly, 2101
iocound, adj joyful, 743
iøy(e), n joy, 64*, 238r, 1739, etc.; pl ioyes/ioy; also jay
iøy, v 1. make joyful, 2325*, 3341; 2. be joyful, 6502; 3. take pleasure (in), 577, 1891*, 4932
ioyfull/ioyful, adj 1. joyful, 1011, 1054, 3001, etc.; 2. which causes him to be glad, 1041
ioyfull, adv with joy, 1226 §
ioyne, v join, 4378, 5505; ppl ioynyd
ioyous, adj happy, 703, 888, 3149, etc.
ioly, adj 1. happy, 1696r, 2226, 2377; 2. favorable, 1044*
iolye, n gait, vigor, 1863
ipocras, a spiced wine, 4305r
is, ist, see be
is [error for as], see note, 5557
it/yt, pron it, 39, 97, 105, etc.; also hit
iturnyd, see turne
iubble, see iewbile
iuge, n judge, 1888, 2294, 6454
iuge(n), v 1. consider, 822; 2. reckon, 2220; 3. sit in judgment upon, 2608
iugement, n 1. authority/power to decide, 406; 2. punishment, fate, 788; put in the -: submit to verdict (of sb), 2350*, 2635
iuyse, n [iujwise] punishment, 291; also iewise
iupardy/iupart(y), n 1. jeopardy, 280*, 6439; 2. ?problem or difficult move in the game of tables, 1656; put in -: endanger, imperil, 6331*; also iewparty
iust, adj honorable, 13
iustice, n judge, 3190, 6245
iustys, n pl jousts, 4431
yvill/yvil, adj ill, 1050, 1455, 3760, 4411; evil, 1578; unsatisfactory, 6433; ~ sayers: detractors, 2702; ~ thrift: bad luck, 6306
yvill/yvil, adv 1. wretchedly, painfully, 3230; 2. inadequately, 4208; (1) cruelly, (2) very little, 5907; (full) -: with (great) difficulty, 1114, 6020
ywis, adv certainly, 67, 236, 377, etc.; see also wis

K

kay/key, n key, 523, 1183, 2954
kayle, n [keile] see note, 371*
kan/can/konne, v Is 1. can (do), 62, 135, 164, 2386, 3212, 3410, 3597, 5059, 5866, etc.; 2. know, 5365; ~ thank: are grateful, offer thanks, 3131; kowde y: I was able to do, 4639; 2s kanst; prt koude/kouthe/koude/kowd(e)
karbonkil, n carbuncle, 5031
kare, n care, 330, 3462, 3595; pl karis; also care
karfe, v prt carved, 5509
karfull/karful, adj miserable, sorrowful, 2001, 2304, 2544, etc.; also carfull
karkes/karkas, n (disparagingly) the body, 2091, 5841, 6406
karle, n knave, rascal, 1800, 5904
kast, see cast, v (2)
kaught/caft, v ppl 1. clutched, taken, 681r; 2. obtained, 2479; 3. drew, 4405
key, see kay
kepe, n takith -: take heed, 3142
kepe/keppe, v 1. keep, preserve, 106, 120, 173, 618 refl, 1185, 1316, 1480 refl, 2438 subj, 2440 subj, etc.; 2. defend, 1081, 1754r, 3153; 3. maintain, continue in, 2122, 2685; 4. observe, 2177; 5. desire, 1775, 3353; 3s/imp kep-ith; prt kept(e)
kercher, n veil (of fine lawn), 1168*, 4764 §, 5170*, 5183, 5184, 5285*
kerver, n sculptor, 5508
keverkope*, n scarf, handkerchief, 4344 §
kyn, n kin, 510
kynde, n nature, 5520
kynde, adj 1. benevolent, 1067, 1816; 2. constant, 1229r
kyndely, adv according to the laws of nature, 4871
kyndenes, n benevolence, 5358, 5539
kyng, n king, 2936, 2985, 5150
kis/kisse, v 609, 1220, 5332, etc.; prp kiss
knakki, n pl deceptions, tricks, 4155
knees, n pl knees, 2902, 4846
kene, v kneel, 6368
knyght, n knight, 257, 309, 1809, etc.
knyting, prp 1. clasping, 1149; 2. intertwined, 6490; ppl knyt
knokke, v beat (as a sign of repentance), 1596
knowe/know(en), v 1. (to) know, 116, 171, 208, 220 refl, 529 subj, 1110, 3311 subj, etc.; 2. experience, enjoy, 682, 845, 1842, 3550, etc.; 3. acknowledge, recognize, 644; 2s knowist; 3s knowith; 2pl know(e)/knowith; prp knew; ppl know(e)/knowen
knowlechyng, ger knowledge (by contact or report), 290, 1310
koy, adj make it ~: be discreet, 4899
konne, see kan
konnyng, n (the) skill, 199, 265, 4710
konnyng, adj skillful, versed (in composition), 211
koud(e), kouthe, kowd(e), see kan
koward, adj timid, 6485; also coward
kowchid, v ppl set (with jewels), 4981
krost, n crust, 904

L
la, interj lo, 5090
labour(e), n activity, labor, 782, 2947, 3078, etc.
laboure, v achieves, 3840; ~ in: suffer, 606; 3s labourith
lacches, n negligence, tardiness, 991, 1098
lace, n cord, 4996; also lase
lace, v to lace, 1542
lad, see lede v
lade, v ppl laden, 6319
lady/ladi/lade, n 1. lady, 105, 157
poss, 485, 3929r poss, 3998, 4469
poss, etc.; 2. queen (chess), 2116; pl ladies
ladship, n yowre ~: form of address, 5338
lay/ley/leie, v [leien] 1. lay, 170 subj, 391, 705, 797, 811, 2026, etc.; 2. expend, 3107; 3. was wagered 2126; 4. set down (in a document), 2794 §; 5. inflict, 5739; am/was ~ (to slepe): lie down, 412, 2548; ~ by obligacioun: advanced as security, 2709; prp lay/leyde; prp leyng; ppl lay/layd(e)/leyd(e)/layne
layre, n [lore] practice, 2166; also leyre, lore
laysere, n 1. leisure, 5350; 2. opportunity, 6258; also leyser
lak, n 1. lack, 5348; 2. shortage, 551, 5409
lak, v lack, 115, 198, 2038, etc.; 2s lakkist; 3s lakkith
langage, n language, 4445, 6149
langour(e), n suffering, misery, 4716, 5632, 5865
lango(u)re, v languish (for love), 4607, 5908
langwysshe, v languish, 2001
lappe, v embrace, 4083
large, n at ~: at liberty, 2671, 2784, 3011, etc.
large, adj 1. large, 4969; 2. ample, 4995; 3. unstinting, 6477
large, adv 1. generously, 1325; 2. widely, 2425
largely, adv lavishly, 2726
larges-/se, n 1. liberality, 469, 2354, 4449; 2. abundance, plenty, 531, 1102, 1476, 3564, etc.; teeris of ~: abundant tears, 982
larkis, n pl larks, 3121
lase, n thread, 942; also lace
lassen, adv comp less, 2375, 5386; also lesse
last/-e, n last, 1713, 2595; (vnto) my ~: (till) my death, 620, 3654, 4856, 6159; at the ~: in the end, finally, 1635, 2371, 2495, etc.; at the ~: to sayn: to finish my account, 2950; also lest
last, adj last, 2365; also lest
last, adv last, 790, 1663, 3030, etc.; also lest
last, v 1. last, 5362, 5743, 6217; 2. continued, 2544; our lijf ~: all our lives, 1061; 3s lastith; prp lestynge; ppl last/lest
late, adj late, 6081
late/lat, adv recently, 2428, 2579, but ~, 1251, 2542, 4659; ~ agoo: very recently, 1309
laye, n language, 2465; see also pletid
laughe, v laugh, 517, 835, 1028 subj, 5222, etc.; prp lough; prp laugh-ing
laughyng, adj laughing, 4137, 4993
laughtir, n 1. laughter, smile, 501, 955, 3188; 2. joy, 422
launde, n grassy area in a forest clearing, 5198
lawe, n law, 1117
leche, n physician, 837, 5819
leche, adj like, 2095; also liche, lijk
lede/ledde, v 1. lead, endure, 783, 801, 2098, 4085, 4649, 4831, 6267, 6345, 6465 subj, etc.; 2. continue, live (in), 701, 1089; 3. have (power over), manage, 1334; prt lad/led(de); ppl lad
ledy, adj leaden, 515
leef, n leaf, 2233, 2235, 2259, etc.; also leue
leef, adj 1. pleasing, 3110, 3339; 2. dear, 6092
leff(ft), leffith, left, see leue v (1)
leffe, see lyue v
ley, l(e)y, see lye v
ley(d), leie, see lay v
leyne, layene, see ly v
leyre, n [lore] teaching, lesson in conduct, 4380, 6468; also layre, lore
leyser(e), n time, opportunity, 1440, 1714, 3869, 5922, 6018; also laytere
lemys, n pl beams, 1606, 5548
lene/lende, v 1. lend, 2531, 6367; 2. granted, 82, 771, 1242, 2617, 2737, 2836, 2903; is ~: has come, 2363; prt lent; ppl lent
lengir/lenger, adv comp longer, 207, 2337, 3409, 4075
lengthe, n length, 1464, 2084, 5504; in ~: at length, 805
lengthe, v 1. lengthsens, 1360; 2. pro-long (my) life, 2084; ~ forth: withhold, 5620; 3s lengtith
lere/lerne, v 1. (to) learn, 455, 4323, 4375, etc.; 2. teach, 962, 1655, 3787, 6180, 6281; 3. give, 1709;
newe to ~: unskilled, 4936; prp lerid; ppl lernyd
lesyng, ger an idle (untrue) tale, 1973
lese, n [OE leas] lie, deceit, 1407, [MS noyouslese] 4718
lesse/lesse, v 1. lose, 1780, 1783, 2125, 2239, 5414, 6379, etc.; 2. am freed of, 3620; 3. fail (to reach), 3545; for ~: from losing, 1686; prt lost; prp lesyng; ppl lost/lorne/ylost; see also leue
lesse/les, adj small, 5161; comp 1. less, 4446, 5406, 5540, 5624; 2. shorter, 2080; ~ or more: everybody, 6204
lesse, adv little, 1138; comp less, 2384, 2658, 3065, 3339, 4313, 5218, 5566; also lasse
lesse(n), v 1. lessen, 683, 1363, 3291, 3632, 5685, 6303; 2. short-en (i.e., cease), 2089; prp lessyng; ppl lessid
lest, n [last] at the ~: 1. at last, finally, 963, 1834, 2695 §, 2832, 3078, 5490; 2. in the end, 5637; also last
lest, adj sup smallest, least important, 334, 4210; also last
lest, adv at (the) ~: 1. at least, 1834, 3252, 4602; 2. in any case, 3078; also last
lest, conj 1. lest, 169, 1732, 1740, etc., ~ not, 2623; 2. for fear that, 978
lest(yng), see last v
let(e)/lette, v (1) [leten] 1. (to) let, allow, 130, 794, 810, 2096, 2784, etc.; 2. release, 340; 3. grant, 1411; 4. let, leave, 2894, 4166; ~ (sb) se(e): let (me) see (how), let us find out, 127, 135,
liché, adv 1. as if, 193, ~ as: according (as), 5616, 6247; see also in-
liché adv
liddis, n pl lids, 4737
lye/(e)ly/lie, v 1. tell an untruth, 1205, 1889, 1933, 2847, 4547, 6336
lyft, v lift (up), 1469
light, n light, 1610, 1615, 1807, etc.;
bi this ~ assev: 1658, 4263
light, adj 1. joyful, glad, 1287, 1365, 1739, 1918, 2911; 2. light, 1791, 1830; 3. easy, 2293, 4800
light, v 1. alight, 248; 2. ease, 4601; 3. fall, 295; 4. dismounted, 2952;
5. lightened, 515; prt light; ppl lightid;
see also alight
lightly, adv 1. with little effort, 2487; 2. quickly, 2548
lijf, n 1. life, 81, 82, 1061, etc.; 2. life story, 1792; 3. spirit, 1996; pl
lijf, also lyue
lijk/like, adj 1. like, 467, 2651, 4085, etc.; 2. likely, 5141; in ~ wise: in
the same way, 1848; ~ as: something like, 4761; also liche, leche
like, v 1. please, 5456; 2. be pleased (with), 56798; 3. be content, 117
refl; like/likith/likid impers: 70, 2597, 3004 (sans subject), 5456, 5987r; hit ~ yow: may it please
you, 6237
likyng, ger pleasure, happiness, 1839, 4469, 5199; his ~: what he pre-
ers, 274, 848; to thī ~: according to your wishes, 1321; do ~: give (sensual) pleasure, 1445, 2585 §
likyng, ger image, 1259
likyng, adj delightful, 1623
likke, v lick, 434
liklynes, n likelihood, 2099
lymys, n pl limbs, genitalia, 4870
lyne, see ly v
lynynge, n lining, 5016
lynkis, n pl links (in a chain), 5025
liche, adj 1. equal (to), 184, 4418; 2. alike, 4447; in ~ wise: in
the same way, 623r, 4089; also
lijk, leche
licence, n (official) permission, 91, 2889
lett, n impediment, 2792
lette/let(t), v (2) [letten] 1. hinder, 598, 1404, 3500, 3769, 5296, 6404; 2. restrain, 265, 3776
lettir, n document, 11, 2781; ~ of
trete: treaty, 1109; ~ of yowre
pse: document pledging (you)
to peace, 5107
leue, n leaf, 2248, 2290, 5013; pl
levyng; also leaf
leue/leve/lef, v 2. leave, 2701, 2911, 5327, etc.
leue/levy/lef, v (1) 1. leave, 37, 124, 520, 593, 872, 1435, 2588, 2625, 6512, etc.; 2. abandon, renounce, 346, 375, 544, 1537, 1570, 1946, 2622, 2656; ~ of: leave off, cease, 2167; 3s levith/leuys, imp pl
leftith; prt lef(f)t; prp levynge; ppl
left/lost [error]
leue/lyve, v (2), believe, 1561, 2847, 3985, 4533; see also bileue v (2)
leyr/lever/levir/leuer, adv rather,
777, 785, 1975, etc.; ~ had: would rather have, 769; me ~
were: I would rather, 3961
lever/levir/levyr, adj dearer, 5068,
5257, 6401r, 6528
levting, v prp ~ aslope: slanting, 1265
lewde, adj foolish, 4155
ly/lye(s), v [lien] 1. lie, 130, 899, 1353, 1870, 2024 subj, 2306, 2512, 2627, 2932, 3047, 3755, 4547, 4559 subj, 6359, etc.; 2. are burdensome (to), 1007; 3. is
to be found, 2659; 4. pertains, 3189, 3301; 5. comes (with it), 4131; ~ suget vnto: is subject to,
2722; ~ on: burdens, lies heavy
on, 4398; 3s lise/lith/lyse/lieth;
prt ly; ppl layne/leyne/lyne
licence, n (official) permission, 91, 2889
lice/lich, adj 1. equal (to), 184, 4418; 2. alike, 4447; in ~ wise: in
the same way, 623r, 4089; also
lijk, leche
2375, 3065, 5098, 5446, 6122; see also alite
litill/lite/litil, adj 1. little (of), 652, 859, 949, 5260, etc.; 2. tiny, 5018; 3. trifling, 5122
lyue/lyve/lyvis/lyuis/lyuys, n life, 34, 401, 2152, etc.; poss: 229, 942, 2201, 4421, 4847; (all his) ~ space: (his) whole life long, 72, 1520, 2690, etc.; see also lijf, onlyue
lyue/leven/lyvyn/lyve/leue/leve, v (to) live, 90, 203, 244, 364, 401, 772, 800, 822, 1039, 1417, 1503, 1871, 2147, 2148, 2156, 2168, 2381, 4397, 4533, 4644, etc.; 3s lyvid/lyuyd/lyvid/lyvyd; (his) ~ time possess:
long(e), adj 1. long, 281, 571, 625, etc.
long(e), adv 1. long, 350, 575, 887, etc.; 2. for (a) long (time), 800, 1432, 3361, 4428; 3. far, 1707; ~ agoon, for a long time*; 606;
not ~ to come*: very soon, 746, 917
longith, v belongs, 145, 4438
look, n 1. glance, 319, 441, 3126, 3265, 4335, etc.; 2. look, 366, 369, 3250, 5728; 3. gaze, 2473, 5087; 4. (way of) looking, 4436; 5. looking, looks, 1803; countenance or ~: expression or appearance, 370; poss of a look, glance, 5716; pl lookis/lokis
loos, n [los] fame, report, 891
loose, adj loose (not fastened down), 5014
lorche, n a form of the game of tables, 4830
lord, n lord, 57, 551, 644, etc.; interj lord!, 5328; pl lordis
lorde, v 1. rule, 2187, 3399; 2. governs, 2021; 2s lordist
lordship, n lordship, 3035
lore, n 1. advice, 1980, 2440; 2. teachings, 3157; 3. conduct, 6224; take to ~: take under tutelage, 6179; also layre, leyre
lorne, see lesse
losyng, ger freeing (me) from, 324
losse, n loss, 2113, 2137
lost, see lese, leue v (1)
loth, adj loath, 132, 174, 1889, 4912, 6209; al be me ~: though I do not wish (it), 2400 imper
lothid, adj loathed, 4699
lothist, adv sup most unwilling, 5466
loude/lowde, adv loudly, 2468, 5188
loue, n 1. love, the God of Love, 110, 173, 212, etc.; 2. sweet-heart, lady-love, 1142r, 1666r, 2506; louys/lovix poss, 299, 353, 629, 2699, etc.
loue, v (to) love, 272, 1320, 2480, 3936, 5135, 5255 subj, 5265, 5511, 6122, etc.; to ~: from loving, 1404, 3769; 3s loueth/louith/louith/lough; 3pl loven; prt lovid/ louyd; ppl louyd
louely, adv graciously, amatoriously, 441
louer, n lover, 4, 806 poss pl, 904, 916 poss pl, 504, 995, etc.; pl louers/lovers
lough, see laughe
lovyng, adj loving, 5897
lowe/low, adj humble, 485, 1571, 5401, 6264; ~ & hy(e): people of all ranks, everyone, 446, 4566
lowde, see loude adv
lowly, adj humble, 1507, 2701
lowrid, v prt frowned, 5038
lowt, v submit, 2331
Lucyna, n Lucina, the moon, 5438
lust, n 1. desire, 562, 4903, 5377; 2. enjoyment, 4329
lust/lust/luste/lust [error], adj 1. happy, merry, 635, 1038, 1604, 1871, 2263, 6480; 2. willing, 263; 3. amorous, eager, 559; 4. vigorous, 4001
lust [error for must], v must, 3087
lust, v wish, choose (to), be pleased (to), 12♥, 204, 651, 1112r, 1350r, 2529, 3138♥, 3322, etc.; impers: be pleased, 5760 imp; may (it) please, 2857; me not ~: I do not wish, 2859; not ~ me: is not what I desire, 1424; ~ hit (yow/ me): (if) it pleases (you/me), (if you/I) wish, 936, 1163, 2972, 4314, 5351, 6157, 6165; if hir ~: if she wishes, 1458; 2pl lustith; 3pl lust; see also list
lustiedy(ed)/lustyhed, n 1. cheerfulness, 2036, 2100; 2. enjoyment of life, 1314
lustily, adv vigorously, cheerfully, 4043, 6065
lustynes, n 1. (youthful) vigor, strength, 224, 1487, 1910, 2004, 2073, 2368, 2744♥, 2813, 3197; 3. pleasantness, 440; 4. beauty, 3224♥, 3385, 3631, 4022; tyme of ~: lovemaking/(courtly) joy, 1584 §

M

madame, form of address: 1. my lady, 227, 256, 319, etc.; 2. lady, 2313
maddid, v prt 1. driven mad, 286; 2. suffered madness, 3606 subj; ppl maddid
made, see make v

mafay, rhyme tag by my faith, certainly, 425, 499, 2220♥, etc.
may, n 1. (month of) May, 703♥, 1696, 1844♥, 1860, 2263, 2396; (personified), 3283; 2. may (haw-thorn) blossoms, 1692♥; 3. form of address, 1494
may/myght/mowe/mow/mowt/my [error for may], v [mouen] 1. can, may, 20, 131, 149, 583, 630, 767, 1234, 1281, 2317♥, 2575, 2588, 2602, 2612, 2762, 3978, 4992♥, 5286, 5411, 5786, etc.; 2. have the power, 5642, 5865; 3. should, ought to, 2316, 2836, 3699, 4687r, 5411, 5636; 4. need, 1803; 5. would, 1618; 6. subj myght/might/mowe: might, could, 171, 192, 310, 348, 1193, 1194, 3896, 4658, 5105, 5419, 5456, 6162, etc.; 2s mayst/ maist; pl mowe/may/mow; prt mowt/mought
may [error for may], no, 1490 §
maydenly, adj like a maiden, 5982
mayn, n authority, 547
maystir, n master, 389r, 2987; also master
maystres, n 1. mistress, beloved woman, 128♥, 210, 218, etc.; 2. instructress, 2566; also mastes
maystry, n 1. mastery, 461; 2. the upper hand, 968; 3. cunning, 634; had the ~ vpon: held sway over, 1413; also mastry
make/-n/makke, v (1) 1. make, 388, 504 subj, 530, 643, 847, 961, 1141, 1380, 1994, 2043, 2537, 2545, 2598, 2633, 2634, 2682, 2755, 2976, 3578, 4183, 5037, 5333, 6110, 6132, etc.; 2. write, compose, 175, 2781, 4674, 4736, 5462; 3. set, 1771; 4. make/choose (as mate), 2118r subj; 5. create, 2315, 2316; 6. caused, 2892; 7. utter, 3032; ~ light of: [* with make] make light of, 1830; ~ promes: promise, 569, 1016, 1838, 1880, 2748; ~ hom-age: acknowledge allegiance, 2598; ~ a chere drery: assumed
GLOSSARY

a sorrowful expression, 2927; ~ in: make into, i.e., compose in the form of, 4654; ~ mone: complain, 2064; ~ ayene, remake, 2374r; a foot: give chase, 5237; ~ excess: lament excessively, 5650; 2s makist; 3s makith; prt made; ppl made/ymade
make, v (2) to mate with, marry, 2675
makis, n pl mates, 2467, 2476
malady, n 1. wound, 2436; 2. mala-
dy, 3052r
man, n 1. man, 136, 183, 1024, 5098, etc.; 2. liege man, i.e., lover, 229, 771, 1383, 1907, 2511, 5273, 5425, 5528, 5779, 6178, 6186, 6194, 6198; to -: toward men, people, 4435; pl men
manace, v threaten, 938, 4460, 4730
manar/manere, n manor, 2939, 3786, 6086
manar, n, see manere
manase, n threat, 6098
manance, n hath (me) in -: threatens (me), 885
manere/maner/manar, n [N.B.: manere is never used attributively; maner always is.]

manere: 1. way, manner, 52, 413, 719, etc.; 2. (beautiful) bearing, manners, 454, 3180, 3615, 5982; 3. nature, 1947; 4. customary procedure, 2178; 5. fashion, 2701; a -: a form, a show (feigned), 954; in -: a kind of, 569 §, 2051; in no -: not at all, 3776, 5180

maner: 1. kind (of), form (of), 68, 377, 1016, 1127, 1448, 1799, 2693, 5006 §, 6342; 2. ways, 1160; in this ~ wise: in this way, 1017
many, adj 1. many, 181, 390, 408, etc.; 2. abundant, 980; ~ (one/day): many a, 1071, 4595, 4649; ~ fold, many times, 4996
manly, adv bravely, 303
mantel(l), n (ceremonial) cloak, 4995, 5009, 5325
marbil, adj marble, 5486, 5516
marchaunt, n merchant, 147, 5114
market, n (country) market, 5115
martere/martir, n 1. one who suffers anguish or death (for love), 87†, 285 poss, 332, etc.; 2. martyrdom, 53, 1020, 1642; 3. torment, 3748
mase, n delusion, 5072
mase, v be distraught, faint, 4406 §; see also bimase
masid, ppl as adj deranged, 4814; confounded, 4784, 5058
masse, n mass, 1992, 2181, 4647; pl massis; also messe
mast, n mast, 640
master, n master, 4322; also maystir
mastes, n mistress, beloved person, 519, 615, 921, etc.; also mays-
tres
maystry, n ~ of: dominance, control over, 575; also maystry
mate, v checkmate/destroy, 2117, 5834; ppl matt; see also formatt
matere/mater, n 1. circumstances, situation, 1211, 4661, 5347, 5910, 6259; 2. affair, enterprise, 169, 2114, 5160, 5775; 3. subject matter, 423, 1422; as stond-
ith ~: as occasion arises, 3860
maugre/mawgre, n blame, ill-will, 2602, 2879, 4704, 5885
maugre/mawgre, prep in spite of, 250, 725, 1681, 3040, 3603, 5884; ~ the/her berd/hed: in spite of all you/they can do, 1325, 3877; ~ her volunte: against her will, 2506; yn ~ my visage: despite all I could do, 2648; ~ me, in spite of myself, 3598, 6511r
me, pron 1. me, 33, 56, 71, etc.; 2. myself, 2852
me(e)de, n meadow/favor, kindness, 3915r
meekly, adj obediently, 4273
meynt, v alternates*, 6200 §
meke, v become humble, 5538 refl
melle, n meal, i.e., inspiration, 3539
melle, v [medlen] be involved, 2691
membir, n member, 930
mende/menden, v 1. put right, 5826, 6154; 2. improve, 2224ф, 3091; 3. make better, i.e., bigger, 3137; see also amende
mendem, n improvement, 4414
mendis, n amends, 4800
mene, v 1. (to) mean, intend, 102, 395, 766, 1811, etc.; 2. desired, 2864, 2872; 2s menyst; prt/ppl metent
menyng, ger to my —: in accordance with my desire, 1463; take my —: understand me rightly, 4470
mercy, n mercy, 248, 566, 652, etc.
mer, adj cheerful, 3143, 4947
mervaylemervell, n wonder, 1734, 3142
mervayle/mervell, v wonder, 362, 1417, 2271
message/messangere, n 1. messenger, 1292, 3798, 5772; 2. message, 3790; pl messangeris
messe, n mass, 993; also masse
messe, adv don —: given offense, 5156ф; also mys, amys
mestid, adj blurry, 2093ф
mesure, n due proportion, 5582; out (of) —: excessively, 5290, 5511
mesure, v 1. be moderate, 2022ф; 2. temper, 2075, 2563ф; 3. ascertain, 4362
mete, n food, meat, 3111, 3115, 3120
mete/met, v (1) meet, 2397, 3688, 4229 §, etc.; prt mette
mete; v (2) dream, 2265, 2549, 4741, 5215; prt met; impers/ppl mette
metyng, ger encounter, rendezvous, 828, 2286, 3681
mette, adj worthy, 812ф
meture, n verse/situation, 5602
mevid, meyng, see move
my/myn/mi, pron poss my, 30, 31, 917, etc.
my [error for may, v], 1281
myddil, n waist, 6297
myddil, adj middle, 2603
myght/might, n 1. power, 250, 3040, 4266, 5208; 2. utmost, 1908; of ~: almighty, 1889
myght, v strengthen, 1295
might,, see may v
myght/myghtty, adj mighty, powerful, 88, 1022, 4325, etc.
myne, see my
myne [error for me, pron], 2465
mynde, n thoughts, 640, 2822
myracle, n miracle, 799r
myrour(e), n mirror, 1251, 1268, 1279
myrthe, n joy, 3918, 5834
mysts, adv wrong, 4384ф; also messe; see also amys
mysts/myssse/myssyn, v 1. lack, fail (to obtain), 252, 970, 3429, 6396, etc.; 2. come to an end, 513ф
mysaventure, n (piece of) ill fortune, 2037
mysbore, v ppl done (behaved) wrong(ly), 3547ф refl, 6134
myschaunce, n [imprecatory phrase] 1800ф; with ~: confound (you)!, 1593ф
mysts(e)f(e)/myscheve, n 1. misfortune, misery, 107, 4528, 4700, 5794, 3345 person; 2. misdeed, 4346
myschef, v destroy, harm, 3993
mysdemymg, ger suspicion, 1724ф
mysere, n misery, 1488
mysfortune, n misfortune, 3414
mysgidyn, ger straying, 5716; see also gidyn
mysgo, v ppl gone astray, 6457
myshappe, n bad luck, 4368
myssay, v make a misstatement, 4444, 5490 refl, 5628
mysse, myssyn, see mys v
myssold, v ppl given up, 42ф§
mystthought, v thought wrongly of*, 1732
mystrust, n distrust, lack of faith (in me), 5443r, 5457, 6485
mystruste, v doubt, 1971
mysvre, n misfortune, 5590 фU
mysvse, n ?misapplication (of my words), 3116
mysswent, vprt [miswenden] go astray, 2944ф refl subj, ppl as adj strayed, 2420ф§
myte, n a bit, jot, 1219, 1524, 4029, etc.
myture, n poem, 1406
mo, see more
moche, adj 1. much, 528r, 668, 1145, etc.; 2. many, great, 1812, 2217, 5161, 6460, 6476
moche/moch, adv greatly, 1048, 3665, 3675, 4655; thickly, 4671; ~ or lesse: at length or briefly, 1138
modir, n mother, 2569
moyan, n [mene] 1. means (of attaining an end), 1010, 1655; 2. arrangement, 5601; make ~: petition, 6152
moker, see hoker moker
mokke, v 1. ridicule, 1204, 2586, 3483; 2. trick, 1800; prp mokkyng
mokkery, n 1. trick(s), 6429; 2. mischievous pleasurities, 1423
mokkis, n pl deceptions, 6432
mollyng, adv tender, 558
mone/mo(o)n, n (1) complaint, lament, 1835*, 2064, 4175*, 4211*, 5970
mone, n (2) moon, 4085, 5007, 6311; pl moonys
money, n wealth (in the form of money), 2361
monthe/month, n month, 1844, 1866, 2396, 3283r
moo, mor, see more
moost, see most adj/adv
morderesse, n murderess, 5530
mordre, v (fig.) murder, 3935
more/mo(o), n more, others, 1000, 1118, 1169, 1355, 1400, 1466, 2208*, 2211, 3691, 4994, etc.; no ~: no one else, 1666r, 3909, 5245, 5906; nothing else, 3257; otherwise not at all, 3257; no other thing (except), 613; ~ &/or les(se): the greater and the lesser, 4446; in all things, 5540, 6204; without(en) ~: without anyone else, 5395, 5587*; immediately, 2785; without more ado, 3006
more/mo(o)/mor, adj comp 1. more,
GLOSSARY

mutabilite, n changeableness, 4681

N

nad(de), see haue

nay, interj no, 74, 122, 147, etc.
nay, n (an) answer(s) of no, 542, 4095, 4201; this is no -: it cannot be denied, 1212, 5447 ♦; pl

nayes

nayle, n nail, 354

nakid, adj 1. naked, 296, 4760, 4827; 2. plain, 212; 3. simple, 861; 4. unprotected, 626, 974, 3875

name, n 1. name, 1142, 1150, 1158, etc.; 2. reputation, 3820

name, see be

namyd, ppl named, 2779

nar(e), nas, see be

nast, nath, see haue

nature, n nature, 461, 2466, 2475, etc.; of -: by nature, 5514

naue, nave, see haue

naught, n serue of -: am useless, 687; also nought

ne, adv not, 164, 289, 401, etc.; see also not

necessite, n necessity, 206; in/at my -: in my hour of need, 25, 871

nede, n need, necessity, 99, 910, 1112r, 1205, 4070, 4474, 5409, 5734; in/at -: in time of need, crisis, 283, 894r, 1083r, 1366, 1768, 2120, 3859, 3862r, 4605; what -: is hit: what need is there, 99

nede, adv, see nedis

nede/ned/nedith, v need, 807, 820, 1000, etc.; subj, 604, 1354, 5498, 6508; impers, 700, 2153, 2257, 2412, 4799, 5176, 5648, 5650, 5725, 5864, 6174, 6261; it -: not: it is not necessary, 700, 5176; see also nedith, enneden

nedy, adj in need of (sth.), 2052

nedill, n needle, 5016

nedis/nede, adv of necessity, 208, 1894, 2975, 3154, 3463, 4235, 4675, 5194 ♦, 5236, 5264, 5319, 5357, 5474, 5660, 5759, 6467

nedith, v harasses, 4070 ♦; see also nede

neye, prep close, 2465

neigheth, v -: nere: draws (near), 2183

ne(y)thir, adj neither, 1281, 1370, 3146

nek, n neck, 5021

nell, nelt, see will

nenysther [MS nenscher], there is not, 5752; see also nyther

ner, conj nor, 4568

nere/ner(re), adv near, 1428, 2120; comp nearer, 494, 496, 563, 732, 1004, 1651, etc.; see also nygh, next, ben

nethir, see neythir

nuyr/neuer/never/nevir/nevyr, adv never, 374, 545, 882, 2638, 5166, etc.; -: so: no matter how, however, 6239

nuyr a del(c), not at all, 122, 4938

nuyrthelas/nevirthelas/nc(ve)rhelas/ neyurles, adv nevertheless, 507, 600, 1095, 2912, 3174, 3653, etc.; -: not at all, 1095

neuene, v name, 5075

newe/new, adv new, 946, 1135, 1350, 5349, etc.

newe, adv again, anew, 974, 1446, 1515, 2374, 2382, 2390, 2394, 3211, 4922; -: to lere: unskilled, 4936; and -: continually, 1737

newfangill, adj novel, i.e., of a new lady, 3528

newfangilnes, n inconstancy, 2387

newly, adv 1. recently, suddenly, 2203; 2. anew, 4844

newous, adj painful, 2462r; also noyous

next, adv sup next, 1776, 2814, 2974

next, adv sup next (to), 2696, 5140, 5344, 5351, 6274, 6373

nyce, see nys

nycete, n folly, 2562

nygard, n contemptible person, 1802

nygardy, n stinginess, 104

ny(gh), adj 1. near, 969, 1906, as n 2086; 2. direct, 1293; also nere

ny(gh)/nyghe, adv near(ly), closely, 166, 299, 625, 732, 1001, 1617,
GLOSSARY

nyght/night, n night, 251, 312, 414, etc.
nylie, see will
nym, adj nine, 6217
nis, nys(e), see be

nyse/nys(e)/nise/nyce, adj 1. wanton, lascivious, 4126, 4236, 4335; 2. foolish, 2653, 4183, 4396; 3. foolish/wanton, 3139; 4. smooth*, 4193 §, 4779; 5. extraordinary, 4977 §; 6. intricate, 5030; 7. clever, 5287

nyst, see wisst

nysther, is there not, 5942; see also nenyscher

nyoon/noon/noo, adj 1. no, 14, 52, 913, 1084, 2328, 5300, etc.; 2. [confirming negation] 1354, 1890, 2524, 3263, 5211, 5753, etc.; 3. [answer of no] 4776, 4781, 4865, 5235, etc.; ~ other thyng: nothing more, 2186, 4472

nyoon/noon/noo, adv 1. not, 160, 1596, 2043, 2159, 3806, 3911, 4062, 4320, 4396, 4747, 5135, 5142, 6169, etc.; ~ thing, not (all), 196, 812, 3657r, 4249, 4565, 4850, 5048, 6423; any reason, 2691, 5330, 5503

nobill/nobil, adj noble, 92, 449, 1373, 1995, 2984

nobles, n 1. nobility, high birth, 142, 145, 1152, 2982; 2. majesty, 2343, 2716, 2802, 2990; 3. worthiness, 4448; of yowre gret ~/: because of your nature, 4797

noder, adv no ~/: no more, 4402

nolforsyng, n thing of no importance, 1830

noyle, see will

nombre, n number other than zero (i.e., 10, 20, etc.), 2043

noon, [error for oon] 98

noon/noo/non, pron 1. no one, none, 802, 1354 (1), 2590, 4207, 4498, 5472, etc.; 2. anyone, 5143

noon, adj/adv, see no

nor, conj nor, 151, 225, 245, etc.; neg introducing a sentence, 373, 2573

nor, see be

norice, n (spiritual) teacher, 4082

ynorishid, v ppl fostered, 668

norture, n education, 2560, 5593

not, adv do not, 3399

not, see wot

notable, adj important, memorable, 2680

notwithstanding, adv nevertheless, 1722, 6119

no(u)ght, n nothing, 954, 2038, 2330, 3483, 4254, 4639, 5059, 5149, 5174, 5416, 5430, 5526, 6123, 6167, 6181, 6289, 6344, 6434; ~ ellis, no other thing, 1360; of ~/: for nothing, 2033r;

helpe vnto ~/: am useless, 4867;

for ~/: without success, 5149; also naught

not/notnought, adv 1. not, 34, 39, 42, etc.; 2. no, 3142; 3. [Error for nor] neither, 5063; right ~/: not at all, 1371; ~ for that: nevertheless, 4401; ~ long to come: very soon, 746; see also no, ne

nuncertayne, adj uncertain, 5661

nounparall, adj unequalled, 3194

novembre, n November, 3043

now, adv 1. now, 23, 34, 66, etc.; 2. from now on, 2440; 3. just now, 4983; 4. now that, 4874; ~ and oft: repeatedly, 399; ~ to yere: this very year, 1496; ~ let se: look here!, see here!, 1314

now [error for ?nor, ?not], 1076

now where, adv in no respect, 6455

O

o, interj Oh!, 57, 58, 200, etc.
o, prep in, 5110

ob4, adj one, 4340, 5430, 5550, 5556

obay/obey, v 1. obey, 22, 437, 5172;

2. be obedient, 6251; also obey

obey(s)h)ounce, n 1. submission,
1654, 1905, 3785; 2. authority, 2723, 3400; doon ~: pay homage, 1777
obeyshant, adj obedient, 59, 3299
obit, n religious service held to com-
memorate (sb's) death, 2297 §
obler, oblesse, see note, 4291r
obligacioni, n security, 2709
oblyance, n put in ~: forget, 5984
U
observance, n doon ~: pay homage, 1790
occasoon, n grounds (for it), 1564
oc(c)upy/ocupie, v 1. occupy, 1584; 2. make use of, 6369; see note, 6374r, 6375
ocupacione, n effort (of writing), 3742
of/off, prep 1. of, 6, 904, 905, 1037, 1060, 3046, 3390, etc.; 2. out of, 4296; 3. from, 895, 1252, 1337, 1469, 2150, 2471, 4870, 6433; 4. for, 3035, 5124, 6148; 5. with, 3374, 3766; 6. in, 988, 4798; 7. by, 3630, 4699; 8. about, concerning, 1007, 1090; 9. because of, 4162; 10. after, 5439; ~ that, because, 70, 4274
of, adv off, 2167, 3148, 4588
of, conj or, 2661, 4360, 5868
ofcast, ppl as adj outcast, 2061
2081, 4285, 4891
offence/offens(e), n 1. wrongdoing, sins, 2023, 2609, 6129, 6247; 2. transgression, 6050, 6142, 6143; do ~: (to) offend (cause you to be offended), 87, 337; ppl offens(e)
offende, v 1. offend, 5420, 6246, 6489 subj, 5159; 2. transgresses, 6044; ppl offendith; ppl offendid
office, n position (as a retainer in Love's court), 2655
officere, n officer, 3827
offre, v offer, 3514
oft/often/ofte, adv 1. often, 65, 1063, 1087, 3252, 2169, etc.; 2. repeatedly, 5651; ~ tyme(s), 3111, 3231, 3156, 6201
oft, adv [e]f[t] now and ~: repeatedly, 399
oft, see ought
old(e)/oold, adj 1. as n old people, 545, 2586, 3277, 5201 2. of long ago, former, 1693, 4656; 3. old, 2939, 6218; of days ~: since olden days, 783, past, 4924
on, prep 1. on, 9, 53, 248, etc.; 2. at, 5034, 5059, 5115, 5212, 5314, 5476; 3. about, of, 848, 5095, 6165; 4. forth, onward, 5258, 5317; 5. over, 2; 6. upon, 562; ~ that: since, 3785
U
on/oon/one/oo, adj/ indef pron one, 31, 103, 104, 119, 168, 369, 920, 1060, 1070, 1071, 1431, 2095, 2152, 3055, 3567, 3674, 4007, 4154, 4156, 4167, 4335, 4337, 4481, 4659, 4700, 4917, 4971, 4986, 5050, 5091, 5147, 5219, 5239, 5299, 5327, 5497, 5505, 5640, 5706, 5715, 5732, 5802, 5897, 6094, 6356, 6401, 6415, 6419, etc.; a one, 2316, 4169, 4373, 4971, 5015, 5205; every
othir ~: all, 4210; ~ to: each one (in turn), 5327
oon, adv in ~: continuously, 597, 1667, 1817, 5960
onaspide, adv unseen, 4364; see also vnsplied, (a)spy
ondesert, adj undeserved, 938; see also deserue v
onycrepe [erased], see note, 895 U
onyes/ones/oonys, adv 1. once, 1640, 1680, 1835, 2534, etc.; 2. one day, 3441, 3841, 3925, 6298; 3. for once (and for all), 1411; 4. at all, 1347; 5. at once, 2089r, 2539; 6. ever, 3369; 7. once again, 4609; for ~ and ay: forever, 596, 5458, 6102
only, adj 1. only, 34, 238r, 590r, etc.; 2. alone, 1367, 1603, 1700, 1916, 2242, 2748, 2816, 5654
only, adv 1. simply (the only reason being), 2338, 3685, 4997, 5268; on ~: a single, 5147
onlyue, adj alive, 5579
onto, prep unto, 5731
on whi/on why*, adv [on wry (Fr: a torte)] wrongfully, unjustly, 947 §, 997, 1051, 1553, 1705

GLOSSARY 589
GLOSSARY

oold, see olde
oon, see on
oost, n flock, 2464
open/opyn, v unlock, 1222, 2954
opynoun, n 1. belief, view, 247†, 3747, 4688; 2. rumor, 5719; 3. intention, 4747; 4. decision, 4857
oppressid, v ppl weighed down, 5632
or, conj 1. or, 21, 35, 50, etc.; 2. before, 280, 567, 602, 1086, 1332, 2383, 2577, 2974, 3104, 3430, 3458, 3920, 3964, 4007, 4041, 4068, 4189, 4480, 5175, 5239, 5323, 5824, 6310, 6372, 6375; 3. lest, 4202, 5487
ordeyne/ordayne, v 1. to arrange, 2665; 2. assign, 5664; 3. provide, 826, 1839; 4. decreed, 2231, 4701; ∼ me: provide, arrange for me, 2391, 3286, 5638; prp ordeynyd/ordeynyd; ppl ordeynyd/ordeynyd
ordenaunce/ordinaunce, n 1. artillery, force in battle array, 1772, 3396; 2. judgment, 4114, 4282; 3. contrivance, 1115; 4. proper order, 4367; 5. command, 5172; make ∼: decree (sth)/put troops in battle order, 882
ordir, n religious order, 4804
oren, v have mercy on, treat gently, 6403 ∗U$; see also ewre, vre
oth, n (written) oath, 584, 591, 2161, etc.; pl othis: also wothe
othir, adj 1. other, 33, 242, 587, etc.; as n others, 215, 3667, 5005, 5006, 5574, 6118, 6523; 2. another (person, place), 155, 6152; 3. more, 2186; 4. some other, 5080; 5. something else, 5302; this ∼ day: yesterday, the other day, 1960; see also anothir
othir, pron 1. something else, 2864, 2872, 5302; 2. otherwise, 4062, 5274; noon ∼: not otherwise, 1596; eche ∼: every, 1297; ∼ some: some others, 4933, 5006, 5049
othirwise, adv 1. the contrary, 154, 2379, 5702, 6106; 2. in another way, 133
ought/oft/ought, v [ouen] ought (to), 62‡, 607, 663, 1227, 1230, 1301, 1479†, 3025‡, 3845r, 4619, 4731, 5753, etc.; 2s oughtist; see also owe
ought, pron 1. any(thing), all, 2609, 2920, 3189, 4817, 5081, 5515, 6330; 2. at all, 1721, 3130; for ∼: despite any amount, 3954, 4508; ne ∼: nothing, 607
ouyr, see ovir
ouyrcast, v 1. thwart, 631; 2. cover, 4758
ouyrchargith, v weighs down, 382
ouyrdres(se), v reverse, overturn, 2373; ppl (fig.) 2130 ∗U$; see also dresse
ouyrgone, v go too far, 6451
ouyrpluS, in ∼: in addition, 5396
ouyrred, v ppl read through, 2969; see also rede v (1),aredith
ouyrthrowe, v 1. thwart, 169; 2. casts headlong, 235; 3. fall headlong, 304; 4. brought to nought, 2115; 3s ouyrthrowith; prp ouyrthrow
ouyre, pron poss 1. our, 3, 7, 1584, etc.; 2. ours, 4132; 3. [MS youre], 1065, 1583, 1584
out, adv/prep 1. out, 190, 266, 353, etc.; 2. out (of), beyond, 5045, 5290, 5511; ∼ of drede: doubtlessly, 1081, 1316, 5111; (I remove) all your doubt, 5136
out/owl/at [error], after without, 1236, 1241, 2144, 2255, 2602, 2613, 2673, 2728, 2743, 2761, 2792, 2879, 3302, 3661, 3973, 4328, 4516, 4766, 5148, 5957, 5963, 6401r, 6458, 6483r; y ∼ rayne: I (am) without reign, 5045 ∗×; also hout
out, interj !help!, 321 ∗‡
out/owl, adv outwardly, 955, 4334
outcast, adj* exiled, despairsing, 2040
outpregge, v ransom, 927
outrage, n presumption, 6148
outragous, adj extreme, 4594
outhewe, v reveal, exhibit, 955 subj, 4334, 5729; 3s owtshewith; ppl outshewid
outward, *adv* outwardly, 5580
ouyr/ovyr/ovyr, *adv* 1. over, 1382, 4757; 2. above, 4044, 4763; 3.
overly, 5456; ~ quaynt: ingeniously elaborate, 4676
ovirmoo, *adv* in addition, 5852
ovirtwart, *adv* perversely, 6490↓
owe, *v* [ouen] 1. owe (service), 1743↓, 2385, 2883↓, 3785, 3818r; 2.
possess, 139, 585↓; 3. performed, 5929↓; 2s owist; *prp* owyn/own(e);
pace, *n*; *adv* out-;
owttsepte, *prep* except that, 5096 ↓§
oxyan, *n* poss ocean’s, 1382

**P**
pace, *n* pace, 928; see also *ape* *adv* 
pacient, *adj* forbearing, 6147
paguant, *n* pley his ~: play his role 
in (place of me), 5228
pay, *n* liking, 611, 1846
pay, *v* (to) pay, 1195, 2532, 3820
 subj, 3826; *prt* *payde*

payment, *n* payment, 6053
payne, *n* 1. pain, anguish, 382, 505, 1706, etc.; 2. pain (of love), 827↓; 3.
suffering, adversity, 957, 1857↓ *proverb.*, 1984, 2630; 4.
(difficult and dangerous) undertaking, 1210, 5316; 5. (physical)
discomfort, 4775; *pl* *paynes/payns*; also *payne*

striving, 5644; *ppt* *pardon*; see also *forpayne*

payne, *v* [pien] suffer anguish, 781↓, 5823; see also *forpyne*

paynfull/painful, *adj* 1. sorrowful, 279, 353, 1261, 2063↓, 3434, 4855, 5418; 2. painful, 3846

paynyd, *adj* 1. sorrowful, 2152; 2. wretched, 6036

paynt, *v* disguise, color (one’s words with rhetorical ornaments),

2956↓, 4899↓

payre, *n* pair (of ladies), 5116; a *thousand ~: [a multiple to express a large number] 2146, 3219, 4762

payse, *v* [peisen] ~ in *balanace*: to weigh in a balance, 144
pak, *n* burden, 3901r
pale, *adj* pale, 5470
palle, *v* to grow pale, 4548↓
pancer, *n* thought, 415↓; also pensir
pancy, *n* pansy/thought, 5020↓
papir, *n* paper, 197, 820, 4664, 4678
pappis, *n* pl breasts, 4840, 5767
paradise/paradice, *n* paradise, heaven, 481, 914, 916, etc.
parage, *n* nobility, worth, 3999, 4447
parcas, *adv* perchance, 3430, 4930, 5133, 5253, 6411
parceyue, see *perceyue*

parcement, *n* parchment, 1000
parde, *as"e"ven"arily [or as rhyme tag], 81, 207, 341, etc.
pardone/pardo(u)n, *v* 1. (to) pardon, forgive, 204, 359, 751, etc.; 2.
excuse, 2838; *ppt* *pardon*.
pardonyn, *Ger* pardon, 1456
pardoun, *n* pardon, 2609, 4715, 5156
parfit, *adj* perfect, 3325, 5869
parfit, *adv* perfectly, 5698
parlement, *n* a council of nobles (esp. sitting as a court of law), 18, 2815; court of ~: 2880, 2887

parseyue, see *perceyue*

part, *n* part, 4128; without ~: without a particle, i.e., with no, 5670, 6315

partage [MS *portage*], *n* share, portion, 3732 ↓U

part(e)/party, *n* 1. (a) portion, share, 185, 580↓, 963, 3964, 5670; 2.
faction, side, 1672, 2251, 2268, 3477; 3. plight, 865r↓, 886↓; 4.
people, 911↓; 5. corner, 1610; in/on (sb’s) ~: as far as (one) is concerned, for (one’s) part, 14↓, 480↓, 619, 622, 852, 1500↓, 1877, 2268, 3072, 5524, on me, 6050; do my ~: do my duty, best, 630, 1098; what ~: wherever-
er, 647\*, 2284\*; in oon ~: on the one hand, 1474; pl partise
part(\en), v 1. parted, 790, 1663, 2842; 2. sever, 2014, 2518; 3. apportion, allot, 2463 \*§; 4. withdraw, 2612; 5. distribute, 906\*, 2356; ~ from: to leave, 2967; ~
yow away: departed from you, 5737; \*prt\*\*\*ppl partid; see also depart
partyng, n parting, 6507
pasyng, see passyng
passage, n passage, 1042
passe/-n, v 1. go, 280, 326, 2111, 2496 subj, 4843; 2. exceed (in moral efficacy), 920, 2565\*\*, 5015; 3. past, 4582; ~ of: pass out of, 1602; is ~: has happened, 2430; 3s passith; \*prt\*\*\*past; \*prp
passyng; ppl passid/past
passyng/pasyng, adv extremely, 658, 1079, 2229, etc.; ~ well all: nearly all, 2401
past, see passe v
past/passid, ppl as adj past, 4656, 4859; ~ tyme: pastime, 2979 §, 3046 §
patent, adj lettr ~: document granting a privilege, 11, 56
pathis, n pl paths, 6450
patise, n in ~: according to the terms of a bargain, 1014 \*U\$
pece, n piece, 4553; also pese
pechere, n sin*, 2508 \*U\$
peer, see pere
pees, n peace, 1397, 4439; also pese
peyes, n pl pies, 904
peyne, n pain, 480, 525; also payne
peke, v to move dejectedly, slink, 5341 \*U
penance, n suffering, love longing, 536, 694, 722, etc.
penaunt, n penitent, 3705\*
pencioun, n (regular) payment, 10\*
penne, n pen, 197, 2167
pensir, n thought, 1503; also pancer
pep(\il)le, n people, 2483, 4680
perail, see perell
perceyue/perseyue/persayue/perceyue, v 1. understand, perceive, 808,
839, 936, 1155, 1234, 2222, 3634 subj, 6425; 2. notice, observe, 2862, 2918, 4992; ppl
parceyvid
pere//peere/per, n peer, equal, 463, 552, 1544, 3216, 4414, etc.
perell/perill/perail, n danger, 259, 3729; on thi ~: at your own risk, 1599; make a gret ~: ?treat it as if it were a serious risk, 4939 §
perlis, n pl pearls, 5015
perlous, adj capable of doing harm, 5106\*
perplexite, n 1. (a state of) confusion, 1525; 2. an uncertain situation, 2511
persaye (~seyue), see perceyue
perse, v 1. pierce, 5447, 5502, 5549; 2. (fig.) move, 1289; ppl persid
pert, adj eager, 4183
pese, n pea, 3556
pese, n piece, 5191; also pese
pese, n 1. peace, 341, 347, 573, 5107\*; 2. peaceful relations, 5177; interj peace!, 372, 2319;
holde (my) ~: remain silent, 3553; also pese
pese, v be at peace (i.e., leave me in peace), 1411\*; hadhe ~: has become stilled, 508 §; ppl pesid
pete, n pity, 2075; also pite
pevisshe, adj willful, 6412
phebus, n the sun, 2455\*\*, 4041
phisk, n medical treatment, healing potion, 2079
pigg, n pork, 3113
pight, v [picchen] set (on us), 1804; ~ on: fixed, 253, 1919\*; ~ vnto:
thrust, 311 \*§; ppl pight
piko/pyke/piijk, v chosen, 5788 \*§; ~ thank: curry favor, 4710\*; a contenaunce: create a pretext, 5084\*; motis ~: distinguishing (such) small points, 5113\*; ppl pikid
piler, n pillar, 4834, 5203
pilow(e)/pylow, n pillow, 565, 2472, 4047
pynce, n ?pleated fabric, ?folds, 4990 \*U\$
pyne, n adversity, pain, 2623
Glossary

pynnyng, v prp languishing (from sorrow), 4552
pynne, v pin, 5285
pynnys, n pos pin's, 184, 5386
pitaunc, n allowance of food and drink, i.e., (Past Time's) modest hospitality, 2972
pite, n 1. pity, 174, 227, 252 poss, etc.; 2. misery, 335; also pete
piti(ve)ous, adj 1. merciful, 933; 2. deserving of pity, 1173
pitously, adv in a manner which should arouse pity (for me), 981r, 2010, 2301, 5531, 6043r
pittis, n pos grave's, 798
place, n 1. place, 917, 953, 2254, 4432, etc.; 2. manor, castle, 1081, 2948, 3002; 3. situations, 1585, 4420; 4. (lady of) social rank, 155; 5. square on a chess-board, 868; 6. place/object of affection, 3916r; pl placis/place; see also plas
play/pley, n 1. game (of chance), 2125r; 2. pleasure, 3088; 3. folly, 4740; 4. fun, 5252
play/pley, v 1. play, 1629, 1978, 2110, etc.; 2. tease, 1204, 3483; 3. flutter, 1694r; 4. acts like a type of, 1398; 5. played, i.e., made, 874; 3s pleyeth; prp pleyed/pleide; plpl pleyed/pleyed
playne, n field of battle, 391; vpon the -: openly, 3063 §
playne/playn/pleyne, adj 1. smooth, 524r, 3254, 4139; 2. calm, 1043; 3. not twilled, plainly woven, 5017; 4. straight, 6450; 5. absolute, 1108r; 6. frank, 4353; 7. sincere, dependable, 5477
playne/playn/pleyne, adv 1. fully, entirely, 1133, 2215, 3020, 3714, 4461, 5394; 2. simply, in a straightforward manner, 2429r, 2952, 5646, 6104; 3. for certain, 657, 2489; 4. well, 2676; 5. at once, 3762
play, v 1. (to) complain, 2483, 3705, 4508, 4680; 2. express (my suffering), 211, 5269, 5404, 5552
playnt, n cause for complaint, 6259
playtis, n pl folds, 4984
plant, v implant, 4466
plas, n manor, castle, 2811; also place
plaster, n compress, poultice, 3046
plegge, n something given as security, 594, 2759, 6014, etc.
pleid/pley(de), pleyth, see play v
pleyer, n player, 5227
pleyne, see playne v
plente/plenty, n plenty, abundance, 1950, 2003, 3491
plesaunce/plesaunt [error], n 1. pleasure, 263, 586, 675, etc.; 2. pleasure/fine lawn, 404, 1168, 3722r, 4764, 4990r, 5170, 5191r; 3. charm, 3272r; to her -: what would please her, 4452;
if hit were his -: if it pleased him, 2962
plesaunt, adj pretty, delightful, 249, 1168, 1606r, etc.
ples-/-n, v please, 231 imp pl, 1664, 1909, 5299, 6067, etc.; impers as you please, 556, 2995, 2998, 3018, 3135, 3718r, 3753, 5422; 3s plesith; prp plesid
pleseres/pleasure/plesore/plessor, n pleasure, 22, 74, 895, 1863, etc.; to his -: to his satisfaction, 1043, 5769; pl pleseris
plesyng, ger to her -: according to her wishes, 838, 4708
pletid, v prt ~ ther latyn: pleaded their case in bird language, 2465r
plight/plite, n 1. condition, plight, 171, 235
plight, v pledge, swear (to), 591, 1307, 1667, 1806, 2161, 5674 §; prp plight; ppl plight/yplight; see also aplight
pluk(ke), v pull, 2672; ~ up thi lustihed/hert: take heart, 1314, 2830
poynyt, n 1. detail, point, 463, 1879, 3218, etc.; 2. point (in a game), 1634, 1638, 2112; 3. (sharp) point, 6364; no -: not at all, 1265; entir -: the point on a backgammon board where a taken piece may be entered,
GLOSSARY

1632; in ~: at the point, 4556; at ~ devise: perfectly, 4975; set (n)o ~ ashore: leave nothing out, 6181 §, 6268 ♦

ponyssh(e)ment, n (suffering inflicted as) punishment, 786; (a sentence imposing) punishment, 2826; jurisdiction, 2612 ♦

poore/poor/por(r)e/pouer, adj 1. humble, unworthy, inadequate, 60, 177, 974, 4782, etc.; 2. [often difficult to distinguish from 1] wretched, deserving of pity, 294 ♦, 1061, 1386, 1716, 2741 ♦, 3391, 4230, 4302, 4862, 6344; 3. as n the poor (one), 906, 908, 3700; 4. small, 958, 2732, 6380; 5. low(ly), 2497, 3045, 4277; 6. poor, 4413

pooreposse, n course of action, 5244 §; also purpos

porrar, see note, 4291

port, n demeanor, 443, 535, 2100, etc.

port, n port, 1041

portage [error for partage], n share, portion, 3732 ♦U

porter, n gate-keeper, 2953

portrayde, v ppl depicted (in words), 1728

possede, v possess, 4133

post, n ~ and piler: a running game, 4834 ♦, 5203 ♦

pot, v put, 895; also putt

pouer, see poore

pouerte, n poverty, 903

pound(e), n pl pounds (£), 672, 5944

povste, n power, 1869; see also powere

powdrid, v ppl decorated in a random pattern, 4989

powdrying, n decoration with ermine tails, 4991

power/powere/poware, n 1. power, 2, 361, 394, etc.; 2. ability, 662, 1983, 2706, 2756, 3378, 6095; see also povste

pown, n pawn, 2124

pray, v ask, beg, pray, 416, 649, 10 34, 1943, 2970, 3105, 3470, 4583, etc.; 3s praieth/pray; prt prayde; prp praying/praiyn

prayere, n 971, 1503, 2016, etc.; pl prayers

prays/prayes, n praise, 824, 911, 3503, etc.

prayse/preyse(n), v [OF priser, var. of priser] (1) praise, 424, 486, 1217, 1356, 2193, 3278, 4055, etc.; prize, 3657; 3s preyeris; prp preyng/praysyg; ppl prayysid; thorugh ~ praised properly, 472; see also preyisid

praty/prati, adj 1. handsome, pretty, 5010, 5640 ♦, 6367, 6392; 2. pleasant, 366, 400, 4425, 6244; 3. apt, 192 ♦, 1536 ♦, 2171; 4. clever, 1655

pratilly, adv 1. charmingly, 1665, 3456 ♦, 6112; 2. skillfully, 452 ♦, 1874, 5017

praucne, v ride (on a prancing, capering horse), 2978 §

preef, n evidence, proof, 1236, 5412

preef, v, see preue

preyse, see prayse

preysid, v prt pressed, 166

prejudice, n trouble, inconvenience, 5682, 6243

prent, v ppl ~ in hert: fixed in (my) heart, 1246 ♦

prese, n company, 190, 3691

presence, n presence, 3539, 5808, 5821, etc.

present, adj present, 1113, 3672

present, v present, 2341, 2732, 2816, 3630; ppl presentid

pressen, v [prisounen] imprison, 231 ♦

presume, v venture (to do), 473

prevayle(n)/preuayle(n), v 1. avail, benefit, 109, 201 ♦, 315, 3130 subj, 4726, 5126, 5621 ♦, etc.; 2. to be successful, 4941; ~ vnto: prevail against, 6024; 3s preuuaylith; ppl prevaylid

preue/preve/prove/preef, v 1. prove (in practice or by test), demonstrate, 1160, 1671 ♦, 3351, 3423,
naming a place, 1756

properly, adv well, 462
proue, prove, see preue
provide/proyde/prouide, v provide,
125, 1350r, 1372, 3113, 4922
province, n territory, 2985
prowd/prowt, adj proud, 1587, 2316
prowes, n valor, 1087
puysshaunce/pusshaunce/puysshaunce, n 1. power, strength,
300r, 1779, 4722, etc.; 2. band,
1753; to (one’s) ~, as that (y) haue ~: as far as (one) is able,
1184, 2724, 4722
puysshaunt, adj powerful, 579, 4429

pull, v attract, 5300
punyshe, v to punish, 5422, 6247
purchas(e), n endeavor, contrivance,
527d, 3559, 3767

purchase/purchase, v 1. get, obtain,
94, 179, 870, 940, 4598, 5558,
5568; 2. pursue (an animal)/obtain,
3925; 3. request, 127 §
pure, adj faultless, 4365
pupril, adj crimson, purple, 4987
pupos, n 1. plan (of action), 2661,
2863, 5345; 2. intention, 618,
2845r; 3. goal, 3545; to my ~: in my undertaking, 1641; also
pooreposse

purses, n shell*, 4193 §, 4779
purswey, v 1. follow, 4125, 5493;
2. attend, 1145; 3. seeking attainment of, 2699; ~ round:
persevere, 746; prp pursweyng
puryce, v prepare, 2653
puysshaunce, see puyschaunce
put(t), v put, 1013, 1210, 3602, etc.;
~ away: banish, 1283; ~ in for-getynge: forget, forgotten, 1330d,
1453; ~ in assay: make a (great) effort, 1852; ~ in respite: abandon my intention, 3122; ~ it forth: push, 4972; y ~ yow out of drede: I remove all your doubt, 5136; ~ a case: present a hypothetical situation, 5249; ~ me: submit myself, 5357; ~ from: rejected (by), 5954; ppl
putt/yputt; also pot

Glossary

3859, 4898, 5272; 2. suffer, 1578; 3. make evident, 6526; 3s
provyd; 3pl preven; ppl provyd
preswnt, adj wise, discerning, 4745
price, n have of me no ~: despise
me, 5454

pride, n in ~: proudly, 1369, 1563
prye, v gaze, 1257
prike, v ~ and stert: to caper about,
prance (like horses), 3203

prince, n prince, 58, 2983, 2984,
5508; pl poss pryncis

princesse/prynces/praynse(ce), n princes,
mistress of a lover’s affection,
449, 539, 1067, 1147, etc.
prynke, n twinkling of an eye, 805
prise, n (good) reputation, 891
prise, n value, 3185, 4127, 4978; take
~ (of me): esteem (me), 3308
priso(u)n, n prison, 1012r, 4610
prysone, v imprison, 737, 2670; ppl
prisounde

prisoner(e), n prisoner, 251, 949,
1442, 6279
prive/pryvy/pryve/pryuy, adj 1. secret,
3687r, 4175; 2. familiar, 3666,
3830
privly/privuely, adv secretly, 1292,
2427, 3689
proche, v approach, 5701
professioun, n vow, 4863; take ~:
taken holy orders, 4803; ded ~:
?pledge to the memory of the
dead, 4855

profit(e), n benefit, best interests,
1528, 2185, 2698; to his ~: for his benefit, 1522
profitable, adj helpful, 2683
profite, v 1. help, heal, 4249; 2.
befitted, 1858 §; ppl profite

promye/promys/promyse/promis, n
1. promise, 569, 617, 929, 1016,
6110, etc.; 2. pledge, 2705; pl
promys

promessyng, n* promises, 1838
promys/-e/promes, v 1. promise, assure,
588, 1383, 2840, 4626,
5175, 5448, 5780; 2. make promise,
2629; ppl promysid

propir, adj ~ name: proper noun
### Q

**quaylis, n pl quails, 3121**

**quaynt, adj elaborate, 4676**

**quake, v tremble, 4794, 5186, 5242, 5328; prt quok(e); see also aquok**

**quantite, n 1. length, 229; 2. amount, 5389; 3. (amount of) drops, 5502; in tymys ∼: for a long time, 856; if ther myght be ∼: if such a short period of time could be conceived, measured, 396 §§**

**quarrell, n 1. trial by combat, 1559; 2. grounds for dispute, 1454**

**quart, n [quarte] (good) health, 2442**

**queynt, v acquain, introduce (myself), 5214 refl**

**quench, v quench, 978, 983; ppl quenche**

**quene, n queen, 4973, 5075**

**quere, n take no nozzle, 2244; also cure**

**questioun, n question, 5246**

**quyky/-ke, adj 1. cheerful, sincere, 559; 2. living, alive, 2034, 2085, 3363; see also aquyk v**

**quykyly, adj life-like, 5509**

**quyt, adv quite, entirely, 1533, 2786**

**quytyth, v 1. do (your) duty, 1179 refl; 2. repaid, 3422; ppl quynt; see also quytyt**

**quytance, n (document attesting) discharge from a debt of obligation, 2881, 2891, 2910, 2969**

**quod/coth, v prt said, 198, 200, 4777, etc.**

### R

**rad, see rede**

**raft, v prt bereft (me of), 5808**

**rage, n 1. fierceness (of the sway of Cupid), 291; 2. madness, 2823; 3. lovesickness, 5927**

**rage, adj 1. violent, 1020; 2. wanton, 3088 §§**

**rage, v 1. (to) lament, 432, 2068; 2. frolic/flirt, 2587**

**rageous, adj fierce, 1002**

**raggid, adj unpolished, 4203; see also ruggid**

**rayle, v exchange abusive language, 372**

**raynbow, n rainbow, 4999**

**rayne, n rain, 1123, 1849, 5004, 5501**

**rayne/reyne, v (1) 1. wet, drench, 2471; 3057; 2. rain (down), 403, 2516, 4514, 6518**

**rayne, v (2) 1. reign, 5044, 5045 §§; 2. prevail, 2494, 6054; ppl raynyd**

**rayue, v deprive, 1764; see also bireyve, enrayfid**

**raket, n noisy pair, 5317 U§ rakil(l), adj rash, 4125, 5879**

**ran, see renne**

**range, see raunge**

**rath, adj rash, 2492 §**

**rathir, adv rather, 2142, 2159, 2517, etc.**

**raue, v go mad, 5837**

**raught, see reche**

**ra(u)nge, n 1. row, 5007; 2. circuit, 5167**

**raunsonyd, v repay, 3430; out ∼: released for a ransom payment, 3367; ppl raunsonyd**

**ravisse, v be overwhelmed, 1778 §§**

**rebell, adj rebellious, 1574**

**rebound, v return, 740**

**rebuke/rebewke, n 1. reproach, 6053; 2. reproimand, 6148**

**recche/rekke/reche, v [reccen] 1. care, notice, 533, 1090, 2532, 4381, 6021; 2. mind, 401, 1729; 3. pay heed, 2520; 4. wish, 3645 §§; 3s recchith; prt rought**

**receyue, v receive, 692, 766, 3003, 6240; prt rescyvid; 3pl imp rescyvith; ppl rescyvid**

**reche, adj rich, 2103**

**reche/reccen, v [reccen] 1. took by force, stole, 893, 1740, 4403, 5510; 2. obtained, 6794; 3. hand to, 2538; 4. reach, seize, 5105; prt raught/rought**

**recomande, v commend, give greetings, 2987, 2988 refl, 3795, 6130, 6264; prp recomaundyng**
GLOSSARY

recomfort, n comfort, 1038, 1079, 3340
recomfortid, v prt comforted, 1262
recommendacioun, n regards, 2712; made ~ of: commended, 2976
recompense, n amends, 6131
record, n unto ~: as a witness, 4743
recoueraunce, n relief, 707; also rekeueraunce
recede/reed, v (2) advise, 811, 3447, 5138, etc.; prt rad
redi/redre/rede, adj ready, available, 2695, 2874, 3301, 5535, etc.; to: prepared for, 1864
redes, adj perplexed, 5154, 6156
redres/redresse, n 1. legal redress, 1096; 2. relief, 4577, 4717; 3. punishment, 3463
redresse, v put right, 2065, 2564
reed, n advice, 2614, 3236
reed/-n/red, adj red, 1336, 5012, 6200, etc.
refrayne, v 1. refrain, 1126; 2. remove, 2218; 2796 subj; 3. restrain, 1114, 5365; 4. prevents, 3251; withold, 3265
refrains/refrayt, n song, 1687, 4730
refresshe, v resupply (an army, fleet), 3391
refuse, n rejection, refusal, 668, 2733, 3315, etc.
refuse, v (to) refuse, 39, 1153, 5398, 6075
regally, n 1. (your) highness, majesty, 2385, 2718, 2774, 2855, 2998; 2. royal court, 2913
regard, n 1. glances, looks, 3873; 2. heed, 5406; a ~ to see: to cast a glance, 5971
regrater, n of the fayre: monopolist, one who buys up goods before they come to market, 5120
reherse/-n/reresse [error], v 1. repeat, 782, 5506, 5615, 5651, 6261; 2. enumerate, 3123
reyne, see rayne v (1)
rejouye, v delight, 892 subj
rejouysyn, ger joy, 851
reysyn, ~ vp: point (of a scallop), 5032
rekeuer, n hope, 3590
rekeueraunce, n relief, 872; also re-coueraunce
rekeueryng, ger to haue a ~: to recover (my joy), 1470
rekeuyr/rekevir/rekewre/rekouer, v 1. recover, regain possession of, 875, 1368; 2704, 5414; 2. restore, 4575; 3. win back (the game)/recover refl, 2139; ppl rekeuerid
rekke, see recche
rekkeles [error for reklewse], 1503
reklewse, adj solitary, 1503
rekkwer [marg. corr.], n* [requeren] urgent request, petition, 2704
releev/releue, v help, 3344, 4699
reles, n abatement, 479
relesid, v released, 2882
releuyng, ger succor, 281, 985
remedy, n remedy, 195, 282, 477, 1904
remembrance, n 1. memory, 1170r, 1873, 2198, etc.; 2. thought(s), 859, 889, 1046, 1358, 2595, 3951; 3. remembering, 1758, 6285; 4. remembrance, form of address 1505, my ~: 685, 3312
haue in ~: remember, 1104, 4608
remembre/remembir, v think (on), remember, 136, 1064, 4753, etc., ~ on/vpon, 4099, 4131 impers §, etc.; to ~: as a matter of record, 3042; prp remembryn
g
remenaunt, n rest, 124
remew, v [remuen] depart, 1575
renewe, v 1. reopen, 2432r subj; 2. renews itself, is restored, 1394, 3213; 3s renewith
renne, v 1. run, 66, 986, 3063, etc.; 2. spread widely, 2206; 3. was covered, 5002; 4. ran, spread, 5011; 5. revolve (through), 5167; ~ on: attack, 1094; 3s reneneth/renyth; prt ra/ron; prp rennyng
renomayd/remomyd [error], adj renowned, 4422, 6070
renounce, v repudiate, 1539, 2662
renowne, n fame, 4360
rent(e), n rent, 6240; on oure ~: out of our revenues, 9
rent, v ppl 1. removed, 987 §; 2. torn up, 2892♦
repayre/repeyre, v 1. go, make (one's) way, 2154, 3211, 5200, 5778, 6467; 2. are gathered together, 4422; 3. abide, 4455♦; 3s repayre; ppl repayre
repayre, v continue, 770
repele, v to ~: to be withdrawn, 51
repentance, n repentance, 1571
repentant, n sorry (for), 6129
repentid, v ppl repented, 6134
replete/reple(e)t, adj imbued (with), 2229, 3804, 5408, 6480
report, n report, 270, 1049
report, v 1. report, tell, 358r, 2979, 5531r, etc.; 2. assert, 4351 refl;
ppl reportid
repos, v keep away from, 2851♦ refl
repot, v put (it) back, 1177 ♦ U
require, v 1. request, beg, 88, 1022, 1092, 1112r, etc.; 2. summon, 3335
request, n 1. (a) request, 323, 2693, 2732, 5403, etc.; 2. subject of a request (what is requested), 2869r
resemblaunce, n analogy, simile, 3853♦
resemble, v ~ vnto: compares with, 1278
resemblyng, prp resembling, 285
reserue, v allocate (a prerogative) exclusively, 5890
resident, adj resident, 397, 3673
resignacioun, n retirement, 2715
reskuse, n assistance, 1769
resonable, adj reasonable, 5397, 5480
resonyd, v prt address, rebuke, 2266, 2556♦§; prp resonyng
resort, n 1. source of comfort, 1040, 4350; 2. place of refuge, 3013♦
resort, v 1. come (to), 4576♦, 5584, 5942, 6397♦; 2. return, 5809; 3s resort
resoun/reson, n reason, 69, 962, 1084, etc.; 2. agreeable to reason, 241; 3. (written) text, motto, 4839; 4. mind, 5499; 5. justice, 1551♦, 6462; had ~: was sensible (to do so), 2968
resoun, adj reasonable (that), 241
respit(e), n respite, 428; delay, 2692;
put in ~: abandon, 3122
respite, v ~ grant a temporary respite, 4036 §
response, n [responde] reply, 850
ressayue, v [receive[n] to accept possession of, 132 §
rest, n 1. rest, 413, 4439, 4959, etc.; 2. idleness, 2669; 3. peace of mind, 5130
rest, v (give) rest (to), 2541, 2663
restid, v ppl arrested, 3827; see also aрест
restore, v give back, 3977
restrayne, v 1. restrain, 394, 670, 5485, 5551; 2. impose (a mode of behavior) on (oneself), 535♦; 3. take by force, 2505♦; 4. limit, 2792; 5. prevent, 2917r refl
retorne/retourne, v turn, 172, 1983, 5419, etc.; ~ in: changed into, 5870; ppl reto(u)rnid
rettid, v considered, 5554♦
reue, v deprive of, rob, 80, 5324, 6041; 3s revith; ppl revid; see also bireyve, enrayfid
reuercence, n respect, 2604, 3025
revolu, v 1. reflect on, 2162♦, 2198, 5677; 2. roll, 6438; prp reouluyng
reward, n 1. fee, compensation, 659, 665, 842, 5920, etc.; 2. remuneration, 1195; 3. payment, return, 6166; ppl rewardis
reward(e), v reward, 71, 4636, 5483, 5783, 5959r; ppl rewarded
rewde/rewd, adj untutored, unre- fined, 185, 1065, 2274, etc.; also rude
rewedly, adj inelegantly, 3076; see also rudely
rewdenes, n 1. cruelty, 626, 1073♦,
GLOSSARY

1082, 1324; 2. uncouthness, lack of polish, 4709, 4720; do ~: deal harshly (with), 750; also rudes-
nes, rudesse
rewdisse, adj uncouth, 153, 786, 1423, 4211
rew, n pity, 812
rew, adv phr on ~: in sequence, 5838; see also row, arowe
rew, v 1. to regret, 1590, 2137; pity, 4733; 2. have pity on, 812; 2519
rewle, adv (to) guide, have control over, 459, 791, 2445, 2561, 2827, 3709, 4179; 3s rewlith; pt
rewlid
rewler, n constable, 2958
rewm, n realm, 2985
ryally, adv regally, 2886
riches/-se/riches [MS riche], n 1. treasure, riches, 682, 1317r, 1997, etc.; 2. riches/the lady, 897, 1948, 1997, 4281, 4851, 5816; 3. person. 4696
riche, adj 1. rich, 1491, 4224, 4966, etc.; 2. richly endowed, 440, 1277; 3. richly made, 5010
riche, v make (me) rich, 1279, 3612
richely, adv splendidly, 1728, 2305
right, n 1. just claim, 945, 5959r; 2. right, 2050; 3. prerogative, 3041; of ~: surely, by just claim, 962, 1551, 5676, 6055; as in yowre ~: as is your prerogative, 6334
right, adj 1. just, 5962; 2. straight, 3904
right, adv 1. very [intensifier], 122, 591, 600, etc.; 2. truly, 1678; 3. just, 1027, 1846, 1848, 2148r, 2232, 2444, 2955, 5288; 4. exactly, 1980, 4679, 5560, 5893, 6105; 5. justly, 240; ~ nought: (not) at all, 1371, 5526; ~ as: just as if, 1695, as soon as, 1960; ~ so: immediately, 4663; ~ wel a fyn: very well, 5132; ~ as y wot: as I know all too well, 6158
rightwisly, adv fittingly, 2238
rigure/rigoure, n cruelty, 1404, 2008, 3039, 3167, 5358
ryng, n ring, 4833, 5083
rise, v 1. rise, 2974, 6001; 2. arise, 4041; pt rose
ryve/rive, adj [rive] eager, 6049; intense, 5926
robe, v deprive, 1948
roche/rokke, n 1. cliff, crag, 1751, 4668, 4755; 2. rock, 5952
royall, adj sovereign, 887, 2723
rolle, v 1. wrap, envelop, 1273, 3081r; 2. roll, 3849; ppl rollid
romauence, n narrative poem (romance), 415, 2208
rome, n room, 5227
ron, see renne
roo, n roe deer, 1365, 5914
rood(e), n cross, 4872, 5321, 5398, 6466
rood(e), v prt rode, 2950, 5036
rook, n (chess) castle, 2124
re, v groan, 5342, 6510; sikis ~: (to) utter sighs noisily, 5709
rorung, adj roaring, 4757
rose, see rise
rosett, adj rose-color/russet, 4805, 4808
rosis, n pl roses, 5012
rought, see reche
round/-e, adj 1. round, 4138, 4840, 5150, 5767; 2. well-fed, 3121; 3. (of the moon) new*, 4086 §
round, adv 1. promptly, at once, 667, 836, 2031; 2. around, 166, 1952; 3. from beginning to end, 414; pursew ~: persevere, 746; ~ abowe: all over, 4989
roundell, n roundel, 4654; also run-
dell
routhe, see rowthe
row, adv phr on ~: successively, 5825; see also rewe, arowe
rowne, v whisper to, come to, 4641
rowt, n 1. retinue, company, 167, 5239; 2. a large number of people, 2326; amongis the ~: in the world, among men, 5788
rowthe/routhe, n 1. compassion, 5957; 2. matter of sorrow, pity, 2167
ruде, adj 1. unsophisticated, crude, 1406; 2. cruel, 1753; also rew
rudely, *adv* inelegantly, 1156, 2697; *also rewedly*

rudenes, *n* cruelty, 2006; do ~: be cruel, 2074; *also rewdenes*

rudesse, *n* cruelty, 2413

ruggid, *adj* unpolished, 6149 *§; also raggid*

ruyne, *n* *throwe in ~*: ruin (me), 5452

rundell, *n* (the form of a) roundel, 3119; *also roundell*

S

sabill, *adj* black, sorrowful, 1336

sad/-e, *adj* 1. stern, 112; 2. constant, 793; 3. sober, pensive, 4640 *♦, 4947, 5196*

safcondit, *n* safe-conduct, 1025 *♦*

safere/safir/safyr/saphir, *n* sapphire, 2309, 2310, 4982, 4986

say/sayne/sayn/saine/sey, *v* (1), *inf* 1. *say*, state, indicate, 23, 42, 57, 118, 159, 160, 384, 653r, 743, 1131, 1206, 2149, 2557, 2584, 2793, 2938, 3261, 3279, 4254, 5217, 5461, 6105, 6348r, etc.; 2. (to) tell, say to, 526, 570, 829, 1137, 1196, 1202, 1204, 1205, 1327, 1389, 1521r, 1633, 1660, 1885, 1913, 1946, 1970, 1990, 2464, 2674, 2960, 3328, 3484, 3618, 3733, 4974, 4976, 5063, 5065, 5297, 5392, 5473, 5636, 5864, 6266, 6360, 6381; 3. *speak*, 5860, 5875r, 6118; 4. *wrote*, 4678; 5. *made* (their) pronouncements, 6216; 6. *recite* (a poem, proverb), 3077, 6218; *who ~*: ?what they call, 954; ~ *right*: speak truly, 1888; to ~: to be sure, 2950; to ~: ?to think, 5958r; 1s saith; 2s saist; 3s saith/seith/sey [rhyme]; 3pl sayne/seith/seyne; *prt seide/ seid/said*; 2s *prt seidist*; *prp saiying/seiyn*; *ppl seide/seide/ sayd/yseid*

say, *v* (2) 1. *try* by tasting, sample, 3561, 4308 *imp*; 2. *proves*, 5445; 3. attempt, 5972; 3s *say; 2pl saith/seyne; *ppl seid*

say, *see se v*

sayers, *n pl yvill ~*: detractors, 2702

sayle, *n* sail, 640

saynt, *n* saint, 2328; *also seynt*

saith, *see say* (1), (2)

sake, *n* sake 6257

salt, *adj* salty, 550, 1986

same, *adj* 1. aforesaid, 188, 3825, 4951, etc.; 2. same (one) 2143, 2303, 5118, 5768

sans/sance, ~ *per(e)*: without peer, 463, 1544

sat(t), *see sitt*

saue/sauf/save, *conj* 1. except (for), 714, 913, 2106, etc.; 2. but, 1015 *♦, 3870; 3. (but) only, 3808; 4. with due consideration, 5622; ~ *only*: except, 590r, 639, 1431, 4475, 5178, 5299; *mo ~*: more than, 3691

sau, *v* 1. *save*, 792 *subj*, 2347, 2721, 4478 *subj*, 4895 *subj*, 5359r, 5819r, 5924 refl?; 2. *protect*, 1070 *subj*

savyng, *ppl* except (for), 520 *♦, 2047 *♦, 5472, 5752*

savyng, *ger* safeguarding, 3820

sawt, *n* the attacks, 1485 *♦*

sche, *pron* she, 106, 1158, 4906, 4976 [all scribal corrections]

schepe, *n* ship, 1037 [*corr.*]; *also shippe, shappe*

schese, *v* [chese] choose, 2248; *also chese*

schore, *see score* *n*

sclaundir, *n* 1. state of suspicion, 5718 *♦; 2. malicious gossip, 5935, 5948 *♦*

scol/sool [error], *n* school (of thought), 137, 138; *pl scolis; also skole*

scomfitid, *ppl* as *adj* defeated, 309 *♦*

score/schore, *n* 1. *score* (20), 4571, 4956, 6171; 2. *limit, total amount*, 4588 *♦; also skore*


se/see/sie, *v* 1. (to) see, 131, 163, 214, 363, 567, 609, 795, 1242,
seeknes, n sickness, 1933, 1940, 3534, 5852
scele, n seal, 48
seid, adj aforesaid, 2790
seid, see say (1)/(2)
seinyss, adv since, 6133; also syn
seynt, n saint, 504, 996, 2326, etc.; pl seynitis; also seynt
seitfull/seytfull, adj deceitful, 2129
U, 6103 *U
seke, see sighe v, seche v,
sekyng, ger sighing, 845
selde, adv seldom, 582
self, n phr ~ passage: safe-conduct, i.e., safely, 1042*; see also safcondit
self/selvyn/selfe/selvyne/seluen, adj same, 82, 87, 509, 3079, etc.;
the ~ tyme: at that time, 1109; ~
same: the very same, 2143; ~
velle: unreasonable insistence on
(your) own desires, 2826; also
silf
sely, adj 1. humble, poor, 73*, 74,
257, etc.; 2. single, 4785, 5715;
3. fortunate, 5784; 4. miserabl,
858, 933, 2768; also cely
selynys, n misery, 907
selle, n cell, 5784
selle, v sell, 1253, 1722, 3718, etc.;
prt solde
semblance, n appearance, 3848
sembild, v prt assembled, 2464,
2815; ppl semblid
seme, v 1. think, 2504, 5480, 5497,
6465; 2. think (it) fit, 2295; 3.
seem (to be), 4064, 5514, 5962;
impers 832, 1119, 1826, 2850,
3832, 4063, 4216, 4473, 4768,
4980, 5117, 5623, 5751, 5930;
how ~ ye?: what do you think?;
5962; 3s impers semeth/semen;
prt impers semyd
semyng, ger to mylyowre ~: in (my/
your) opinion, 674, 1814*,
5082*
sende/send, v send, 3, 386, 847,
890, 1231, 3038 subj, 3706,
4322, 5544 subj, 6022 subj, etc.;
3s sendith; prt sent; ppl sent/
send(e)/Isend/ysent
sendyng, n message, 763
sene, see see
sepulture, n sepulchre, 2038, 2593, 4894
sere, adj bare, 1701
serpe, n necklace, 5022
sert, n service (of lover to lady), 4491
seruage/servage, n service, 36; 2. allegiance, 2600
serue/serve/-n, v 1. (to) serve, 33, 833r, 1932, 3162, 5669, 5718, etc.; 2. satisfy, 3733; for to ~: in serving, 2349; 3s servith; prp servyng; ppl servid
servaunt/seruaunt, n vassal, lover, 7, 1383, 5532 poss, etc.; see also serviture
servise/service/sruice/servys/seruice, n service (due), 135, 222, 224, 1143, 2782, etc.; devotion, 3300; see also sert, servage, servyng
servisable, adj obedient, 5400
servitude, n [obs. form of servitor] servant, 1999, 4277, 4315, 4471
servyng, ser (love) service, 5349
servyng, adj ~ wight: servant, 4657
servyng, see serue v
sesoun/seson, n 1. time, opportunity, 233, 635, 1244, 2960; 2. (brief) period of time, 2260, 3746; 3. the proper time, 4159; full many a ~: for a long time, 1552
sese, v ~cease, 816 §; also cesse
sest, seth, see se
set [error for sit], v 1. set, 142, 405, 1460 subj, 3094, 4252, etc.; 2. set (as or with jewels), 2309, 4993, 5014, 5031; 3. drive, 354; 4. prepared, 1886; 5. placed in position, 2301; 6. set (a price), 3185; 7. resolve, 4509; 8. expound, 5553; ~ (ther)by: value, 510, 1942, 4216, 4252, 5566, 6380; ~ me in (the) wey: set me on the way (to), 1201, 2937, 4713; ~ in aqueyntaunce of: acquainted with, 1066; ~ me nere: (it) affects me deeply, 1120; ~ bisyynes: make an effort, 1583, 5494; ~ not by an ay (a pese): count sth as (nearly) worthless, 1194, 3556; ~ in gladnes: make happy, 1900; ~ aside: put out of consideration, 3111; ~ o poynst aphpore: set no point aside, 6181 §, 6268; ~ tyme: use (your) time, 6310; 3s sett/settis/settith; prt sett; prp setting; ppl sett/ysett
seven/sevyn, n sleep, 4741, 6412; also sweuene
sewe, v 1. make application (before a court) for sth, 93, 5410; 2. pursue, follow, 4565, 5351; 3s sewre
sewre, v [seuren] assure, 387; as adj assured, 3999; ppl sewrid
sewre, adj [seure] sure, 617, 2035, 2590, etc.; also sure
sewre, adv very ~: completely, 2819
sewrely, adv surely, for sure, 1081, 1316, 1923; also surely
sewerate/sewrte, n 1. security, 37, 1169; 2. certainty, 4464; 3. pledge, 6117; [Perror for securely] 2710; in more ~: more securely, 1132; also surete
serving, adv sup most securely, 5912
sweit(e), n (act of) petition(ing), appeal, 145, 256, 5493; also swete n (1)
sweit, v ppl sued (for), 252
sweute, n (livery) to match, 2039
shade, n shade, 5197
shake, v (to) shake, 2672, 3148, 5064, 5325, 5840; prt shook; ppl shake
shall/shal, v 1. shall, will, 6, 138, 1195, 1977, 2880, 4919, 4976 subj, 5069 subj, 5228, 6005, etc.; 2. would, should, 672, 970, 1381, 1925, 1973, 3068, 3934, 4244, 4337, 4426, 4605, 4790, 4920, 5105, 5387r, 5458, 5948; 3. must, had to, 43, 2915, 3352, 3808, 5329; 4. ought (to), 121, 659, 2915, 4406, 5853; 5. could, 787, 3500, 3690, 4370; ~ be: would have been, 3934; 2s shalt/
shall; 3s shall/shal; 2pl shul/shul; prt/cond shulde/shuld/ shuldist
shame, n shame, 302, 343, 753, etc.
shame, v shame, 4900, 4912
shamfastnes, n modesty, 6202
shape, v 1. fashion, bring about, 2406, (proverbial) 3346, 4577, 4717, 5472, 6301; 2. prepared, 4777 refl; 3. create, 5644; prt shope; ppl shapen
shape, ppl as adj shaped, 443, 5521
shappe, n form, 2199, 4110
shappe, n ship, 1037; also shippe, schepe
sharpe, adj sharp, 6364
she, pron she, 121, 123, 130, etc.; also sche [corr.]
sheeke, adj, see note 5097
shene, adj shining, 5438
shenke, n [shenche] bad state, pickle, 822
shert, n (night)shirt, 296, 2775, 3199, 3346, 3637, 5564
shertith, v 3s clothe (as with a shirt), 494
shete, n sheet, 1944
shettete, v shut, 1189, 2664, 3452; ppl shett
shewe/shew, v 1. show, 344, 446, 461, 765, 1580, 4986, etc.; 2. teach, 73; 3. display (as a pre
tence), 501, 704, out ~, 955 subj §; 4. were to show, 1461 subj; 5. appear (obvious), 243, 4986; 6. present, 627, 5412; to ~ me: to show myself to be, 489; 2s shewi
ist; 3s shewth; prt shewid; prp shewyn; ppl shewid
shippe, n ship, 1055, 1070, 3850, 3854; also schepe, shappe
shift [MS shithil], n shift, piece of under
clothing, 4854 §
shyne, v shine, 1606, 1781, 2457, 5033; 3s shyneth; prt shon
shook, see shake
shope, see shape
short, adj short, 760, 927, 1629, 3118
shorte, v shorten, 3787
shott, n arrow, 3873
shoue/shove, v push, force, 1156, 2673, 4972
shreve, v shriven, 4531
shrift, n ~ fadir: confessor, 5277
shrympe, v, see note 5333
shul(dist), see shall
shuldris, n pl shoulders, 5035
sy*, n spot, stain, 4908 §
side, n 1. side, 1084, 1486, 5712; 2. flanks, 524, 3225, 3254, etc.; in my ~: for my part, 617; pl sidis
sydys [corr.], adv [sithenes] afterward, 3542; see also siithe
sie, sy, see se v
sigh, n sigh(s), 1029, 5065, 5709, 6510, etc.; pl sighis/sikis; also seek
sighe/seek(e)/secke/sigh, v sigh, 432, 1328, 2056, 3707, 3715, 5342, 5968; prp sikyng; see also se
sight, n 1. sight, 317, 582, 1174, etc.; 2. eyes, ~: 266; at ~: (as is apparent) on sight, i.e., obvious, 243; cast ~ vpon: look at, 1802
signe, n mark, 3876
signyfy, v indicate, 4750
siithe [error for ?siithe(ns)], conj (in) ~ that: seeing that, now that, 2589; see also sydys
sikyng, see sighe v
sikir, adv certainly, 5400
sikirnes, n 1. (sense of) security, 2119; 2. certainty, 5850
sikis, see sigh, n
siff/silven, pron/adj self, same, 35, 109, 3942, etc.; also self
silks, n pl silks, 5000
sympil(l), adj 1. lowly, 4657, 4691, 4698; 2. humble, 4472; 3. sim
ple, 4481; 4. small, local, 5115
simpilnes, n my ~: [metonym for “a simple man”] me, 5279
symple(s)es, n 1. simpleness, 228; 2. locally condition, 4685; 3. [error for sympleness] foolishness, 4798
syn/synnes, conj [sometimes followed by that] since, 32, 243, 5642, etc.; also seynys
syng/syng, v 1. sing, 450, 993, 1694, 1991, 2300, etc.; 2. say, 5629; ppl song(e)
GLOSSARY

synke, v 1. enter, 806; 2. ?destroy, 816; 3. sink (into oblivion), 4621
synne/syn, n sin, wrong, 110, 503, 989, 6412, 6413; pl synnes
synnyd, v prn sinned, 5523
syns, adv afterwards, 5288
syphir, n [cifre] zero, 2042
sir, respectful mode of address 2838, 2849; iron. wretch, 122
sith, adv [sithe] (at any time) since, 1436, 1899
sith, conj 1. since, 1767, 2088, 2174; 2. seeing that, 5604
sithe/sythe, v 1. sit, 993, 1563, 4673, 4706, 5057, 5104, 5108; 2. suits, is fitting, 116, 1322, 2284, 2475, 2526, (in age) 2580, 3385, 4478, 4566, 4895 impers, 5099 impers; 3. fitted, 2775; is wel(l) sittyn: accords well (with me), 2284; as ~ (me) well: pleased, 2335, are very attractive, 2580; all that ~ to thee: all that befitted you, 2874; sittith well: is fitting, 5099; sat to: felt inclined, 5249; how me set: what it is proper for me to do, 5259 impers; 2s sittist; 3s impers sit/sitt/sittith; prt sat/satt; prp sittyn
skace, adj [scarse] niggardly, 6477
skape, v escape (from), 4609
skile, n stratagem, plan, 5365
skilful, adj proper, 5630
sky, n sky, 464
skyte, v escape, 2128 refl
skyn, n skin, 494
sklaundir, n disgrace, 4243
skoffe, n jest, 5252
skoffe, v mock, 1811, 5258
skoffynge, ger mockery, 2582
skole, n school, 454; also scol
skore, n score (20), 2290, 6505; also score
skorne, n 1. insult, 6376, 6486; 2. mockery, 6053, 6420
skorne, v scorn, 1811, 5258; ~ at*: mock, 2849
sle/slee/slene/slo, v slay, 234, 879, 1809, 2101, 2217, 2218, 2946, 3008, 4520, 5174 subj, 6038, 6483r, etc.; 3s sleth/slethe/sleeth; prt slew; prp sleyng; ppl slyney/slyne/slay; see also sleaseth
sleight, n 1. plots, 29; 2. guile, 6437; pl sleightsis
slepe, n sleep, 412, 419r, 1393, etc.; into a ~: asleep, 4738
slepe/slepy, adj 1. sleepy, 1612; 2. lethargic, 2669; 3. asleep, 4829; see also aslepe
slepe-/n, v sleep 283, 629, 2458, 3807, 4755, 4759, 6064, etc.; 3s slepith/slepis; prp slepe/slepid/slepte
sleve/sleeve, n sleeve, 3354, 3984, 4345
slide, v slip, steal, 1358
slyly, adv secretly, 1763
slo, see sle
slogardy/slogarde, n idleness, indolence, 1613, 2018, 4042
slombir/slumbir, n slumber, 2264, 3756
slouthe, n 1. slowness, tardiness, 988, 2018, 6470; 2. a (state of) inactivity, 3074, 4042, 4620
slow, adj slow, 928
sluggissh, adj sluggish, 1393, 1613
small/small/e, adj 1. small, little, 681r, 3120, 5580, etc.; 2. slender, 755, 4021, 4138r, 5802, 6297; 3. few, 7
small, adj (but) little, 3647, 4643, 6232
smelle, v smell, 2234
smert, n pain, sorrow, 303, 1427, 2435, etc.
smert, v 1. suffer from, 4126; 2. cause pain, 4810, 5286
smyle, n in a ~: smiling, 2403
smyle, v smile, 4198
smyling, adj smiling, 441, 4137r
smyte, v 1. strike, 330, 4260 (~ on), 5139; 2. shone strongly, 5005; prp smote; ppl smyten
smokke, n shift, chemise, 4853
smothe, adj smooth, 4139, 4671, 5198
smothe, adv smoothly, 5017
so/soo, adv/conj 1. so, 61, 66, 107,
sober, adj sobir chere: seriousness, 3188
soche, pron/adj such, 3668, 4354; also suche
socoure/sokoure, n aid, help, 392, 636, 981r, etc.
socoure/sokoure, v aid, 900, 4605
sodeyne, adj abrupt, sudden, 2132, 5073
sodeynly/sodaynly, adv 1. without warning, 2446, 3449; 2. immediately, 479
soft, adj 1. soft, 4671, 5198, 5498, 5519; 2. pleasant, 3517; 3. fine, 5018; comp softer
soft, adv 1. softly, 1735, 3762; 2. gently, 1399, 1462, 2467; 3. comfortably, in soft wrappings, 2458 §, 3047
sogett, n subject, 6316
soyle, n ground, 1702
soiournaunce, n temporary residence, 2961†
soiourne/soiowr, v lodge, remain, 625, 3004, 3505†; ppl soiournyd
sokore, sokoure, see socoure n, v
sol(e), see sool adj
solas, n comfort, 2807
solde, see selle
solempnely, adv solemnly, 2298
som, n sum, 4588†
some, pron some, 4932, 4933, 4934, etc.; also sum
son, see sonne
sondry, adj various, 4985, 5440
sone/soon/soune, adv 1. soon, 46, 610, 4486, etc.; 2. quickly, 3733, 3882, 5047, 6218; 3. within a short time, 2237, 4375; eft (after) ~: immediately (there)after, 1274, 1682, 1791, 4787, before long, 6531; see also souner
sone, n son, 5092, 6470
song, n song, poetry, 2026, 3071, 3115, 3118†, 3188†, 3575; pl songs
song(e), see synge v
sonne/son, n sun, light, 1618, 1623, 1627, 2547, 2974, 5005, 5286
sool/so(o)l(e), adj 1. only, 5393†; 2. alone, 2481, 4259†, 6265, 6513; 3. as adv entirely, 5793†; also sovl, solw, sul
soote, adj sweet, fragrant, 2234†, 2798; see also swete
sore/soore, n pain, sorrow, 35, 181, 5307, 5323†, etc.
sore/soore, adj painful, 837, 2431, 2439, 3514, 6260
sore, adv 1. sorely, severely, 255, 571, 4272, 4543, 5038†, etc.; 2. greatly, 4327; 3. firmly, 5125†; comp sorer
sore, v cause pain, 6507†
sore, see swere
sory, adj 1. sorry, 2819, 3740, 6119, etc.; 2. sad, 3889
sorow/sorowe, n sorrow, 364, 930, 6502, etc.; pl sorowis; see also forsorow
sorow, v mourn, 2477
sorse, n source, epitome, 646, 1808†, 2240†, 5352
sort, n company, group, 163, 5797;
in a ~: together, 5586
soth, n truth, 1206; ~ to sayne, 2487, 2931, 4401, etc.; bi my ~, by my faith/word, 4897, 5287
sothely/soth(ly), adv truly, for sure, 4625, 4821, 5119, 5182, 5256; interj 4814
sottill, adj 1. penetrating, 4372; 2. ingeniously contrived, 6103
sotilnes, n cunning, 2128, 3634
souerayne, n mistress, lady, 3706, 3754, 5654
souereyne/souerayne/souereyn, adj 1. supreme, greatest, 238r†, 1387r,
sought, see seche
sound, adj hool and ∼: hale and hearty, 748
soune, see sone
souner, adv comp sooner, 396, 436
soven, n germander speedwell or remember-me [Veronica chamae-
drys], 5019 ♦§
sowl/sowl/sowll, adj 1. only, alone, 557, 603♦, 5754, etc.; 2. unique, 471♦; also sool, sul
sowl/sowl, adv 1. solely, alone, 1438, 6249; 2. uniquely, 210r♦,
sowle/sowl, n soul, 2024, 2045, 2176r, etc.
sowne, n sound, 2260
sowneth, v 3s tends (toward), leads (to), 4572♦, 6010
sowre, see swere
space/spas(e), n 1. (period of) time, 352, 784, 5922, 6239; 2. (a) while, 95, 96; 3. opportunity (to write), 5348, 5738; a tymys ∼: a period of time, 178; in short ∼: shortly, 927; lyvis/lyuis ∼: life long, whole life, 1520, 2690, 2750, etc., life, 72
spare, v 1. spare, 319, 2361, 3302, etc.; 2. pass over, 1453, 2921; 3. hesitate, 750, 4246, 4942♦; 4. stop, 5714; 2pl imp sparih; prp sparyng/spayng [error]
spas(e), see space
speche, n 1. speech, 77, 141, 1423, etc.; 2. rumor, report, 3230, 4053; 3. eloquence in writing, 198; the ∼: the opportunity to speak (to you), 3765
spede, v 1. hurry, 900, 4601 refl; 2. moves (at), 928♦; 3. send with haste, 3790♦; 4. succeed, 4942 subj, 5126; so god me ∼: may God help me (to succeed), 1101, 4476, 4749, 5775, 6168; 2s spedith; 3s spe}
Glossary

stabilnes, *n* state of being unchanging, unchanging, 4660, 4687r
staf, *n* staff, 2420
staynyd, *v* throw into the shade by superior beauty, eclipse, 5804 subj
stayre, *n* staircase, 4831
stale, *see stele*
stampe, *v* stamp, 3842
standard, *n* battle standard, 3881
stande/stant, *see stond*
stare, *v* gaze, stare, 3055, 5793
start, *see stert*
stechis/stichis, *pl* 1. stab wounds, pangs, 334; 2. stitches, 3199
stedis, *n* pl steeds, 4969
stele, *n* steel, 1924
steffen/stevyne, *n* 1. promise, *?*right to speak, 3554; 2. agreement, 5674
stele, *v* steal, 3456, 3603, 3611, 3972, etc.; *3s* stelith; *prp* stale;

- *pl* stolne

stele, *adv* motionless/dumb, 5059;
also stille
stent, *see stond*
stere, *n* steersman, pilot, 1949
stere/stire, *v* 1. stimulate, 2188; 2. bestir (begin to act), 1963 *refl*
sterre, *n* star, 1949
sterry, *adv* starry, 5437
stert, *v* 1. entered, 2426; 2. drew, 4836; ~ *and wook*: woke suddenly, 2636; *prke and* ~: caper about, prance (like horses), 3203; *prt* stert/start
stert, *n* sudden movement, 5879
sterue/sterve, *v* (to) die, 76, 2044, 4580, etc.
stenve, *see steffen*
stichis, *see stechis*
stilde, *see stede*
stilis, *n* pl stiles, 6466
still(e), *adj* silent, 731, 5373
stille, *adv* continually, 727; also stele

styt, *v* 1. stop, 434; 2. stood still, 2556; 3. assuaging, 4142; *prt* stent; *prp* styntyng
stire, *see stere* *v*
stode, *see stonde*
stkke, *v* stuck, 4756
stolne, *see stele*
stoon/ston/stone/son [error], *n* 1. stone(s), 4668, 5014, 5031, 5499r, etc.; 2. (precious) stones, 4968; *pl* stones

stonde/stond/stande, *v* 1. stand, 163, 300r, 978, 2551, 3833, etc.; *2. is*, remains, 2686, 3011; 3. function (as), 463; ~ in good cas: is in a good position, 2804; as ~ matere: as the occasion demands, 3860; ~ to: long (for), 4873; *3s* stant/stondith; *prt* stooed/stode
stoppe, *v* 1. stop, 3027, 6219; 2. block, 5973; ~ *my mouth*: be silent, 2702; *3s* stoppith; *prp* stoppid
store, *n* treasure, 6162
stound(e), *n* while, 412, 651; *in any ~*: in any length of time, 738; (in) *that* ~: at that time, 826, 4784; *in euery ~*: at every opportunity, 1943; *harde* ~: time of pain, 5941
stowt, *adj* mighty, valiant, 2332
straynyng [MS strayng], *v* *prp* constraining, 4539
strayt, *adj* strict, 17
straylyt, *adv* strictly, 6078; *see also* streight
strauenge, *adj* 1. unusual, singular, 267r, 4744, 4980, 5000, 5007; 2. distant, reluctant, cold, 4932, 5164; 6479; 3. unaccountable, 627; 4. unfamiliar, difficult, 953, 4931, 6466; 5. hostile, 4778
strauenge, *v* behave distantly, 1414, 5415r
strauengely, *adj* cold, distant, 3384
U
strauengenes, *n* aloofness, 660
strauenger(e), *n* stranger, 426, 3668, 3724, etc.; *pl* strauengeris
straw, *n* straw, 5097
strecche, v stretch out to measure, 2527

streight, adj straight, having no (defect of) curvature, 3225, 3254, 4139, 4772, 5768, 5802; also strayt

streight, adv 1. straight, 3786r; 2. directly, 5241; see also straitly strength(y)n, v support, strengthen, 1211, 2114, 2250, 2270; 2s strengthist; 3s strengthith

striif, n dispute, debate, 4328, 6342 strike, v ppl stricken, excluded, 4805

stryue, v contend, 245, 4271

stryvyng, ger quarreling, 6080

stroy, v destroy, 4875

strok, n blow, thrust (of a pointed weapon), 151, 2426, 2821r; pl strokis

stroke, v stroke, 524, 4021

strong, adj strong, 946, 4429

stronge, adv heavily, 1760

stoffe, v furnish, supply (with men, munitions, stores), 1056

sumbyytt, v submit, 4616

substaunce, n in ~ in general, in essentials, substantially, in reality, 546 §, 1632, 2970, 3845, etc.

such(e), pron/adj 1. such, 126, 171, 235, etc.; 2. those, 934, 5113; ~ a: a certain, 4824; also soche

suffera(u)nt, adj long-suffering, 4430; as n one who suffers*, 937

suffir/suffre, v 1. permit, allow, 177, 1957, 3399, 3610; 2. to cause to endure, 107 refl; 3s subj suffir

suffir [error for so fer], 5711

suffisasance, suffysaunce n 1. satisfaction, 713, 4347; 2. (a) sufficiency, enough, 1033, 1649, 1915, 4330, 5816; 3. support, 4766; to my ~ to satisfy myself with, 678

suffisaunt, adj capable, 3306, 4461

suffise/-n, v 1. satisfy, suffice, 98, 4201, 4350, 5387r; 5407; 2. is permitted, 79; 3. would satisfy, 5395; 4. make equal to, bring into accord with, 5429; 5. meet (each other’s) desires, 5587; ~ to:

be equal to*, express, 63; 3s suffisid; prp subj suffisid; ppl suffise

suffisyng*, adv sufficient, 690

suffisyngly*, adv as adj sufficient, 474

suffraunce, n patience, 3953

suffre, see suffir

suget, n subject, 2722

sugre, adj sugared, sweetly deceptive, 5882

sul, adj sole, unique, 3270; also sool, sovl

sum, adj/adv a, some, 156, 192, 580, etc.; ~ on: some person, one person, 4650, 4929; see also some

sumthyng, adv (to) some extent, 2384

sumtyme, adv sometimes, 805; at one time, 3045, 4277r, 4595

sumwhat, adv (each person) 1. some, 156, 192, 580, etc.; ~ on: some person, one person, 4650, 4929; see also some

sumwhat, adv to some extent, 4602, 4608

sumwhile, adv sometimes, 5038

supplyaunt, n (humble) petitioner, 2804

support, n support, 1052

support, v uphold, 945

suppos(e), v 1. placed, 64; 2. posit, 2663 refl; 3. intend, 6274; ppl supposid

surcot, n surcoat, 4980, 4988

sure, adj certain, 97, 1393; also sewre

surely, adv firmly, 3452

surete, n in more ~ more surely, 1118; also sewrete

surfett, n excess, 2442

surgeoun, n surgeon, 2429, 2452

surmount(e), v get the better of, 574, 3040

surmountynge, v prp surpassing, 3171

suspecioun, n suspicioun, 1579, 6219

susteyne, v support, 25, 1672

swarme, n swarm, 193

swelty, adj swooning, dying, 768
swerp, n sword, 6364
swere, v (to) swear, declare, 32, 328, 1813, 3162, 3511, 4856, 5725, 6173, 6280, 6347, 6508; 3s swerith; ppl swore/sworne/ ysware/sore/swore
swete, n (1) suit, petition, 156; also sewte
swete, n (2) pursuit, 4332
swete, n (3) sweetness, 1046, 2378, 5870
swete/swet, adj sweet, 379, 656, 1286, etc.; form of address, 1299, 3209, 3687, etc.; as n 790, 1216, 2378, 6275, also soot, sewte
swetely, adv sweetly, 444, 1220, 1290, 4825
swetness, n sweetness, 399, 2068, 3972; see also swete n (3)
swettist, adj sup most delicious, delicate, 3120
sweuene/sweven, n 1. dream, 2265, 4759; 2. vision, 5073; also sevyn
swift/swyft, adj swift, 5772
swyft/swift, adv swiftly, promptly, 4240, 5914
swynke, v (fig.) labor, 818
swor(n)e, see swere

T

tablis, n pl (game of) tables, 1629

tacchis, n pl ~ nise: bad qualities, 4335; also towchis
tache, v arrest, 2648, 3826
taft, see teche
tayne/tay, adj two, 1985, 2199, 2204, etc.; in hondis: ~ hand in hand, 2934; also twayne
taynt, v ppl [aphetic form of attaint] 1. convicted, 2567; 2. corrupted, contaminated, 4358
take, v 1. (to) take, 95, 123 subj, 317, 487, 509, 851, 2007, 2334, 2669, 2745, 3777, 3877, 4803, 5327, etc.; 2. take, catch, capture (in a game), 1637, 2577, 2642, 3140, 5717, 5917; 3. undertake, 1559, 4652, 4714; 4. admit, accept, receive, derive, 56, 1400, 1610, 2242, 2972, 3262, 3618, 5. give, commit, 119, 129, 739, 1110; 6. taken away, 2579, 2594; 7. captivate, 250; 8. takes to, 845; 9. (was) seized by, 476, 5073; 10. enter into the enjoyment of, 1227, 1260; 11. adopt, assume, 1093 refl, 1447 refl, 6146; 12. suffer, 79, 2078, 6203; 13. made, 2733; 14. took hold of, 5184; wk. aux. 845; ~ drede/displeysyn/disdayne: entertain, feel, 289, 1938, 5643; (to) ~ deth/(thi) bere: betake (oneself) to/choose death, 79, 1509, 2031, 2336; ~ in gree: take in good part, look with favor on, 1131, 3288, 5680; ~ in support: supported, 1052; ~ the gouernes: taken control, 1080; ~ the see: embarked on the sea, 1203; ~ entry on: gained entrance to, 1615; ~ kepe: take heed/note, 3142; ~ aworth: accept kindly, 3117; ~ vnto record: call to witness (that sth is so), 4743; ~ acqueyntaunce: winning (someone's) friendship, 4928; 2s takist; 3s takith/tath; 2pl taken; prp took/take; prp takyn; ppl tan/tane/tan/toke/taken/ytane
tale, n 1. story, 1890, 4832; 2. discourse, 4754
talent, n 1. state of mind, 998, 1239; 2. fierce passion, 2828
talkith, v 3s talks, 1735
tan(e), see take
tapp, n a light blow, 151; see tippe
tary, v wait, 3755	
tasten, v experience, sample, 808, 6468; ppl tastid
tath, see take
taught, see teche
tawn, adj as n tawn cloth/weariness or vexation, 4811
te, prep to, 22; also to
teche, v teach, 700, 1354, 4100; ppl taft/taught
teeris, n pl tears, 403, 550, 982, etc.
teydynge, n news, 1037; also tidyng
teys, see be
telle/tell, v 1. tell, 423, 601, 769r, 855, 1192, 2452, 5251 subj, 5572, etc.; 2. be told, 2257; ~ is him: he has been told, 1930; 3; tellith; prp told(e); prp telyng; ppl told(en)
tempest, n storm, 3850, 5004
tenaunt, n tenant, 6092
tendir, adj soft, 5501
tent, n dressing, 404
tery, adj tearful, 5536
termes, n 1. limit of time, 253, 969; 2. terms, 5882; pl terms
tesse, see be
testament, n will, 2339
tewche, interj tush!, 200, 3486; also towh, twiss
tha, art the, 4808; also the
thay, pron they, 1626, 3062, 3920, 6104; also they
than, conj than, 494, 864, 1591, 3086, etc.
than, adv then, 137, 4223, 4771, 4871, 4952, 5210, 5274, 5507
thank, n favor, gratitude, 5889, 5965; a ~: an expression of gratitude, 1246, 2503; to pike ~: to gain favor, 4710; pl thankis
thank/thank/-en/thankyn/thonk, v (to) thank, 62, 1475, 1481, 2434, 2475, 2600, 2903, 3131, 6172, etc.; gan ~: thanked, 2971; pr thankind; ppl thankid
thare, adv there, 3060
that, conj 1. that, which, 14, 62, 85, 138, etc.; 2. so that, 81, 405, 607, etc.; as ~: as if, 3068; how ~: that, 5054; for which ~: for which reason, 5319; [added to various words (if, which, what, though, etc.) but untranslated in ModE] 31, 69, 70, 72, 90, 106, 116, etc.
that, dem pron that, 47, 89, 137, 329, etc.
that, rel pron 1. who(m), 5, 104, 644, 906, 1426, 1551, 1708, 2043, 2217, 2402, 2413, 2421, 2522, 2724, 2777, 2990, 3086, 3152, 3444, 4208, 4226, 4249, 4458, 4893, 4994, 5047, 5048, 5057, 5076, 5094, 5108, 5116, 5178, 5202, 5220, 5236, 5255, 5295, 5324, 5481, 5762, 5770, 5891, 5895, 5907, 5921, 5959; 2. that, which, what, 84, 192, 269, 274, 357, etc.; 3. by which, 1655; 4. ?with which, 1576; the which ~: whom, 652, 5050; ~ as: that which, 4048 §
the/thee, art the 1, 5, 53, 2885, etc.
the/thee, pron thee, 117, 136, 154, 159, 266, 496, 887, 936, 1092, 1205, 1209, 1226, 1240, 1242, 1425, 1707, 2573, 2617, 2629, 2836, 2868, 4165, 4174, 4189, 4267, 4601, 4683, 4957, 5171, 6040, 6065, 6067, 6071, 6073, 6077, 6083, 6428, 6430, 6431, 6433, 6436, 6440
the, n [the] luck, 3760
thee, v assew prosper, 5907
theef, n thief, 3350
theft(e), n theft, 4240, 4244, 4850; of ~: stealthily, 1073; pl theftis
they/thei/thi [error], pron they, 20, 29, 269, 426, 1580, etc.; also thay
them, pron them, 148, 232, 391, etc.; also hem, thym
then [error for them], 6349
then, conj than, 437, 467, 696, 901, 1264, 1277, 1476, 1950, 2050, 2505, 2517, 3339, 3618, 3742, 3962, 4077, 4358, 4427, 4704, 4896, 5069, 5129, 5131, 5150, 5162, 5307, 5308, 5364, 5380, 5394, 5405, 5427, 5434, 5469, 5484, 5519, 5566, 5726, 5787, 5793, 5861, 6030, 6094, 6320, 6335, 6364, 6505
then/thenne/thyn, adv 1. then, 175, 4047, 4484, 5650, etc.; 2. besides, 5645
thenk-, see thynke
ther, pron possess their, 125, 149, 194, 301r, 829, 970, 1025, 1114, 4207, 4399, 4651, 5205, 5295, 6029, 6306, 6350
ther/there, adv there, 81, 138, 265, 5003, 5012, 5089, 5108, 5219, 5234, 5240, 5245, 5272, 5731,
Glossary

5796, 5804, 5844
therat, *adv* there, 6092
therby/therbi, *adv* by that, 1942, 4033, 5526, 5569, 5894
therefor, *adv* 1. therefore, for that, 1962, 2279, 3161, etc.; 2. for it (in return), 5124, 5378, 5783, 6486; 3. consequently, 3161
therin/therynne, *adv* 1. therein, 839, 851, 1724, etc.; 2. in that/this matter, business, 606, 4182, 4412
therof, *adv* of it/that, 355, 2161, 2763, etc.
theron, *adv* on it/that, 4142, 5009
thero, *adv* 1. to it/that, 272, 2289, 2721, 2900, 6076; 2. in that matter, 4266, 6403, 6425; 3. for that purpose, 2216; 4. besides, in addition (to that), 2331, 5922
therupon, *adv* upon it, 4968
therewith, *adv* 1. thereupon, at that, 112, 1985, 2636, etc.; 2. by means of that, 1270, 1711, 3620, 5621; 3. on account of that, 1695, 2911, 3714, 5901
theese, *pron* these, 1312, 1323, 2149, etc.
theewe, *n* quality, 448r, 1476, 2202; *pl* theewis/thewys
thi/thyn/thy, *pron* your, 127, 129, 6095, etc.
thikke, *adj* many, dense, 505
thikke, *adv* thickly, 4993, 5017
thym, *pron* them, 4748; *also* them, hem
thyn, *see* thynne *adj*, *then* *adv*, *thi pron*
thing/thyng/-e, **n** 1. thing, 192, 260, 267, 451, 1007, 5161, 5440, etc.; 2. experience, 1461; 3. anything, 3339, 4848, 5146; *no* ~: not (at all), 14, 196, 812, 3657r, 4565, 4850, 5048, 6423; *all* ~: altogether, 4760; *pl* thingis/thing
thynke/thene/thynk/thinke/thenk, **v** 1. think, 65, 68, 175 refl, 187, 216, 241, 381, 392, 563, 647, 699, 1578, 1683, 1662, 2160, 2492, 3246, 3263, 3778, 3808, 4085, 4341, 4749, 4871, 4977, 5095, 5482, 5676, 5912, etc.; 2. consider, entertain the notion of, 1125, 2139, 2276, 3533; 3. believe, deem, suppose, 39, 170, 1683, 3526, 5450; 4. seem, 796; 5. intend, plan, 1213, 3263; 6. expect, 2151; *me* ~: it pleases me, 1268; it seems to me, 100; ~ to say: conceive of telling, 3618; 2s thynkist/thenkist; 3s impers thynkith/thenkith/thynketh/thinkith; *prt* impers thought; *pp* thynkyng/thenkyn; *ppl* thought; *see also* forthenke, bithynke
thyn(ne), *adv* 1. few, meagre, 505; 2. lean, thin, 3057, 5229
this/his [error], *pron/adj* 1. this, 15, 47, 51, 1124, etc.; 2. here, 1256; 3. these, 797, 1929, 3125; 4. that (i.e., the other), 4987; ~ and ~: here and there, 66, to and fro, 3854; *also* thus
this/thys, *adv* thus, 212, 244, 308, 419, 435, 439, 448r, 519, 721, 781, 879, 923r, 938, 947, 1020, 1053, 1063, 1271, 1490 [corr.], 1499, 1533, 1544, 1564, 1631, 1716, 1858, 1909, 2010, 2060, 2165, 2181, 2220, 2266, 2274, 2330, 2588, 2602, 2628, 2718, 2778, 2866, 3363, 3387, 3421, 3444, 4086, 4393, 4397, 4573, 4576, 4649, 4655, 4743, 4849, 5577, 5618, 5736, 5843, 6041, 6217, 6363, 6479; *as* ~: thus, 91 §, 1786, 2525, 2579, 3134, 3217, 4754, 5564, 5828, 6066, 6125, 6240, 6451; ~ or *that*, thus or so, 4371; *also* thus
tho, *pron/adj* those, 203, 3101
tho, *adv* then, 2471, 5218
thondir, *n* thunder, 1849
thonk, *see* thanke
thorne, *n* thorn, 6364
thorough, *prep/adv* 1. through, 29, 317, 626, etc.; 2. by, 1561, 5926; 3. because, on account of, 1002, 3239, 5933; 4. thoroughly, 472; 5. all over, 4981; ~ *out*: through, 312
thou/thow, *pron* thou 114, 1057, 1060, etc.
though/thoug/thow (followed by that), adv/conj 1. (al)though, 78, 1329, 3143, etc.; 2. (even) though, 3116, 3354, 3606, 4873; 3. unless, 2224; ~ so be: even though, 3779, 4564

thought, n 1. thought, 371, 5151, 6273 person, etc.; 2. thought(s), 194, 559, 793, 1910, etc.; 3. care, sorrow, 353, 562, 734, 947, 1855, 1982, 2300, 2462r, 3001, 3073, 3075, 3562, 4292, 4310, 4851 poss §, 5492, 5632, 6008; 4. purpose, 1765; 5. remembrance, 2177; pl/pl poss thought(s)
thoughtfull, adj melancholy, 1512, 2852

thousand/thousand/thou3and, adj 1. thousand (a very great number), 41, 90, 5825, 6171, 6505, etc.; 2. thousandth, 4128

thow, see thou, though

thrall(l), n thrall, 2705, 4020, 4180, 6316

thre, adj three, 138, 1755, 3752, etc.
thred, n thread, 2537, 4008

threst, v ppl stabbed, 695

threw, see throw

thriddle, adj third, 1759

thrift, n fortune, 4772, 6306, 6392

thril(l)th, v 3s pierce, 1290, 5981, 6365; 3pl thrill(en)
thrise, adv thrice, 6372

thristen, v push, 958

thrittenthe, adj thirteenth, 3043

throwe, v throw 162, 4964, 5452; prt threw

thus, adj this, 4535

thus, adv 1. thus, 237, 250, 378, etc.; 2. so, 1898; 3. in this state, 2422; also this

tide, see tiise
tidyng, n news 615, 1037, 1659, etc.; pl tidynegs; also teyldyn

tiise, v 3s ties, 1031, 4244; ppl tide
til, prep until, 4260

tyme, n 1. time, 55, 178 poss, 856 poss, 1813, etc.; 2. moments, 5350; in ~ toforne this: at one time, 592; that ~: at that time, 1114; ~ agoon: some time ago, 1434; ~ of youthe: youth, 2727; ~ apast: the past, 638, 2206, 2959 person §, 3002; oft ~: often, 6201; pl/pl poss tymys; see also sumtyme

tyn, n tin, 515
tippe, n nor tapp: light blow(s), 151

tyran, n tyrant, 1398

tyanny, n unmerciful treatment, 1370

tyre, n silk, 4553
tis, v see ben
tisew, n (rich) cloth, 5002

titill, v ~ fitill: fuss, be upset to no good purpose, 4196 §
to, adv too, 110, 247, 302, 668, 887, 924, 1391, 1412, 1490, 1689, 1870, 2182, 2537, 2667, 3123, 3626, 3818, 3902, 4183, 4224, 4236, 4332, 4607, 4628, 4657, 4701, 4705, 4714, 4837, 4902, 5091, 5106, 5450, 5768, 5950, 6147, 6425, 6428, 6430, 6449
to, prep 1. to, 4, 18, 59, etc.; 2. toward, 1498, 4767; 3. into, 4462, 4464; 4. in order to, 806, 1481; 5. as, 2143, 3788, 5355; 6. of, 2351; 7. according to, 4747, 5082; 8. from, 6046; 9. till, 76, 304, 489, 589, 721, 847, 1059, 1279, 1350, 1361, 1372, 1400, 1509, 1730, 1754, 2417, 2763, 2860, 3051, 3163, 3428, 3436, 3527, 3612, 3682, 3688, 3696, 3755, 3772, 4148, 4239, 4268, 4279, 4482, 4531, 4668, 4812, 4845, 5060, 5064, 5197, 5334, 5453, 5512, 5666, 5674, 5809, 5916, 5987r, 6078, 6253, 6290, 6297, 6339, 6355, 6358, 6516; ~ that: until, 304, 721, 1350r, 1400, 2113, 2860, 3436, 3772, 4787, 5197, 5453, 5512; like ~: like, 4999; see also forto
to, adv and ~: side by side, 4818
tofore/tofore, prep/adv/conj 1. before, 33, 242, 3346, etc.; 2. already, previously, 1960, 6381, 6428; 3. in the presence of(1), 1550, 2110, 2888, 4226; in
GLOSSARY

vndir, vnhappy, vngoodly, vndoon, vndirstonde, vndirfonge, vncertayne/vncerteyne, vnbast, two, twix, twissh, twise/twyse, twyn, twene, prep between, 64, 130, 5598, 5994, 6200; see also twix
twyn, v part, 511
twise/twyse, adv twice, 286, 901, 4134, etc.
twiss, interj tush!, 4166; also towch, tewche
twyst, v ppl interwoven, 6490
twix, between, 2014; see also twene

turnment, n tournament/tournament, 19
turnyng, ger take a newe ~: turn again, 1450
turns, n pl 1. tricks, 627; 2. turnings/tricks, 6439; also tornys
twayne/tweyne, adj 1. two, 358r, 393, 6044, etc.; 2. pair (of hearts), 5644; also tayne
twart, adj [thwart] transverse/adverse, 6450
twelve, adj twelve, 4956
twene, prep between, 64, 130, 5598, 5994, 6200; see also twix
turn, v 1. turn, 541, 1645, 1952, 3486, 5847, 5863 §, etc.; 2. turn (into), 2703, 4457, 5512, 5848, 5854; 3. change the course of, 2130; 4. toss and turn, 4547; 5. turned up, 5028, 5085; 3s turneth/turnyth; prp turnyd; ppl tornyd/Iturnynd
turneth, v unflattering, 5373

V

Modern English u (vocalic)

vnbast, adj unkissed, 642
vnbridelid, adj uncontrolled, 4336
vncertayne/vncerteyne, adv uncertain, 2087, 6196; see also certayne
vndir, prep under, 48, 464, 523, etc.; ~ ayre: on earth, 772; ~ cure: in (my) custody, 4281; (disgisid) ~ shame: by shame, 5916
vndirfonge, v receive, 932
vndirstonde, v 1. understand, 855, 6109, 6472; 2. ascertainment, 4770; prp vndirstood
vndoon, v ppl undone, 3974
vngoodly, adj 1. unseemly, 100; 2. unflattering, 4909
vngoodly, adv improperly, 4103
vnhappy, adj unfortunate, miserable, 325, 537; (one) who causes misfortune, 1725r

vnhauyng, prp not having, 5738
vnynde, adj unnatural, contrary to nature, 5522, 5623
vnyndenes, n improper conduct, unkindness, 4033
vnnowe, adj unknown, 642
vnnkonnyng, n lack of skill, 3026, 5628
vnneth/vnnethe, adv hardly, 328, 1965, 3062, 3624, 5714
vnnportable, adj intolerable, 4071
vnpure, adj unclear, 4310
vnnright, n wrong, 1901, 2096, 5256
vnsely, adj serious, 992
vnsewe/vnsure, adv uncertain, 281, 5596
vnsi, adv 1. hard, 1454; 2. as n severity, 4468
vnsi, v ppl unseen, 1801; see also onaspide
vntaught, adj inexperienced, untutored, 61
vntend, v [entenden] to pay attention (to), 5722
vnto, prep 1. to, 168, 189, 263, etc.; 2. into, 1508, 3400, 3803, 4457, 4462, 5419; 3. until, 179, 650, 1214, 1541, 1623, 2138, 2144, 2965r, 3005, 3090, 4288, 4316, 4573, 5370, 6191; 4. against, applied to, 3047; 5. in addition, 6332
vntrew, adj untrustworthy, 5450
vnware, adj unaware, 321
vnweldynes, n infirmity (i.e., old age), 2007, 2569
vnworthy/vnworth, adj unworthy, 1558, 1674, 1907, etc.
vp, adv up, 1273, 1314, 2090, etc.; ~ & downe: around, 4639
vpbore, v ppl exalted, 3503
vpyeldyng, v prp yielding up (the last), 6354; see also yelde v
vpon, prep 1. (up)on, 295, 579, 846, etc.; 2. over, 1413, 4756, 4766, 4995
vpright, adv at full length, supine, 234 §, 304, 1784
vprise, v rise up, 5533
**Glossary**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vre, n</td>
<td>fate, luck, 1231, 3943, 6228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vre, v</td>
<td>grant, 4326; also ewre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vs, pron</td>
<td>us, 363, 379, 541, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vsaunce, n</td>
<td>holdist thyn ~: observe your custom, 1556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vsist, v</td>
<td>2s. accustomed, 1329; 2. act, 1564; 3. ppl as adj customary, 2280; 4. engages in, 4934; 3s vsith; ppl vsid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vttraunce, v</td>
<td>brought to ~: vanquished completely, 313; at the ~: to the last extremity, 880</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Modern English v (consonantal)**

- **Vaylith**, v 3s avails, 2330, 3321, 4029, 4875, 4961
- **Vayne**, n vein, 5549
- **Vayne**, adj useless, 2151, 2205r
- **Vayne**, adv in ~: to no purpose, 663, 1974, 2221, etc.
- **Valentyne**, n 1. sweetheart, 2480, form of address 5488; 2. Saint Valentine, 53, 2455
- **Valaunce**, n merit, 343
- **Valowre**, n [valour] value, 3512
- **Variaunce**, n inconstancy, 870
- **Vaunt**, v proclaim, 3813 refl
- **Veel**, v veal, 3112
- **Veer**, n spring, 5436
- **Vengeaunce**, n 1. vengefulness, 1766 §; 2. vengeance, 6336
- **Venquysshe**, v defeat, 5904
- **Verdit**, n judgment, 3190
- **Verdure**, n greenness, 2233
- **Verily**, adv truly [or as tag], 74, 636, 956, etc.
- **Veris**, v 3s changes course abruptly, 3850
- **Verry/very/verri**, adj 1. truly entitled to the name or designation, 57, 234, 590r, etc.; 2. proper, 4365, 4450; 3. intense, 6038; ° ~ fy!: [emphatic], 1691; in ~ dede: truly, 5010, 5416
- **Verry/vary**, adv 1. very, 1049, 1635, 1845, etc.; 2. [intensifier] 600, 3031, 5007, etc.
- **Verryaunces**, n pl variations, 5029

**Vertu/vertew**, n 1. excellence 470, 3778, 6478, etc.; 2. ?manliness, 1586 §

**W**

- **Wacchith**, v 3s keeps watch, 1794, 3637
- **Wache**, n make ~: set a watch, 1771
- **Wage**, n payment (for service rendered), 223, 5670
- **Way/waye**, n 1. way, path, 21, 127, 390, 1598, etc.; 2. means, 825; 3. time, 5857 §; do ~: leave off, have done with, 151; most out of ~: not at all in a position, 708
- **Sette (me) in the ~**: give (me) the opportunity, 1201, 2407, 4713; weyes ny: immediate means, 1293¶; bi the ~: on the way (to church), 4832; o furlong ~: the time it takes to walk a furlong, 5550; pl wayes/weyes
- **Way**, adv [aphetic form of away] do ~!: leave off!, cease!, 151
- **Way**, v 1. (to) weigh, 1646 §, 4362, 4737; 2. be dispensed, 3155; 3. be laid in the balance, 5253; 3s wayeth; 3pl wayfith [error]
- **Wayfe**, v 1. refuse, ignore, 131, 4778; 2. set aside, 2165; 3. relinquish, 5528; prt wayf(f)yd/wayyd [corr. in margin]
- **Wayfith**, see way
- **Wayle/-n**, v 1. (be)wail, lament, 517, 731, 1773, 2300, 2522, etc.; 2. mourn, 2828; 3. regret, 5735; 3s waylith; prp waylyng; ppl waylid; see also biwayle
- **Waylyng**, n lamentation, 4019
wayte, v care for, pay attention to, 5706
wake/-n, v 1. to remain awake, 815, 3139, 5678, 5762; 2. (to) waken, 227, 1612, 2460, 2636, 2671, 3759; 3. wake up (repeatedly), 3146; 2pl wakith; prt wook; see also awake
wakid, ppl as adj awake, 4829
wakyng, adj 1. (that I was) awake, 4768; 2. pred adj awake, 2264; ~ dremys: dreams experienced in a waking state, daydreams, 4640
walke, v to wander, 4285
wallis, n pl walls, 1760, 4852, 5793
wan, adj pale, sad, 1380, 4230, 5470
wandir/wandre, v wander, walk, 2066, 2396, 4773, etc.; prp wand-

drying
wane, adj waning, 4086; at a ~: waning, 5008
want, v lack, 460, 1779, 3796, 3869, 3929, 4376, 4710 impers §; 3s wantith/wante [error]; 3pl wanten
wanton/wountoun, adj 1. ill-mannered, 113; 2. amorous, disobedient, 1379, 3127, 4235r; 3. willful, 4620; 4. undisciplined, 5787; as n form of address undisciplined, amorous person, 2960 §
war/-re, v make war (on), harass, 255 §, 516, 562, 727 subj, 2223, 2251, 3041, 3333, 5936, etc.; 3s warrith/werrith/werieth; pl war(r)ith; ppl werid
warant, v guarantee, 478
warde, n the protection afforded by the queen to another chess piece, 2122
ware, n wares, goods, 5122, 6433
ware, adj 1. aware, informed, 3048, 6066; 2. on guard (against), 6430
ware, see were (1) v
ware, v prt (1) spent, 2368
ware, v (2) be on guard, 2623; see also beware
warnyd, v ppl warned, 4134
warre, n war, 6350
was, see be
wassayle, n sudden attack, 1771 §
wasshe, v wash, 1172
wast, n waist, 4764
wat, pron whatever, 5254; also what
watir, n water, 4393, 4775
wawes/wawes, n pl 1. waves, 1382, 4757, 4766; 2. scallops, 5030
we, pron we, 3, 6, 9, etc.
weche, pron which, 5007 [corr.]; also which
we(e)ele/wel(le), n will, 361, 417, 1118, 1119, 1271, 2253, 2873, 3377, 6262r, 6511; pl weelas; also will
wey, see way n
weyeth, see way v
weke, n week, 3568, 5339; pl wekys; also woke
wel, interj well!, 4123r, 4235r
wel, see weele n, wele n
welaway, excl. of lamentation 613, 714, 787, etc.
welbesayne, ppl of good appearance, 2209
welbisettith, v 3s is proper for, 2312; see also sitt
welcome/welcome, adj welcome, 1658, 2074, 5827, etc.
wele/weele/wel/will/well, n 1. (source of) happiness, 528r, 646, 655, 693, 893, 1117, 1243, 1277, 1984, 1997, 2491r, 2514, 2996, 3240, 3408, 3531, 3590, 3849, 3856, 3887r, 4089, 4090, 4120, 4329, 4348, 5591, 5599, 5603, 5689, 5756, 5822, 5846, 5849, 5862, 5869, 6011, 6015r, 6032, 6160, 6422; 2. riches/joys, 3754
wele, adj [w dar.] fortunate, 2479
wele, well, see will
welfare, n happiness, 6075
welle, n well spring, 3791, 5352
well/wel/welle, adv 1. well, 89, 114, 125, 268r, 443, 449, 530, 591, 1914, 2246, 2445, 2624, 2667, 2953, 3547, 3591, 4631, 4696, 4937, 4992, 5037, 5052, 5078, 5099, 5783, 5881, 6169, 6170, 6328, 6378, 6425, 6428, 6436;
very, 2884, 2916, 3029, 3048, 3452, 4436, 5052, 5112, 6169;
2. genl. affirmative [intensive] 49,
so be: whenever, 1344, 6258; also when, 149
whens/wher, adv/conj (A) 1. where, to/in the place, 118, 640, 1668, 2295, 2737, 2938, 3087, 4670, 4685, 4757, 5189, 5617, 6455r, etc.; interrog 5061; 2. in the place (in your argument, letter) where, 1297, 4890, 4946, 4953, 4960; in which, 1518; 3. as n place, 5557; [in the following senses (sometimes) followed by as] whereas, 297, 2475, 2477, 2481, 2737, 4084, 4698, 5527, 5535, 5543, 5547, 6055, 6325; 4. inasmuch as, 95; 5. at the point at which, 2904; 6. whereupon, 2890; 7. wherever, 1686, 3253, 5758, ~ so (~ that), 1269, 1352, 2342r, 3888, 5778, 6077, 6197; ~ about: on what business, 6370; (B) [reduced form of whether] whether, 572, 815, 821, 1745, 1888, 2435, 2635, 3077, 3306, 3806, 4408, 4861, 4947, 4950, 5273, 5597, 6169, 6177r, ~ so (be, that), 572, 5081, 5649 wherfore/wherfor/wherefor, adv 1. therefore, wherfore, 17, 42, 49, 256, 1059, 1092, 2525, 3410, 3451, 3881, 6441, etc.; 2. wherfore, why, for this/that/the/which reason, 1006, 2288, 2405, 2654, 3255, 3287, 3546, 3605, 4393, 5476, 5830, 6110, 6529; 3. which being the case, 784, 3424; 4. for it, 3812; 5. this, 2272r wherein, adv in which, 1057, 1254, 2271, etc., the werre in, 2541 wherof, adv interrog to what purpose, 4866, 5090 wheron, adv 1. on what, 5074 interro- rog; 2. on which, 5078 wherso/wheroso, adv/conj 1. wherever, 1269, 1352, 2342r, 2360, 3814, 5081, 5081, 6077; 2. whether, 5358, 5649 wherthorough, adv on account of which, 867 wherto, adv 1. to which (of them), 3124; 2. ?what, 5637 whethir, pron which, 5137 whi, n reason, 5938 why, interj why, 1006, 5254 who/why, adv why, 562, 637, 1433, 1914, etc.; for ~: conj because, 207, 388, 483, etc.; on ~: wrongfully, unjustly (see as main entry and 947 §)
whi/whie, interrog pron why?, 1226, 1414, 6369, etc.
which/whiche, pron [sometimes preceded by the and/or followed by that], Mustanoja, 197–99] 1. which, 123, 202, 271, 4995, etc.; 2. who, 7, 229, 296, 541, 791, 911, 1011, 1073, 1253, 1338, 1486, 1700, 1920, 1956, 2315, 2398, 2523, 2544, 2616, 2622, 2721, 2927, 2955, 2993, 3161, 3720, 3819, 3875, 4366, 4586, 4745, 5070, 5104, 5118, 5224, 5299, 5382, 5429, 5462, 5468, 5479, 5497, 5514, 5540, 5545, 5689, 5818, 5926, 5946, 5999, 6038, 6040, 6090, 6146, 6229, 6353, 6399, 6438; 3. whom, 31, 609, 639, 794, 3181, 5050, 5207, 5465; 4. by which, 688; 5. that which, 3667, 6010, 6326; for ~: for which reason, 2553, 2887, 5218, 5319, because, 2687
which where, wherever, 815 whidir, adv whither, 2931, 4773, 5954; see also whither
while, n 1. (the) while, 5387, 5958r; 2. in the meantime, 4194 while, conj/prep while, as long as, 12, 72, 96, etc.
whyll [MS bill], n wheel, 5077; also wheel
whilom, adv some time ago, in the past, 1871, 2194, 2268, 4816 wirilid, see werle
white/whit, adv white, 4557, 5012, 6200, etc.
whither/whithir, adv from whom, 1006, 2398; see also whidir
who/-o, pron who, 152, 1819r, 2408,
etc.; the -: which, 2753; also hoo whom, pron whom, 792, 890, 912, etc.

whos, pass pron whose, 758, 2030, 2048, 3334, 6200

wickid; see wikkid

wide, adj 1. long, 90; 2. wide, 5723

wide, adv widely, 4236

wight, 1. man, person, 33, 242, 300, etc.; 2. parent, 6188; of any

~: by anyone, 1801

wijf, n wife, 147

wijsly, adv certainly, 4478; also wisly

wikkid/wickid, adj 1. wicked, 27, 3251r, 5875, 5883; 2. disastrous, 6137

wil, adv well, 3546

will/wil/wol(l)/wold(e)/willith | nyl, v

1. desire, wish (to), want (to), 116, 879, 1011, 1060, 1303, 1321, 1617, 1708, 2054, 2080, 2186, 2442, 2640, 2690, 2724, 2867, 2901, 3241, 3327, 3423, 3874, 4180r, 4439, 4452, 4524, 4725, 4818, 5093, 5137, 5174, 5258, 5297, 5304, 5308, 5373, 5427, 5446, 5635, 5933, 6032, 6040, 6166, 6169, 6251, 6255, etc.; 2. will, would, can, 123, 172, 1192, 4123, 4375, 4782, 5313, 5415r; 3. shall, will, 1097, 1325, 1381, 1546, 1617, 2113, 2356, 2622, 2671, 2673, 2693, 2701, 2856, 3106, 3155, 3163, 3274, 3427, 3985, 4008, 4123, 4148, 4356, 4375, 4486, 4817, 4905, 4908, 4934, 4935, 4943, 5093, 5446, 5883, 5996, 6225, 6350, 6402, 6418, 6463, 6469, 6516, 6519; 4. wish (me to), 6169; 5. will not, 672, 1220, 2044, 3078, 3696, 3733, 4050, 5152, 5944, 6141; 6. wishes, is willing, 1325, 2186, 3241; 7. would (like), want (to), 78, 804, 1282, 2593, 5048, 5092, 5119, 5121, 5246, 5251, 5276, 5281, 5310, 5330, 5347, 5378, 5403, 5426, 5473; 8. would like (to do), 6009, 6026; 9. have wanted, 3091; 10. condit, wish, 2052, 4412, 6097; 11. (if she) would, 180; wolde nede: had to, 2975; wolde god/Crist: O that it were God's/Christ's will, 3619, 3950; 2s willist/wilt/wolde/wolt/wolst | nelt; 3s will/wil/wol(le)/willith; pl wilt/wol/will/willith | nell; prp willyng; impers willith; prt wolde/wold/willid | nolde

wilde, adj desolate, 4286

wildirnes, n uninhabited, uncultivated region, 2063

wilfully, adv 1. willfully, 86, 2023, 4879, 5421, 5484; 2. of (my/his/your) own free will, 5986, 6000, 6421

wilfulnes, n willfulness, 4725

will/wille/wol(l)/wold(e)/willith; nyl: ill will, 1050, 1455

wymmen, see woman

wynd(e), n wind, 1044, 1849, 2439, 6310

wyndyng, adj winding, 1944

wyndow, n 1. window, 1608r, 3971; 2. window seat, 4830; pl wyn dowes

wyn, see wynne

wyn(e), n wine, 4308, 4483

wyngis, n pl wings, 2467

wynke, v sleep, doze, 815, 5678, 5762

wynne/wyn, v 1. gain, attain, 436, 497, 748, 4315, 4704, 5526, 5527r, 5542; 2. win, 128, 748, 1636r; 3. won over, 140, 4170, 6175; 4. obtain (the affection of), 153, 2832; 5. winning, 1652; 6. defeat, 1774; ppl wonne

wyntir, n winter, 5436

wyre, see were n

wis, adv [aphetic form of ywis] (so) as ~: certainly, assuredly, 1726, 2789, 3892, 5846; also ywis

wise, n 1. manner, 133, 351, 623r, etc.; 2. way, 3297

wise, adj 1. wise, 268r, 3919; 2. prudent, 4123, 4333; 3. capable of
judging, 4452
wise, adv wisely, 1026, ?4712
wis(e), v [wis(s)ien] guide, 84; show, 604; leads, 4155
wisly, adv 1. carefully, 3277; 2. with discretion, 3731; 3. [usu. with as] certainly, 2347, 3963, 4895, 4911; also wisly
wisshe, n wish, desire, 1379, 1807, 4409, etc.; pl wisshis
wisshe/-n, v 1. (to) wish, 225, 1174, 3252r impers §, 4410, 4473, etc.; 2. wish for, 4479; 3. wanted, 3578; prp wisshid; prp wisshyng
wisshyng, n 1466, 4467
wit, see witt n
wite, wist, see wot
wite/wyte, v blame, 2082, 4028, 4253, 4565, 4791
with, prep 1. with, 140, 148, 264, etc.; 2. by, 594, 2577, 3005, 3333, 3713, 3827, 6429; 3. against, 4271; 4. therewith, 5064; 5. of, 2175 §
withall, adv (there)with, 2893r
withdrawe/-n, v (to) withdraw, 161 refl, 189 refl, 352 refl, 3881 imp, 4960, 5559 refl, 6000, 6211, etc.; 2s withdraw; 3s withdrawith; prp withdrew(e)
within/withinne, adv/prep within, 502, 976, 1186r, 3601 [MS with], etc.
without/withouten, 1. without, 21, 223, 296, etc.; 2. unless, 985, 1916, 3131, 3283, 3874, 3878, 3935, 4647, 4650, 5257, 5283, 5524, 6111, 6346; 6142 §; ~ so be: unless, 1535, 1562r, 1643, 2118r, 2432r, ?4620 §; ~ mo(re), without delay, 2785; alone, without anything further or additional, 5395, 5587; all ~: all over (the outside), 4991; see also out
withstondyng, adv not ~: yet, nevertheless, 6119
witness, n witness, 4589, 5355; to ~: as a sign (of her promise), 1149
witness, v testify, witness, 1840, 2379, 4693
witt/wit, n 1. mental faculties, 61; 2. mind, 66, 191; 3. (level of) cleverness, 1798, 2386; 4. good judgment, sense, 115, 262, 5110, 5260; do ~: act wisely, 572; at my ~ end: utterly perplexed, 6156 poss; pl wittis; also wett
witty, adj 1. endowed with reason, 455; 2. wise, sensible, 3876, 5593
wittily, adv wisely, 2437
wittynes, n good sense, cleverness, 442
wo, see woo
wod, n forest, 1519; at ~: to the woods, 1692; also wood
woful(l), see woofull
wofullest, adv sup most ~ bigon: most deeply grieved, 2062
woke, n week, 4160 §; also weke
wol(l), wold(e), wol(s)t, see will
woman, n 1. woman, 467, 4451, 5099; 2. waiting women, 5205; pl wymmen
womanhed/-e, n 1. (the) graciousness (proper to a woman), 1338 §, 1808, 3240, 3366, 3999, 4437, 5410, 6142; 2. character, qualities of womankind, 5528, 6202
womanly, adj feminine, 443
wonder, interj wonder!, 6213
wondir, n marvel, miracle, 313, 796, 1433, 4113, 6217; nys hit (hit nas) ~ (but a) lite: it is no wonder, 4257, 4967
wondir, adj marvellous, 4978, 5027
wagon, adv very, 4712
wone, n have in ~: are accustomed, 1582
wone, v live, 4089
wonne, see wynne
wont, v ppl 1. accustomed, 1850, 4409; 2. (as I) used to, 3077
woon/wo, interj ~ is me: I am miserable, 928; ~ worth(e): a curse upon, 2037, 2067, 2115, etc.
woon/wo, n 1. woe, 64, 508, 521, 5583, etc.; 2. misfortune, 4548; pl woo
woo, adj gloved, miserable, 1305, 2634, 4506, 5596, 6267; see also woofull
woobigoon, adj beset with woc, 1819r; see also bigoon
wood, n forest, 1695, grene ~, 5197; see also wod
woofull/woful(l)/wooful, adj sorrowful, 493, 715, 1929, 2011, etc.; see also wofullest
wook, see wake v
worche, v 1. wrought, given, 1240 §, 1452, 1727, 2875, 5006 §, 5007; 2. made (for), 383, 1261, 3288, 3521, 5023, etc.; 3. do, 2650, 4828; 4. work, 1026 subj; 5. created (for them), 2466; 6. conduct (yourself), 3731 imp; 7. arranged, 5949; to lijf ~: born, 4105; with nedill ~: embroider-ed, 5016; 3s werken; ppl wrought/wrou3t/wrof(f)t/ ywrou3t/worst [Error]
word, n 1. word, 126, 168, 5444, 5518, etc.; 2. promise, bidding, 4824; 3. statement, promise, 4837, 4838; pl words/word
world, n world, 59, 1697, 3962 poss, etc.; ~ wide: ages long, 90; my ~ wele: my weal in this present life, 5689; pl/poss worldis
worldly, adj earthly, 2, 216, 897, etc.
worme, n serpent, 5562
worship(e), n 1. honor, good name, 2603; 2. (a position of) honor, 4433, 4565
worshipfully, adv with due honor (accorded to you), 2770
worst, n the worst, 4582
worst, adv sup least, 2075; also worst worst, see worche
worth/worthe/worthi [error], adj [OED worth] 1. worth, 1524 §, 3185, 3219, 4128, 4188, 4402, 4564; 2. entitled to respect, honor, 4898
worth/worthe/worthi [error], adj [OED worthy] 1. worthy, worth (a lot), 220, 459, 1478, 4132, 4217, 4897, 5673, 5976; as n 4562; 2. entitled to, 71 §
worth(e), v subj wo ~: a curse upon, 2037, 2067, 2115, etc.
wot/wote/wott/wite/-n/wite/wet(e) | not, v (1) 1. know, 5, 89, 101, 464, 491, 497, 562, 621, 657, 745, 860, 941, 1257, 1705, 1744, 1848, 1888, 2404 subj, 2408, 2445, 2624, 2650, 2931, 3155, 3350, 3699, 3839, 4786, 4795, 5063, 5220, 5282, 5343, 5692, 5722, 5906, 6070, 6357, 6370 §, 6473, 6488 subj, 6529, etc.; 2. experience, 792, 4072; 3. thought, 5302; do to ~: cause to know, inform, 5, 1318, 1976, 2783; to ~: indeed, 4224; 2s wost/wote/wotist; 3s wotith; pl wote/wot/wott/wist(e); prt wist/ wiste/nyst(e); ppl wist
wote, n oath, 2769; also oth
wound(e), n wound, 404, 1736, 1957, etc.; pl woundis
wound/ywounde, v ppl 1. wound, wrapped, 834, 1944, 3589; 2. wound up, entwined, 668
woundid, v ppl wounded, 2424
woundy, adj wounded, 1302
wonen, see wexen
wrappe, v 1. wrapped, 834, 1167, 2907; 2. enfold, embrace, 1462, 2467, 6060; 3. enclose, 4894; 3pl wrappith; ppl wrappid
wrath, n wrath, 734, 1455, 1570, 3462
wrecche/wrecche, n 1. miserable, unhappy person, 1855, 2089r, 2521r, etc.; 2. low, base creature, 60, 205, 812, 864, 1674, 1999, 2682, 6403; pl wrecchis
wrecchedist, adj sup most miserable, 205
wrecchid, adj miserable, 711r, 1531, 2065, etc.
wrestith, v 3s twists, 3102
wrethe/wrethyn, v anger, 5898; ~ my sifl: become angry, 3479
writ(t), n (arrest) warrant, 2647, 3825
write/writ, v 1. (to) write, 420, 834 subj, 1685, 2305, 2310, 3042, 4679, 5043, 5313, 5394, 6137, etc.; 2. give a written account of, 2977, 2993; 3. express in writing, 3021; 4. composed, 4744; prt
wrot(e); ppl write/wreten/ writ(e)/writen(e)
writhid, v prt wrestled, struggled, 2553 §
writyng, n 1. writing, 146, 508, 825, etc.; 2. a letter, 1900; 3. a writ, 2558; 4. literature, books, 2680
wrof(f)t, see worche
wrong, n wrong, 1456, 2564, 2567, 2630; pl wrongis
wrong, adj wrong, 262, 3131; had ~: suffered injustice, was dealt with unjustly, 918
wrong, adv wrongly, 4682
wrongfully/wrongfull, adv wrongly, 878, 3343, 3444
wrongith, v 3s does injustice to, 329
wroth, adj 1. sorrowful, 2408; 2. angry, 3805, 4930
wrought, see worche

Y [semivowel and consonant]
yate, n gate, 2952; also gate
yaue, see geue
ye/e, pron you, 22, 76, 80, 5279 §, etc.
ye/yee, interj yea!, 96, 371, 1390, 2900, 5106, etc.
ye(e), adv yes, 2962, 5109; see also yes
yef, n gift, 5391, 5407, 6027
yelde, v 1. surrender, submit, 301, 306, 1593 refl; etc.; 2. devote (yourself to being), 1562r refl; 3. release (from), 2597; ben ~: submit, 305; ~ vp: give up (i.e., die), 2090, 6354; prp yeldyn; ppl yelde; see also ayelde, vpyeldyn
yelde, n elde [* with y-], 2569; also elde
yere, n year, 7, 429, 797, 1418, 1514, etc.; to ~: this year, 1496, 6386; pl yere/yeris; also heyre
yes, adv yes, 1824, 2438, 4781, etc.; see also yee
yesterday, adv yesterday, 366, 1203, 5455
yet/yit/hit [error], adv conj yet, still, 8, 533, 2195, 2912, etc.
yeue, see geue
yondir/yond(e)/yon [MS any], adj yonder, 2584, 4342, 4827, 5070, 5100, 5167 §, 5802; as n 5800
yondir, adj yonder, 4823, 4828, 4829, 4839, 5057, 5104
yong, adj young, 46, 264, 539, etc.; as n 762, 1373
yongly, adj youthful, 5408
youthe, see yowthe
yove, see geue
yow/you, pron 1. you, 5, 102, 2250, etc.; 2. to you, 5251, 5269, 5317, 5442, 5506; 3. of (from) you, 1185, 5156, 5162, 5316, 5389, 5416
yowre/yowr, pron your, 16, 343, 656, 3819, 5389, 5429, etc.
yowre/yowris, pron yours, 583, 585, 592, 621, 643, 3320, 3525, 5374, 5385, etc.
yowthe/youthe, n youth 8, 440, 1487, 2004, etc.
Proper Names
INCLUDING MAJOR ALLEGORICAL FIGURES

Age, the ageing process, 2558, 2645
Alcest, Alcestis, 2207
Aleyne, Helen, 4054; also Eleyne
Seynt Antone, St. Anthony, 5088
Antropos, Atropos, one of the Parcae, 942, 2534, 4008
Araby, Arabia, 471
Argus, Argus, 4374
Bewte, beauty, 129, 162, 176, 2424; the lady, 440
Charlis duk of Orlyaunce, Charles, duke of Orleans, 2720, 3044;
Charlis, 4788
Cloto, Clotho, youngest of the Parcae, 2538
Crepusculus, twilight, 5324
Cresseid, Creseyde, 2207
Cupide, Cupid, God of Love, 1, 112, 504, 2717, 2983, etc.; also Love
Daunger, the lady’s reserve, disdain, 27, 165, 686, 778, etc.; a third party who is an enemy of love, 3822
Deth, death, 938, 1059, 5178, etc.
Dido, Dido, 2207
Dyane, Diana (of the moon), 1844
Eleyne, Helen, 2207; also Aleyne
Europe, Europe, 1256
Florra, Flora, goddess of flowers and gardens, 704
Fortune, Fortune, 363, 966, 1231, 5100, etc.
Fraunce, France, 696, 715, 864, 1044, 1748
Seynt Gabriel, St. Gabriel, the archangel, 1969r
Galien, Galen, 4305
Seynt Gyle, Saint Giles, 4195
Ihesu, Jesus, 84, 321, 792, etc.
Seynt Iohne, St. John, 5335
Iope, Job, 1278
Ipocras, Hippocrates, 4305r
Seynt yve, St. Ives, 5232
Kent, (the county of) Kent, 6028
Lacchesse, Lachesis, one of the Parcae, 2537
Love, the god of love, 289, 311, 329, 400, etc.; also Cupid
Lucyna, Lucina, the moon, 5438
Macrobius, Macrobius, 4745
Mars, Mars, god of war, 1774
Dame Nature, nature, 2559
Orlyaunce, Orleans, 6
Penelope, Penelope, 4054
Pigmalioun, Pygmalion, 5508
Phebus, Phoebus Apollo, the sun, 2455, 4041
Seynt Quyntyne, St. Quentin, 1614
Seufan, Tisiphone, one of the Furies, 2522
Kyng Sipioun, Scipio Africanus Minor, 4746
Valentyne, 5488; Seynt Valentyn(e), St. Valentine, 53, 2455
Venus, Venus, goddess of love, 1, 2717, 4795, 5060, 5187, 5216
Fortunes Stabilnes: Charles of Orleans's English Book of Love (A Critical Edition) serves a broad audience of medievalists interested in all aspects of literature and languages of the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, both English and Continental, including those interested in Chaucer, courtly lyric and narrative, medieval history, translation, and manuscript and textual studies. The volume is clearly organized so that readers can pursue their particular interests easily.

Charles of Orleans, a French poet imprisoned for a quarter-century in England, wrote some of the most important love poetry of the first half of the fifteenth century. This volume, edited from the unique manuscript, BL Harley 682, contains on-page paraphrases, textual notes, detailed explanatory notes, a full glossary, a bibliography of works cited, and multiple appendices and indices. The substantial introduction offers a full description and codicological study of the MS and the fragments, and contextualizes it culturally, historically, syntactically, lexically, and metrically.

Mary-Jo Arn is Associate Professor at Bloomsburg University, and has held posts at the University of Groningen (The Netherlands) and Rutgers University. She has been a Fellow of the Netherlands Institute for Advanced Study and a Visiting Scholar at the University of Pennsylvania. She has edited Historical & Editorial Studies in Medieval & Early Modern English for John Gerritsen (with Hanneke Wirtjes), Groningen, 1985; and is author of numerous articles in such journals as Manuscripta, English Studies, Philological Quarterly, TEXT, and Chaucer Review.
MRTS

Medieval & Renaissance Texts & Studies
is the publishing program of the
Center for Medieval and Early Renaissance Studies
at the State University of New York at Binghamton.

MRTS emphasizes books that are needed —
texts, translations, and major research tools.

MRTS aims to publish the highest quality scholarship
in attractive and durable format at modest cost.